









The New Testament  
John Wycliffe



Pickering

1848









**The New Testament in  
English translated by  
John Wycliffe**

*Circa Mcccxxx about 1380*



*10820R*

Now first printed from a contemporary Manuscript  
formerly in the Monastery of Sion Middlesex late  
in the Collection of Lea Wilson F S A

*3/64*



Printed at Chiswick by Charles Whittingham for  
William Pickering Piccadilly London  
Mcccclviii

*1848*





**pe euuangelie of goon**

**A** pe bygyrnynge was pe  
worde was goddis sohn  
and pe worde was at god. A  
god was pe worde his was  
in pe bygyrnynge at god/  
alle yngis ben made by hym.  
and by outen hym is ma-  
de nouzt/ yat yng yat is  
made. in hym was lyf/ and  
pe lyf was pe lyte of men/  
and pe lyte shynen in dirke-  
nessis and teneccis compe-  
henden or taken, not it/ a-  
man was sente to god. to  
whom penance was won/  
his man came into lytuel-  
synge yat he shulde bere  
lytuel synge of pe lyt. yat alle  
men shulden buene by hym/ he  
was not pe lyt. but yat he shulde  
bere lytuel synge of pe lyt/ it was  
verrey lyte pe whiche lytenen eche  
man comynge into his worlde,







## Preface.



THE Manuscript from which the following *Version in English of the New Testament* is now for the first time printed, was formerly in the collection of the late Lea Wilson, Esq. of Norwood, and is thus described by him in the Catalogue of his Bibles and Testaments.

MANUSCRIPTS. No. I.

“ **The New Testament.** MS. Super membr.  
4to. forma major. Circa 1380.

“ The translation of this beautiful volume is not that usually known as Wickliffe's. In the Historical Account of the Saxon and English Versions, prefixed to the Rev. H. H. Baber's edition, p. lxix, he says, ‘ Though all these MS. lay claim to the title ‘ of Wiclif's English Version of the Bible, yet there ‘ are a few amongst them which differ so materially ‘ from the rest, as to warrant the assertion, that we ‘ enjoy two ancient English translations of the Scrip-

## Preface.

‘tures. In some places we trace no other similarity betwixt these versions, than that which arises from the circumstance of their being made from one common original, the Latin vulgate; but in general we discover features of resemblance between them so numerous and so striking, that it is most clear, that the author of the later translation not only saw, but copied very freely from that which had been previously completed.’

“Judging from the greater rudeness of the language, I conceive this to be the earlier: and I think it very probable that it was Wickliffe’s first attempt, and subsequently revised and polished by himself or his disciples; which would account for the ‘features of resemblance’ above remarked. If this opinion be correct, it leaves with him the whole merit of first translating the Scriptures into English.”

“The Volume is beautifully written, and the initial letters of each Book and Chapter are illuminated. There are no prologues. It ends, ‘endiþ þe apocalips Blessed be þe holy trinitie Amē.’ It has been in the possession of Reynolds, Bishop of Norwich, 1670, as appears by his autograph on the first page, ‘Ed. Reynolds. Ex dono D. Gulielmi Simonson. Coll: Merton Socii.’ On the reverse of the last leaf is engrossed as follows—

“Good M<sup>r</sup>. Confesso<sup>r</sup> of Sion w<sup>h</sup> his brethren.

“Dame Anne Danvers Widowe Sūtyme Wyffe to  
Sr Willm Danvers knyght (hoofe Soule god affoyle)  
hathe



## Preface.

hathe geuyn this p̄sent Booke vnto maſtre confeſſor and his Bretherne encloofed In Syon entendyng therby not oonly the hono<sup>r</sup> laude and preye to almyghty god but alſo that ſhe the moore tenderly may be cōmytted vnto the mercy of o<sup>r</sup> lord god by the hoōly demerytes of maſtre confeſſor and his Bretherne aforſeid. Which ſhe hertly deſyrethe. and ſpecyally to remembre the lyues and the ſoulys of ſuche p̄ſons hoofe names heeafter be wryten

“ The good aſtate of Dame Anne Danvers.

Thoms Willm Anne Alys Ifabell	}	Itm p <sup>r</sup> aīabz Iohīs pury hir childerne alyve	}	Ifabelle Elizabeth Willi Danvers milit <sup>s</sup> Johīs Johīs margarete Johīs Thome margarete langford.	}	vxor <sup>s</sup> ei <sup>s</sup>  filiors ei <sup>s</sup> defunctor <sup>s</sup>  frūors ei <sup>s</sup>
---	---	---	---	---	---	--

“ The aforſeid Dame Anne Danvers hathe delyverd this booke by the hond<sup>s</sup> of her ſon Thomās Danvers on myddellent funday. In the viij yeere of the reigne of kyng Henry the Eytethe. In the yeere of o<sup>r</sup> lord god a m fyve hundred and ſeventeene.

Deo g̃cias.

“ Mr. Thomas Duffus Hardy, the keeper of the Records in the Tower, ſays the MS. is of the time

## Preface.

of Richard II. or Henry IV. and therefore certainly coeval with Wickliffe. The volume measures  $10\frac{3}{4}$  inches by  $7\frac{1}{2}$ . The Acts of the Apostles follows the four Gospels; then the Epistles of James, Peter, John and Jude; those by S. Paul, and the Apocalips concluding the book.

“\* \* This is supposed to be the earliest version of the New Testament in the English language.”

Mr. Wilson under the head of the two next MSS. in his Collection, Nos. 2 and 3, says in reference to the foregoing No. 1, “The following specimens from chance openings of the volume, will shew the difference between the two versions.”

No. 1.                      Luke Ch. 8.                      Nos. 2 and 3.

Forsoþe þer was a flok of many  
hoggis leſewynge in an hil/  
and þei preyeden hym þ<sup>t</sup> he  
schulde suffre hem forto entre  
into hem/ and he suffride hem.  
þerefore þe deuelis wenten  
oute fro þe man; & entriden  
into hoggis/ & wiþ birre þe flok  
wēte hedelynge into þe lake  
of water; and is stranglide.

And þere was a flok of many  
ſwoyne leſewynge in an hil/  
and þei praieden h̄ þat hee  
schulde ſuffre hem to entre  
ito hem/ and he ſuffrid hem.  
& ſo þe deuelis wenten out  
fro þ<sup>e</sup> man & entridē in to þ<sup>e</sup>  
ſwoyne and wiþ a bire þe flok  
wente hedelynge into þe pool  
& was drenchid.

Ch. 20.

And it is done in (one) of þe  
dages; hym techyng þe puple  
in þe temple and euangeliz-  
ynge.

And it was doon in (oo) of þe  
dages whanne hee tautzte þe  
people in þe temple & p̄chide  
þe gospel.



## Preface.

No. 1.	Ch. 21.	Nos. 2 and 3.
Forsoþe þe biholdynge sîze hem þat senten her ziftis into þe tresorie riche men. forsoþe þe sîze & sum litil pore widowe sendynge two mynutis or fer- þingis:		And hee biheeld & saiz þe riche men þat castiden here ziftis in to þe tresorie/ but hee saþ also a litil poore widowe cast- inge tweye ferþingis

Mr. Wilson had with much care prepared a transcript, and passed it through the prefs to the end of the Gospels.

Some reasons should perhaps be here offered why our Title page entitles this “Wicliffe’s version, now first printed,” there being already two imprints bearing the name, that of Lewis, 1731, reprinted by Mr. Baber in 1810, and “The Wicliffe version” of Bagster’s Hexapla.

Besides the parallel passages given in the above extracts from Mr. Wilson’s Catalogue, a more extended comparison of Mr. Baber’s imprint, usually termed Wicliffe’s version, with the corresponding text of our copy,\* will still further shew that while there is sufficient resemblance to connect them together, they are so far from identical, that a very considerable difference exists, and being, as is evidently the case, equally translations from one original, namely, the

\* Take also, as immediately at hand to every reader, the specimen in the preface to Dr. Johnson’s Dictionary.

## Preface.

Vulgate, 'this difference is the more remarkable, and certainly justifies Mr. Wilson's decision, that "this translation is *not* that usually known as Wicliffe's." So also comparison with the version employed by Mr. Bagster in his Hexapla, there given as the Wicliffe text, and which is taken from a MS. formerly in the collection of the Duke of Suffex, but subsequently possessed by Mr. Wilson, shows at once the same difference and resemblance. The subjoined, being the commencement of S. Mark's Gospel, may serve as a specimen of that version,

**"The bigynnyng of þe gospel of ihu crist þe sone of god  
as it is writun in Istaie þe profete/ Io I sende myn aungel bi-  
for þi face: þat schal make redi þi weye bifore þee/ þe vois of  
a crier in desert/ make ze redi þe weye of þe lord: make þe  
hise pathis rizt/ Ioon was in desert/ baptisynge and prechynge  
þe baptism of penaunce in to remyssion of synnes/ and al þe  
cuntrē of judee wenten out to hym: and al men of Jerusalem/  
and þei weren baptised of hym in þe flū Jordan: and know-  
lechiden her synnes/"**

Of these several versions, for it is evident that ours is not the same with either of the above, it only remains to inquire which is the earliest, and then to determine to whom belongs the merit of such *earliest* translation of the New Testament into English.

An accurate and careful investigation of each, can alone *settle* the question of priority of the versions, and this is not the place to attempt it; but some few grounds for a conclusion may be indicated.

The

## Preface.

The writing of the MS. itself, which at that period is so nearly uniform, *fixes* it to the time of either Rich. II. or Hen. IV., or about 1380, and contemporary with Wicliffe. The language of this version is, as has been stated above, “ruder,” that is, it is older. The orthography varies; so much so, that the same word is spelt quite differently in even two following lines, marking the unformed and uncertain state of the language.\* Moreover, a kind of interpretation, or running gloss, not found in the other versions, accompanies many words in this; the second word, or rendering, being of a more simple character: some words are paraphrased, others are explained.† Many words indeed, besides those termed sacred, are not translated at all, but the Latin is retained; others again are literally translated, that is, the idea is transferred, and rendered, not, as obtained afterwards, and as is found in the other versions, by the formation of a word out of the Latin, but by giving the English equivalent, or com-

\* We think that the various spelling of the same word in MSS. of this period may be accounted for by the transcribers living in different districts, and conforming each to the prevailing rule of his own division. There is still extant a Northumbrian version of the Gospels, which illustrates this adherence to a provincial orthography; besides which there was no uniform standard, and many words were evidently written according to their sound.

† Take as an instance of this gloss, not found in the other versions, the words *profelite* and *filateries*; after the first we find, in a parenthesis, “*þat is a convertide to ȝour ordre,*” and after the second, “*þat ben smale scrowis.*”

## Preface.

pound equivalent, of the original, and this oftentimes in a very striking manner. On the other hand, a closer adherence to the words of the original, the Vulgate, is sometimes maintained at the cost even of idiom and correctness. Again, there are evident errors in this version, and corrections in the others which mark this as the earliest. The prologues of S. Jerome are added to all the other versions, but are not found with this.

Now upon all the particulars indicated above, which manifestly bespeak a first attempt, and on the internal evidence of the language, no hesitation can be felt in deciding that Mr. Baber's reprint from Lewis, and the text of the Hexapla, are each of them later than the following version; the language at their date had then become more fixed, and we must not fail to remember that in all transcripts at that period the transcriber did not scruple to change or modernize an obsolete word so as to suit it to his own day.

With respect to the other question proposed, to whom belongs the merit of this, the earliest translation into English of the New Testament, Mr. Wilson's remark that it remains with Wicliffe, appears correct. Mr. Baber in his "Historical Account," pp. 68-72, may be considered to have settled the point, and the sum of the arguments is here given in his own words. "Some authors have  
"doubted whether Wiclif ever translated the Scrip-  
tures.

## Preface.

“ tures. When Hufs, a martyr to Wiclif’s prin-  
“ ciples, and one nearly his contemporary, speaks  
“ of fuch a production ; when amongst the accusa-  
“ tions brought againft the reformer by Knyghton,  
“ this pious labor feems in the opinion of this au-  
“ thor to be his higheft offence ; when Wiclif in one  
“ of his homilies mentions the fevere ufage he met  
“ with becaufe he dared to enable the people at  
“ large to read in their own tongue the revealed  
“ word of God ; and when in every lift given of  
“ his works by his numerous biographers, mention  
“ is always made of his having tranflated the Scrip-  
“ ture into Englifh, every doubt upon this point muft,  
“ one would think, for the future vanifh.”

Mr. Baber fays, “ John de Trevisa, who flourifhed  
“ towards the end of the fourteenth century, enjoys  
“ the reputation in the eftimation of fome men of let-  
“ ters of having produced an Englifh tranflation of  
“ the Bible ; but his title to this fame has hitherto  
“ eluded all attempts I have made to trace it.” It  
may however be confidered to reft folely on the  
authority of Caxton, who, in the Preface to the  
Polychronicon of Higden, tranflated by this fame  
John de Trevisa, and the moft popular book in  
that age, fays, that he alfo tranflated the Holy Scrip-  
tures ; but no part of fuch tranflation is known to  
exift, and it is thought that the tranflation afcribed  
to him confifted only of texts painted on the walls  
of the chapel at Berkeley Caftle, and the church at



## Preface.

Berkeley, where Trevisa was Chaplain and Vicar, and where he died about thirty years after Wicliffe.

It may be added that no copy of an English version of the entire New Testament of a date anterior to Wicliffe is known.

It is not however meant to be asserted either that Wicliffe was alone and unassisted in this great work, or that he did not make use of such materials for his version as he had at hand; it is certain that he received assistance from others, and it is probable that he gathered together the various portions of versions already made. It only needs this most natural explanation to reconcile with the fact that he first produced the entire version, many matters as to which there need at no time have been much controversy. When More, for example, says that Wicliffe's translation was needless, as there was one before his days, we may readily allow it, so far as portions of the Bible, and in particular as respects the Gospels. We quite allow the extent and importance of the labors of Nicholas de Hereford, and we think it even probable that he rendered direct assistance to Wicliffe in his version. We may even admit that there were translations in use and authorized by the Church. Fox himself, though for quite another purpose, in the dedication of Archbishop Parker's Gospels to Queen Elizabeth, freely allows this. And we are told that Archbishop Arundel, in his funeral sermon for Ann, Queen of Richard II. "did avouch that she had all  
" the

## Preface.

“the four Gospels in the vulgare tongue with divers  
“expositions of the same.”

There being then two (or more) distinct versions in English of the Bible and Testament, or portions of them, extant, it is easy to understand how the later and improved version came to be attributed to Wicliffe, rather than the earlier and more uncouth, though the latter agrees far better with the style and orthography of his acknowledged writings, as may be seen by even a cursory comparison with his Homilies and the Trialogus. And this later and clearer version having been thus given to Wicliffe, it may be well believed that the older and more homely renderings of the other occasioned the inference that it was much before his time, so that Archbishop Usher even places it in the year 1290,\* although the very rapid mutation of the English language at the period in question would amply account for the difference between the two versions, even had they followed more nearly than they did the one to the other. As an illustration of the rapidity with which the English language was then developing itself, we might compare, see Baber, 67, the translations of Richard Rolle, the hermit of Hampole, who died

\* Mr. Westwood, *Palæog. Sacra*, tells us that from a collation by the late Rev. T. Symonds, he found that the Bodleian MS. Fairfax, No. 2, considered by Archbishop Usher to have been written at the close of the thirteenth century is of the Wicliffite period, agreeing with the Arundel MS. 108, and the Lambeth MS.

## Preface.

in 1349, with either of the versions mentioned, the utmost interval between them being twenty-five or thirty years.

We think then that we have here the earliest version in English of the entire New Testament; that which followed, though at long interval, the Saxon, connecting itself, it may be, as by succession, with the translation of St. John's Gospel which occupied the last hours of the Venerable Bede; and also that this is the true translation of Wicliffe, that very translation which gave occasion to the Bill brought into the Parliament of 13 Rich. II. (1390) for the purpose of suppressing it, but which was rejected through the influence of the Duke of Lancaster, John of Gaunt, Wicliffe's chief patron, who solemnly declared, "We will not be the dregs of all. Seeing  
"other nations have the Law of God, which is the  
"law of our faith, written in their own language,  
"I will maintain our having this law in our own  
"tongue, against those, whoever they be, who first  
"brought in this Bill." That success it was, which encouraged Wicliffe's followers, and another, and in some respects a more correct translation followed, attributed to Wicliffe's curate, Purnay or Purvay, and it is this version which has hitherto been published as that of Wicliffe.\* Transcripts or copies were how-

\* "Of whose translation (i. e. Wicliffe's) *no* part has hitherto been published." *Palæographia Sacra*. Title, Early Engl. Biblical MSS.

## Preface.

ever so rare that according to the registry of William de Alnewick, Bishop of Norwich in 1420, the price of one of Wicliffe's Testaments, for so they were all called, was not less than 4 marks and 40 pence, or 2*l.* 16*s.* 8*d.* equal to about 40*l.* of our day.\*

For the first time, then, is the reproach of Fabricius removed, (*Mirum est apud Anglos eam, i. e. versionem Wiclivitaniam, tam diu neglexisse*) so far at least as respects the printing of the New Testament; and this version, so interesting from the circumstances under which it was made, and its connection with one of the great names of our country, so curious a monument of the language at that period,† of so much philological importance, illustrating, as it does, the formation of our own mother tongue, and exhibiting it in its transition state, and also so valuable, as showing incidentally, and therefore the more surely, how certain questions of theology were regarded by him whom we term our earliest reformer, and what was, in his day, and by him, con-

\* It is not a little singular that though printing was introduced into England in 1474, no English Bible or Testament was printed till 1526, and then at a foreign press, viz. Tyndal's 4to New Testament at Cologne, and his 12mo at Antwerp. The constitutions of Archbishop Arundel in the Convocation at Oxford (1408) forbidding the translation of Holy Scripture into English, and the reading of "any book of this kind composed lately in the time of John Wicliffe, or since his death," were not only enforced at the time but long perpetuated.

† Fabricius, speaking of the Wicliffe version, continues, "*linguæ causâ in pretio esse debeat.*" *Bibl. Lat. med. et infr. ætatis*, vol. 5, p. 321.

## Preface.

considered the most authentic as a standard, and, as it were, an original text—this,—the earliest translation of the Testament into English, is now printed for the first time, and it is believed with that scrupulous accuracy which is the first and most needful, though very humble requisite, for passing such a volume through the press.

London,  
March, 1848.



## The Order of the Books.



Matheu  
Mark  
Luke  
Joon

þe dedis of þe apostlis  
þe pistel of James  
þe firste pistel of petre  
þe secounde pistel of petre  
þe firste pistel of Joon  
þe secounde pistel of Joon  
þe þridde pistel of Joon  
þe pistil of Jude  
þe pistil to romayns  
þe firste pistel to corrinþeis  
þe secoūde pistle to corrinþeis  
þe pistel to galapeis  
þe pistel to ephesies  
þe pistel to philipenses  
þe pistel to colocenses  
þe firste pistel to tessalonicenses  
þe secounde pistel to tessalonicenses  
þe firste pistel to tymothe  
þe secounde pistel to tymothe  
þe epistel to tyte  
þe pistel to philomon  
þe pistil to ebrues  
þe apocalips





## Matheu



Ere bigynnes þe gospel of mathew · The C<sup>m</sup> 1<sup>m</sup>

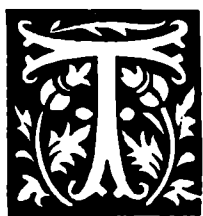
booc of þe generacion of ihū crist þe sone  
of dauid þe sone of abraham/ Abraham  
gendride (or bigate) Isaac/ Isaac for-  
soþe bigate Jacob · Jacob forsoþe bigate  
Judas & his breþeren/ Judas forsoþe  
bigate Phares and Zaram of thamar/  
Phares forsoþe bigate Esrom/ Esrom

forsoþe bigate Aram/ Aram forsoþe bigate Amynadab/ Amyna-  
dab forsoþe bigate naason/ Naason forsoþe bigate Salmon/  
Salmon forsoþe bigate booz of raab/ Booz forsoþe bigate obeth  
of ruth/ Obeth forsoþe bigate iesse/ Jesse forsoþe bigate dauyd  
þe kyng/ Dauyd forsoþe þe kyng · bigate salamon of þat (wom-  
man) þ<sup>r</sup> was uries wiif/ Salomon forsoþe bigate roboam/ Ro-  
boam forsoþe bigate abias/ Abias forsoþe bigate asa/ Asa for-  
soþe bigate iosaphath/ Josaphath forsoþe bigate Joram/ Jo-  
ram forsoþe bigate osias/ Osias forsoþe bigate Joathan/ Joa-  
than forsoþe bigate achaz/ Achaz forsoþe bigate ezechie/ eze-  
chie forsoþe bigate manasses/ Manasses forsoþe bigate amon/  
Amon forsoþe bigate iosias/ Josias forsoþe bigate Jeconyas  
and his breþeren · into the transmygracon of babiloyne/ and  
astir þe transmygracon of babiloyne · Jeconyas bigate sa-  
latiel/ Salatiel forsoþe bigate zorobabel/ zorobabel forsoþe  
bigate abiud/ Abyud forsoþe bigate eliachym/ Eliachym for-  
soþe bigate azor/ Azor forsoþe bigate sadoch/ Sadoch forsoþe  
bigate achym/ Achym forsoþe bigate elyud/ elyud forsoþe bi-  
gate eliazar/ eliazar forsoþe bigate mathan/ mathan forsoþe  
bigate iacob/ Jacob forsoþe bigate Joseph þe housbonde of  
marþe/

## Matheu

marȳe/ of whiche (marie) ih̄c̄ is borne ⁊ þat is clepide crist//  
**¶** And so alle generacoñs from abraham til to daupd ⁊ ben  
fourtene generacoñs/ and fro daupd til to þe transmygracōn  
of babyloyn ⁊ ben fourtene generacoñs/ and fro þe transmy-  
gracōn of babyloyn til to crist ⁊ ben fourtene generacoñs/ for-  
soþe þe generacōn of c̄st was þus/ whanne marie his modir  
was spouside to Ioseph ⁊ bifore þat þei shulden come to gedir ⁊  
sche is founden haupnge in wombe of þe holy goſt/ Ioseph hir  
houſbond whan he was a iuste man (or riȝtful) ⁊ wolde not  
pupliſche hire (or leede hir forþer) wolde pryuely forſake hir/  
ſoþely hȳm þenkynge þes þingis ⁊ lo þe aungel of þe lorde ap-  
peride in ſleep (or ſwenene) to hȳm ſeyinge/ Ioseph þe ſone of  
daupd nyl þou drede ⁊ to take marie þi wiȳf/ forſoþe þat þing  
þat is borne in hire ⁊ is of þe holy goſt/ and ſche ſchal bere a  
ſone ⁊ and þou ſchalt clepe his name Jeſus/ for he ſchal make  
ſaaf ⁊ fro here ſynnes/ forſoþe al þis þing was done þat it  
ſchulde be fulfilde þat þing þat was ſeyde by þe prophete ſey-  
inge/ lo a virgyn ſchal haue in wombe ⁊ ſche ſchal bere a ſone ⁊  
and his name ſchal be clepide emanuel þat is interpretide (or  
expounyde) god wiþ us/ ſoþely Ioseph ryſynge vp fro ſleep ⁊  
dide as þe aungel of þe lord comaundide hȳm ⁊ took his  
wiȳf/ and he knewe hir not ⁊ til ſche hadde borne hir firſte bi-  
goten ſone ⁊ clepide his name ih̄c̄/

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>



Therefore whanne ih̄c̄ was borne in bethlem of Iuda  
in þe dayes of kyng heroude ⁊ lo kyngis or (wiſemen  
camen fro þe eſte to ierl̄m ſeyinge/ where is he þat is  
borne ⁊ kyng of iewes/ forſoþe we haue ſeen his  
ſterne in þe eſte ⁊ we comen forto worſchip hȳm/ ſoþely kyng  
heroude herynge is turblide ⁊ and al ierl̄m wiþ hȳm/ and he  
gederynge togedir alle þe prynces of priſtis ⁊ ſcribis of þe  
puple enqueride of hem ⁊ where crist ſchulde be borne/ and þei  
ſeiden to hȳ/ In bethlem of Iuda/ ſo forſoþe it is wryten by  
þe prophete/ ⁊ þou bethlem þe lande of Iuda ⁊ þou art not  
leaſte

## Matheu

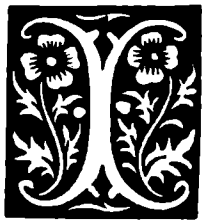
leaste in þe prynces of Iuda/ for of þee a duke schal gone oute:  
þat schal gouerne my puple of isrl/ þanne heroude pryuely þe  
kyngis clepide to hym: bisily lernyde of hem · þe tyme of þe  
sterre þat apperide to hem/ and he sendynge hem into bethlem:  
seyde/ go see & are see bisily of þe childe: and whā see hane  
founden · telle azen to me · þat I comynge worschip hym/ þe  
whiche whanne þei hadden herde þe kyng: wenten away/ and  
lo þe sterre · þe which þei sizen in þe este: wente bifore hem:  
til þat it comynge · stode aboue where þe childe was/ forsoþe  
þei seinge þe sterre: ioyeden wip a ful greet ioye/ and þei en-  
trynge þe hous: founden þe childe · wip marie his modir/ and  
þei fallynge doune: worschipedē hȳ/ and here tresours open-  
yde: þei offerden to hym ziftis · golde · encens · & myr/ and an-  
swere taken in sleep · þat þei schulden not turne azen to he-  
roude: þei ben turnyde by anoper weye into here cuntre ¶ And  
whanne þei hadden gone away: lo þe aungel of þe lorde · ap-  
peride in sleep to ioseph/ rise vp · and take þe childe & his modir:  
and flee into egipte · & be þou here · til þat I seye to þee/ soþely  
it is to come: þat heroude seek þe childe for to leese hym/ þe  
whiche Ioseph risynge vp · took þe childe & his modir by  
nyzt · & wente into egypte/ and was þere til þe deþ of heroude/  
þat it schulde be fulfilde · þat þing þat was seyde of þe lorde  
by þe prophete: seyinge/ fro egipte I haue clepide my sone/  
þanne heroude seinge þat he was scornede (or deceyuede) of þe  
kyngis was gretely wroþe/ and he sendyng slowe alle þe  
children þat weren in bethlem & in alle þe ēdis of it · fro two  
zeer age and wipīne: aftir þe tyme þat he had souzte oute of  
þe kyngis/ þanne it was fulfilde þat þing þat was seyde by  
Jeremye þe prophete: seyinge/ a voyce is herde an hize · we-  
pyng & myche weplynge · rachel wepyng hire sones · & sche  
wolde not be comfortide: for þei ben not/ soþely heroude  
deade: lo þe aungel of þe lorde apperide in sleep to Ioseph in  
egipte seyinge/ rise vp & take þe childe & his modir: and go in-  
to þe lande of isrl/ for þei þat souzten þe lijf of þe childe: ben  
deade



## Matheu

deade/ þe whiche Ioseph rýsýnge vp: took þe childe & his mo-  
dir · & came into þe lande of isrl<sup>9</sup>/ forsoþe he herýnge þat ar-  
chelaus regnyde in Jude for heroude his fadir: dredde for to  
go þidir/ and he monestide in sleep: wente into þe parties of  
galilee/ and he comýge dwelte in a cytee þat is clepide naz-  
areth/ þat it schulde be fulfild þat þing · þat is seyde by pro-  
phetes forwhy: he schal be clepide of nazareth//

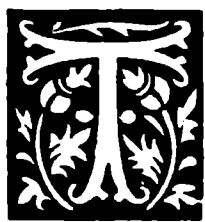
C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



**A**nd the ilke dayes came ioon baptist · prechýnge in  
deserte of Jude seyinge/ do zee penaunce: for þe  
kingdom of heuenes schal nyȝ (or comenȝ)/ forsoþe  
þis is he of whom it is seyde by ysaie þe prophete/ a  
voyce of a cryinge in desert/ make zee reedy þe weyes of þe  
lorde: make zee rýtful þe payes of him/ forsoþe þat ilke ioon  
hadde cloþe of þe heres of camels: and a girdel of skyn aboute  
his leendis/ soþely his mete weren locustis & honȝ of þe wood/  
þanne irþm wente oute to hym · & al Judee · & al þe cun-  
tre aboute iordan: & þei weren cýtenȝde of hym in Iordan ·  
knowelechýnge here synnes/ soþely he seyng many of þe pha-  
risees & of saduceis comȝng to his baptyȝm: seyde to hem/ gen-  
eracõs of neddris: who schewide to ȝou · for to fle þe wrap  
to comȝnge/ þerfore do zee worþi fruytis of penaunce: and nyl  
zee sepe wiþinne ȝou · we haue þe fadir abraham/ soþely I sepe  
to ȝou · forwhy god is myȝty to reyse vp of þes stoness · þe soness  
of abraham/ for nowe þe are is putte to þe roote of þe tree/  
soþely euery tree þat makȝ not good fruyte: schal be kute  
doun · & schal be sente into þe fýr/ forsoþe I cristen ȝou in  
water into penaunce: forsoþe he þat is to come aftir me · is  
strenger þan I/ whos schoon I am not worþi to beere/ he schal  
baptise (or cristen) ȝou in þe holy goost & fýr/ whos wenewȝnge  
cloþ: in his hande/ and he schal fully clense his floor · & schal  
gedir his corne into his berne: but þe chaffes he schal brenne ·  
wiþ fýr vnquencheable (or þat neuer schal be quenchide) þanne  
ihc came fro galilee into iordan to Ioon: forto be cristenȝde  
of

## Matheu

of hym/ soþely ioon forþed hym: seyinge/ I owe forto be cristenye of þee: and þou comest to me. forsoþe ihū answerynge: seyde to hym · suffre now/ forso it bicometh vs to fulfille: al ryztwesnesse/ þanne (Joon) lette hym (or leste hym)/ forsoþe ihc cristenye: steppe vp anone fro þe water: and lo heuenes ben openye to hym/ and he sate þe spirit of god comynge doune as a culuer: and comynge vpon hym/ and lo a voyce fro heuenes: seyinge/ þis is my louede sone: in whiche I hauede pleside to me//

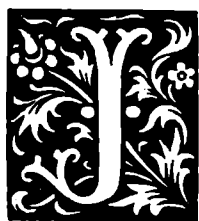


þanne ihc was ledde into desert · of a spirit: that he schulde be temptide of þe deuyll/ and whanne he had fastide fourty dayes and fourty nyghts: aftirwarde he hungride/ and þe tempter comynge nyȝt: seyde to hym/ zif þou be goddis sone: seye þat þes stoness be made looues/ þe whiche answerynge: seyde to hym/ it is writen/ a man lyueth not in breed al one: but in euery worde þat cometh forþ fro þe mounþ of god/ þanne þe deuyll tooke hym into an holy cytee: and sette hym on þe pynacle of þe temple & seyde to hym/ zif þou be goddis sone: sende þee doune/ soþely it is writen/ for to his aungels he comaṇdide of þee: and þei schulen take þee in handis lestte parauenture þou hirte þi foote at a stoon/ este-sone ihc seih to hym/ it is writen þou schalt not tempte þe lord þi god/ este-sone þe deuyll toke hym into a fulhize hil · & schewide to hym alle þe rewmes of þe worlde · & þe glorie of hem: and seyde to hym/ alle þes þingis I schal giue to þee: zif þou fallynge doune schalt worschip me/ þanne ihc seyde to hym/ go sathanas/ forsoþe it is writen/ þou schalt worschip þe lorde þi god: and to hym al one þou schalt serue/ þanne þe deuyll leste hym · and lo aungels camen nyȝt: and serueden to hym ¶ Soþely whanne ihc had herde þat ion was taken: he wente in galilee/ and þe cyte of nazareth leste: he came and dwellide in þe cytee of capharnaum · bisidis þe see · in þe endis of zabulon & neptalym: þat it schulde be fulfild þat þing þat was seyde by ysaye þe prophete/

## Matheu

prophete/ þe lande of Zabulon & þe lande of neptalym · þe wepe of þe see · ouer iordan of galilee of heþen men · þe puple þat dwelte in dirkenesses: size a greet lizt/ and men sytting in þe cuntre of schadowe of deþ: lizt is sprungen to hem/ fro þens ihc bigan for to preche · and seye do zee penaunce: forsoþe þe kyngdom of heuenes schal come nyz/ soþely ihc walkynge bisidis þe see of galilee: size two breþeren · symount þat is clepide petre & andrew his broþer: sendynge a nette into þe see/ forsoþe þei weren fischers · & he seyde to hem/ come zee aftir me: and I schal make zou to be made fischers of men/ and anone here nettis forsaken: þei sueden hym/ and he goinge forþe fro þe place: size two oþer breþeren · James of zebedee & Joon his broþer · in þe schippe wiþ zebede here fadir: makynge azen (or beetynge) heren nettis/ and he clepide hem/ soþely anone þe nettis forsaken & þe fadir: þei sueden hym/ and ihc enuprounde al galilee techynge in þe synagogis of hem · & prechynge þe gospel of þe kyngdom · & helynge al sorowe (or ache): and al seekenesse in þe puple/ and his oppnyon (or fame): wente into al syrie/ and þei offerden to hym alle (men) hauþge euyl: taken wiþ dyuerse sorowis & turmentis/ and hem þat hadden deuplis & lunatik men · & men in palesie · and he helide hem/ and þere sueden hym many cumpanyes of galilee & of decapoly · & of irlm & of Judee & of bizonde iordan//

C<sup>m</sup> 5



Jhc forsoþe seinge þe cumpanyes: wente vp into an hil and whanne he hadde sette: his disciplis camen nyz to hym/ and he openynge his mouþ: tauzte hem seyinge/ blesside be þe pore in spirit: for þe kyngdom of heuene is heren/ blesside be mylde (men): for þei schulen welde þe erþe/ blesside be þei þat mournen: for þei schulen be comfortide/ blesside be þei þat hungren & þristen riztwesnesse: for þei schulen be fulfilde/ blesside be mercyful (men): for þei schulen gete mercy/ blesside be þei þat ben of clene herte: for þei schulen se god/ blesside be peesible (men) for þei schulen

## Matheu

schulen be clepide þe sones of god/ bleſſide be þei þat ſuffren  
persecucion for riȝtweſneſſe: for þe kyngdom of heuenes is  
heren/ zee ben bleſſide whanne men ſchulen curſe zou & pur-  
ſue zou · & ſchulen ſeye al euyl azenes zou · lizinge · for me/  
ioȝze zee (wiþine forþe) · & glade zee (wiþoute forþ): for your  
mede is plenteuous in heuenes/ forſoþe ſo þei hane purſuede &  
prophetis: þat weren before ¶ zee ben ſalte of þe erþe/ þat zif  
þe ſalte ſchal vanyſche aweiȝe: wherin ſchal it be ſaltide/ to no  
þing is it worþi ouer: no but þat it be ſente oute · & defoulide  
of mē/ ¶ zee ben liȝte of þe worlde/ a cyte putte on an hiȝe  
hil · may not be hid/ neþer (men) tenden a lanterne & putten it  
vndir a buſchel · but on a candilſtik: þat it ȝȝue liȝt · to alle  
þat ben in þe hous/ ſo ſchyne zoure liȝte bifore men: þ̃ þei ſe  
zoure good werkis · & gloriſie zoure fadir þat is in heuenes//  
¶ Iȝl zee geſſe (or deme) · þat I came to vndo (or diſtruye) þe  
lawe or þe prophetis/ I came not to vndo þe lawe: but to ful-  
fille it/ forſoþe I ſeye to zou treuþe: til heuene & erþe paſſe ·  
one I (þat is þe leeſte letter) · or a title · ſchal not paſſe fro þe  
lawe: til alle þingis be done/ þerfore he þat vndoith (or brekeþ)  
one of þes leſte maundementis & techiþ þus men: ſchal be cle-  
pide þe leſte in þe kyngdom of heuenes/ forſoþe þis þat doiþ  
& techiþ: ſchal be clepide grete in þe kingdom of heuenes//  
¶ forſoþe I ſeye to zou · but zif zoure riȝtweſneſſe be more  
plenteuouſe · þan of ſcribis & phareſees: zee ſchul not entre  
into þe kyngdom of heuenes/ ¶ zee hane herde þat it is ſeyde  
to olde men: þou ſchalt not ſlee/ forſoþe he þat ſleep: ſchal be  
gilty of doom/ but I ſeye to zou · that eueryche þat is wroþe  
to his broþer: ſchal be gilty of doom/ forſoþe he that ſchal ſeye  
to his broþer racha (þat is a worde of ſcorne): ſchal be gilty of  
counſeyl/ ſoþely he þat ſchal ſeye fool (þat is a worde of diſ-  
pyſynge): ſchal be gilty of þe fir of helle/ þerfore zif þou  
offeriſt þi zifte at þe auter · & þere ſchalt byþenke þat þi broþer  
haþ ſumwhat azenes þee: leue þere þi zifte bifore þe auter ·  
& go firſte & be recounſeylide (or accorde) to þi broþer/ and  
þanne

## Matheu

panne þou compnge: schalt offre þi zift/ be þou consentynge to þin aduersarie soone. þe while þou art in þe weye wiþ hym: leste parauenture þin aduersarie take þee to þe domesman. & þe domesman take þee to þe mynystre. & þou be sente into prison/ treuly I seye to þee. þou schalt not go þens: til þou zilde þe laste ferþing ¶ zee hane herde for it was seyde to olde men. þou schalt [not] do leccherie/ forsoþe I seye to zou. forwhi euery man þat seþ a womman for to coueyte hir: now he hap done leccherie wiþ hire in his herte/ þat zif þin rizt yze schlaundre þee: pulle it oute & caste it fro þee/ for it spedith to þee þat one of þi membres perische: þan all þi body go into helle// and zif þi rizthande schlaundre þee. kutte it away & caste it fro þee/ for it spedith to þee þat one of þi membres perische: þat þat al þi body go into helle/ forsoþe it is seyde/ who euer schal leue his wife: zyeue he to hire a libel. (þat is a litil book of forsakyng). soþely I seye to zou þat euery man that schal leue his wife. outaken cause of fornicacōn: he makith hir to do leccherie/ and he that weddith þe forsaken wiif: doith auouterie// ¶ eftsone zee hane herde/ þat it was seyde to olde men: þou schalt not forswere/ soþely to þe lorde þou schalt zelde þin oþes/ forsoþe I seye to zou. to not swere on al maner. neþer by heuene: for it is the trone of god. neþer by erþe: for it is þe stool of his feet. neþer by irlm: for it is a cytee of a greet kyng/ neþer þou schalt swere be þin heed: for þou mayst not make one heer whijt or blacke/ but be zoure worde. zhe zhe. nay nay/ forsoþe þat is more þan þis: is of euyl/ ¶ zee hane herde þat it is seyde/ ize for ize: toþe for toþe/ but I seye to zou: to not azenstonde euyl/ but zif any schal smyte þee in þe rizt cheek: zyeue to hym & þe toþer/ and to hym þat wole stryue wiþ þee in doom. & take away þi coote: leue þou to hym & þin ouer cloob/ and who euer constreyneth þee a þousande paafis: go þou wiþ hym oþer/ to hym forsoþe þat ariþ of þee zyeue: and turne þou not away fro hym. þat wole borowe of þee/ ¶ zee hane herde þat it is seyde/ þou schalt loue þi neizebore. and hate

## Matheu

hate þin enemye/ but I seye to zou· loue zee zoure enemyes· do zee wel to hem þat haten zou· & prey zee for (men) pursuyng zou falsely chalengynge zou· þat zee be þe sones of zoure fadir þat is in heuenes/ þat makih his sunne to sprynge vpon good & euyl men· and reyneþ vpon iuste men [ & uniuiste ]/ for zif zee louen hem þat louen zou· what mede schulen zee hane·/ wheþer & puplicans done not þis þing·/ and zif zee greten (or saluten) zoure breþeren onely· what more ouer schulen zee do·/ wheþer & paynymys done not þis þing·/ þerfore be zee parfite· as & zoure heuenely fadir is parfite/ take zee heed· lest zee done zour ryztwesnesse bifore men· þat zee be sene of hem/ ellis zee schulen not haue mede at zoure fadir þat is in heuenes/ þerfor whan þou doiste almes· nyl þou synge bifore þee in a trumpe as ypocritis done in synagogis & stretis þat þei ben made worschipful of men/ forsoþe I seye to zou· þei hane receyuede here mede/ but þee doinge almes· knowe not þi lifte hande· what þi ryzt hande doih· þat þin almes be in hidels/ and þi fadir þat seeh in hidels· schal zilde to þee//



**A**nd whanne zee schulen preye· zee schulen not be as C<sup>m</sup> 6<sup>m</sup> ypocritis/ þe whiche stondynge louen to preye in synagogis· & in corners of stretis· þat þei be seen of men/ treuly I seye to zou· þei hane receyuede here mede/ but whanne þou schalt preye· entre into þi couche/ & þe dore schitte· preye þi fadir in hidels/ & þi fadir þat seeh in hidels· schal zilde to þee/ soþely preying· nyl zee speke myche· as heþen men done/ for þei gessen þat þei ben herde· in here myche speche/ þerfore nyl zee be made liche to hem/ for zoure fadir woot what is nede to zou· bifore þat zee aren hym/ forsoþe þus zee schulen preye/ ¶ Oure fadir þat art in heuenes· halowide be þi name/ þi kyngdom come to/ be þi wille done· as in heuene & in erþe/ zif to vs þis day· oure brede ouer oþer substance/ and forzyue to vs oure dettis· as we forzyuen to oure dottours/ and leede vs not into temptacōn· but delpueer vs fro



## Matheu

al euyl amen/ (þat is so be it) forsoþe zif zee schulen forþue to men here synnes: And zoure heuenely fadir schal forþue to zou zoure trespassis/ soþely zif zee schulen not forþue to men: neþer zoure fadir schal forþue to zou zoure synnes/ but whanne zee fasten: nyl zee be made as ypocritis sorowful/ for þei putten here faces (oute of kyndely termes): þat þei seeme fastyng to men/ treuely I seye to zou: þei hane receyuede here mede/ but whanne þou fastist: anoynte þin hede & wasche þi face: þat þou be not seen fastyng to men: but to þi fadir þat is in hidels/ and þi fadir þat seþ in hidels: schal ȝue to þee/ ¶ Nyl zee tresoure to zou tresours in erþe: where ruste & mouzte distrueþ: and where þeues deluen oute & stelen/ but tresoure zee to zou tresours in heuene: where neþer ruste ne mouzte distrueþ: & where þeues deluen not oute: (or vndirmynen not): ne stelen/ forsoþe where þi tresoure is: þer & þin herte is/ þe lanterne of þi body: is þin eyze/ zif þin eyze be symple: al þi body schal be liztful/ but zif þin eyze be waywarde: al þi body schal be dirkeful/ þerfore zif þe lizte þat is in þee: be dirkenessis: howe greet schulen þe ilke dirkenessis ben/ ¶ A Roman may serue to two lordis/ forsoþe ouþer he schal hate the toon & loue þe toþer: ouþer he schal susteyne þe toon & dispise þe toþer/ zee mowne not serue to god & richessis/ þerfore I seye to zou: þat zee be not bisie to your lijf what zee schulen ete: oþer to zoure body wiþ what zee schulen be cloþide/ wher zoure lijf is not more þan mete: & zoure body more þan cloþ: biholde zee þe fleinge foulis of þe eire: for þei sownen not ne repen: neþer gederen into bernis: and zoure fadir of heuene feediþ hem/ wher zee ben not more worþe þan þei: soþely who of zou þenkynge may putte to his stature one cubite: and of cloþinge what ben zee besye: biholde zee þe lilies of þe feelde: how þei waren/ þei traueylen not: neþer spynnen/ treuely I seye to zou: for whi neþer salomon in al his glorie was coueride as one of þes/ for zif god cloþide þus þe hey of þe feelde þat to day is: & to morowe is sente into þe fourneys: how myche more zou of litil seiþ: þerfore nyl zee

## Matheu

zee be bisie seyinge/ what schule we ete · or what schulen we drynke/ or wiþ what schulen we be coueride/ forsoþe heþene men seeken alle þes þingis/ treuly zoure fadir woot þat zee hane nede to alle þes þingis/ þerfore seeke zee firste þe kyngdom of god & his riztwesnesse/ and alle þes þingis be caste to zou/ þerfore nyl zee be bisie into þe morowe/ for þe morowe day/ schal be bisie to it self/ soþely it sufficij to þe day/ his malice//

**M**il zee deme/ þat zee be not demede/ for in what C<sup>m</sup> 7<sup>m</sup>  
dome zee demen/ zee schulen be demede/ and in what mesure zee meten/ it schal be meten to zou/ but what seest þou a festu (or a litil mote) in þe yze of þi broþer/ and þou seest not a beem in þin owne yze/ or what maner seyste þou to þi broþer · broþer suffre þat I caste oute a festu fro þin yze/ and lo a beem is in þin owne yze/ ppocrite · caste oute firste þe beem of þin yze/ and þanne þou schalt se forto caste oute þe festu of þe eyze of þi broþer// ¶ Mil zee 3pue holy þing to houndis · neþer sende zee zoure margaritis (or precious stoones) bifore swyn · lestte paraventure · þei defoule hem wiþ here feet/ and lestte houndis turnyde togedir/ alto breke zou/ are zee & it schal be zouen to zou/ seeke zee & zee schulen fynde/ knocke zee/ & it schal be openyde to zou/ for eche þat ariþ/ takiþ/ and he þat sekþ/ findiþ/ and it schal be openyde/ to a man knockynge/ oþer who of zou is a man · whom zif his sone are breed/ wher he schal dresse to hym a stoon · oþer zif he schal are a fische/ wher he schal dresse to hym a serpent/ þerfore zif zee whanne zee ben euyl men · hane knowen for to 3iue good þingis zouen to zoure sones/ how myche more zoure fadir þat is in heuenes · schal 3pue good þingis to men aringe hym/ þerfore alle þingis · whateuer þingis zee wolen þat men done to zou/ and do zee to hem/ forsoþe þes þingis (ben) þe lawe & prophetis/ entre zee by þe streyte zate/ for þat zate þat lediþ to perdicōn (or dampnacion)/ is brode & þe weye large/ and þere ben many þat entren bi it/ how streyte is þe zate & narrow þe wey

## Matheu

wey þat lediþ to lijf: and þer ben fewe þat fynden it/ ¶ Per-  
sepue & flee fro false prophetis · þe whiche comen to zou in  
cloþinges of sheep: but wiþinne þei ben rauyschynge wolues/  
of here fruptis zee schulen knowe hem/ wheþer men gederen  
grapis of þornes: or figis of breris: so euery good tree: makith  
good fruptis/ soþely an euyl tree: makith euyl fruptis/ a good  
tree may not make euyl fruptis: neþer an euyl tree make good  
fruptis/ euery tree þat makith not good frupte: schal be kutte  
doun & schal be sente into þe fiir/ þerfore of here fruptis zee  
schulen knowe hem/ not eche man þat seiþ to me lorde lorde ·  
schal entre into þe kyngdome of heuenes: but he þat doiþ þe  
wille of my fadir þat is in heuenes · schal entre into þe kyng-  
dome of heuenes/ many schulen seye to me in þat day · lorde  
wheþer we hane not propheciede in þi name · & hane caste oute  
deuylis in þi name: & hane done many vertues in þi name: &  
and þanne I schal knoweleche to hem for I knewe zou neuer:  
departe away fro me · zee þat wirchen wickednesse/ þerfore  
eche man þat hereþ þes my wordis & doiþ hem: schal be made  
liche to a wise man · þat haþ bildide his hous vpon a stoon/  
and reyne came doun · & floodis camen · & windis blewen &  
ruscheden into þat hous: and it fel not doun · for it was  
founded on a stoon/ and euery man þat heris þes my wordis  
& doiþ hem not: is lyche to a man fool · þat haþ bildide his  
hous on grauel (or sonde) and reyne came doun · & floodis  
camen · & wyndis blewen · and þei hurleden into þat hous · &  
it fel doun · & þe fallynge doun þerof was greet/ ¶ And it  
is made whanne ih̄c hadde endide þes wordis: þe cumpanyes  
wondreden on his techynge/ soþely he was techynge hem as  
(aman) haupng power: and not as þe scribis of hem & þe pha-  
riseis//

## Matheu



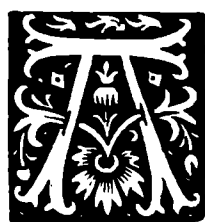
Orsope whanne ihc̄ had comen doune fro þe hil: C<sup>m</sup> 8<sup>m</sup>  
many cumpanyes folowiden hym/ and lo a leprous  
man comynge: worshipide hym seyinge/ lorde zif  
þou wolte: þou mayste make me clene/ and ihc̄  
holdynge forþ þe hande: touchide hym seyinge/ I wole · be  
þou made clene/ and anone: þe lepre of hym was clenȝide/ and  
ihc̄ seiþ to hym: seye þou to no man/ but go schewe þee to  
pristis: and offre þat zifte þat moyses comaundide · into wyt-  
nessynge tohem/ soþely whanne he had entride into caphar-  
naum: centurion eyzede to hym preynginge hym & seyde/ lorde  
my childe lijþ in þe hous sijk on þe palesie: and is euyl tur-  
mentide/ and ihc̄ seiþ to hym/ I schal come & I schal heele hym/  
and centurio answerynge: seiþ to hym/ lorde I am not worþi  
þ þou entre vndir my roof: but onely seye by worde · & my  
childe schal be heelide/ for whi & I am a man ordeynede vndir  
power: haupnge vndir me knyztis/ and I seye to þis · goo: and he  
goiþ/ and to anoper · come þou: & he comeþ/ and to my seruaunt ·  
do þou þis þing: and he doiþ/ soþely ihc̄ herynge þes þyngis:  
wondride · & seyde to men suynginge hym/ treuely I seye to zou · I  
fonde not so greet seiþ in isrl/ soþely I seye to zou · þat manye  
schulen come fro þe este · & weste · & schulen reste wiþ abraham &  
ysaac & iacob: in þe kyngdom of heuenes/ forsoþe þe sones of þe  
retyme schulen be caste oute: into vtmore dirkenessis/ þere schal  
be wepyng · & beetyng togedir ofteeþ/ and ihc̄ seyde to centu-  
rio/ go: and as þou haste bileuede: be it done to þee/ and þe childe  
was helide fro þat houre/ ¶ And whanne ihc̄ hadde comen  
into þe hous of symount petre: he siȝe his wifes modir liggyng  
& schake wiþ feueres/ and he touchide hir hande · & þe feuer  
leste hir/ and sche roos & seruyde hem/ soþely whanne þe euen-  
yng was made: þei brouzten to hym manye haupnginge deuylis/  
and he caste oute spritis by worde · & helide alle haupnginge puel:  
þat it schulde be fulfild · þat þing þat was seyde by ysaye þe  
prophete · seynge/ he took oure infirmytees: and bare seeke-  
nessis/

## Matheu

neffis/ soþely ih̄c seinge manye cumpanyes aboute hym: bad his disciplis go ouer þe water/ and one scribe (or a man of lawe) compynge to: seyde to hym/ mayster I schal sue zee whidir euer þou schalt go/ and ih̄c seyde to hym/ foris hane dichis (or borowis) & briddis of þe eyre hane neffis: but mannes sone haþ not wher he reste his heed/ soþely anoper of his disciplis seyde to hym/ lordde suffre me to go firste & birie my fadir/ forsoþe ih̄c seyde to hym/ sue þou me: & lete deade men birie here deade men/ and ih̄u steyzinge into a litil schippe: his disciplis sueden hym/ and lo a greet styrpunge was made in þe see: so þat þe litil schippe was hilide wiþ watwis · but he slepte/ and his disciplis camen nyȝ to hym: and reyseden hym seyinge/ lordde saue vs: we perischen/ and ih̄c seyde to hem/ what ben zee of litil seiþ agaste/ þanne he risynge comaundide to þe wyndis & þe see: and a greet peesiblenesse is made/ forsoþe men wondreden: seying/ what maner (man) is (he) þis: for þe wyndis & see obescen to hym: and whanne ih̄c had comyn ouer þe water: into the cuntree of men of genazareth: two men haupnge deuelis runnen to hym goinge oute fro biriels · ful feerse (or wickide): so þat noman myȝte passe by þe weye/ and lo þei crieden seyinge/ what to vs & to þee ih̄u: þe sone of god: hast þou comen hidir bifore þe tyme · for to turmente vs: soþely a flocke (or droue) of many swyn hoggis lesowynge: was not fer fro hem/ but þe deuelys prepeden him: seyinge/ zif þou castist vs oute hens: sende vs into þe droue of hoggis/ and he seiþ to hem/ go zee/ and þei goinge oute: wenten into swyn/ and lo in a greet birre · al þe droue wenten hedelynge into þe see: & þei ben deade in watris/ forsoþe þe herdis fledden aweye: and compynge into þe cytee · tolden alle þes þingis: and of hem þat hadden þe fendis/ and lo al þe cytee wenten azens ih̄u: metynge hym/ and hym sene þei prepeden þat he schulde passe fro here coostis//

And

## Matheu



**A**nd ihū goinge vp · into aboot · passide ouer þe water · C<sup>m</sup> 9<sup>m</sup>  
& came into his cytee/ and lo þei offredento hym a  
man sijk in palestie/ liggynge in a bedde/ forsoþe ihc  
seinge þe seiþ of hem/ seyde to þe man sijk in palestie/  
sone haue þou triste/ þi synnes ben forzouen to þee/ and lo  
summe of þe scribis seyden wiþinne hem self/ þis blaffemeþ/  
and whanne ihc had seen here þouztis/ he seyde/ wherto þenke  
zee euyl þingis in zoure hertis/ what is lizter to seye · pi synnes  
ben forzouen to þee/ oþer to seye · rise þou & walke/ forsoþe  
þat zee wite · þat mannes sone haþ power to forzyue synnes  
in erþe/ þanne he seyde to þe sijk man in palestie/ rise vp ·  
take þi bed · & go into þin hous/ and he roos & wente into his  
hous/ soþely þe cumpanges seeinge/ dredde & glorifieden god/  
þat zæue suche power to men/ and whanne ihc passide þens/  
he siþe a man sittynge in a tolboþe/ matheu by name/ and he  
seyde to hym/ sue þou me/ and he risynge/ folowide hym/  
and it is done hym syttinge at þe mete in þe hous/ lo many  
puplicans & synful men comynge/ saten at þe mete wiþ ihū &  
his disciplis/ and pharisees seinge/ seyden to his disciplis/ whi  
etiþ zoure mayster wiþ publicans & synful men/ and ihc  
herynge/ seyde a leche is not nede to men þat faren wel/ but  
to men haupng euyl/ soþely zee goinge/ lerneþ what it is · I  
wole mercy & not sacrifice/ forsoþe I came not to clepe riztful  
men/ but synful men/ ¶ Þanne þe disciplis of Ioon camen  
nyz to hym seyinge/ whi we & pharisees fasten ofte/ but þi dis-  
ciplis fasten not/ and ihc seyde to hem/ wheþer þe sones of þe  
spouse (or housbonde) motwne weyle (or mourne) how longe  
þe spouse is wiþ hem/ soþely dages schulen come · whanne þe  
spouse schal be taken away fro hem/ and þanne þei schulen  
faste/ soþely no man sendiþ in a medelynge of rude (or netwe)  
cloþ/ into an olde cloþ/ & a worse kuttynge is made/ neþer  
men senden newe wijn into olde botels (or wijn vessels)/ elles  
þe wijn vessels ben broken · & þe wijn is sched oute/ and þe  
wijn

## Matheu

wijn vessels perischen/ but men senden newe wyne into newe  
wijn vessels: and bope ben kepte/ ¶ Ihu spekynge hes þingis  
to hem: lo one prynce came to · & worschipide him · seyinge/  
lorde my douzter is now deade · but come þou & putte þin  
hande vpon hir: and sche schal lyue/ and ihc risynge suede hym  
& his disciplis/ and lo a womman þat suffride þe flure (or ren-  
nyng of blood) twelue zeer: came to byhynde · & touchide þe  
hemme of his clooth/ soþely sche seyde wiþinne hir self/ zif I  
touche onely þe clothes of hym: I schal be saaf/ and ihc turnyde  
& seinge hire: seyde douzter hane þou triste: þi feiþ haþ made  
þee saaf/ and þe womman was made saaf fro þat houre/ and  
whanne ihc came in to þe hous of þe prynce · & siȝe mynstrels  
& þe cumpanye makynge noyse: he seyde go zee aweye/ for þe  
wenche is not deade: but slepiþ/ and þei scorneden hym/ and  
whanne þe cumpanye was caste oute: he entride in & helde hire  
hande/ and þe wenche roos vp/ and his fame wente oute into  
al þe lande/ ¶ And ihu passynge þens: two blynde men sueden  
hym · crynge & seyinge/ þou sone of dauid: hane mercy of vs/  
soþely whanne þei camen hoom: þe blynde men camen nyȝ  
to hym/ and ihc seiþ to hem/ what wolen zee þat I do to zou?  
and þei seyden lorde: þat oure eyzen ben openyde/ and ihc  
seyde/ bileue zee: þat I may do þis þing to zou? þei seyn/  
soþely (or zhe) lorde/ þanne he touchide her eyzen: seyinge vp  
zoure feiþ: be it done to zou/ and þe yzen of bope · ben open-  
yde/ and ihc þretenyde to hem: seyinge/ se zee þat no man  
wite: but þei goinge oute: defameden hym þourȝ al þat lande/  
¶ Soþely þei gone oute: lo þei offreden to hym a doumbe  
man haupnge a deupl/ and whanne þe deupl was caste oute:  
þe doumbe man spac/ and þe cumpanyes wondriden seyinge/  
it apperide neuer so in isrl: but þe pharisees seyden/ in þe  
prince of deuplis he castiþ oute deuplis/ and ihc cumpasside  
aboute alle cytees & castels techynge in synagogis of hem · &  
prechyng þe gospel of þe kyngdom helynge alle langwischyng  
(or ache): and al seekenesse/ forsoþe ihc seyng þe cumpanyes ·  
hadden

## Matheu

hadden reuþe on hem; for þei weren traueþlide & liggyngē as ſchepe not hauynge a ſcheperde/ þanne he ſeyde to his diſci-  
plis/ ſoþely þer is myche rīp corne; but fewe werkemen/ þer-  
fore preye zee þe lorde of þe rīp corne; þat he ſende werkemen  
into his rīp corne//



**A**nd þe twelue diſciplis gederide to gedir; he ȝyue to C<sup>m</sup> 10<sup>m</sup>  
hem power of vnclene ſpiritis · þat þei ſchulden  
caſte hem oute; and þat þei ſchulden heele al ache  
& al ſekenefſe/ þes ben þe names of twelue apoſtliſ/  
þe fiſt Symount þat is clepide Petre & Andrewe his broþer ·  
Philip & Bartholomeu · James of zebede & ioon his broþer ·  
Thomas · & Matheu puplican · & James alphei & Cadee ·  
Symount canane & Judas ſcarioth; þe whiche bitrayede criſt/  
Ih̄c ſente þes twelue; comaundyngē to hem & ſeyinge/ go zee  
not into þe wey of heþen men · & entre zee not into þe cytees  
of ſamaritans; but raþer go zee to þe ſcheep of þe hous of iſrt ·  
þat perſchiden/ Soþely zee goinge; preche ſeyinge/ for þe  
kynghdom of heuenes ſchal neyze/ heele zee ſeekē men · vpreyſe  
zee deade men · clenſe zee meſels; caſte zee oute deuēlis/ frely  
zee haue taken; frely ȝyue zee/ nyl zee welden golde neþer ſil-  
uer in zoure girdels; not a ſcrippe in þe weye · neþer two  
cootis · neþer ſchoon · neþer zerde/ for a werkeman iſ worþi  
his mede/ into what euer cytee or caſtel zee ſchulen entre;  
ariþ who þerinne iſ worþi · & þere dwelle zee til þat zee gone  
oute/ forſoþe zee entryngē into an hous; grete zee (or ſalute  
zee) it · ſeyinge pees to þis hous/ and ſoþely zif þat hous be  
worþi; zoure pees ſchal come on it/ forſoþe zif þat hous be not  
worþi; zoure pees ſchal turne azen to zou/ and who euer ſchal  
not receyue zou · neþer here zoure wordis · zee goinge forþe  
fro þat hous or cytee · ſmytiþ aweye þe duſte fro zoure feet/  
trewely I ſeye to zou · it ſchal be more ſuffrable to þe lande of  
men of ſodom & gomor in þe day of iugement; þan to þat cy-  
tee/ lo · I ſende zou as ſcheep; in þe myddil of wolues/ þerfore

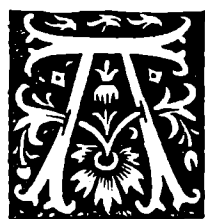


## Matheu

be zee war (or wise bifore) as serpentis: and symple as  
douues/forsoþe be zee war of men/for þei schulen take zou in  
counseylis: and þei schulen beete zou in here synagogis/ and  
to presidentis (or mayres) & to kyngis: zee schulen be ledde  
for me: into witnesynge to hem & heþen men/ but whanne  
þei schulen take (or bitraye) zou: nyl zee þenke how or what  
þing zee speken/forsoþe it schal be zouen to zou in þat houre:  
what zee schulen speke/ for it ben not zee þat speken: but þe  
spirit of zoure fadir þat spekeþ in zou/ soþely þe broþer schal  
take þe broþer into deþ: & þe fadir þe sone/ and sones schulen  
rise azenes fadir & modir: and schulen turment hem by deþ/  
and zee schulen be in hate to alle men: for my name/ forsoþe  
he þat schal dwelle stille vnto þe ende: þis schal be saaf/ soþely  
whanne þei schulen pursue zou in þis cytee: flee zee into ano-  
þer/ treuly I seye to zou: zee schulen not ende þe cytees of  
isrl: til þat mannes (sonne) come/ þe disciple is not aboue his  
mayster: ne þe seruaunt: aboue his lorde/ zif þei hane clepide  
þe housbonde man (or fadir of meyne) belzebub: how myche  
more his housholde meyne/ þerfore drede zee not hem/ for  
noþing is coueride (or hid): þat schal not be schewyde/ and  
no þing is pryuey þat schal not be wiste/ þat þing þat I seye  
to zou in dirkeness: seye zee in þe lizte and preche zee vpon  
roues: þat þyng þat zee heren in ere/ and nyl zee drede hem  
þat flee þe body: trewely þei moun not flee þe soule/ but  
raþer drede zee hym þat may leese soule & body into helle/  
wheþer two sparowis ben not solde for one halpenge: & one  
of hem schal not falle on þe erþe: with outen zoure fadir/  
forsoþe alle þe heres of zoure heede ben notwimbride/ þerfore  
nyl zee drede: zee ben better þan many sparowis/ þerfore euery  
man þat schal knoweleche me bifore men: and I schal knowe-  
leche hym bifore my fadir þat is in heuenes/ soþely he þat schal  
denye me bifore men: & I schal denye hym bifore my fadir þat  
is in heuenes/ ¶ Nyl zee deme þat I came to sende pees into  
þe erþe: I came not to sende pees into þe erþe: but swerde/  
soþely

## Matheu

tohely I came not\* to departe a man azenes his fadir · & þe [<sup>\* Sic in MS.</sup>  
 douzter azenes hir modir · & þe sones wiif azenes hire hous-  
 bondis modir/ and þe enemyes of a man: (ben) his homely  
 meyne/ he þat loueþ fadir or modir more þan me: is not wor-  
 þi of me/ and he þat loueþ sone or douzter ouer me: is not  
 worþi of me/ and he þat takeþ not his crosse & sueþ me: is not  
 worþi of me/ he þat findiþ his soule (þat is temporal lijf): schal  
 leese it/ and he þat leeseþ his soule (þat is his lijf) for me: schal  
 fynde it/ he þat receyueþ zou: receyueþ me/ and he þat re-  
 ceyueþ me: receyueþ him þat sente me/ he þat receyueþ a pro-  
 phete · in þe name of a prophete: schal take þe mede of a pro-  
 phete/ and he þat receyueþ a iuste man: schal take þe mede of  
 a iuste man/ and whoeuer ȝyueþ drynke to one of þes leeste:  
 a cuppe of colde water onely · in þe name of a disciple: treuly  
 I seye to zou: he schal not leese his meede//



**A**nd it is done whanne ihc hadde endide: he com- C<sup>m</sup> II<sup>m</sup>  
 aundyng to his twelue disciplis: passide fro þens:  
 for to teche & preche in þe cytees of hem/ fforsoþe  
 whanne Ioon in bondis hadde herde þe werkis of  
 crist: he sendyng two of his disciplis · seyde to hym/ art þou  
 he þat art to come: or we abiden anoþer? and ihc answer-  
 ynge: seyde to hem/ zee goinge telliþ azen to Ioon: þo þingis  
 þat zee hane herde & seen/ blynde men seen · crokide men wan-  
 dren · mesels bene made clene · deese men heren · deade men  
 risen azen · pore men ben taken to prechyng of þe gospel · (or  
 ben made keepers of þe gospel/) and he is bleside: þat schal  
 not be sclanderide in me/ tohely hem goyng aweye: Ihc  
 bigan forto seye of Ioon to þe cumpanyes/ what þing wenten  
 zee oute forto see in deserte? wheþer a reed watwide wiþ  
 wynde? but what þing wenten zee oute for to se? wheþer a  
 man cloþide wiþ softe þingis? lo þei þat ben cloþide wiþ softe  
 þingis: ben in housis of kyngis/ but what þing wenten zee  
 oute to see? wheþer a prophete? ȝhe I seye to zou: & more  
 þan

## Matheu

þan a prophet/ for þis is he of whom it is written/ lo I sende myn aungel bifore þi face: þat schal make reedy þe weye bifore þee/ treuely I seye to zou þer roos none more þan Ioon baptist: amonge children of wymmen/ forsoþe & he þat is laste in þe kyngdom of heuenes: is more þan he/ soþely fro þe dayes of Ioon baptist til now: þe kyngdom of heuenes suffriþ strengthe (or violence) · & violent men raupfchen it/ for alle prophetis & þe lawe til Ioon baptist prophecieden/ and zif zee wolen receyue: he is helie þat is to come/ he þat haþ eris of herpynges: here he/ but to whom schal I gesse þis generacōn liche? it is liche to children sittynge in a chepynges: þe whiche crynge to here peeris · seyn/ we hane sungen to zou: and zee hane not lippide (or daunside)/ we hane mournyde to zou: and zee hane not weylide/ soþely Ioon came · neþer etynge ne drynckynge: and þei seyn he haþ a deupl/ þe sone of man came etynge & drynckynge: and þei seyn/ lo a man deuourer (or gloton) · & drynker of wijn · & frende of puplicans & synful men: and wisdom is iustifiede of here sones/ ¶ Þanne ihc began to seye reproue to cytees · in whiche ful manye vertues of hym ben done: for þei diden not penaunce/ ¶ Woo to þee corozaym · wo to þee bethsayda: for zif þe vertues þat ben done in zou · hadden ben done in tyre & sydon: sumtyme þei hadden done penaunce in heyre & asche/ neþeles I seye · it schal be softer (or lesse peyne) to tyre & sydon þan to zou: in þe day of doom/ and þou capharnaum: wheþer til into heuenes þou schalt be reride vp: þou schalt go doune til into helle/ for zif þe vertues þat ben done in þee: hadden ben done in sodom: parauenture þei schulden hane dwellide til into þis day/ neþeles I seye to zou · for to þe lande of sodom it schal be softer (or lesse peyne) in þe day of doom: þan to þee/ I knoweleche to þee fadir lorde of heuene & erþe · for þou hast hidde þes þingis fro wise men & war (or worldly slyze men): and hast schewide hem to litil men/ so fadir: for whi · so it was plesynge bifore þee/ alle þingis ben taken to me: of my fadir/ and no  
man

## Matheu

man knowiþ þe sone: no but þe fadir/ ne any man knewe þe fadir no but þe sone · and to whom þe sone wolde schewe/  
¶ Alle zee þat traueplen & ben chargide · comeþ to me: & I schal refresche (or fulfille) zou/ take zee my zok vpon zou · & lerne zee of me · for I am mylde & meke in herte · & zee schulen fynde reste to zoure soulis/ for my zok is swete (or softe): and my charge lizte (or esy)//



¶ At þat tyme ih̄c wente by cornes on þe saboth day/ C<sup>m</sup> 12<sup>m</sup>  
forsoþe his disciplis hungryng: bygunnen to plucke eris of corne & to ete/ soþely pharisees seynge: seydē to hym/ lo þi disciplis done þat þing þat is not leueful to hem: for to do in sabotis/ and he seyde to hem/ whether zee hane red what dauyd dide whanne he hungride · & þei þat weren wiþ hym/ how he entride into þe hous of god · & ete loues of proposicion (or puttyng forþ) · þe whiche loues was not leueful to hym to ete · neþer to hem þat weren wiþ hym: no but to pristi onely/ or whether zee hane not red in þe lawe · for in sabotis · pristi in þe temple defoulen þe sabotis · & þei ben wiþouten grete synnes/ soþely I seye to zou · for þis is more þan þe temple/ forsoþe zif zee wisten what is þis · I wole mercy & not sacrifice: zee schul neuer hane condempnyde innocentis/ treuely mannes sone is zhe lord: of þe saboth/ and whanne he passide þens: he came into þe sinagoge of hem and lo a man haupnge a drie hande · & þei axeden hym seyinge/ zif it is leueful to heele in þe saboth: þat þei schulden accuse hym/ soþely he seyde to hem/ who schal be a man of zou þat hap one scheep · & zif it schal falle doune into a dyche in þe sabotis: whether he schal not holde · and lifte it vp/ how myche more is a man better þan a scheep/ and so it is leueful to do good in þe saboth/ þanne he seyde to þe man/ stretche forþe þin hande/ and he strauzte forþ: and it is restoryde to helpe: as þe toþer/ forsoþe þe pharisees goinge oute · maden a counseyl azenes hym: how þei schulden leese hym/ soþely ih̄u wit-  
ynge:

## Matheu

ynge: wente away þens/ and many sueden hym: and he helide hem alle/ and he comaundide to hem: þat þei schulden not make hym opyn (or knowen) · þat þat þing schulde be fulfild · þat was seyde by ysaie þe prophete: seyinge/ lo my chosen childe whom I hane chosen: my derlynge · in whom it hath wel pleside to my soule/ I schal putte my spirit on hym: and he schal telle doom to heben men/ he schal not stryue ne crie: neher any man schal heere his voyce in stretis/ he schal not breke to gedir a schaken reed · & he schal not quenche smokynge flare · til þat he caste oute doom to victorie & heben men schulen hope in his name/ þanne a blynde man & a dumble haupnge a deupl · was offride vp til hym/ and he heelide hym: so þat he spac & sūze/ and alle þe cumpanyes wondriden & seyden · wher þis be þe sone of dauid? but þe pharisees herynge · seyden/ he þis castith not oute fendis: no but in belzebub prynce of fendes/ soþely ih̄c witynge here þouztis: seyde to hem/ eche kyngdom departide azenes hym self: schal be desolate (or discomfortide)/ and eche cytee or hous departide azenes itself: schal not stonde/ and zif sathanas caste oute sathanas: he is departide azenes hymself/ þerfore how schal hys kyngdom stonde? and zif I in belzebub caste oute deuplis: in whom (or whos myzte) zoure sones casten oute? þerfore þei schul be zoure domesmen/ forsoþe zif I in þe spirit of god caste oute fendis: þerfore þe kyngdom of god is comen into zou (or amonge zou)/ oþer how may any man entre into þe hous of a stronge man · & take away his vessels: no but firste he schal bynde þe stronge man · & þanne he schal raupsche his hous/ he þat is not wip me: is azenes me/ and he þat gederith not to gedir wip me: scaterith abrood/ þerfore I saye to zou al synne & blassemye · schal be forzouen to men · but þe spirit of blasfemye: schal not be forzouen/ and who euer schal seye a worde azenes mannes sone: it schal be forzouen to hym/ forsoþe he þat seye a worde azenes þe holy gost: it schal not be forzouen to hym · neher in þis worlde ne in þe toþer/ oþer make zee þe tree

## Matheu

tree good & his fruyte good: oþer make zee þe tree euyl: & his fruyte euyl/ forsoþe a tree is knowen of þe fruyte/ zee generacōn of neddris how mown zee speke goode þingis whanne zee ben euyl/ soþely þe mouþe spekiþ: of þe greet plente of þe herte/ a good man bryngiþ forþ good þingis: of good tresoure/ forsoþe I seye to zou/ for whi of euery ydil worde þat men speken: þei schulen zilde resoun þer of in þe day of doom/ for of þi wordis þou schalt be iustificed: and of þi wordis þou schalt be dampnyde/ ¶ Þanne summe of þes scribis & pharisees answereden to hym: seyinge/ mayster we wolen se a token of þee/ þe whiche answerynge: seih to hem/ an euyl generacōn and aboutrer: seekiþ a token/ and token schal not be zouen to it: no but þe token of ionas þe prophet/ for as Jonas was in the wombe of a whalle þre dayes & þre nyztis: so mannes sone schal be in þe herte of þe erþe: þre dayes & þre nyztis/ men of nyngue schulen rise in doom wiþ þis generacōn & þei schulen condempne it: for þei diden penaunce in þe prechyng of Jonas/ and lo heere more þan Jonas/ þe queen of þe south schal rise in doom wiþ þis generacōn & schal condempne it: for sche came fro þe endis of þe erþe: for to heere þe wisdom of salamon/ & lo heere (is) more þan salamon/ forsoþe whanne an vnclene spirite schal go oute fro a man: he goiþ bi drye places seekynge and he findiþ not/ þanne he seih/ I schal turne azen into myn hous: fro whens I came oute/ & he comynge fyndiþ it voyde: clenȝide wiþ besemes: & mayde fagre/ þanne he goiþ & takih seuene oþer spiritis wiþ hym: worse þanne hymself: and þei entrynge in dwelle here/ and þe laste þingis of þat man ben made worse þan þe former/ so it schal be into þis werste generacōn/ ¶ Zit hym spekyng to þe cumpanyes of puple: lo hys modir & his breþeren stoden wiþ oute forþ: seekyng for to speke to hym/ soþely sum man seyde to hym/ lo þi modir and þi breþeren stonde wiþ oute: seekynge þee/ and he answeryng to þe man seyinge to hym: seih/ who is my modir: & who ben my breþeren/ and he holdynge forþ hys hande into  
his

## Matheu

his disciplis: seyde/ lo my modir · & my breþeren/ treuely  
whoeuer doiþ þe wille of my fadir þat is in heuenes: he is my  
broþer & sister & modir//

C<sup>m</sup> 13<sup>m</sup>



[\* Sic in MS.]

¶ þat day ihc goinge oute of þe hous: satte biſidis  
þe ſee/ and manye cumpanyes of puple ben gederide  
to hym: ſo þat he ſtepyng vp into a boot · ſatte/ &  
al þe cumpanye ſtood in þe brinke/ and he ſpac to  
hem many þingis in parablis: ſeyinge/ lo he þat ſowiþ: goiþ  
oute to ſowe his ſeed/ and þe while he ſowiþ: ſumme felden  
biſidis þe weye/ and briddis of þe erþe\* camen: and eten hem/  
ſohely oþer (ſeedis) felden into ſtonye places: where þei had-  
den not myche erþe and anone þei ben ſprungen vp: for þei  
hadden not depneſſe of þe erþe/ ſohely þe ſunne ſprunge vp:  
þei ſwaleden (or brennten for heete) · & for þei hadden not  
root þei drieden vp/ forſoþe oþer (ſeedis) fellen amonge  
þornes · & þe þornes weren vp/ and ſtrangeliden hem/ but oþer  
(ſeedis) felden into good lande: and ʒauen fruyte · ſumme an  
hundride folde · & an oþer ſixty folde · & an oþer þritty folde/ he  
þat haþ eris of herpynge: here he/ and disciplis comynge to:  
ſeyden to hym/ whi ſpekist þou in parablis to hem? þe whiche  
anſwerynge: ſeith to hem/ for to ʒou it is ʒouen for to knowe  
þe myſterie (or pryuate) of þe kyngdom of heuenes: but it is  
not ʒouen to hem/ for it ſchal be ʒouen to hym þat haþ: and he  
ſchal haue plente/ treuly who þat haþ not: þat þing þat he is  
ſeen to haue · ſchal he taken away fro hym/ þerfore I ſpeke to  
hem in parablis · for þei ſeinge ſeen not · & þei herpynge heren  
not neþer vnderſtonden: þat þe prophecie of yſaye ſeyinge be  
fulfilde in hem/ wiþ herpynge ʒee ſchulen here: & ʒee ſchulen  
not vnderſtonde/ and ʒee ſeing ſchulen ſee: & ʒee ſchulen not  
ſe/ for þe herte of þis puple is infattide · and þei herden gre-  
uouſly wiþ eris · & þei hane cloſide þer yʒen: þat ſumtyme þei  
ſeen wiþ yʒen · & wiþ eris heren · & vnderſtonde in herte · & þei  
be to gedir turnyde: & I heele hem/ forſoþe ʒoure yʒen þat  
ſeen

## Matheu

ſcen ben bleſſide: and zoure eris þat heren/ forſoþe I ſeye treuþe to zou/ for many prophetis & iuſte men coueytiden to ſe þo þingis þat zee ſeen: & þei ſizen not/ and to here þe þingis þat zee heren: and þei herden not/ þerfore here zee þe parable of þe ſowynge (man) • eche þat heriþ þe worde of þe rewme & vnderſtondiþ not: þe yuþl ſpirit cometh and rauyſchiþ þat • þat is ſowen in his herte: þis is þat is ſowen in his herte: þis is þat is ſowen biſidis þe wey/ ſoþely he þat is ſowen on þe ſoon: þis it is þat hereþ þe worde of god • & anone wiþ ioy takiþ it/ forſoþe he haþ no root in hym ſelf: but it is temporal • (þat is it laſtiþ not but a litil tyme) • forſoþe tribulacōn and perſecucōn made for þe worde: anone he is ſclaunderide/ but he þat is ſowen in þornes: is þis þat heriþ þe worde • & þe biſynneſſe of þis worlde • & þe falſeneſſe of richeſſis • ſtrangeliþ þe worde: and it is made wiþouten fruyte/ but he þat is ſowen into good lande: is þis þat heriþ þe worde • & vnderſtondiþ & bringiþ forþ fruyte/ and ſoþely ſum makith an hundriþ folde • treuly anoþer ſixty folde • forſoþe anoþer þritty folde/ ¶ Anoþer parable ihc put forþ to hem: ſeyinge/ þe kingdom of heuenes is made liche to a man • þat ſewe good ſede • in his feelde/ but whanne men ſlepten: his ennemye came • & ſewe aboue darnel (or cockel) • in þe mydel of wheet: and wente away/ ſoþely whanne þe erbe hadde growen & made fruyte: þanne þe darnels (or cokkils) appereden/ forſoþe þe ſeruauntis of þe houſbonde man: comynge nyȝ: ſeyden to hym/ lorde wher þou haſt not ſowen good ſeed in þi feelde: wher of þanne haþ it darnel (or cokkle)? and he ſeiþ to hem/ þe man enemye: haþ done þis þing/ treuely þe ſeruauntis ſeyden to hym/ wolte þou we go: and gaderen hem? and he ſeyþ/ nay leſte parauentur zee gaderynge darnels (or cokkels): drawe vp by þe root to gedir wiþ hem & þe wheet/ ſuffre zee hem boþe • ware til to ripe corne • & in tyme of riȝp corne: I ſchal ſeye to repers/ firſte gadir zee to gedir darnels (or cokkils) & bindiþ hem to gedir in knytkchis (or ſmale bundels) • for to be brente:



## Matheu

but gadir zee wheet into my berne/ Anoper parable ihc putte forþ to hem: seyinge/ þe kyngdom of heuenes is lijk to a corne of seneney · þe whiche a man takyng: sowe in his feelde/ þe whiche treuely is lesse of alle seedis/ but whanne it haþ wares: it is most of alle wortis/ & is made a tree: so þat briddis of þe eyre comen & dwellen in bowis (or braunchis) herof/ ¶ Anoper parable ihc spac to hem/ þe kyngdom of heuenes is lijk to sourdouz · þe which taken: a womman hid in þre mesures of mele: til it were al sourdowide/ ihc spac alle þes þingis in parablis to þe cumpanyes of puplis: and he spac not to hem wiþouten parablis · þat it schulde be fulfilde þat þing þat is seyde by þe prophete: seyinge/ I schal open my mouþ in parablis: I schal bulke oute (or telle oute) · hid þingis fro makynge of þe worlde/ þanne þe cumpanyes lefte: he came into an hous/ and hys disciplis camen nyȝ to hym · seyinge expoune to us þe parable of darnels (or cockels) of þe felde/ þe whiche answerynge: seiþ/ he þat sowiþ good seed: is mannes sone/ soþely þe feelde: is þe worlde/ but þe good seed: þes ben sones of þe kyngdom/ darnels (or cockels): forsoþe þes ben euyl sones/ but þe enemye þat sowiþ hem: is þe fende/ but þe riipe corne: is þe endynge of þe worlde/ soþely þe repers: ben aungels/ þerfore as darnels ben gederide to gedir & brennte in fȳr: so it schal be in þe endynge of þe worlde/ mannes sone schal sende his aungels · & þei schulen gedir of his rewme alle sclaunderers: and hem þat done wickidnesse/ and þei schulen sende hem: into þe chymney of fȳr/ þer schal be wepyng and betyng togedir of teþ/ þanne iuste men schulen thyne as þe sunne: in þe rewme of here fadir/ he þat haþ eris of helyng here he/ ¶ þe kyngdom of heuenes is lijk to tresour hid in a feelde/ þe whiche a man þat fyndiþ: hidiþ/ & for ioye of it he goiþ & selliþ alle þingis þat he haþ: and bieþ þe ilke feelde/ ¶ Estesone þe kyngdome of heuenes is lijk to a man marchant: seekyng good margaritis/ soþely one precious margarite founden: he wente & selde alle þingis þat he hadde and bouȝte

## Matheu

bouzte it/ ¶ Este þe kyngdome of heuenes is lijk to a nette sente into þe see; and of al kynde of fysches gederynge/ þe whiche whanne it was fulfildē · men leedyngē oute · & settyng bysides þe brynke · cleniden þe good into here vessels; but þei senten oute þe euyl/ so it schal be in þe endyngē of þe worlde/ Aungelis schulen go oute · & schulen departe euyl men · fro þe mydel · of iuste men; and þei schulen sende hem into þe chymney of fyr/ þere schal be wepyngē & betyngē togedir of teeh/ hane zee vnderstonde alle þes þingis; þei seyn to hym/ zhe/ he seiþ to hem/ þerfore euery writer tauzte in þe kyngdome of heuenes; is lijk an housbondeman · þat bryngiþ forþ of his trefour; newe þingis and olde/ ¶ And it is done whanne ihc hadde endide þes parablis; he passide fro þens/ and he comyng into his cuntre; tauzte hem in here synagogis; so þat þei wondriden & seyden/ wher of to hym þis wisdom & vertues; wheþer is not þis þe sone of a smyth (or carpenter); wher his modir be not seyd marie · & his breþeren James & Ioseph & Symount & Judas; and his sistris; wher þei alle ben not at vs; þerfore wherof to hym; alle þes þingis; and so þei weren sclaunderide in hym/ forsoþe ihu seyde to hem a prophet is not wiþ oute worschip; no but in his owne cuntre · & in his owne hous/ and he dide not þere many vertues; for þe vnbileue of hem//



And þat tyme heroude tetrarchs þat is prynce of þe C<sup>m</sup> 14<sup>m</sup>  
furþe parte · herde þe fame of ihu; and seyde to his children/ þis is Jon baptist/ he haþ risen fro deade; and þerfore vertues wirchen in hym/ forsoþe heroude heelde Jon · & bonde hym · & putte hym into prisoun; for herodias þe wife of his broþer/ for Jon seyde to hym/ it is not bileueful to þee; for to haue hir/ and he willynge to flee hym · dredde þe puple; for þei hadden hym as a prophet/ forsoþe in þe day of heroudis birþe · þe douzter of herodias lepte in þe mydil; and pleside to heroude/ wherfore wiþ an oþe he bihizte

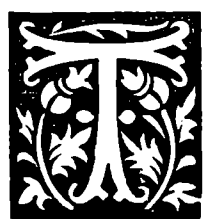
## Matheu

bihiȝte for to ȝyue to hyr: what euer þyng ſche had axide of  
 hym/ and ſche bifore monestiȝde (or warnyȝde) of hire modir:  
 ſeiþ/ ȝiue þou to me hiȝdir: þe heede of ion baptiſt in a diſche/  
 and þe kyng was ſorowful for þe oþe · and for hem þat ſaten  
 to gedir at þe mete: he comaundide to be ȝouen/ & he ſente: &  
 bihedide Joon in þe priſoune/ and hiſ hede iſ brouȝte to in a  
 diſche · & it iſ ȝouen to þe wenche · & ſche bare it to hir modir/  
 and hiſ diſciplis comen to · token hyſ body & biryeden it/ and  
 þei comynge: tolden to ihū/ ¶ Þe whiche þing whanne ihc had  
 herde: he went fro þens in a boot into deſerte place biſidiſ/  
 and whanne þe cumpanyes of puple hadden herde: þei folow-  
 iden hym & on þere feete fro cytees/ and ihc goinge oute ſiȝe a  
 greet multitude of puple · & hadde reuþe on hem: & heeliȝde þe  
 ſiȝk men of hem/ ſoþely þe euenyng maad: hiſ diſciplis camen  
 nyȝ to hym ſeyinge/ þe place iſ deſerte: and þe houre haþ not\*  
 paſſide/ leeſe þe cumpanyes of puple · þat þei goinge into caſ-  
 tels · biȝge metis to hem/ forſoþe ihc ſeyȝde to hem: þei hane  
 not neede/ ȝyue ȝee hem for to ete/ þei anſweriden/ we hane  
 not here: no but fyue looues & two fyſchis/ þe whiche ſeyþ to  
 hem/ brynge ȝee hem hiȝdir to me/ and whanne he hadde com-  
 aundide þe cumpanyes for to ſitte on þe hey · fyue looues &  
 two fyſchis taken: he biholdyng into heuenes · bleſſide brake  
 & ȝaue to hiſ diſciplis/ ſoþely þe diſciplis ȝauen to þe cump-  
 nyes/ and alle eten & weren fulfilȝde/ and þei token þe relifes  
 of broken gobitis (or metis) · twelue cofyns ful/ forſoþe þe  
 nowmbre of men etyng: was fyue þouſande of men · out ta-  
 ken wymmen & litil children/ ¶ And anone ihū compelliȝde  
 (or comaundide) þe diſciplis for to go into a boot · & go bifore  
 hym ouer þe ſee: til þat he leſte þe cumpanyes/ and þe cum-  
 panys leſte: he ſtepyȝede up into an hil al one for to preye/  
 ſoþely þe euenyng made: he was þere al one/ ſoþely þe boot  
 in þe myȝdel ſee: was þrowen wiþ watwis/ forſoþe þe winde  
 was contrarie/ but in þe furþe wakyng of þe nyȝt: he came to  
 hem walkyng vpon þe ſee/ and þei ſeinge hym walkyng  
 vpon

[\* Sic in MS.]

## Matheu

vpon þe see: weren distourblide seyinge/ for it is a fantum/ and  
 for drede þei cryeden/ and anone ihc̄ spac to hem: seyinge/  
 haue zee triste/ I am: nyl zee drede/ soþely petre answeryng:  
 seyde/ lorde zif þou art: comaunde me for to come to þee vpon  
 þe wattris/ and he seiþ come þou/ and petre goinge doune fro  
 þe boot: walkide on þe wattris for to come to ihū/ treuely he  
 seyng a stronge wynde: was aferde/ and whanne he bigane  
 for to be drenchide: he criede seyinge/ lorde make me saaf/  
 and anone ihc̄ holdynge forþ þe hande: cauhte hym: and seiþ  
 to hym/ þou of litil seiþ: whi hast þou doutide? and whanne  
 he hadde steyzede vp into þe boot: þe winde ceeside/ soþely þei  
 þat weren in þe boot: camen & worschippeden hym seyinge/  
 verreyly þou art goddis sone/ ¶ And whanne he had passide  
 ouer þe see: þei camen into þe lande of genezar/ and whanne  
 men of þat place had knowen hym · þei senten into al þat cun-  
 tre · & þei offreden to hym alle haupnge euyl/ and þei prepeden  
 hym þat þei schulde touche ouer þe hemme of his cloþinge/  
 and whoeuer toucheden: ben made saaf//



Thanne scribis & pharisees camen nyȝ to hym fro C<sup>m</sup> 15<sup>m</sup>  
 ierlm̄: seyinge/ whi þi disciplis ouerpassen (or bre-  
 ken) þe tradiciouns (or statutis) of eldre men? for  
 þei waschen not handis: whanne þei eten breed/  
 soþely he answerynge: seiþ to hem/ and whi breken zee þe  
 maundement of god: for zoure tradicōn? for whi god seyde/  
 honoure þi fadir & þi modir/ & he þat curseþ fadir or modir:  
 die he by deþ/ but zee seyn/ who euer schal seye to fadir or  
 modir: what euer zifte is of mee: it schal profite to þee/ and  
 he haþ not worschipide his fadir or his modir: & zee hane  
 made þe maundement of god voyde (or ydil) for zoure tradi-  
 cōn/ ypocritis ysaie þe prophete propheciede wel of zou · sey-  
 inge/ þis puple honoureþ me wiþ lippis: forsoþe here herte is  
 far fro me/ treuely þei worschipen wiþ oute cause: techynge  
 þe doctrynes and maundementis of men/ and þe cumpanyes  
 of

## Matheu

of puple clepide togedir to hym: he seyde to hem/ here zee & vnderstonde/ not þat þing þat entriþ into þe moup defouliþ a man/ but þat þing þat cometh forþ fro þe moup defouliþ a man/ ¶ Þanne his disciplis comynge nyȝ: seyden to hym/ þou wotte þat þis worde herde: pharisees ben sclaunderide/ and he answerynge seiþ/ euery plauntynge · whiche my fadir of heuene haþ not plauntide: schal be drawen vp bi þe root/ suffre zee hem/ þei ben blynde: & leders of blynde men/ soþely zif a blynde man zife leedyng to a blynde man: boþe fallen down into þe dicke/ petre forsoþe answerynge · seyde to hym/ expoune to vs þis parable/ and he seyde/ zit & zee ben wiþouten vnderstondynge/ wher zee vnderstonden not · þat alle þing þat entriþ into þe moup: goiþ into þe wombe · & is sente oute into þe goinge/ but þo þingis þat comen forþ fro þe moup gone oute of þe herte/ and þo þingis: defoulen a man/ for of þe herte gone oute euyl þouȝtis · man sleingis · auoutries · fornicaciõs · þeftis · false witnessis · blaspemyes/ þes þingis it ben þat defoulen a man soþely for to ete wiþ handis not washen: defouliþ not a man/ ¶ And ih̄c gone fro þens: wente into þe parties of tyre & sydon/ and lo a womman of canane: gon oute of þe coostis: criede seyinge to hym/ lorde þe sone of dauid haue mercy of me/ my douȝter is euyl traueylide of a deuyl/ þe whiche answeride not to hire a worde/ and his disciplis camen to: preyeden hym seyinge/ leue þou hire: for sche crieth aftir vs/ forsoþe he answerynge seiþ/ ¶ I am not sente: no but to þe scheep of þe hous of isrl̄ þat perischiden/ but sche came & worschipide hym seyinge/ lorde helpe me/ þe whiche answerynge: seiþ/ it is not for to take þe breed of sones: and sende to houndis/ and sche seyde/ zhe lorde for whi & litil whelpis eten of þe crummes: þat fallen doune fro þe borde of here lordis/ þanne ih̄c answerynge: seiþ to hire/ a þou womman: þi seiþ is greet/ be it done to þee as þou wolte/ and hire douȝter was heelide: fro þat houre/ ¶ And whanne ih̄c had passide þens: he came biȝidis þe see of galilee/ and he steyzinge into an

## Matheu

an hil satte here/ and manye cumpanyes camen nyz to hym:  
 haupnge wiþ hem manye doumbe men & crokide feble &  
 blynde: and many oþer/ and þei castiden hem doune at his feet/  
 and he helide hem · so þat þe cumpanyes wondriden · seinge  
 doumbe men spekyng · & crokide goinge · blynde men seinge ·  
 and þei magnyfieden god of isrl/ ¶ Soþely ih̄c his disciplis  
 gaderide togedir: seyde I haue reuþe of þe cumpanye of þe  
 puple: for nowe þe þridde daye þei dwellen stille wiþ me · &  
 þei hane noþing þat þei schulden ete/ and I wole not leue hem  
 fastyng: lest þei faylen in þe waye/ and þe disciplis seyn to  
 hym/ þerfore wher of so manye looues to vs in desert: þat we  
 fulfille so greet a cumpanye of puple/ and ih̄c seiþ to hem/ how  
 many looues hane zee/ and þei seyden seuene: and a fewe  
 smale fischis/ and he comaundide to þe cumpanye: þat þei  
 schulden sitte to meete vpon þe erþe/ and he takyng seue  
 looues & þe fischis · & doinge þankyngis · brake & zawe to his  
 disciplis: and disciplis zauen to þe puple/ and alle eten &  
 weren fulfild/ and þei token þat þat was ouer of relifes:  
 seue lepis ful/ forsoþe þei þat eten · weren foure þousande  
 of men: wiþouten litil children & wymmnen/ & þe cumpanye  
 of puple lefte: he stepzede vp into a boot · & came into þe  
 coostis of magedon//



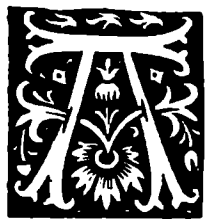
And pharisees & saduceis temptyng camen nyz to C<sup>m</sup> 16<sup>m</sup>  
 hym/ and preyeden hym for to schewe to hem a to-  
 ken fro heuene/ and he answeryng: seiþ to hem/  
 þe euenyng made: zee seyn it schal be cleer for þe  
 heuene is lijk to reed/ and the morowe: to day tempest/ for  
 heuene schyneth heuy (or sorowful)/ þerfore zee hane knoweto  
 deme wisely þe face of heuene: but zee mowe not wite þe to-  
 kenes of tymes/ þe euyl generacōn & auoutrer: sekis a token/  
 and a token schal not be zouen to it: no but þe token of Jonas  
 þe prophet/ and hem forsaken: he wente away/ ¶ And whanne  
 hys disciplis camen ouer þe see: þei forzaten for to take looues/  
 þe

## Matheu

þe whiche seyde to hem/ biholde zee & bewar : of þe sourdowe  
of pharisees & saduceis/ and þei þouzten amonge hem : & sey-  
inge/ for we hane not taken looues/ forsoþe ih̄c witynge : seyde  
to hem/ what þenken zee amonge zou of litil feiþ : for zee hane  
not looues // zit zee vnderstanden not neþer hane mynde : of  
fyue looues into fyue þousande of men & how manye cofyns zee  
tooken/ treuly neþer of seuene looues to foure þousande of men :  
and how many of leepis zee tooken/ why vnderstonde zee not :  
for I seyde not to zou of breed // be zee war of þe sordowz of  
pharisees & of saducees/ þanne þei vnderstoden : þat he seyde  
not to be war of sordowz of looues : but of þe techynge of pha-  
risees & saducees/ ¶ Sopely ih̄c came into þe parties of cesarie  
of philip : and axide his disciplis : seyinge/ whom seyn men to  
be mannes sone // and þei seyden/ summe Jon baptist : oþer  
seyden helie : but oþer Jeremye : or one of þe prophetis/ Ih̄c  
seiþ to hem/ sopely whom seyn zee me to be // Symount petre  
answerynge : seyde/ þou art c̄st þe sone of god lyuyng/ for-  
soþe ih̄c answeryng : seyde to hym/ blesside art þou Symount  
bariona (þat is sone of culuer) for fleysche & blood schewide not  
to þee : but my fadir þat is in heuenes/ and I seye to þee for  
þou art petre : and vpon þis stoon : I schal bilde my chirche/ and  
þe zates of helle schulen not haue myzte (or strengþe) azenes  
it/ and to þee I schal zpyue þe keyes of þe kyngdom of heuenes/  
and what euer þou schalt bynde vpon erþe : schall be bounden  
in heuenes/ and whateuer þou schalt vnbynde vpon erþe :  
schal be vnbunden & in heuenes/ þanne he comaundide to hys  
disciplis þat þei schulden seye to no man : þat he was crist/ fro  
þat time ih̄c bigane for to schewe to his disciplis : þat it bi-  
houep hym go to irlm̄ : & suffre many þingis of þe eldris & of  
scribis & prynces of pristin : and be slayne : & þe þridday rise  
azen/ and petre takynge hym to : bigan for to blame hym : sey-  
inge/ fer be it fro þee lorde : þis þyng schal not be to þee/ þe  
whiche turnyde : seyinge to petre/ go aftir me sathanas/ þou  
art sclaunder to me/ for þou sauerist not (or vnderstondest) þo  
þingis

## Matheu

þingis þat ben of god: but þo þingis þat ben of men/ **¶** þanne ihc seyde to his disciplis/ zif any wole come aftir me: denye he hym self · & take his crosse & sue me/ for he þat wole make his soule saaf · (þat is his lijf:) schal leese it/ forsoþe he þat schal leese his soule (þat is his lijf) for me: schal fynde it/ soþely what profitiþ it to a man · zif he wyne al þe worlde: treuly he suffre peyrng of his soule/ or what chaungynge schal a man ȝue for his soule/ for mannes sone is to come in glorie of his fadir wiþ his aungels: and þanne he schal zilde to euery man aftir his werkis/ treuely I seye to zou · þere ben summe (of men) stondynge heere: þe whiche schulen not taste deþ til þei seen mannes sone comynge in his kyngdom//



**A**nd aftir fire dages · Jhc took & James & Jon his C<sup>m</sup> 17<sup>m</sup>  
broþer · and ledde hem asidis into an hize hil · & was transfiguride (or turnyde into an oþer licknesse) before hem/ and his face schone as þe sunne: forsoþe his cloþes weren made white as snowe/ and lo moyse & helie appereden to hem: spekyng wiþ hym/ soþely petre answerynge: seyde to ihu/ lorde it is good: vs to be heere/ zif þou wolte: make we heere þre tabernaclis/ to þee one · to moyses one · and one to helie/ zit hym spekynges: lo a lizty cloude: schadowide hem/ and lo a voyce of þe cloude seyinge/ þis is my derworþe sone · in whom I hane wel pleside to me: here zee hym/ and þe disciplis heryng: fellen downe into here facis · and dreden gretely/ and ihc came nyȝ & touchide hem: & seyde to hem/ rise vp: nyl zee drede/ forsoþe þei rylinge vp · here ȝzen lizen no man: no but ihc alone/ and hem comyn e doune fro þe mounteyne: Jhc comaundide to hem seyinge/ sey ze to no man þe visioun: til mannes sone rise aȝen fro deade// And his disciplis areden hym seyinge/ what þerfore seyn scribis: þat it bihoueþ helpe firste to come/ and he answerynge seiþ to hem/ forsoþe helie is to come: and he schal restore alle þingis/ treuely I seye to zou · þat helie is now comen · & þei knewen



## Matheu

hym not: but þei diden in hym what euer þing þei wolden/  
and so mannes sone is to suffer of hem/ þanne þe disciplis vn-  
dirstoden: þat of Jon baptist he had seyde to hem/ ¶ And  
whanne he came to þe cumpanye of puple: a man came to hym  
foldide on knees bifore hym · seyinge lorde haue mercy on my  
sone · for he is lunatik · & suffriþ euyl/ for why ofte tymes he  
falliþ into fir: and ofte tymes into water/ and I offride hym  
to þi disciplis: and þei myzten not heele hym/ Jh̄c answerynge  
seih/ a þou generacōn vnbeleueful (or oute of seiþ) & wey-  
warde: how longe schal I be wiþ þou · how longe schal I suf-  
fre þou? brynge zee hym hider to me/ and ih̄c blampde hem:  
and þe deuyll wente oute fro hym/ and þe childe is heelde fro  
þat houre/ þanne þe disciplis camen nyȝ to ih̄u pryueli: and  
seyden to hym/ whi myzten not we casten hym oute? Jh̄c seiþ  
to hem/ for þoure vnbeleue/ trewely I seye to þou · zif zee  
schulen haue seiþ as a corne of seneuey: zee schulen seye to þis  
hil · passe þou hens: and it schal passe/ and no þing schal be  
impossible to þou/ forsoþe þis kinde is not caste oute: no but  
by preyng & fastyng/ ¶ treuely hem lyuyng togedir in  
galilee: Jh̄c seyde to hem/ mannes sone is to be bitrayede into  
þe handis of men · & þei schulen slee hym: and þe þridde day  
he schal rise azen/ and þei ben made ful sorow// ¶ And whanne  
he came to capharnaum · þei þat token tribute camen to petre ·  
& seyden to hym/ þoure mayster: payeþ he not tribute? and he  
seiþ/ yhe/ and whanne he had entride into an hous: ih̄c came  
bifore hym · seyinge/ Symount: what semeth to þee? of whiche  
takeþ þe kyngis of erþe tribute (or rente)? of here owne sones:  
or of aliens? and he seyde/ of aliens/ Jh̄c seyde to hym/ þer-  
fore sones ben free/ forsoþe þat we sclaunder not hem: go þou  
to þe see · and sende an booc · & take þe ilke fische þat firste  
cometh up/ and his mowþ openyde: þou schalt fynde a statere  
(þat is a sertayne of money/) þou takynge it: ȝyue to hem for  
me & for þee//

## Matheu



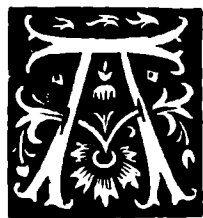
**M**at þat houre þe disciplis camen nyȝ to ih̄c: seyinge/ C<sup>m</sup> 18<sup>m</sup>  
who gessit þou is more in þe kyngdom of heuenes/ and ih̄c clepyng to a litil childe: putte hym in þe mydil of hem · & seyde/ I seye treuþe to ȝou · no but ȝif ȝee schulen be turnyde & made as litil children: ȝee schulen not entre into þe kyngdom of heuenes/ þerfore who euer mekiþ hym as þis litil childe: he is more in the kyngdome of heuenes/ and he þat receyueþ one suche litil in my name: receyueþ me/ forsoþe who schal sclaundre one of þes leste smale þat bileuen in me: it spedih to hym þat a mylnestone of assis · be hangide in his necke: and he drenchide into þe depnesse of þe see/ wo to þe worlde for sclaunderis/ treuly it is nede: þat sclaunderis comen/ neþeles wo to þe ilke man: by whom sclaundre comen/ forsoþe ȝif þin hande or þi foot sclaunderiþ þee: kitte it of & caste away fro þee/ it is good to þee to entre into lijf feble or crokide: þanne haupnge two handes or two feet · to be sente into euerlastynghe fiȝr/ and ȝif þin eyȝe sclaunderiþ þee: pulle it oute & caste away fro þee/ it is good to þee wiþ one eyȝe to entre into lijf: þan haupnge two eyȝen to be sente into þe fiȝr of helle/ se ȝee þat ȝee dispise not one of þes litil/ treuly I seye to ȝou þat þe aungels of hem in heuenes: seen euermore þe face of my fadir þat is in heuenes/ forsoþe mannes sone came for to saue þat þing þat perischide/ ¶ what seemen to ȝou · ȝif þere weren to summan an hundride scheep: and one of hem schal erre: wher he schal not leese nynty & nyne in deserte · & schal go for to seek þat þat erride/ and ȝif it bifalle þat he fynde it: treuly I seye to ȝou · for he schal ioȝe þeron: more þan on nynty & nyne þat erred: en not/ so it is not wille bifore ȝoure fadir þat is in heuenes: þat one of þes litil perische/ ¶ forsoþe ȝif þi broþer schal synne in þee: go þou & reproue hym (or snybbe) bitwixe þee & hym alone/ ȝif he schal her: þou hast wonne þi broþer/ treuly ȝif he schal not heere þee: take to wiþ þee one or two þat euery worde

## Matheu

worde stonde in þe moup of two or þre witneffis/ þat zif he schal not heere hem: seye þou to þe chirche/ forsoþe zif he schal not heere þe chirche: be he to þee as an heþen man and pupli- can/ I seye to zou treuely · what euer þingis zee schulen bynde vpon erþe: þo schulen be bounden & in heuenes/ and what euer þingis zee schulen vnbynde vpon erþe: þo schulen be vn- bounden & in heuenes/ eftesone I seye to zou · þat zif two of zou schulen consente on erþe of euery þing whateuer þei schu- len are: it schal be done to hem · of my fadir þat is in heuenes/ for where two or þre schulen be gederide in my name: þer I am in þe mydel of hem/ ¶ þanne petre compnge nyȝ to hym: seyde/ lorde how ofte schal my broþer synne in me: and I schal forȝyue hym? wheþer to seuene tymes? ih̄c seiþ to hym/ I seye not to þee til seuene sipes: but til seuenty siþe seuene sipes/ þerfore þe kyngdom of heuenes is lickenyde to a man kyng: þat wolde putte resoun wip his seruauntis/ and whan he bigan for to putte resoun: one was offride to hym ten þou- sande of besauntis (or talentis)/ treuely whanne he hadde not wherof to zilde: his lorde comaundide hym to be solde & his wife & sones · & alle þingis þat he had: and to be payede/ forsoþe þe ilke seruaunt fallynge doune preyede hym seyinge/ haue pacience in me: and alle þingis I schal zilde to þee/ soþely þe lorde haupnge mercy of þat seruaunt: leet hym (or suffride) · & forȝaue to hym þe dette/ treuely þe ilke seruaunt gon oute: fonde one of his euen seruauntis · þat auȝte hym an hundride pens/ and he holdynge hym: stranglide hym seyinge/ zilde þat þat þou owist/ and his euen seruaunt: preyede hym seyinge/ haue pacience in me: and alle þingis I schal quyte to þee/ forsoþe he wolde not · but wente & sente hym into pri- soun: til þat he payede al þe dette/ soþely his euen seruauntis seinge þo þingis þat weren done: gretely hadde sorowe/ & þei camen & tolden to here lorde: alle þingis þat weren done/ þanne his lorde clepide hym: and seyde to hym/ weȝwarde seruaunt · I forȝaue to þee al þe dette: for þou preyedest me/ þerfore

## Matheu

þerfore wher it bihouede not & þee to hane mercy on thin euen  
seruaunt: as & I hadde mercy on þee/ and hys lorde wroþe:  
toke hym to turmentours: til he payede al þe dette/ so & my  
fadir of heuene schal do to zou: zif zee forzyuen not every  
man to his broþer · of zoure hertis//



**A**ND it is done whanne ihc̄ had endide þes wordes · C<sup>m</sup> 19<sup>m</sup>  
he passide fro galilee · & came into þe endis of Jude  
ouer Jordan/ and manye cumpanyes (of men) sue-  
den hym: and he helide hem þere/ and pharisees  
camen nyȝ to hym temptyngge hym & seyinge/ wher it be  
leueful to a man for to leue (or forsake) his wife: of whateuer  
cause/ þe which answerynge: seip to hem/ hane zee not redde ·  
for he þat made men at the bygynnyngge: male & female he  
made hem/ and he seyde/ for þis þing a man schal leue fadir &  
modir · & he schal cleue (or drawe) to his wiif: & þei schulen  
be two in one fleysche/ and so þei ben not now two: but one  
fleysche/ þerfore a man departe not þat þing þat god enioynede  
(or knytte togedir/) þei seyn to hym/ what þanne comaundide  
moyse: to zyue a litil booc of forsakyngge: and to leue of/ and  
he seip to hem/ for moyse: at þe hardenesse of zoure hertis:  
suffride zou forsake zoure wijfes/ forsoþe at þe bygynnyngge  
it was not so/ treuely I seye to zou · þat who euer leueþ his  
wiif · no but for fornycacō · & weddiþ anoþer: doiþ auoutrie/  
and he þat weddiþ þe forsaken (wiif) · doiþ auoutrie/ his disci-  
plis seyn to hym/ zif þe cause of a man wiþ a wife is so: it  
spediþ not to wedde/ þe whiche seip to hem/ not alle men taken  
þis worde: but to whom it is zouen/ soþely þer ben geldyngis:  
þe whiche ben þus borne of þe modris wombe/ & þere ben  
geldyngis: þat ben made of men/ and þere ben geldyngis ·  
þat hane geldyde þem self: for þe kyngdom of heuenes/ he  
þat may take · take he/ ¶ þanne litil children weren offride  
vp to hym þat he schulde putte handis to hem & preye/ soþely  
his disciplis blameden hem/ but ihc̄ seip to hem/ suffriþ litil  
children

## Matheu

children come to me: and nyl zee forbede hem for to come to me/ for of suche is þe kyngdom of heuenes/ and whanne he had putte to hem handis: he wente þens/ and lo one comynge to: seih to hym/ gode mayster what of good þing schal I do: þat I haue euerlastyng lijf: þe whiche seih to hym/ wht<sup>r</sup> arist þou me of gode þing/ þer is one gode god/ for zif þou wolte entre into lijf: kepe þe comaundementis/ he seih to hym/ whiche: trewely ih̄c seyde/ þou schalt not do mansleinge · þou schalt [not] do auoutrie · þou schalt not do þeft · þou schalt not seye false witnessyng/ worschip þi fadir & þi modir: and þou schalt loue þi neyzebore as þi self/ þe zonge man seih to hym/ I haue kepte alle þes þingis fro my zouþe/ what zit sayleth to me: ih̄c seih to hym/ zif þou wolte be parfite: go & selle alle þingis þat þou hast · & zyeue to poore men · & þou schalt haue tresoure in heuenes: & come · & sue þou me/ forsoþe whanne þe zonge man had herde þes wordis: he wente away sorowful · for he was haupnge many possessionis/ forsoþe ih̄c seyde to his disciplis/ I seye to zou treue · for a richeman of harde schal entre into þe kyngdom of heuenes/ and eftesone I seye to zou/ it is lizter (or esier) a camel for to passe þourgh an eedelis yze · þan a richeman to entre into þe kyngdom of heuenes/ trewely þes wordis herde: þe disciplis wondriden gretely seyinge/ who þerfore may be saaf: forsoþe ih̄c biholdynges: seyde to hem/ anentis men þis þing is impossible: but anentis god alle þingis ben possible/ þanne petre answerynge: seyde to hym/ lo we forsaken alle þingis & suen þee: what þerfore schal be to vs: ih̄c forsoþe seyde to hem/ treuely I seye to zou · þat zee þat hane forsake alle þingis & suen me: in regeneracōn (or genderynge azen) whan mannes sone schal sitte in þe seet of his mageste: and zee schulen sitte on twelue seetis · demynge þe twelue kynredis of isrl/ and euery man þat schal forsake hous or breþeren or sistren · or fadir or modir · or wiif or sones · or feeldis · for my name · he schal take an hundridfold · & schal welde euerlastyng lijf/ forsoþe many firste schulen be laste: and þe laste þe firste//

The

## Matheu

**T**he kyngdom of heuenes is lijk to an housbonde C<sup>m</sup> 20<sup>m</sup>  
man: þat wente oute firs<sup>t</sup>e erly (or by þe morowe)  
to hijre werkemen into his vynezerde/ forsoþe þe  
couenaunt made wiþ werkemen · of a peny for þe  
day: he sente hem into his vynezerde/ and he gone oute aboute  
þe þridde houre: siþe oþer stondynge ydil in þe chepyng/ and  
he seyde to hem/ go & see into my vynezerde: and þat þat schal  
be riztful · I schal ȝpue to ȝou/ soþely þei wenten forþ/ for-  
soþe estefones he wente oute · aboute þe firs<sup>t</sup>e houre & þe  
nygh<sup>t</sup>e: and dide on liche maner/ but aboute þe elleuen<sup>e</sup> houre  
he wente oute · & fonde oþer stondynge & he seyde to  
hem/ what stonden ȝee heere ydil al day? þei seyn to hym/ for  
no man haþ hijride vs/ he seih to hem/ go ȝee into my vyne-  
zerde/ forsoþe whanne euenynge was made: þe lorde of þe  
vynezerde seih to his procuratour/ clepe þe werkemen: ȝilde  
to hem here hijre: bigynnyng at þe laste: til to þe firs<sup>t</sup>e/ þer-  
fore whanne þei weren comen þat camen aboute þe elleuen<sup>e</sup> houre:  
and þei token synguler pens (þat is euery man a peny) ·  
treuely & þe firs<sup>t</sup>e compynge: demeden þat þei weren to take  
more/ treuly & þei token echone · by hymself a peny/ and  
þei takynge grucchiden azen þe housbondemen: seyinge/ þes  
laste diden (worche) one houre: and þou hast made hem euene  
to vs · þat hane borne þe charge of þe day & þe heete: and  
he answerynge to one of hem: seyde/ frende: I do þee no  
wronge/ wheþer þou haste not acordide wiþ me for a peny: take  
þat þing þat is þin: and go/ forsoþe I wole ȝpue & to  
his laste (man): as & to þee/ wher it is not leueful to me · for  
to do þat þat I wole: wheþer þin ȝze is wickide for I am  
good: so þer schulen be þe laste men firs<sup>t</sup>e: and þe firs<sup>t</sup>e men  
laste/ for manye ben clepide: but fewe ben chosē/ ¶ And ihc  
steþzinge vp to irlm · toke his twelue disciplis in pryuate · &  
seih to hem/ lo we gone vp to irlm & mannes sone schal be bi-  
taken to þe prynces of pristis & scribis · & þei schulen con-  
dempne

## Matheu

dempne hym to deþ/ and þei schulen bitake hym to heþene men; for to be scornþde & scourgide & crucifiede/ and þe þridde day he schal rise azen/ þanne þe modir of þe sones of zebedee· came nyȝ to hym wiþ hire sones honourynge & aringe sum þing of hym/ þe whiche seyde to hire/ what wolte þou? sche seiþ to hym/ seye þat þes two my sones sitten; one at þi rizthalfe & one at þi liftehalfe in þi kyngdom/ forsoþe ih̄c answerynge; seyde/ zee witen not what zee aren (or schulen are)/ may zee drynke þe cuppe; þat I am to drynke? þei seyn to hym/ we motone/ he seiþ to hem/ forsoþe zee schulen drynke my cuppe; but to sitte at þe rizthalfe · or liftehalfe is not myn to ȝue to ȝou; but to whom it is made reedy of my fadir/ and þe ten herynge; hadden indignacōn of þe two breþeren/ soþely ih̄c clepide hem to hym; and seiþ/ zee witen for prynces of heþen men be lordes of hem; and þei þat ben more haunten power into hem/ it schal not be so amonge ȝou/ but who euer wole be made more amonge ȝou; be he ȝoure mynystre/ and who euer amonge ȝou wole be firste; he schal be ȝoure seruauant/ as mannes sone came not for to be seruyde · but for to serue · & for to ȝue his soule (or lijf) redempciōn for manȝe/ and hem goinge oute of Jericho; manȝe cumpanyes of puple sueden hym/ and lo two blynde men sittynge biȝidis þe weye herden þat ih̄c passide; and þei crieden seyinge/ lorde þe sone of dauid; haue mercy of vs/ forsoþe þe cumpanȝe blamyde hem for to be stille/ and þei crieden more & more; seyinge/ lorde þe sone of dauid; haue mercy of vs/ and ih̄c stode & clepide hem; & seiþ/ what wolen zee þat I do to ȝou; þei seyn to hym/ lorde þat oure ȝzen ben openȝde/ forsoþe ih̄c haupnge mercy on hem; touchide here ȝzen/ and anone þei siȝen & sueden hym//

And

## Matheu



And whanne ihc̄ came nyȝ to irlm̄ · and came to C<sup>m</sup> 21<sup>m</sup>  
bethfage · to þe mount of oliuete · þanne ihc̄ sente  
his two disciplis · seyinge to hem/ go zee into þe  
castel þ̄ is azenes zou · anone zee schulen fynde a  
sche asse tiede · & a colte wiþ hire/ vnbynde zee · and brynge to  
me/ and ȝif any man schal seye to zou any þing · seye zee þat  
þe lorde haþ nede to hem · & anone he schal leue hem/ treuely  
al þis was done · þat þat þing · þat was seyde by þe prophete ·  
schulde be fulfild · seyinge/ seye zee to þe douȝter of sion · lo  
þi kyng cometh to þee homely (or mekely) sittynge on an asse &  
a fool · (the sone of a beest vndir ȝok) forsoþe disciplis goinge ·  
diden as ihc̄ comaundide hem/ and þei brouȝten to a sche asse  
& þe fool · & puttiden here cloþes on hem · & maden hym sitte  
aboue/ forsoþe ful myche cumpanye · strewide here cloþes in  
þe wey/ soþely oþer kuttiden braunchis of trees · & strewiden  
in þe weye/ but þe cumpanyes þat wenten bifore & þat sueden ·  
crieden seyinge/ Osanna (þat is I preye saue) · to þe sone of  
dauid · blestide is he þat cometh in name of þe lorde · osanna  
in hizest (þingis)/ ¶ And whanne he had entride into irlm̄ ·  
al þe cytee was stired · seyinge/ who is þis · treuely þe puplis  
seyden/ þis is ihc̄ þe prophete of nazereth of galilee/ and ihc̄  
entride into þe temple of god · and caste oute of þe temple · alle  
sellynge & byinge · & he turnyde vpsodoune þe bordes of þe  
chaungers · and þe chapers of men sellynge culuers and he  
seih to hem/ it is writen/ myn hous schal be clepide an hous of  
preyer · forsoþe zee hane made it a denne of þeeues/ and blynde  
& crokyde camen nyȝ to hym in þe temple · and he helide hem/  
forsoþe þe prynces of pristis and scribis · seinge þe meruey-  
lous þingis þat he dide · & children cryinge in temple · & seyinge  
osanna to þe sone of dauid · dedeyneden & seyden to hym/  
herest þou what þes seyn · soþely ihc̄ seih to hem/ ȝhe/ wher  
zee hane not redde · for of þe moup of children (þat kunnen not  
speec) or of soukyngge mylke · þou hast made parfite herynge/



## Matheu

and hem forsaken: he wente forþ oute of þe cytee into beth-  
anye/ and þere he dwellyde: and tauzte hem of þe kyngdom of  
god/ ¶ Forsoþe on þe morowe he turnynge azen into þe cytee:  
hungride/ and he seinge a fige tree bisidis þe weye: came to  
it/ and fonde no þing þer inne: no but leeuës onely/ and he seiþ  
to it/ neuer be fruyte borne of þee: into wiþ outhen/ and anone  
þe fige tree was driede vp/ and þe disciplis seinge: won-  
driden seyinge/ how anone driede it? soþely ih̄c answerynge:  
seiþ to hem/ treuely I seye to zou · zif zee schulen haue seiþ as  
a corne of seneuey & doute not: not onely zee schulen do of þis  
fige tree: but & zif zee seyn to þis hil · take þee & caste þee into  
þe see: and so it schal be done/ and alle þingis what euer zee  
schulen are in preyer bileupnge: zee schulen take/ and whanne  
he came into þe temple þe prynces of priests & eldremen of þe  
puple camen nyȝ to hym techynge · seyinge/ in what power  
doist þou þes þingis: and who ȝaue to þee þis power? ih̄c an-  
swerynge seyde to hem/ and I schal are zou aworde · þe  
whiche zif zee schulen seye to me: and I schal seye to zou in  
what power I do þes þingis/ of whens was þe baptysm of  
Joon: of heuene or of men? & þei þouȝten wiþine hem self:  
seyinge/ zif we schulen seye of heuene: he schal seye to vs/  
whi þerfore bileue zee not to hym? soþely zif we schulen of  
men: we dreden þe cumpanye of puple · for alle hadden Joon  
as a prophet/ and þei answerynge to ih̄u: seyden/ we witen  
not/ and he seiþ to hem/ neþer I seye to zou: in what power I  
do þes þingis/ forsoþe what seemeþ to zou? summan hadde  
two sones/ and he comynge nyȝ to þe firste · seyde/ sone · go for  
to wirche þis day: into my vynezerde/ soþely he answerynge:  
seiþ/ I nyl/ forsoþe astirwarde he stiredde by penaunce (or for-  
þynkinge): wente/ forsoþe he comynge to þe toþer: seyde þe  
liche maner/ and he answerynge: seiþ/ lorde I go/ and he  
wente not/ who of þe two: dide þe faderis wille? þei seyn to  
hym/ þe firste/ Jh̄c seiþ to hem treuely · I seye to zou · for pup-  
licans & hooris schulen go bifore zou · into þe kyngdom of god/  
forsoþe

## Matheu

forsoþe ion came to zou in þe weye of ryztwesnesse and zee bileueden [not] into hym/ but puplicans & hooris: bileueden into hym/ soþely zee seinge · neþer hadden penaunce astirwarde: þat zee bileueden to hym/ ¶ Heere zee anoter parable/ þer was an housbondeman þat plauntide a vynezerde/ and zaue an hegge þer aboute · & dalfe a pressoure þer inne: and bildide a toure/ & hijride it (or sette to feerme) to erþe tiliers: and wente fer in pilgrymage/ forsoþe whanne þe tyme of fructis neyzede: he sente his seruauntis to þe erþe tiliers: þat þei token fructis of it/ and his seruauntis taken: þe erþe tiliers beeten one · anoter þei slewen · but anoter þei stoneden (to deef)/ eftesone he sente oþer seruauntis mo þan þe firste: and liche maner þei diden to hem/ forsoþe at þe laste he sente his sone to hem: seyinge/ þei schulen schame (or drede) my sone/ soþely þe erþe tiliers seinge þe sone: seyden wiþinne hem self/ þis is þe eyre/ come zee · flee we hym: and we schulen haue þe heretage/ and hym taken: þei castiden out of þe vynezerde: and slouen/ þerfore whanne þe lorde of þe vynezerde schal come: what schal be done to þe erþe tiliers? þei seyn to hym/ he schal leese euyl: euylmen · & sette to hijre his vynezerde to oþer erþe tiliers: þe whiche schulen zilde to hym fructis in here tymes/ Jh̄c seip to hem/ redde ze neuer in scriptures · þe stoon whiche bildinge men reproueden · þis is made into þe heed of þe corner/ of þe lorde þis þing is made: & it is merueylous in oure yzen/ þerfore I seye to zou · for þe kyngdom of god schal be taken fro zou · & schal be zouen to a folke: doinge fructis of it/ and he þat schal falle on þis stoon: schal be broken to gedir/ forsoþe vpon whom it schal falle: it schal to gedir poune hym/ and whanne þe prynces of pristis & pharisees hadden herde his parabis: þei knewen þat he seyde of hem/ and þei seekynge to holde hym · dredde þe cumpanyes of puple: for þei hadden hym as a prophet//

And

## Matheu

C<sup>m</sup> 22<sup>m</sup>



And ihc anſwerynge: ſeyde eſteſones in parablis to hem · ſeyinge/ þe kyngdom of heuenes is made lijk to a man kyng · þat made weddyngis to his ſone/ and he ſente his ſeruauntis for to clepe men biden to þe weddyngis: and þei wolden not come/ eſteſone he ſente oþer ſeruauntis ſeyinge/ ſeye zee to þe men beden to þe feest · lo I haue made reedy my mete/ my boolis & volatilis ben ſlayne: and alle þingis reedy: come zee to þe weddyngis/ ſohely þei deſpiſeden (or recken not) and þei wenten away · one into his bynezerde: forſoþe anoþer to his marchaundise/ but þe oþer helden his ſeruauntis & ſlewen hem: punyſchide wiþ contek/ forſoþe þe kyng whanne he hadde herde: was wroþe/ and his ooſte ſente: he loſte (or diſtruyede) þe manquellers and brente here cytee/ þanne he ſeiþ to his ſeruauntis/ ſohely þe weddyngis ben reedy: but þei þat weren clepide to þe feest · weren not worþi/ þerfore go zee to þe oute goinge of weyes · & whom euer zee ſchulen fynde: clepiþ to þe weddyngis/ and his ſeruauntis gone into þe weyes · gederiden to gedir alle þat þei founden: good & euyl/ and þe weddyngis of men ſittyng at þe mete: ben fulſilde/ forſoþe þe kyng entride þat he ſchulen ſe men ſittyng at þe mete: and he ſize þer a man not cloþide wiþ bride cloþes/ and he ſeiþ to hym/ frende how entredist þou hidir · not hauping briðe cloþes: and he was dumble/ þanne þe kyng ſeyde to þe mynyſtris/ his handes and feete bounden · ſende zee hym into þe uttirmore dirkenesses/ þere ſchal be wepyng: & betyng to gedir of teep/ forſoþe many ben clepide: but fewe choſen/ þanne phariſees goinge awaye token counſeyl: þat þei ſchulden take ihu in worde/ and þei ſenten to hym here diſciplis wiþ herodians · (þat ben men of heroudis): ſeyinge/ maſter we witen þat þou art ſohetaſt & þou techiſt · in treuþe þe weye of god: and þere is no cure (or charge) to þee of any man/ for þou biholdiſt not to þe perſone of men/ þerfore ſeye to vs: wheþer it ſeemeth to þee · is it leueful to ȝyue to ceſar (or emperour) tribute

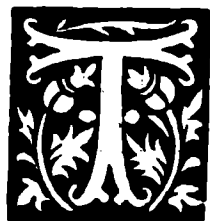
## Matheu

bute (or rente) ⁊ forsoþe þe twickidnesse of hem knowen: ih̄c seiþ/  
ypocritis what tempten zee me ⁊ schewe zee to me þe prynte  
of þe money/ and þei offreden (or token) to hym a peny/ and  
ih̄c seiþ to hem/ whos is þis ymage: and þe wrptynge aboue ⁊  
þei seyn to hym/ of cesar/ þanne he seiþ/ þerfore zilde zee to  
cesar þo þingis þat ben of cesar: and to god þo þingis þat ben of  
god// ¶ And þei herynge wondriden/ & hym lefte: þei wenten  
awey/ in þat day saduceys þat seyn þer is no risynge azen:  
camen nyȝt to hym & axiden hym · seying/ mayster · moyses seyde/  
zif any man be deade not haupnge a sone: þat his broþer wedde  
his wiif · & reyse seede to his broþer/ forsoþe seuene breþeren  
weren at us/ and þe firste a wiif weddide: is deade/ and he not  
haupnge seed: lefte his wiif to his broþer/ also þe secunde & þe  
þridde: til þe seueneþ/ forsoþe þe laste of alle: and þe womman  
is deade/ þerfore in þe risynge azen: whos wife of þe seuene  
schal sche be: for alle hadden hire/ soþely ih̄c answerynge seiþ  
to hem/ zee erren · neþer knowynge þe scriptures: neþer þe  
vertue of god/ forsoþe in þe risynge azen neþer þei wedden  
neþer ben weddide: but þei ben as aungels of god in heuene/  
soþely of þe risynge azen of deade men zee hane not redde · þat  
it is seyde of þe lorde: seyinge to zou/ I am god of abraham &  
god of ysaac: and god of iacob/ he is not god of deade men: but  
of lyuynge men/ and þe cumpanyes of puple herynge: won-  
driden in his techyng/ forsoþe pharisees herynge þat he had  
putte silence to saducees: camen to gedir into one/ and one of  
hem a techer of þe lawe: axide ih̄c temptynge hym/ mayster:  
whiche is a greet maundemente in þe lawe ⁊ ih̄c seiþ to hym/  
þou schalt loue þe lorde þi god of al þin herte · & in alle þi soule ·  
& in al þi mynde/ þis is þe firste and þe moste maundement/  
forsoþe þe secounde is lijk to þis/ þou schalt loue þi neȝzebore  
as þi selfe/ in þes two maundementis: hangiþ al þe lawe &  
prophetis/ soþely þe pharisees gederide togedir: ih̄c axide hem  
seyinge/ what seemeþ it to zou of c̄st ⁊ whos sone is he/ þei seyn  
to hym of dauid/ he seiþ to hem/ þerfore how in spirit clepiþ  
dauid

## Matheu

Dauid hym lorde: seyinge/ þe lord seyde to my lorde · sitte on my rizthalfes: til þat I putte þin enemyes a stool of þi feet/ þerfore zif Dauid clepiþ hym lorde: how is he his sone? and no man myzte answere a worde to hym: neþer any man was hardy fro þat day · for to are hym more//

C<sup>m</sup> 23<sup>m</sup>



Thanne ihc spac to þe cumpanyes of puple · & to his disciplis: seyinge/ vpon þe chayre of moyses: scribis & pharisees saten (redynge þe lawe)/ þerfore kepe zee & do zee · alle þingis whateuer þingis þei schulen seye to zou: but nyl zee do aftir here werkis/ soþely þei seyn & done not/ soþely þei bynden to greuous chargis & vnportable & þat motone not be borne and putten into schulders of men: but wiþ here synger þei wolen not moue hem/ þerfore þei done alle here werkis þat þei be seen of men/ forsoþe þei a- largen here filateries (þat ben smale scrowis): and magnyfien here hemmes/ soþely þei louen þe firste sittynge places in so- pers · & þe firste chayers in synagogis: and salutacons in þe chepynges · & to be clepide of men maystris/ soþely nyl zee be clepide maystris: for one is zoure mayster/ forsoþe alle zee ben breþeren/ and nyl zee clepe to zou fadir on erþe: for one is zoure fadir þat is in heuenes/ neþer be zee clepide maystris: for one is zoure mayster c̄st/ he þat is more of zou: schal be zoure mynyster/ forsoþe he þat schal hize hym self: schal be mekide/ and he þat schal meke hym self: schal be enhaunside/ soþely wo to zou scribis & pharisees ypocritis: for zee closen þe kyngdom of heuenes bifore men/ soþely zee entren not: ne suffre men entrynge for to entre/ ¶ Wo to zou scribis & pha- risees ypocritis · þat eten þe houses of widowis: in longe preyer preyinge/ for þis þing zee schulen take þe more doom/ ¶ Wo to zou scribis & pharisees ypocritis · þat cumpassen þe see & þe lande: þat zee make one profelite (þat is a conuertide to zour ordre)/ and whanne he schal be made: zee maken hym a sone of helle · double more þan zou/ ¶ Wo to zou blynde

## Matheu

blynde leders þat seyn · who euer schal swere by þe temple of god: no þing is/ soþely he þat schal swere in þe golde of þe temple: oþer (or is dettoure) to paye it/ zee foolis & blynde/ forsoþe what is more þe golde or þe temple: þat halowþ þe golde: and who euer schal swer in þe auter: no þing is/ but he þat schal swere in þe zifte þat is on þe auter: oþer it/ blynde men/ forsoþe what is more þe zifte: or þe auter: þat halowþ þe zifte: forsoþe he þat swerþ in þe auter: swerþ in it: and in alle þingis þat ben þeron/ and he þat swerþ in þe temple · swerþ in it · & in hym þat dwellþ in þe temple/ and he þat swerþ in heuene: swerþ in þe trone of god · & in hym þat sittþ þer on/ ¶ Wo to zou scribis & pharisees ypocritis · þat tihen myntte & annet & comyn: and hane leste þo þingis þat ben greuouser (or of more charge) of þe lawe: (as) doom & mercy & seiþ/ and þes þingis it behouede (or needide) for to do: & not to leue hem/ blynde leders · clensynge a knatte: but swolowynge a camel/ ¶ Wo to zou scribis & pharisees ypocrites þat maken clene þat þing of þe cuppe & of þe plater þat is wþ outhen forþ: forsoþe wþinne þei ben ful of rauyne & unclennesse/ þou blynde pharisee · clense firste þat þing of þe cuppe & plater · þat is wþine forþ: þat & þat þing þat is wþ outhen forþ · he made clene/ ¶ Wo to zou scribis & pharisees ypocritis · þat ben lijk to sepulcris made whijt/ þe whiche wþ outhen forþ seemen fayre to men: soþely wþinne: þei ben ful of boones of deade men & al filþe/ so & zee forsoþe wþ outhen forþ apperen iuste to men: but wþinne zee ben ful of ypocrisie & wickednesse/ ¶ Wo to zou scribis & pharisees ypocritis · þat bilden sepulcris of prophetis: and maken fayre þe biriels of iuste men · & seyn/ zif we hadden ben in þe dayes of oure faderis: we schulden not haue ben here felowis in þe blood of prophetis/ and so zee ben in witnessynge to zoure self: for ze ben þe sones of hem þat slouen þe prophetis/ and zee fulfillen þe mesure of zoure faderis/ zee serpentis fruytis or buriounyngis of eddris (þat sleen here mo-  
deris

## Matheu

deris): how schulen zee flee fro þe dome of helle? þerfore I sende to zou prophetis & wyfemen & scribis (or writers)/ and of hem zee schulen flee & crucifie. & of hem zee schulen beete in zoure synagogis. & zee schulen pursue fro cytee into cytee. þat al þe iuste blode come vpon you. þat was sched on þe erþe. fro þe blood of iuste abel. til þe blood of zacharie þe sone of barachie. whom zee slouen bitwixe þe temple & þe auter/ treuely I seye to zou. alle þes þinges schulen come on þis generacōn/ Irlm irīm þat fleest prophetis. and stonest hem þat ben sente to þee/ how ofte wolde I gader to gedir þi sones. as a henne gaderiþ to gedir hir chykyngs vnder hir wengis. and þou woldist not/ lo zoure hous schal be lefte to zou deserte (or forsaken) forsoþe I seye to zou zee schulen not see me fro hens forþ. til þat zee seyn/ blesside (is) he þat comiþ in þe name of þe lorde//

C<sup>m</sup> 24<sup>m</sup>



And ihc̄ gone oute of þe temple. wente/ and his discipulis camen nyȝ to hym. þat þei schulden schewe to hym þe bildyngis of þe temple/ forsoþe he answeryng. seiþ to hem. se zee alle þes þingis. treuely I seye to zou/ a stoon schal not be lefte heere on a stoon. þe whiche schal not be distrupede/ soþely hym sittynge on þe hil of olyuete. þe discipulis camen nyȝ to hym. pryuely seyinge seye to vs whanne þes þingis schulen be. and what token of þi comynge & of endynge of þe worlde. And ihc̄ answerynge. seyde to hem/ se zee þat no man deceyue zou/ many schulen come in my name seyinge. I am crist/ and þei schulen deceyue manye/ soþely zee ben to heere battaylis. & oppynpouns of bataylis/ se zee þat zee be not distourblide/ forsoþe it bihouep þes þingis for to be done. but not zit is þe ende/ folc schulen rise azenes folc. & retome into retome. and pestylences & hungris & erþe mouyngis schulen be by places/ forsoþe alle þes þingis. ben bigynnyngis of sorowis/ þanne þei schulen bitake zou into tribulacōns. & þei schulen flee zou & zee schulen be

## Matheu

be in haate to alle folkis for my name/ and þanne many schulen be sclaunderide & to gedir bitraye (eche oþer); and in hate haue to gedir/ and many false prophetis schulen rise; and deceyue many/ and for wickidnesse schal be plenteuous; þe charite of manye schal ware colde/ forsoþe he þat schal dwelle stable vnto þe ende; he þis schal be saaf/ and þis gospel of kyngdom/ schal be prechide in al þe worlde · into witnessynge to alle folkis; and þanne þe ende schal come/ þerfore whanne zee schulen se þe abhomyracōn of discoumforþ þat is seyde of daniel þe prophet · stondynge in holy place · he þat reedis vnderstonde/ þanne þei þat ben in Judee; flee þei to mounteynes/ and he þat (is) in þe hous roof; come he not doune to take any þing of his hous/ and he þat is in þe feelde; turne not azen to take his coote/ forsoþe wo to wymmen wiþ childe & norischynge; in þo dayes/ forsoþe preye zee þat zoure fleinge; be not made in wynter or in saboth/ forsoþe þanne schal be greet tribulacōn · what maner was not fro þe begynnynge of þe worlde til now; neþer schal be made/ and no but zif þe dayes hadden ben breggide; al fleysche (þat is mankynde ·) schulde not be made saaf/ but þo dayes schulen be made schorte; for þe chosen men/ þanne zif any man schal seye to zou · lo heere is cist or þere; nyl zee bileue/ forsoþe false cristis & false prophetis schulen rise · & þei schulen ȝyue grete tokenes; & wondris; so þat þe chosen be led into erreure · zif it may be done/ lo I haue bifore seyde to zou · zif þei schulen seye to zou · lo he is in deserte; nyl zee gone oute/ lo in pryue chaumbris (or places) he is; nyl zee bileue/ soþely as leyte gos oute fro þe este · & aperith til into þe weste; so schal be in þe comynge of mannes sone/ where euer þe body schal be; and þe eglis schulen be gederide þidir/ forsoþe anone aftir þe tribulacōn of þe dayes; þe sunne schal be made dirke · & þe mone schal not ȝyue hir lizt/ and sterres schulen falle doune fro heuene · & þe vertues of heuenes schulen be mouede/ and þanne þe token of mannes sone schal appere in heuene; and þanne alle þe kynredis (or

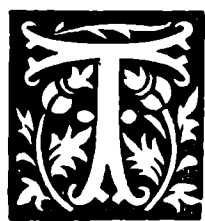


## Mathew

lynagis) of erþe schulen weyle/ and þei schulen se mannes sone  
comynge in cloudis of heuene: wiþ myche vertu & mageste/  
and he schal sende his aungels wiþ a trumpe and greet voyce:  
and þei schulen gedir his chosen fro foure wyndis of heuene  
fro þe hizeste þingis of heuenes: til to þe termes (or endis) of  
hem/ lerne zee a parable of a figge tree/ whanne his bowe (or  
braunche) is nowetendre & leues sprungen: zee witen þat somer  
is nyȝ/ so & zee whanne zee schulen se alle þes þingis: wiþ þat  
it is nyȝ in þe ȝatis/ trewely I seye to ȝou · for þis generacōn  
schal not passe: til þat alle þingis ben done/ heuene & erþe schu-  
len passe: but my wordis schulen not passe/ forsoþe of þe ilke  
day & hour no man woot · neþer aungels of heuenes: no but  
þe fadir alone/ Forsoþe as it was in þe dages of noe: so schal be  
& þe comynge of mannes sone/ for as in þe dages bifore þe greet  
flood · þei weren etynge & drynkynge · weddynge & takynge to  
weddynge til into þat day: in þe whiche noe entride into þe  
schip/ and þei knewe not til þe greet flood came & toke alle men:  
so schal be þe comynge of mannes sone/ þanne twomen schulen  
be in þe feeldes: one schal be taken to · & anoper lefte/ two  
(wymmen) schulen be gryndynge in one querne: one schal be  
take to · & þe toþer forsaken/ two in one bed: þe tone schal be  
taken to · & þe toþer forsaken/ þerfore wake zee · for zee witen  
not in what houre: ȝoure lorde is to come/ soþely þat þing wite  
zee · for ȝif þe housbonde man wiste in what houre þe þeef were  
to come · treuely he schulde wake · & suffre not his hous to be  
vndirmyndyde/ and þerfore & zee be reedy · for in what houre  
zee gessen not mannes sone is to come/ who gessit þou is a  
trewer seruaunt & prudent (or war) · whom his lorde has or-  
deynyde on his meyne: þat he ȝyue to hem mete in tyme:  
blesside is þat seruaunt whom his lorde whan he schal come:  
schal fynde so doinge/ treuely I seye to ȝou · for vpon alle his  
goodis he schal ordeyne hym/ forsoþe ȝif þe ilke euyl seruaunt  
schal seye in his herte · my lorde makip dwellynge (or tary-  
nge) to come · & bygynneþ to smyte his euene seruauntis · soþely  
ȝif

## Matheu

zif he ete and dryncke wiþ drunken lewe men: þe lorde of þe ilke seruaunt schal come in þe daye in whiche he hopiþ not · & in houre þat he knowiþ not & schal departe hym · and putte hys parte wiþ ypocritis/ þere schal be wepyng & beetyng togedir of teer//



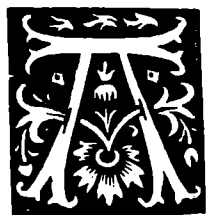
Þanne þe kyngdom of heuenes schal be lijk to ten C<sup>m</sup> 25<sup>m</sup> virgyns: þe whiche takyng here laumpis wenten oute metyng þe spouse (or housbonde): and þe spouse (or wiif)/ for fyue of hem weren foolis: and fyue prudent/ but þe fyue foolis here laumpis taken: taken not oyle wiþ hem/ forsoþe þe prudent taken oyle in here vessels: wiþ laumpis/ forsoþe þe spouse (or housbonde) makynge dwellynge: alle nappiden & slepten/ soþely at mydnyzt a crie was made: lo þe spouse cometh: go zee oute metyng to hym/ þanne alle þe virgyns risen vp: & anourneden here laumpis/ soþely þe fooles seyden to þe wisemen/ zife zee to vs of zoure oyle: for oure laumpis ben quenchide/ þe prudent aunswerynge/ lestte parauenture it suffice not to vs & to zou: go raper to men sellynge · & bye to zou/ forsoþe þe while þei wenten for to bye: þe spouse come/ and þo þat weren reedy entreden in wiþ hym to þe weddyngis · & þe zate is schitte/ soþely at þe laste: & þe oþer virgynes camen seyinge/ lorde lorde open to vs/ and he answeryng: seih/ trewely I seye to zou: I knowe not zou/ and so wake zee & preye: for zee witen not þe day ne þe hour/ soþely as a man going in pilgrimage clepide his seruauntis: and bitoke to hem his goodis/ and to one he zawe fyue talentis (or besauntis) · forsoþe to anoper one/ to eche aftir his owne vertue: and wente forþe anone/ forsoþe & he þat hadde take fyue talentis: wente forþe & wrouzte in hem & wan oþer fyue/ also & he þat had taken one: goinge forþ dalue it into þe erþe: and hid þe money of his lorde/ but aftir myche tyme þe lorde of þe seruauntis came: and puttide resoun wiþ hem/ and he þat had take fyue talentis comynge to offride oþer fyue: seyinge/

## Matheu

inge/ lorde þou bitokeſt to me fyue talentis: lo I haue geten ouer fyue oþer/ his lorde ſeiþ to hym/ wel be þou gode ſeruaunt & ſeiþful · for vpon fewe þingis þou haſte ben trewe I ſchal ordeyne þee vpon manye þingis · entre þou into ioye of þi lorde/ forſoþe & he þat had taken two talentis: came to & ſeiþ/ lorde þou bitokeſt to me two talentis: lo I haue geten ouer oþer two/ his lorde ſeiþ to hym/ wel be þou good ſeruaunt & trewe · for vpon fewe þingis þou haſt ben trewe: I ſchal ordeyne þee vpon manye þingis · entre into þe ioye of þi lorde/ forſoþe & he þat hadde taken one talent: comynge to ſeiþ/ lorde I wote for þou art an harde man þou reþeſt where þou haſt not ſowen · & þou gederidiſt to gedir: where þou haſte not ſprad abroode/ and I dredynge: wente & hid þi talent in þe erþe/ lo þou haſte þat þat is þin/ ſoþely his lorde anſwerynge: ſeyde to hym/ euyl ſeruaunt & ſlowe · wiſtiſt þou þat I reþe where I ſowe not · & gedir to gedir where I ſprad not abrood: þerefore it bihouede þee to ſende (or bitake) my money to chaungers · þat I comynge ſchulde haue receyuede · forſoþe þat þing þat is myn: wiþ vſures/ and ſo takith away fro hym þe talent: and ȝyue it to hym þat haþ ten talentis/ for to euery man haupng ſchal be ȝouen: and he ſchal haue plente/ and ſo hym þat haþ not · & þat þat he ſemeth to haue · ſchal be taken fro hym/ and caſte ȝee oute þe vnprofitable ſeruaunt · & ſende ȝee hym into vttermore dirkenenſis/ þere ſchal be wepyng & beetyng to gedir of teþ/ forſoþe whanne mannes ſone ſchal come in his mageſte · & alle his aungelis wiþ him/ þanne he ſchal ſitte on þe ſeege of his mageſte/ and alle folkis ſchulen be gediride bifore hym · & he ſchal departe hem atwynne: as a ſcheperde departith ſcheep fro kidis/ and ſoþely he ſchal ſette þe ſcheep on his riȝthalfe: þe kiddis forſoþe on his liſtehalfe/ þanne þe kyng ſchal ſeye to hem: þat ſchulen be on his riȝthalfe/ come ȝee þe bleſſide of my fadir · welde ȝee (or take ȝee in poſſeſſion) þe kyngdom made reedy to ȝou: fro þe makynge of þe worlde/ forſoþe I was hungri: and ȝee ȝauen to me for to ete/ I þriſtide: & ȝee ȝauen

## Matheu

zauen to me for to drynke/ I was herboroules; and zee gede-  
riden (or herborouden)/ nakide & zee hilliden me/ I was in  
prisoune; and zee camen to me/ þanne iuste men schulen an-  
swere to hym; seyinge/ lorde whanne sizen we þee hungry; and  
we fedden þee; þristy; & we zauen to þee drynke/ whanne for-  
soþe sizen we þee herborowles; & we gederiden; and nakide; &  
we helliden þee; or whanne sizen we þee sijk or in prysoune; &  
we camen to þee; and he answerynge schal seye to hem/  
treuely I seye to zou · as longe as zee diden to one of þes my  
leste breþren; zee diden to me/ þanne þe kyng schal seye & to  
hem; þat schulen be on his liftehalfe/ Departiþ fro me zee cur-  
side into euerlastyng fyr; þe whiche is made reedy to þe deuyl  
& his aungels/ soþely I hungride; and zee zauen not to me for  
to ete/ I þristide; & zee zauen not to me for to dryncke/ I was  
herborles; and zee gaderiden not me/ nakide; and zee couer-  
iden not me/ sijk & in prisoune; and zee visitiden not me/  
þanne & þei schulen answere to hym seyinge/ lorde whanne  
sizen we þee hungrynge or þristyngge or herborles or nakyde or  
sijk or in prysoune & we serueden not to þee; þanne he schal  
answere to hem; seyinge/ treuely I seye to zou · how longe  
zee diden not to one of þes leste; neþer zee diden to me/ and  
þes schulen go into euerlastyngge turment; forsoþe þe iuste  
men into euerlastyngge lijf//



**A**D it is done whanne ih̄c had endide alle þes wordis; C<sup>m</sup> 26<sup>m</sup>  
he seyde to his disciplis/ wite zee for aftir two dayes  
paske schal be made & mannes sone schal be bitaken  
þat he be crucifiede/ þanne þe prynces of pristis &  
þe eldre men of þe puple ben gederide into þe halle of þe  
prynces of pristis þat was seyde cayphas; and þei maden a  
counseyl þat þei schulden holde ih̄u wiþ gile & flee (hym)/  
soþely þei seyden/ not in þe feeste day; leste paraventure noyse  
were made in þe puple/ forsoþe whanne ih̄c was in behaunge in  
þe hous of symount leprous; a womman haupnge a bore of  
alabaſtre

## Matheu

alabaſtre of precious oynement came nyz to hym . & ſched  
oute on þe heed of hym reſtyngē/ and þe diſciplis ſeinge haddē  
dedeyn ſeyinge/ wherto þis loſſe/ forſoþe it myzt be ſolde for  
myche/ & be zouen to poore men/ ſoþely ih̄c witynge/ ſeiþ to  
hem/ what ben zee heuy to þis womman/ ſoþely a good werke  
ſche has wrouzte in me/ for whi zee ſchulen euermore haue  
pore men wiþ zou/ but zee ſchulen not algatis haue me/ for-  
ſoþe þis womman ſendynge þis oynement into my body/ ſche  
made for to birie me/ treuely I ſeye to zou . where euer þis goſ-  
pel ſchal be prechide in al þe worlde/ it ſchal be ſeyde þat & þis  
womman dide into mynde of hym/ þanne one of þe twelue þat  
was ſeyde Judas ſcarioth/ wente forþ to þe prynces of priſtis  
& ſeiþ to hem/ what wolen zee zyeue to me/ and I ſchal bitake  
hym to zou/ and þei ordeynyden to hym/ þritty platis of ſiluer/  
and fro þat tyme he ſouzte couenablete/ for to bitake hym/  
forſoþe in þe firſte day of þe feeſte of paſke . þe diſciplis camen  
to ih̄u/ ſeyinge/ where wolte þou we maken reedy to þee/ for  
to ete paſke/ and ih̄c ſeiþ/ go zee into þe cytee to ſumman/  
and ſeye zee to hym/ þe mayſter ſeiþ/ my tyme is nyz/ at þee  
I make my paſke wiþ my diſciplis/ and þe diſciplis diden . as  
ih̄c comaundide to hem/ and þei maden reedy paſke/ forſoþe  
euenynge made/ he ſatte at þe mete wiþ his twelue diſciplis/  
and he ſeye to hem/ etynge/ treuely I ſeye to zou/ for one of  
zou is to bitraye me/ and þei ful ſoory/ bigunnen eche to  
ſeye/ lorde wher I am/ and he anſweryng/ ſeiþ/ he þat wiþ  
me puttith þe hande in þe plater/ ſchal bitraye me/ forſoþe  
mannes ſone goiþ/ as it writen of hym/ but wo to þat man/  
by whom mannes ſone ſchal be bitrayede/ it were good to hym/  
zif þat man hadde not ben borne/ forſoþe Judas þat bitrayede  
hym/ anſweriden ſeyinge/ mayſter wher I am/ he ſeiþ to hym/  
þou haſt ſeyde/ forſoþe hem ſoupyngē Ih̄c took breed & bleſſide  
& brake & zafe to his diſciplis/ & ſeiþ/ take zee & ete/ þis is my  
body/ and he takynge þe cuppe . dide þankyngis & zafe to hem/  
ſeyinge/ dryncke zee alle herof/ þis is my blood of þe newe tes-  
tament

## Matheu

tament: he whiche schal be schedde oute for many into remys-  
sion of synnes/ forsoþe I seye to zou . I schal not drynke fro  
his tyme of his fruyte of þe vyne . til into þat day whanne I  
schal drynke it newe wip zou in þe kyngdom of my fadir/ and  
an ympne (or herynge) seyde: þei wenten oute into þe mounte  
of olyuete/ þanne ihc seiþ to hem/ alle zee schulen suffre  
sclaundre in me: in þis nigt/ for it is writen/ I schal smyte þe  
scheperde: and þe scheep of þe floc schulen be scateride for-  
soþe aftir þat I schal rise azen: I schal go bifore zou into ga-  
lilee/ soþely petre answerynge: seiþ to hym/ and zif alle schulen  
be sclaunderide in þee: I schal neuer be sclaunderide/ Ihc seiþ  
to hym/ treuely I seye to þee . for in þis nigt bifore þe cocke  
crowe: þries þou schalt denye me/ petre seiþ to hym/ and zif  
it schal bihoue me to dye wip þee: I schal not denye þee/ also &  
alle þe disciplis seyden/ þanne ihc came wip hem into a toun  
þat is seyde Iessamany: and he seyde to his disciplis/ sitte zee  
heere: þe while I go þidir & preye/ and petre taken to . & two  
sones of zebedee: he bigan for to be distourblide (or heuy) &  
soory (in herte)/ þanne he seiþ to hem/ my soule is sorowful  
til to þe deþ/ susteyne zee (or abide) heere: & wake zee wip  
me/ and he gone forþ a litil: fel doune into his face . preyinge  
& seyinge/ my fadir zif it is possible: passe þis cuppe fro me/  
neþeles not as I wole: but as þou (wolte)/ and he came to his  
disciplis: and fonde hem slepynge/ and he seiþ to petre/ so/  
wher zee myzten not one houre wake wip me: wake zee &  
preye: þat zee entre not into temptacōn/ forsoþe þe spirit is  
reedy: but þe flesche seek (or vnstable)/ este þe secounde tyme:  
he wente & prepede seyinge/ my fadir zif þis cuppe may not  
passe no but zif I drynke: þi wille be done/ and estesone he  
came and fonde hem slepynge/ forsoþe here yzen weren greeu-  
yde (or heuyede)/ and hem lefte: he wente estesone . & prepede  
þe þridde tyme: þe same worde seyinge/ þanne he came to his  
disciplis: and seiþ to hem/ slepe zee now: and reste zee/ lo þe  
houre haþ neyzed: and mannes sone schal be taken into þe  
handis

## Matheu

handis of synners/ rise zee/ go we/ lo he þat schal trape me/ schal ny3/ and 3it hym spekyng/ lo Judas one of þe twelue · & wiþ hym came a greet cumpanye · wiþ swardis & battis sente of þe prynces of pristis · & of þe eldre men of þe puple /forsoþe he þat bitrayede hym/ zafe to hem a token seyinge/ whom euer I schal kisse/ he it is · holde zee hym/ and anone he compnge ny3 to ihū/ seyde/ heyle mayster/ and he kissede hym/ and ihc seis to hym/ frende/ wherto art þou comen/ þanne þei camen ny3 · & castiden handis into ihū/ and helden hym/ and lo one of hem þat weren wiþ ihū · holdynge oute þe hande/ drowe oute his swarde/ and he smytynge þe seruaunt of þe prynce of pristis/ kitte of his litil ere/ þanne ihc seip to hym/ turne þi swarde into his place/ soþely alle þat schulen take swardes/ schulen perische by swarde/ wher gessist þou þat I may not preye my fadir · & he schal 3pue to me now/ more þan twelue legiouns of aungels/ how þerfore schulen þe scriptures be fulfilde/ for so it bihoueh to be done/ In þat houre ihc seyde to þe cumpanyes of puple/ as to a þeef zee hane gon oute wiþ swardes & battis for to catche me/ day bi day I satte at zou techynge in þe temple/ and zee hilden not me/ forsoþe alle þing was done/ þat þe scriptures of prophetis schulden be fulfilde/ ¶ Þanne alle þe disciplis fledden/ hym forsaken/ and þei holdynge ihū/ ledde hym to cayphas prynce of pristis · where scribis & pharisees & þe eldre men of þe puple hadden comen to gedir/ forsoþe petre suedde hym fer/ til into þe halle of þe prynce of pristis/ and he gone wiþinne/ satte wiþ seruauantis þat he schulde se þe ende/ forsoþe þe prynces of pristis & al þe counseyl souzten false witnessyng azenes ihū · þat þei schulden take hym to deþ/ & þei founden not/ whanne many false witness hadden comen to/ treuly at þe laste two false witness camen & seyde/ he þis seyde/ I may distrupe þe temple of god/ and aftir þe þridde day bilde it azen/ and þe prynce of pristis ryfinge/ seip to hym/ answereste þou no þing to þo þingis · þe whiche þes wytnessen azenes þee/ forsoþe ihc was stille/

## Matheu

stille/ and þe prynce of pristis seiþ to hym/ I coniure þee by  
 quicke god · þat þou seye to vs · zif þou be crist þe sone of god/  
 and ih̄c seyde to hym/ þou hast seyde/ neþeles I seye to zou ·  
 anoter tyme · (or fro þis tyme forþ ·) zee schulen se mannes  
 sone sittynge at þe rizthalfe of þe vertue of god · & comynge in  
 cloudis of heuene/ þanne þe prynce of pristis kitte (or to  
 rente) his cloþes · seyinge/ he haþ blasfemyde/ what zit nede  
 hane we to witnessis? lo nowe zee hane herde blasfemye/  
 what seemeþ to zou? and þei answerynge · seyden/ he is  
 guilty of deeth// ¶ þanne þei spittiden into his face · and smy-  
 ten hym wiþ buffetis/ forsoþe oþer zauen strokis wiþ þe  
 pawme of handis into his face · seyinge/ þou crist prophecie  
 to vs who is he þat smote þee/ soþely petre satte wiþ outhen in  
 þe porche/ and one hande mayden came nyȝ to hym · seyinge/  
 and þou were wyþ ih̄u of galilee/ and he denyede before alle  
 men · seyinge/ I woote not what þou seyst/ forsoþe hym go-  
 inge outh þe zate · anoter hande mayden siȝe hym · & seiþ to  
 hem þat weren þere/ and þis was wiþ ih̄u of nazareþ/ and  
 eftesone he denyede wiþ an oþer · for he knewe not þe man/  
 and aftir a litil · þei þat stoodden camen nyȝ · and seyden to pe-  
 tre/ treuely and þou art of hem/ for whi & þi speche makith þee  
 open? þanne he bigan to warie & to sweare · þat he knewe not  
 þe man/ and anone þe cocke crewe/ and petre biþouȝte on  
 þe worde of Ih̄u · þat he had seyde · before þe cocke croue ·  
 þries þou schalt denye me/ & he gone outh · wepte bittirly//



**F**orsoþe þe moroutide made · alle þe pryncis of pris- C<sup>m</sup> 27<sup>m</sup>  
 tis & eldre men of þe puple token counseyl azenes  
 ih̄u · þat þei schulden take hym to deþ/ and þei led-  
 den hym bounden · and bitoke to pilate of pounce ·  
 mayre (or chief iustise)/ þanne Judas þat bitrayede hym · se-  
 inge þat he was dampnyde · he ledde by penaunce (or for-  
 þinkyng) · brouȝte aȝen þritty platis of siluer · to þe prynces of  
 pristis & to þe eldre men of þe puple · seyinge/ I haue synnede ·

I

bytrayinge



## Matheu

bytrayinge iuste blood/ and þei seyden what to us/ se þou/  
and the platis of siluer caste aweye in þe temple/ he wente  
aweye/ and goinge away/ he hengide hymself wip a gerne/  
forsoþe þe prynces of pristis tooken þe platis of siluer/ sey-  
den/ it is not leueful to sende hem into þe tresourie/ for it is  
þe prise of blood/ soþely counseyl taken/ þei brouzten wip  
hem þe feelde of a potter/ into birpinge of deade men/ for þis  
þing þe ilke feelde/ is clepide acheldemak/ þat is feelde of  
blood/ til into þis day/ þanne it is fulfild þat is seyde by þe  
prophete Jerempe/ seyinge/ and þei tooken þritty platis of  
siluer/ þe prise of a man preyside/ whom þei preysiden of þe  
sones of isrl/ þei zauen hem into þe feelde of þe potter/ as the  
lorde ordeynede to me/ soþely ihc stode bifore þe mayre (or  
domesman) and þe domesman axide hym seyinge/ art þou kyng  
of iewis/ ihc seih to hym/ þou seyst/ and whanne he was accuside  
of þe prynces of pristis & eldre men of þe puple/ he answeride  
no þing/ þanne pilate seih to hym/ herist þou not how manye  
witnesyngis þei seyn azenes þee/ and he answeride not to  
hym to any worde/ so þat þe domesman wondride gretely/  
forsoþe bi a solemne day/ þe domesman was wonte for to de-  
lyuer to þe puple one bounden/ whom þei wolden/ forsoþe he  
had one nobleman bounden/ þat was seyde barrabas/ þerfore  
pilate seyde to hem gederide to geder/ whom wolen zee I  
leese (or delyuer) to zou/ wher barrabas or ihc / þat is seyde  
crist/ soþely he wiste þat by enuie þei bitrapeden hym/ for-  
soþe hym sittynge for iustice (or domesman)/ his wiif sente to  
hym/ seyinge/ no þing to þee/ and to þat iuste man/ soþely I  
haue suffride þis day many þingis for hym/ by a vision (or  
tweenene/) forsoþe þe prynces of pristis & þe eldre men/ sey-  
den (or counseyliden) to the puples þat þey schulden are bar-  
rabas/ but ihu þei schulden leese/ forsoþe þe president answer-  
yng/ seih to hem/ whom of þe two wolen zee to be leste (or de-  
lyueride) to zou/ and þei seyden barrabas/ pilate seih to hem/  
what þerfore schal I do of ihu þat is seyde crist/ alle seyn be he  
crucifiede/

## Matheu

crucifiede/ þe president seyde to hem/ soþely what of euyl haþ  
he done? and þei crieden more: seyinge be he crucifiede/ for-  
soþe pilate seinge: þat he profitide no þing · but þe more  
noyse was made: water taken · waschide his handis bifore  
þe puple: seyinge/ I am innocent (or giltylesse) of þis iuste  
man/ bisee 3ou/ and al þe puple answerynge: seyde/ his blood  
vpon vs: & on oure sones/ þanne he lefte to hem barrabas:  
but he took to hem ihū scourgide · þat he schulde be crucifiede/  
¶ þanne knyztis of þe president takynge ihū in þe moothalle:  
gederiden to hem al þe cumpange of knyztis/ and þei vncloþ-  
ing hym: diden aboute hym a reede mantel/ and þei foldynge  
a crowne of þornes: puttiden on his heede: and a reed in his  
rizthande/ and þe knee bowide (or folden) bifore hym: þei  
scornyn den hym seying/ heyle kyng of iewis/ and þei spittynge  
into hym: token a reed smyten his heed/ and aftir þat þei hadden  
scornyd hym: þei vncloþiden hym of þe mantil · & þei cloþiden  
hym wiþ his clothes · & ledden hym for to crucifie/ ¶ soþely þei  
going oute founden a man of cyrinense comynge fro a toune ·  
symount by name/ þei constreyneden hym: þat he schulde take  
his crosse/ and þei camen into a place · þat is clepide galgatha:  
þat is þe place of caluarie/ & þei zauen hym for to drynke wyne  
meynde wiþ galle/ and whanne he had tastide: he wolde not  
drynke/ soþely aftir þat þei hadden crucifiede hym: þei depart-  
iden his clothes · sendynge lot/ þat it schulde be fulfild · þat is  
seyde by þe prophete seyinge / þei departiden my clothes: and  
vpon my cloþe þei senten lot/ and þei sittynge: kepten hym/  
and þei puttiden on his heede: þe cause of hym writen/ þis is  
ihc̄ of nazareth: kyng of iewis/ ¶ þanne two þeefes ben cruci-  
fiede wiþ hym one on þe rizthalse · & one on þe liftehalfe/ for-  
soþe men passynge forþ blaffemeden hym: mouynge here  
heedis & seyinge/ vath (or fye to þee) þat distreyst þe temple of  
god · & in þe þridde day bildest it azen/ saue þou þi self/ zif  
þou art þe sone of god: come doune of þe crosse/ also þe pryn-  
ces of pristis scornynge wiþ scribis and eldre men: seyden/ he  
made

# Matheu

made oþer men ſaaf/ he may not make hym ſelf ſaaf/ ʒif he is  
kyng of iſrl: come he now doune fro þe croſſe. & we bileuen to  
hym/ he triſtiþ in god: delyuer he hym nowe ʒif he wole/ for-  
ſoþe he ſeyde: for I am goddis ſone/ forſoþe & þe þeeſes þat  
weren crucifiede wiþ hym: puttiden to hym wiþ reproſe þe  
ſame þing/ ſoþely fro þe ſirte houre dirkneſſis ben made on  
al þe erþe: til to þe nyȝte houre/ and aboute þe nyȝte houre:  
Ih̄c criede wiþ greet voyce: ſeyinge/ hely. hely lamazabata-  
nye. þat is my god wherto (or why) haſt þou forſaken me/  
ſoþely ſummen ſtondynge þere & herynge: ſeyden/ þis clepiþ  
helie/ and anone one of hem rennyng. fillide a ſpounge ta-  
ken wiþ eyſel or vʒnegre. & puttide to a rede. & ʒaue to hym  
for to drinke/ but oþer ſeyden/ ſuffre þou. ſe we wheþer helie  
come delyuerynge hym/ forſoþe ih̄c eſtesones cryinge wiþ  
greet voyce: ſente oute þe ſpirit/ and lo þe veyle of þe temple  
is kitte (or rente) into two parties: fro þe hizeſt til doune/  
and þe erþe is mouede. & ſtones ben cleſte. & biriels ben  
openyde. & manye bodies of ſeyntes þat ſlepten (or weren  
deade:) riȝen aȝen/ and þei goinge oute of here biriels. after  
his reſurreccōn. camen into þe holy cytee: and apperiden to  
manye/ treuely centurio & þei þat weren wiþ hym keepynge  
ih̄u. þe mounge of þe erþe ſeen. & þo þingis þat weren done:  
dredden gretly ſeyinge/ verreyly þis was goddis ſone/ forſoþe  
þere weren þere: manye wymmen aȝer: þat ſueden Ih̄u fro ga-  
lilee. myȝſtrynge to hym/ amonge whiche was mary ma-  
wdeleyn. & mary of James. & modir of ioſeph. & þe modir of  
zebedees ſones// ¶ Forſoþe whanne þe euenynge was made:  
þere came one riche man fro armathie Joſeph by name. þe  
whiche & he was a diſciple of ih̄u/ he wente to pilat. & aȝide þe  
body of Ih̄u/ þanne pilat comaundide þe body to be ʒolden/  
and þe body taken. Joſeph wlapide it in a clene ſandel (or  
lynnen cloþ) & puttide it in his newe birpel. þat he hadde  
hewen in a ſtoon/ and he walowide to a greet ſtoon at þe dore  
of þe briel: and wente away/ forſoþe mary mawdeleyn & ano-  
þer

## Matheu

þer mary weren þere · sittynge azenes þe sepulcre/ ¶ forsoþe on þat oþer day þat is aftir pask euenynge/ þe prynces of pristin & pharisees camen to gedir to pilat/ seyinge/ sire we hane mynde for þe ilke traytour (or deceyuour) · seyde zit luynges/ aftir þre dages I schal rise azen/ þerfore comaunde þou þe sepulcre for to be kepte · til vnto þe þridde day/ lest parauenture his disciplis comen & steelen hym · & seyn to þe puple · he hath risen fro deade/ an þe laste errour schal be worse þan þe former/ pilat seih to hem/ zee hane þe keepynge/ go zee/ kepe zee as zee kunnen/ forsoþe þei goinge forþ/ kepten (or warden) þe sepulcre · markyng (or seelyng) þe stoon wiþ keepers//



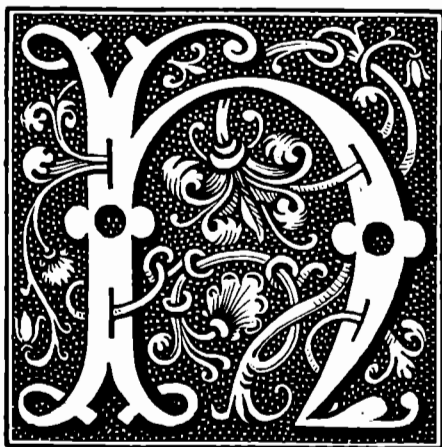
Forsoþe in þe euenynge of þe saboth (or halyday) C<sup>m</sup> 28<sup>m</sup> þat schyneth in þe firste day of þe woke/ mary mawdeleyne came and anoder marye · for to se þe sepulcre/ and lo þere was made a greet erþe mouynge/ forsoþe an aungel of þe lorde came doune fro heuene · & comynge to turnyde away þe stoon & satte þeron/ soþely his lokynge was as lepte/ and his clothes as snowe/ forsoþe for drede of hym þe keepers ben aferdes/ and þei ben made as deade men/ forsoþe þe aungel answeringe/ seyde to þe wymmnen/ nyl zee drede/ for I wote þat ze seken/ ihū þat is crucifiede/ he is not heere/ soþely he roos as he seyde/ come zee & se þe places/ where þe lorde was putte/ and zee goinge soone · seye zee to his disciples & to petre/ for he hath risen/ and lo he schal go before zou into galilee/ þere zee schulen se hym/ lo I haue bifore seyde to zou// ¶ and mary mawdeleyne & anoder mary wenten oute soone fro þe biriel · wiþ dreed & greet ioie rennyng for to telle his disciplis/ and lo ihc ran azenes hem/ seyinge/ heyle zee/ forsoþe þei camen to & hilde his feet/ and worschippeden hym/ þanne ihc seih to hem/ nyl zee drede/ go zee telle zee to my breþeren · þat þei go into galilee/ þere þei schulen se me/ þe whiche whanne þei hadden gone/ lo summe of þe keepers

## Matheu

kepers camen into þe cytee & telden to þe prynces of pristiſ alle þingis þat weren done/ and þei gederide to gedir wiþ þe eldre men & a counſeþl taken: & zauen to þe knyztis plenteuous money & ſeyinge/ ſeye zee for his diſciplis camen by nyzt & hane ſtolne hym & vs ſlepyngē/ and zif þis be herde of þe preſident (or iuſtice): we ſchulē counſel hym & make you ſiker/ and þe money taken: þei diden as þei weren tauzte/ and þis worde is pupliſchede at þe iewis: til into þis day// Jforſoþe elleuene diſciplis wenten into galilee: into an hil where ihc hadde ordeynede to hem/ and þei ſeyinge hym: worſchipiden/ ſoþely ſomme of hem doutiden/ and ihc comyng to: ſpac to hem & ſeyinge/ al power is zouen to me: in heuene & in erþe/ þerfore zee goinge teche alle folkis & criſtenyngē hem in þe name of þe fadir & of þe ſone & of þe holy goſt/ techyngē hem for to kepe alle þingis: what euer þingis I haue comaundide zou/ and lo I am wiþ zou in alle dayes: til to þe endyngē of þe worlde//

## Mark

C<sup>m</sup> I<sup>m</sup>



Ere bigynnes þe goſpel of mark & The bigynnyngē of þe goſpel of ihu criſt þe ſone of god: as it is writen in yſaie þe prophete/ lo I ſende myn aungel bifore þi face: þat ſchal make reedy þe weye bifore þee/ þe voyce of one cryngē in deſerte & make zee reedy þe weye of þe lordes: make zee his papes riȝtful/ Joon was in deſert baptiſyngē & prechyngē þe baptym of penaunce & in remyſſion of ſynnes/ and alle men of irlm wenten oute to hym: and al þe cuntre of Jude/ and weren baptiſide of hym in þe flood of iordan: knowelechyngē here ſynnes/ and Joon was cloþide

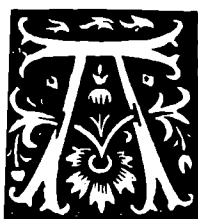
## Mark

cloþide wiþ heeris of camels: and a girdel of skynne about his leendis/ and he ete locustis & hony of þe wode: and prechide seyinge/ a strengre þan I schal come aftir me · of whom I knelynge am not worþi for to vndo (or vnbynde) þe þwonge of his schoon/ I haue baptiside zou in water: forsoþe he schal baptise zou in þe holy goost// ¶ And it is done in þo dayes · ihc̄ came fro nazareþ of galilee · & was baptiside of Ioon in Iordan/ and anone he steyzinge vp of þe water: sūze heuenes openyde. & þe holy goost comynge doune · as a culuer · & dwellynge in hym/ & a voyce is made fro heuenes/ þou art my louede sone: in þee I haue pleside/ and anone þe spirit puttide hym into deserte and he was in deserte forty dayes & forty nyztis: and was temptide of sathanas/ and he was wiþ beestis: and aungels mynystriden to hym// forsoþe aftir þat Ioon was taken: Ihc̄ came into galilee · prechyng þe gospel of þe kyngdom of god: & seyinge/ for tyme is fulfild: and þe kyngdom of god schal come niz/ forþinke zee (or do zee penaunce): and bileue zee to þe gospel/ and he passinge bysides þe see of galilee: syze Symount & andrew his broþer · sendynge nettis into þe see/ soþely þei weren fischers/ and ihc̄ seyde to hem/ come zee aftir me: I schal make zou to be made fischers of men/ and anone þe nettis forsaken: þei sueden hym/ and he gone forþ þens a litil · sūze iames of zebedee · & Ioon his broþer · & hem in þe boot makynge nettis · & anone he clepide hem/ and zebedee here fadir lefte in þe boot wiþ his ride seruauntis: þei sueden hym// ¶ And þei wenten forþ into capharnaum/ and anone in þe sabotis he gon in · into þe synagoge: tauzte hem/ and þei wondriden on his techynge/ soþely he was techynge hem as haupnge power: and not as scribis/ and in þe synagoge of hem was a man in an vnclene spirit: and he criede seyinge/ what to vs & to þee: þou ihū of nazareþ: hast þou comen bifore þe tyme for to distrupe vs? I woot þat þou art þe holy of god/ and ihc̄ þretenyde to hym: seyinge/ ware doumbe: and go oute of þe man/ and þe vnclene goost debrekynge hym & cryinge wiþ greet voyce: wente

## Mark

wente aweye fro hym/ and alle men wondriden: so þat þei souzten to gedir amonge hem seyinge/ what is þis þing? what is þis newe techynge? for in power he comaundiþ to vnclene spiritis: and þei obeschē to hym/ & þe tale (or tyd- ynge) of hym: wenten forþ anone into þe cuntre of galilee/ and anone þei goinge oute of þe sinagoge: camen into þe hous of symount & andrewe · wiþ James and ioon/ soþely þe modir of symountis wife: reside (or laye sick) in þe feueres/ and anone þei seyn to hym of hir/ and he comynge to · reride hire vp: þe hande of hire taken/ & anone þe feuer lefte hire: and sche mynysride to hem/ forsoþe þe euenynge made · whanne þe sunne wente doune: þei brouzten to hym alle haupnge euyl · & haupnge deuelis/ and al þe cytee was gederide at þe zate/ and he helide many þ̄ weren traueylide wiþ dyuerse sooris: and he castide oute many deuelis/ and he suffride hem not for to speke: for þei knewen hym/ and in þe mornynge ful erly · he risynge gone oute wente into deserte places: and preyede here/ and Symount suede hym & þei þat weren wiþ hym/ and whanne þei hadden founden hym: þei seyden to hym/ for alle men seeken þee/ and he seiþ to hem/ go we into þe nexte tounes & cytees: þat & here I preche/ for to þis þing I came/ and he was prechynge in þe synagoges of hem & in al galilee: and castynge oute fendis// ¶ And a leprous man came to hym: bisechynge hym/ and þe kne folden: seyde/ zif þou wolte: þou mayste clense me/ and ih̄c haupnge mercy on hym: streypte oute his hande/ and touchynge hym: seiþ to hym/ I wole/ be þou made clene/ and whanne he had seyde: anone þe lepre partide aweye fro hym/ and he is clenside/ and he þretenyde to hym/ and anone he putte hym oute: and seiþ to hym/ se þou: seye to no man/ but go schewe þee to þe prynces of pristiis · & offer for þi clensynge þo þingis þat moyses bad · into witness- ynge to hem/ and he gon oute: bigan to preche . & defame (or puplische) þe worde: so þat now he myzte not go into þe cy- tee: but be wiþ oute forþ in deserte places/ and þei camen to gedir to hym on alle sidis//

## Mark



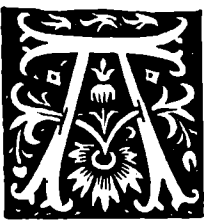
And este he entride into capharnaum: astir eyzte C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>  
dayes/ and it is herde þat he was in an hous · &  
manye camen togedir · so þat it toke hem not: neþer  
at þe zate/ and he spac to hem a worde/ and þere  
camen to hym men bryngyng a sijk man in palesie: þe whiche  
was borne of foure men/ and whanne þei myzten not offer hym  
to hym for þe cumpange of puple: þei maden þe roof nakide  
where he was/ and makynge open: þei setten doune þe bed · in  
whiche þe sijk man in palesie lay/ soþely whanne ihc sice þe  
seih of hem: he seih to þe sijk man in palesie/ sone: þi synnes  
ben forzouen to þee/ forsoþe þere weren summe of þe scribis  
sittynge & þenkynge in here hertis/ what spekiþ he þis þus: he  
blaffemeth/ who may forzyue synnes: but god alone: þe whiche  
þing anone knowen by þe holy goft · for þei þouzten wiþinne  
hemself: ihc seih to hem/ what þenken zee þes thingis in zoure  
hertis: what is lizter for to seye to þe sijk man in palesie ·  
synnes be forzouen to þee: or for to seye take þi bed & walke/  
soþely þat zee witen · þat mannes sone haþ power in erþe to  
forzyue synnes: he seih to þe sijk man in palesie/ I seye to þee  
rise vp · take þi bed: and go into þin hous/ and anone he roos  
vp/ and þe bed taken vp he wente bifore alle men · so þat alle  
men wondriden & honoureden god: seyinge/ for we sizen neuer  
so// ¶ And he went out estesones to þe see: & al þe cumpange  
of puple came to hym: and he tauzte hem/ and whanne he  
passide : he sice leuy alphei sittynge at þe tolboþe/ and he seih  
to hym/ sue me/ and he risynge: suede hym/ and it is done  
whanne he satte at þe mete in his hous: many puplicans &  
synful men: saten togedir at þe mete wiþ ihu & his disciplis/  
soþely þere weren manye þat folowiden hym/ and scribis &  
pharisees seinge for he ete wiþ puplicans & synful men: seyden  
to his disciplis/ whi etih zoure mayster & drynkiþ wiþ pupli-  
cans & synners/ þis þing herde: ihc seih to hem/ hoole men  
hane no neede to a lecher: but þei þathane euyl/ forsoþe I came



## Mark

not to clepe iuste men: but synners// ¶ And þe disciplis of ion (baptist) & þe pharisees weren fastynge: & þei camen & seyn to hym/ whi þe disciplis of Ion & of pharisees fasten: but þi disciplis fasten not? and ihc seih to hem/ wheþer þe sones of weddynges motwne faste · as longe as þe spouse is wiþ hem? how longe tyme þei hane þe spouse wiþ hem: þei motwne not faste/ forsoþe dayes schulen come · whanne þe spouse schal be taken away fro hem: and þanne þei schulen faste in þo dayes/ no man sewiþ a pacche of rude (or newe) clooth · to an olde clooth/ ellis he takiþ suppliment (or pacche:) and a more brekynge is made/ and no man sendiþ newe wijn into olde botels (or wijn vessels) ellis þe wijn schal berste þe wijn vessels · & þe wijn schalbe heelde oute · & þe wijn vessels schulen perische/ but newe wijn schal be sente into newe wijn vessels/ and it is done estesones whanne þe lorde walkide in þe sabotis by þe cornes · & his disciplis bigunnen to passe forþe & plucke eris/ soþely þe pharises seyden/ lo what þi disciplis done in sabotis þat is not leueful? and he seih to hem/ redder zee neuer what dauid dide · whan he had nede? and he hungride/ and þei þat weren wiþ hym · howe he wente into þe hous of god · vndir abiathar prynce of pristis · & ete looues of proposicion · þe whiche it was not leueful to ete · no but to pristis alone/ & he zaue to hem þat weren wiþ hym/ and he seyde to hem/ þe saboth is made for man: and not man for þe saboth/ and so mannes sone is lorde also of þe saboth/

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



¶ And he entride estesone into þe synagoge: and þer was a man haupnge a drie hande/ and þei aspieden hym · zif he heelide in sabotis: for to accuse hym/ and he seih to þe man haupnge a drye hande/ rise into þe mydel/ and he seih to hem: is it leueful to do wel in þe sabothis or euyl? for to make a soule saaf: wher to leese? and þei weren stille/ and he biholdynge hem aboute wiþ wrappe · haupnge sorowe vpon þe blyndenesse of here herte: seih to þe man/

## Mark

man/ holde forþ þin hande/ and he helde forþ: and þe hande is restoride to hym/ soþely þe pharisees goinge oute · anone made counseyl wip herodians azenes hym: how þei schulden leese hym// ¶ Forsoþe ihc wip his disciplis: wente to þe see/ and myche cumpanye fro galilee & Judee suede hym · and fro irlm · & fro ydume · & fro bizende iordan · & þei þat abouten tyre & sidon a greet multitude · herynge þe þingis þat he dide: camen to hym/ & ihc seip to his disciplis: þat þe litil boot schulde serue hym for þe cumpanye of puple: lest þei oppressiden hym/ soþely he helide manye · so þat þei felden faste to hym: þat þei schulden touche hym/ forsoþe how many euer hadden sooris & vnclene spiritis · whan þei sizen hym: felden doune to hym: and crieden seyinge/ þou art þe sone of god/ and gretely he manasside hem: þat þei schulden not make hym knowen/ and he stepzinge into an hil: clepide to hym whom he wolde/ and þei camen to hym: and he made þat þere weren twelue wip hym · & þat he schulde sende hem for to preche/ and he ȝaue to hem power of helynge sekenessis: & of castynge oute fendes/ and to Symount he putte name petre/ and James of zebede · & Joon þe broþer of James · & he putte to hem names boenarges (þat is þe sones of pundryng)/ and Andrew & philip · & Bertholomew · & matheu · & Thomas & James al- phei & thadee · & Symount canane · & Judas scarioth þat bi- trayede hym/ and þei camen to an hous: and þe cumpanye of puple came togedir eftesone · so þat þei myzten not neþer ete breede/ and whan his disciplis (or kynnesmen) hadden herde: þei wenten oute for to holde hym/ soþely þei seyden: for he is turnede into wodenesse/ and þe scribis þat camen doune fro irlm: seyden for he haþ belzebub: and for in þe prynce of deuelis · he castiþ oute fendes/ and hem gederide to gedir: he seyde to hem in parablis/ how may sathanas caste oute satha- nas: and ȝif a rewme be departide in it self: þe ilke rewme may not stonde/ and ȝif an hous be departide in it self: þe ilke hous may not stonde/ and ȝif sathanas haþ risen azenes hym self: he

## Mark

he is disperlide · & he schal not motwe stande · but haþ an ende/ noman gon into a stronge mannes hous · may take away his vessels; no but he bynde firste · þe stronge man/ and þanne he schal dyuersely; raupſche his hous// ¶ treuely I sepe to ʒou · for alle synnes & blasfemes · by whiche þei haue blasfemyde; schulen be forʒouen to þe sones of men/ soþely he þat schal blasfeme azenes þe holy goost; schal not haue remysſiõ into wiþ outen ende/ but he schal be gilty · of euerlastyng trespasse/ for þei seyden/ he haþ an unclene spirit/ and his modir & breþeren camen/ and þei stondyng wiþ outen forþe; senten to hym · clepyng to hym/ and a cumpanye satte aboute hym/ and þei seyn to hym/ lo þi modir & þi breþeren wiþ outen forþe seeken þee/ and he answeryng to hem; seiþ/ who is my modir & my breþeren; and biholdyng hem aboute · þat saten in þe cumpas of hym; he seiþ/ lo my modir & my breþeren/ forsoþe who þat doþ þe wille of god; he is my broþer & my syster & modir//

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>



And este ihc bigan for to teche at þe see; and myche cumpanye of puple is gederide to hym · so þat he stepzyng into a boot · satte in þe see/ and al þe cumpanye of puple; was aboute þe see on þe lande/ and he tauzte hem in parablis; many þingis/ and he seyde to hem in his techyng/ here ʒee/ lo a man sowyng; goþ oute for to sowe/ and þe while he sowiþ; anoper seede felde aboute þe weye · & briddis of heuene camen & eten it/ forsoþe anoper felde doune on stoony places; where it hadde not myche erþe/ anone it is sprungen vp; for it hadde not depnesse of erþe/ and whanne þe sunne roos vp; it welowide for heet/ and it dryede vp; for it had not root/ and anoper felde doune into þornes/ & þornes stepzyden vp & strangliden it; and it ʒaue not fruyte/ and anoper felde doune into good lande; and it ʒaue fruyte stepzyng vp & waxyng/ and one brouzte þritty folde fruyte · & one sixty folde; & one an hundrid folde/ and he seyde/ he þat haþ

## Mark

hath eris of herynge: here/ ¶ And whanne he was synguler (or by hym self:) þe twelue þat weren wiþ hym · axeden hym for to expoune þis parable/ and he seyde to hem/ to 3ou it is 3ouen for to knowe þe mysterie (or pryuate:) of þe kyngdom of god/ soþely to þem þat ben with outen forþ: alle þingis ben made in parablis/ þat þei seinge se: and se not/ & þei herynge here: & vnderstonde not/ þat sum tyme þei be conuertide: and synnes be for3ouen to hem/ and he seiþ to hem/ witen 3ee not þis parable · & how 3ee schulen knowe alle parablis/ he þat sowiþ: sowiþ a worde/ þes soþely ben þat ben aboute þe weye where þe worde is sown · & whanne þei hane herde: anone cometh satanas · & takith away þe worde · þat is sown in here hertis/ and so þes ben þat ben sown on a stoon: þe whiche whanne þei herden þe worde: anone taken it wiþ ioye/ and þei hane not root in hemself: but þei ben temperal: (þat is lasten but a litil tyme)/ aftirwarde tribulaciō sprungen vp & persecucion for þe worde: anone þei ben sclaunderide/ and þer ben oþer þat ben sown in þornes/ þes ben þat heren þe worde & mysseþ sce of þe worlde & decepte of richessis · & oþer charge of coueytise entryng: in stranglen þe worde · & it is made wiþ outen fruyte/ and þes it ben þat ben sown on good lande · þe whiche heren þe worde & taken it & maken fruyte · one þritty folde · one sixty folde · & one an hundride folde/ ¶ And he seiþ to hem/ wher a lanterne come · þat it be putte vnder a buschel/ wher not þat it be putte: vpon a candilsticke/ forsoþe þer is no þing hidde: þat schal not be made open/ neþer any þing is pryue: þe whiche schal not come into apeert/ 3if any man hath eris of herynge: here he/ and he seyde to þem/ se 3ee what 3ee heren/ in what mesure 3ee mesuren: it schal be meten · & be caste to 3ou/ soþely it schal be 3ouen to hym þat hath/ and it schal be taken away · fro hym þat hath not · also & þat þat he hath/ ¶ And he seyde/ so þe kyngdom of god is · as 3if a man caste seede into þe erþe · & it slepiþ & it risiþ vp in nyzt & day & bryngiþ forþ seed · & waxiþ faste: þe while he woot not/ forsoþe þe

## Mark

þe erþe by his ownewirchynges: makith fruyte/ firſte an erbe (or grene corne)/ aftirwarde an ere: aftirwarde ful fruyte in þe ere/ and whanne of it ſelf it haþ brouzte forth fruyte: anone he ſendith a ſikel (or hook): for riip corne cometh/ and he ſeyde/ to what þing ſchul we liken þe kyngdom • or to what parable ſchulen we comparifounen it? as a corne of ſeneuey • þe which whanne it is ſowen in þe erþe: is leſſe þanne alle ſeed is þat ben in þe erþe/ and whanne it is bredde (or quykentyde •) it ſtepyth vp into a tree • & is made more þan alle wortis (or erbis)/ and it ſchal make greet braunchis • ſo þat briddis of heuene motwone dwelle vnder þe ſchadowe þer of/ and in many ſuche parables he ſpac to hem a worde • as þei myzten here/ ſoþely he ſpac not to hem: withouten parable/ forſoþe he expounyde to his diſciplis alle þingis: on ſidithonde (or by hemſelf)/ ¶ And he ſeiþ to hem in þat day whenne euenyng was made: paſſe we azenwarde/ and þei leeyng þe cumpange of puple: taken hym/ ſo þat he was in þe boot • & oþer bootis weren wiþ hym/ and a greet ſtoorme of wynde is made: and ſente wawis in þe boot • ſo þat þe boot was ful/ and he was in þe hyndir parte of þe boot: ſlepyng on a pilowe/ and þei reysen hym: and ſeyn to hym/ maſter parteyneth it not to þee: þat we perifchen? and he ryfynge vp • manaffide to þe wynde: and ſeyde to þe ſee/ be ſtille • ware doumbe/ and þe wynde ceefide: and greet peefiblenefſe is made/ and he ſeiþ to hem/ what dreden zee: not zit hane zee feiþ/ and þei dredden wiþ grete drede: and ſeyde to eche oþer/ who geſtith þou is þis: for þe wynde & þe ſee obefchen to hym//

C<sup>m</sup> 5<sup>m</sup>



And þei camen ouer þe wawe of þe ſee: into þe cuntre of genazareth/ and anone a man in vnclene ſpirit ran oute of a biriell: to hym goinge oute of þe boot/ þe whiche man had an hous in graues (or biriells)/ and neþer wiþ cheynes now: myzte any man bynde hym/ for ofte tymes he bounden in ſtockis & cheynes: had broken þe cheynes

## Mark

cheynes and had broken þe flockis to smale gobitis/ & no man myzte daunte (or tame) hym/ and euermore nyzt & day in bi-riels or hillis he was crynge & betynge hym self wiþ stones/ soþely he seinge ihū afer: ran & worschipide hym/ and he crynge wiþ greet voyce: seyde/ what to me & to þee · þou ihū þe sone of hizest god? I coniure þee by god: þat þou turment me not/ forsoþe ihc seyde to hym/ þou vnclene spirit: go oute fro þe man/ and ihc axide hym/ what name is to þee? and he seiþ to hym/ a legioun is name to me: for we ben manye/ and he preyede hym myche: þat he schulde not putte hym oute of þe cuntre/ forsoþe þer was þere aboute þe hil · a floc of hoggis lesowynge in feeldis/ and þe spiritis preyeden ihū seyinge/ sende vs into hoggis: þat we entre into hem/ and anone ihc grauntide to hem/ and þe vnclene spiritis entreden into þe hoggis/ and wiþ greet birre (or haste:) þe flokke was caste doune into þe see · to two þousande · & þei ben stranglide in þe see/ soþely þei þat fedden hem: fledden & tolden into þe cytee & into þe feeldis/ and þei wenten oute for to see what was done/ & þei camen to ihū: and þei sizen hym þat was traueplide of þe fende · sittynge cloþide · & of hool mynde: and þei dredden/ and þei tolden to hem þat sizen · howe it was done to hym þat had a fende · & of þe hoggis: & þei bigunnen for to prepe · þat he schulde go aweye fro here coostis/ and whanne he steyzede into a boot: he þat was traueplide of þe deupl: bigan to prepe hym þat he schulde be wiþ hym/ soþely ihc receyuede hym not: but seiþ to hym/ go þou into þin hous (to þi meyne ·) & telle hem how many þingis þe lorde hap done to þee · & hadde mercy of þee/ and he wente forþ · & bigan for to preche in decapolie (þat is a cuntre of ten cytees ·) how manye þingis ihc had done to hym · & alle men wondriden// ¶ And whanne ihc had steyzede into þe boot eftesone ouer þe see: myche cumpanye of puple came togedir to hym · & was aboute þe see/ and one of þe prynces of synagogis: by name iayrus came/ and seinge hym fel doune at his feet: and preyede myche seyinge/

## Mark

seyinge/ forwhi my douzter is in þe laste þingis: come þou putte þin hande on hire þat sche be saaf & lyue/ and he wente forþ wip hym: and myche cumpanye of puple suede hym: and oppresside hym/ and a womman þat was in þe flure of blood twelue zeer · & had suffride manye þingis of ful manye leechis · & spendide alle hir þingis · & noþing profitide: but hadde more worse whanne sche hadde herde of ihū · sche came in þe cumpanye byhynde/ and touchide his cloob/ soþely sche seyde/ for zif I schal or touche or his cloob: I schal be saaf · & anone þe welle of hire blood is dryede vp: & sche feelide in body · þat sche was heelide of þe wounde (or seekenesse)/ and anone ihc knowynge in hym self þe vertue þat had gone oute of hym: he turnyde to þe cumpanye · seih/ who touchide my clothes? and his disciplis seyde to hym/ þou seest þe cumpanye oppressynge þee · & seyste þou who touchide me? and ihc lokide aboute · for to se hir þat had done þis þing/ forsoþe þe womman dredynge & quakynge: witynge þat it was done in hir · came & felde doune bifore hym & seyde to hym al treuþe/ forsoþe ihc seyde to hire/ douzter þi seih haþ made þee saaf/ go in pees: & be saaf fro þi seekenes/ zit hym spekynges: messangeris camen to þe prynce of þe synagoge · seyinge/ for þi douzter is deade/ what traueylist þou þe mayster forþer/ forsoþe þe worde herde þat was seyde: Ihc seih to þe prynce of þe synagoge/ nyl þou drede: onely bileue þou/ and he receyuyde not any man to sue hym: no but peter & iames · & Joon þe broþer of iames/ and þei comen into þe hous of þe prynce of þe synagoge/ and he sate noyse · & men wepynges & weplynges myche/ and he gone in: seih to hym/ what ben zee trublide & wepen: þe wenche is not deade but slepiþ/ & þei scorneden hym/ forsoþe alle caste oute: he takih þe fadir & modir of þe wenche · & hem þat weren wip hym · & þei entren in · where þe wenche laye/ and he holdynge þe hande of þe wenche: seih to hire/ tabita cump þat is interpretide (or expounyde) wenche to þee I seye rise/ and anone þe wenche roos & walkide/ soþely sche was of twelue

zeer:

## Mark

zeer: & hei weren abayschide wiþ greet stoneynge/ and he comaundide to hem gretely: þat no man schulde wite it/ and he comaundide to ȝyue to hir for to ete/ and ihc̄ gone oute þens: wente into his owne cuntre · & his disciplis folowiden hym//



And þe saboth made: ihc̄ bigan for to teche in a syn- C<sup>m</sup> 6<sup>m</sup>  
agoge/ and many herynge: wondriden in his tech-  
ynge · seyinge/ of whens to hym þis · alle þes þingis/  
& what is þe wisdom þat is ȝouen to hym: & suche  
vertues þe whiche ben made by his handis: wher þis is not  
þe smyth (or carpenter) þe sone of marȝe þe broþer of James  
& Ioseph & Judas & Symount: wheþer & his sistres ben not  
here wiþ vs: and hei weren sclaunderide in hym/ and ihc̄ seyde  
to hem/ for a prophete is not wiþ ouden honour · but in his  
owne cuntre: and in his hous & in his kyn/ and he myȝt not  
make þere any vertue · no but he elide a few seek men · þe handis  
putteto/ and he wondride for þe vnbeleue of hem/ and he wente  
aboute castels in enyroune techynge/ & he clepide twelue · &  
bigan for to sende hem by two · & ȝaue to hem power of vn-  
clene spiritis/ and comaundide hem þat hei schulde not take  
any þing in þe wey: no but a ȝerde oneiȝ/ not a scrippe ne  
brode neþer money in þe girdel: but schodde wiþ sandalies  
(þat ben open abouen)/ and þat hei weren not cloþide: wiþ  
two cootis/ and he seyde to hem/ whider euer ȝee schulen entre  
into an hous: dwelle ȝee þere til ȝee gone oute þens/ and who  
euer schal not receyue ne here ȝou: ȝee goinge oute fro þens:  
schakih aweye þe poudre/ fro ȝoure feet: into witnesynge to  
hem/ and hei goinge oute: prechiden þat men schulden dopen-  
aunce/ & hei castiden oute many fendes · & anoyntiden wiþ oyle  
many siȝk men & hei weren heelide/ and kyng heroude herde/  
forsoþe his name was made open · & he seyde for ion baptist ·  
hah risen aȝen fro deade men: and þerfore vertues worchen  
in hym/ soþely oþer seyden: for it is helpe/ but oþer seyden ·  
for it is a prophete · as one of prophetis/ þe whiche þing herde:



## Mark

heroude seip/ whom I haue bihedede ion: his hap risen fro deade men/ forsoþe þe ilke heroude sente & hilde Jon & bonde hym into prisoune · for herodias þe wife of philip his broþer/ for he hadde weddide hir/ soþely Jon seyde to heroude/ it is not leueful to þee · for to haue þe wiif of þi broþer/ herodias forsoþe leyde a spies to hym: and wolde flee hym & myzte not/ soþely heroude dredde Jon · witynge hym a iuste man & hooly: and kepte hym/ and hym herde: he dide many þingis & gladly herde hym/ and whanne a couenable day had fallen · heroude in his birþe day made a soper to þe prynces & tribunes: and to þe firste (or grettist) of galilee/ and whanne þe douzter of þe ilke herodias had entride in & lepte · & pleside to heroude · & also to men restynges: þe kyng seyde to þe wenche/ are þou of me what þou wolte: & I schal ȝyue to þee/ and he swore to hire · for what euer þou schalt are: I schal ȝyue to þee: þouȝ þe halfe of my kyngdom/ þe whiche whanne sche hadde gon oute: seyde to hire modir/ what schal I are: and sche seyde/ þe heede of ion baptist/ and whanne sche had entride anone wiþ hast to þe kyng: sche arede seyinge/ I wole þat anone þou ȝyue to me in a dische þe heed of ion baptist/ and þe kyng was soory for þe oþe/ and for men sittynge to gedir at þe mete: he wolde not hir be made soory · but a manqueller sente he com-  
aundide þe heed of ion baptist for to be brouzte/ and he bi-  
hedide hym in þe prisoune: and brouzte his heede in a dische ·  
& ȝaue it to þe wenche/ and þe wenche ȝaue to hire modir/ þe  
whiche þing herde: his disciplis camen & tooken his body: &  
puttide it in a biriel// ¶ And apostlis comynge to gedir to ihū:  
tolden to hym alle þingis þat þei hadden done & tauzte/ & he  
seip to hem/ come ȝee by ȝou self into deserte place: reste a  
lilil/ forsoþe þere weren many þat camen & wenten aȝen: and  
þei hadden not space for to ete/ and þei steyinge into a boot:  
wenten into deserte place · by hem self/ and þei sizen hem go-  
inge aweye · & many knewen & goinge on feet fro alle cytees  
þei runnen to gedir þidir & came bifore hem/ and ihc goinge  
oute.

## Mark

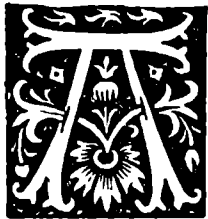
oute · fize myche cumpanye · & hadde mercy on hem . for þei weren as ſcheep not hauynge a ſcheperde/ and he bigan for to teche hem manye þingis/ and whanne myche houre (or forþ dayes) was made nowē/ his diſciplis comen nyȝ ſeyinge/ þis place is deſerte/ and nowē þe houre haȝ paſſide/ leue hem . þat þei goinge into þe nerte tounes & villagis/ bie to hem metis whiche þei ſchulen ete/ and he anſwerynge ſeiþ to hem/ ȝȝue zee to hem for to ete/ and þei ſeyden to hym/ goinge bie we looues wiȝ two hundride pens/ and we ſchulen ȝȝue to hem for to ete/ and he ſeiþ to hem/ how many looues haue zee/ go zee & ſe/ and whanne þei hadden knowen/ þei ſeyn fyue & two fiſchis/ and he comaundide to hem · þat þei ſchulden make alle men fitte to mete/ aftir cumpanyes vpon grene/ and þei ſeten doune by parties/ by hundridis & fifties/ and þe fyue looues taken & two fiſchis/ he biholdynge into heuene · bleſſide & brake þe looues & ȝaue to his diſciplis/ þat þei ſchulden putte bifore hem/ and he departide two fiſchis to alle/ and alle eten & weren fulſilde/ and þei token þe relifes of broken mete twelue coſyns ful/ and of fiſchis/ ſoþely þei þat eten/ weren fyue þouſande of men// ¶ And anone he conſtreynede his diſciplis for to ſteȝze into a boot · þat þei ſchulden paſſe bifore hym ouer þe ſee to bethſayda/ þe while he lefte þe puple/ and whanne he hadde lefte hem/ þei\* wenten into an hil for to preȝe/ and whanne euenynge was/ þe boot was in myȝdis þe ſee/ & he al one in þe lande/ & he fize hem traueȝlynge in rowynge/ ſoþely þe wynde was contrarie to hem/ and aboute þe fourþe wakynge of þe nyȝt · he wandrynge on þe ſee came to hem/ and wolde paſſe hem/ and as þei ſizen hym wandrynge on þe ſee/ geſſiden for to be a fantum · & crieden/ forſoþe alle ſizen hym/ & þei weren diſtourblide/ and anone he ſpac wiȝ hem/ and ſeyde to hem/ triſte zee/ I am/ nyl zee drede/ and he came vp to hem into þe boot/ and þe winde ceefide/ and þei more wondriden wiȝinne hem/ and þei vndreſtoden not of þe looues/ ſoþely here herte was blyndide/ and whanne þei hadde paſſide ouer þe

\* ſic in MS.

## Mark

he see: þei camen into þe lande of genazareth: and setten to lande/ and whanne þei hadden gone oute of þe boot: anone þei knewen hym/ & þei rennyng þourgh al þe cuntre: bigunnen to bere hem aboute in beddis þat hadden hem euyl: where þei herden hym to ben/ and whidir euer he entride into vil-  
lagis & tounes or into cytees: þei puttiden siik men in streetis: & preyeden hym þat þei schulden touche: oþer þe hemme of his clooþ/ and how manye euer touchiden hym: weren made saaf//

C<sup>m</sup> 7<sup>m</sup>



\* fic

And pharisees & summe of scribis comyng fro ierlm: camen to gedir to hym/ and whanne þei hadden seen summe of his disciplis ete breede wiþ comoune handes (þat is not waschen:) þei blameden hem/ forsoþe pharisees & alle iewis eten not \* no but þei waschen ofte herehandis: holdyng þe tradiciouns (or statutis) of eldre men/ and þei turnyng azen fro þe chepyng: eten no but þei waschen/ and many oþer þingis ben taken to hem for to kepe  
as waschyng of \*cumpes & cruetis: and of vessels of brasse & of beddis/ and pharisees & scribis: areden hym seyng/ whi gone not þi disciplis aftir þe tradicioun of eldre men: but wiþ comoune handis þei eten breed: and he answeryng: seyde to hem/ ysaie propheciede wel of zou ypocritis: as it is writ-  
en/ þis puple worschipiþ me wiþ lippis: forsoþe here herte is fer fro me/ in veyne treuely þei worschipen me techyng doctrynes & preceptis of men/ forsoþe zee forsakyng þe maun-  
dement of god: holden þe tradicoñs of men/ waschyng of cru-  
etis & cuppis \* & manye oþer þingis lijk to þes zee done/ and he seyde to hem/ wel zee hane made þe maundement of god voyde: þat zee kepe zoure tradicioñ/ forsoþe moyses seyde/ worschip þi fadir & þi modir/ and he þat schal curse fadir or modir: by deþ die he/ soþely zee seyn/ zif a man schal seye to fadir or modir: corban þat is what euer zifte of me schal pro-  
fite to þee/ and ouer zee suffren not hym do any þing to fadir  
or

## Mark

or modir · brekyng þe worde of god · by zoure tradiciō · þat  
zee hane zouen; and zee done manye oþer ſuche þingis/ and  
he eftelones clepyng to þe cumpange of puple; ſeyde to hem/  
zee alle here me & vnderſtondiþ/ no þing wiþouten man is en-  
trynge into hym; þat may defoule hym/ but þo þingis þat  
comen forþ of a man; þo it ben þat defoulen a man/ forſoþe  
ziſ any man hane eris of herynge here he// ¶ And whanne he  
had entride into an hous fro þe cumpange of puple; his diſ-  
ciplis axeden hym þe parable/ and he ſeiþ to hem/ ſo & zee ben  
vnprudent (or vnwiſe)/ vnderſtonde zee not for alle þing wiþ-  
outen forþe entrynge into a man; may not defoule hym/ for  
it haþ not entride into his herte · but into þe wombe/ and by-  
neþe it goiþ oute; purgynge alle meetis/ ſoþely he ſeyde/ for  
þes þingis þat gone oute of a man; þo defoulen a man/ for-  
ſoþe fro wiþinne of þe herte of men comen forþ euyl þouztis ·  
auoutries · fornycacon · manſleingis · þeftis · coueytiſe · (or  
ouer harde keepynge of goodis) · wickidneſſis · gile · vnchaſtite ·  
euyl yze · blaſfemyes · pride · & folie ·/ alle þes euelis; fro wiþ-  
ine comen forþ & defoulen a man/ and ih̄c riſyng þens; wente  
in þe endis of tyre & ſydon/ and he gone into an hous wolde  
no man wite (or knowe) · & he myzte not daare (or be pryue)/  
ſoþely a womman anone as ſche herde of hym · whos douzter  
had an vnclene ſpirit; entride & fel doune at his feet/ ſoþely þe  
womman was heþen; of þe generacō of ſyrofeniſſe/ and ſche  
preyde hym þat he wolde caſte oute a deuyl fro hire douzter/  
þe whiche ſeyde to hir/ ſuffre þou ſones to be fulfilde firſte/ it  
is not good to take þe breed of ſones · & ſende to houndis/ and  
ſche anſweride & ſeyde to hym/ forſoþe lorde/ for whi & litil  
whelpis eten vnder þe borde of þe crummes of children/ and  
ih̄c ſeiþ to hir/ for þis worde go; þe ſende is wente oute of þi  
douzter/ and whanne ſche hadde gone home; ſche fonde þe  
wenche ſittyng on þe bed · & þe deuyl gone oute fro hire//  
¶ And eftelones ih̄c goinge oute fro þe endis (or cooſtis) · of  
tyre · came þourgh ſydon to þe ſee of galilee; þat is bitwixe þe  
mydel

## Mark

mydel endis of Decapolios/ and þei ledden to hym a deaf man  
 & doumbe: & preyeden hym þat he putte to hym þe hande/ and  
 he takynge hym asidis fro þe cumpanye: sendis his fyngeris  
 into his litil eris · & spittynge: touchide his tonge/ & he bihold-  
 ynge into heuene: sorowide wiþinne & seiþ/ effata/ þat is be  
 þou openyde/ anone his eris weren openyde · & þe bonde of his  
 tunge is vnbunden: & he spac ríztly/ and he comaundide to  
 hem · þat þei schulden seye to no man/ forsoþe how myche he  
 comaundide to hem: so myche more · þei prechiden more/ and  
 bi þat þe more þei wondriden: seyinge/ he dide wel alle þingis:  
 and deaf men he made to here · & doumbe for to speke//

C<sup>m</sup> 8<sup>m</sup>



In þo dayes whanne myche cumpanye of puple was  
 wiþ ihū · & hadden not what þei schulden ete · his  
 disciplis gederide to gedir: he seiþ to hem/ I haue  
 reuþe on þe cumpanye of puple/ for lo now þe  
 þridde day · þei susteynen (or abiden) me: and hane not what  
 þei schulen ete/ and zif I leue hem fastynge in to here housis:  
 þei schulen fayle in þe weye/ forsoþe summe of hem camen fro  
 fer/ and þe disciplis answereden to hym/ wher of schal a man  
 fille hem wiþ looues · here in wildirnesse? and he aride hem/  
 how many looues hane zee? þe whiche seyden: seuene/ and he  
 comaundide þe cumpanye to sitte doune on þe erþe/ and he  
 takynge þe seuene looues & doinge þankyngis · brake & zawe  
 to his disciplis: þat þat þei schulden putte hem forþ to þe cum-  
 panje/ & þei hadden fewe smale fischis · & he blesside hem · &  
 comaundide for to be putte forþ/ and þei eten & ben fulfilde/  
 and þei tooken vp þat leste of relife: seuene leepis ful/ forsoþe  
 þei þat eten: weren as foure \*hundride of men · & he leste hem/  
 and anone he wente vp into a boot wiþ his disciplis: and came  
 into þe parties of Dalmainþha/ and pharesees wenten oute:  
 & bigunnen to seek (or to are) wiþ him aringe a token of hym  
 fro heuene: temptyng hym/ and he sorowynge wiþinne in spi-  
 rit · seiþ/ what seekiþ þis generacoñ a token? treuely I seye  
 to

\* Error 4000

## Mark

to zou · zif a token schal be zouen to þis generacōn// ¶ And he leeuynge hem · wente vp estesone into a boot; and wente ouer þe see/ and þei forzeten to take breed · & þei hadden not wiþ hem; no but one loof in þe boot/ & he comaundide to hem; seyng/ se zee & be war of þe sordowz of pharisees; & of þe sordowz of heroude/ and þei þouzten one to anoþer seyng · for we hane not breed/ þe whiche þing knowen · ih̄c seiþ to hem/ what þenken zee; for zee hane not breed; zit zee knowen not · ne vnderstonde/ zit zee hane zoure herte blyndide/ zee haupnge yzen · seen not/ and zee haupnge eris; heren not/ ne þer zee haue mynde whanne I brake fyue looues · into fyue þousande · & howe manye cofyns ful of broken meete tooken zee vp; þei seyn to hym · twelue/ whanne & seuene looues into foure þousande of men; how many leepis of broken mete tooken zee vp; and þei seyn seuene/ and he seyde to hem/ how vnderstonde zee not zit/ and þei comen to bethsayda · and þei bryngen to hym a blynde man · & preyde hym; þat he schulde touche hym/ and þe hande of blynde man taken; he ledde hym oute of þe streete/ and spittynge into his yzen · his handis putte · he aride hym zif he sise any þing/ and he biholdynge; seiþ/ I sise men as trees walkynge/ aftirwarde estesones he puttide handis on his yzen; & he bigan for to se/ & he is re- storide; so þat he sise clerely alle þingis/ and he sente hym into his hous; seyng/ go into þin hous/ and zif þou schalt go into þe strete; seye to no man// ¶ And ih̄c entride in & his disci- plis · into þe castels of cesarie of philip; & in þe weye he aride his disci- plis seyng to hem/ whom seyn men me for to be; þe whiche answereden/ summe ion baptist; oþer seyn helie/ but oþer seyn; as one of þe prophetis/ þanne he seiþ to hem/ but whom seyn zee; me for to be; petre answerynge seiþ to hym/ þou art crist/ and he þretenyde hem; þat þei schulden not seye to any man of hym/ and he bigan for to teche hem · for it bi- houeth mannes sone to suffre manye þingis & to be reprobued of þe hizest pristis · & of eldre men · & scribis to be slayne; and  
aftir

## Mark

astir þre dages for to rise azen/ and he spac pleyuely þe worde/  
and petre takynge hym/ bigan for to blame hym/ þe whiche  
turnyde · seinge his disciplis/ manafide to petre · seyinge/ go  
astir me sathanas/ for þou sauerist not þo þingis þat ben of  
god/ but þo þingis þat ben of men/ and þe cumpange of puple  
gederide wip his disciplis/ he seyde to hem/ zif any man wole  
sue me/ denye he hym self · & take he his crosse/ and sue he  
me/ soþely whoso wole make his soule (þat is his lijf) saaf/ he  
schal leese it/ forsoþe he þat schal leese his soule (þat is his lijf)  
for me & for þe gospel/ schal make it saaf/ soþely what profiteþ  
it to a man/ zif he wyne al þe worlde/ and do peyrpunge to  
his soule/ or what chaungynge schal a man ȝpue for his soule/  
forsoþe who þat schal knoweleche me · & my wordis in þis ge-  
neracon auoutresse/ and mannes sone schal knoweleche hym/  
whanne he schal come in þe glorie of his fadir wip his aun-  
gels/ and he seyde to hem/ treuely I seye to ȝou for þere ben  
summe of men stondynge heere · þe whiche schulen not taste  
deþ/ til þei seen þe rewme of god comynge in vertue//

C<sup>m</sup> 9<sup>m</sup>



And astir sire · ihc took petre & James & Joon & leed-  
ip hem bi hem self · al one into an hize hil/ and he  
is transfiguride bifore hem/ and his cloþes ben  
made schynynge & white ful myche as snowe/ and  
whiche maner a fuller may not make whist on erþe/ and helie  
wip moyses apperide to hem/ and þei weren spekyngge with  
ihū/ and petre answerynge seip to ihū/ mayster it is good/ vs  
to be heere/ make we heere þre tabernaclis/ one to þee · one to  
moyles/ & one to helie/ soþely he wiste not what he schulde  
seye/ forsoþe þei weren agaste by dreede/ & þere is made a  
cloude schadowynge hem/ & a voyce came of þe cloude seyinge/  
þis is my mooste derworþe sone/ heere zee hym/ and anone þei  
biholdynge aboute sizen no more any man · no but ihū onely  
wip hem// ¶ And he comynge doune fro þe hil/ he comaun-  
dide hem · þat þei schulden not telle to any man þo þingis þat  
þei

## Mark

þei hadden seen: no but whanne mannes sone haþ risen fro deade (spiritis)/ and þei helden þe worde at hem self seekyng what schulde be whanne he had risen fro deade/ & þei axiden hym seyinge/ what therefore seyn pharisees & scribis: for it bihouep helpe for to come firste/ þe whiche answerynge: seih to hem/ whanne helie schal come firste: he schal restore alle þingis/ and how it is writen into mannes sone: þat he schal suffre manye þingis · & be dispiside/ but I seye to zou · for & helie is comen: and þei diden to hym what euer þingis þei wolden · as it is writen/ and he comynge to his disciplis: sizen a greet cumpanye aboute: and scribis togedir aringe wih hem/ and anone al þe cumpanye seinge Ihu: was astonpede & dredde/ & þei rennyng to: gretten hym/ and he axide hem/ what seeken zee amonge zou? and one of þe cumpanye answerynge: seyde/ mayster I haue brouzte to my sone: hauynge an vnclene spirit/ þe whiche where euer he schal take hym: hurtih hym/ and he frohish (or vomeh) & beetih to gedir wih teeh: and warih drie/ and I seyde to þi disciplis þat þei schulden caste hym oute: and þei myzten not/ þe whiche answerynge to hem: seyde/ a you schrewide generacōn & oute of bileue · how longe schal I be at zou? how longe schal I suffre zou? bryngih hym to me/ and þei brouzten hym hym to/ and whanne he hadde seen hym: anone þe spirit trublide hym/ and he caste doune into þe erþe: walowide froþinge/ and he axide his fadir/ how myche of tyme it is: siþ þis þing fel to hym: and he seih fro childehede/ and ofte he haþ sente hym: and into fir & into watir · þat he schulde leese hym/ but & zif þou mayste any þing helpe vs: þou hauynge mercy on vs/ soþely ihc seih to hym/ zif þou mayste bileue: alle þingis ben possible to a man byleupnge/ and anone þe fadir of þe childe crynge wih teeris seyde/ lorde I bileue/ helpe myn vnbelefulnesse/ and whanne ihc hadde seen þe cumpanye of puple rennyng to gedir: he manasside to þe vnclene spirit: seyinge to hym/ þou deaf & doumbe spirit: I comaunde þee · go oute fro hym: and entre not more into hym/



## Mark

and he crynge and myche to braydyngge hym: wente oute fro hym/ and he is made as deade: so þat many seyden · þat he was deade/ forsoþe ih̄c holdyngge his hande: lifte hym vp · & he roos// ¶ And whanne he hadde entride into an hous: his disciplis axeden hym pruely/ whi myzten not we caste oute hym/ and he seyde to hem/ þis kynd in no þing may gon oute: no but in preyer & fastyngge/ and þei gone fro þens: wente forþ into galilee · & he wolde no man wite/ he tauzte his disciplis: and seyde to hem/ for mannes sone schal be bitrapede into þe handis of men: and þei schulen flee hym/ and hym slayne: on þe þridde day schal rise azen/ and þei knewen not þe worde: and dredde for to are hym// ¶ And þei camen to capharnaum/ whiche whanne he was in þe hous: acide hem/ what tretiden zee in þe weye: and þei weren stille/ soþely þei disputiden amonge hem in þe weye: who of hem schulde be more/ and he sittynge clepide þe twelue: and seiþ to hem/ zif any wole be þe firste amonge zou: he schal be þe laste · & mynysstre (or seruaunt) of alle/ and he takynge a childe: ordeynede hym in þe mydel of hem/ whom whanne he had biclippide: he seiþ to hem/ who euer schal receyue one of suche children in my name: he receyueþ me/ and who euer receyueþ me · he receyueþ not me alone: but hym þat sente me/ ¶ Joon answeride to hym: seyngge/ mayster we seen sum one for to caste oute fendis in þi name · þe whiche sueþ not vs: and we hane forbeden hym/ soþely ih̄c seiþ to hym/ nyl zee forbede hym/ þer is no man þat doih̄ vertue in my name: and may soone speek euyl of me/ forsoþe he þat is not azenes vs: is for vs/ soþely who euer schal ȝyue dryncke to zou a cuppe of colde water in my name · for zee ben of crist: trewely ¶ I seye to zou · he schal not leese his meede/ and who euer schal sclaundre one of þes litil bileupnge in me: it is good to me þat a mylnestone of an asse · were done aboute his necke · and were sente into þe see/ and zif þin hande sclaundre þee: kitte awey/ it is good to þee · feble to entre into lijf: þanne haupnge two handis go into helle ·  
into

## Mark

into fiſr þat neuer ſchal be quenchide/ wher þe worme of hem dieþ not: and þe fiſr is not quenchide/ and ȝif þi foot ſclaundre þee: kitte it of/ it is good to þee for to entre crokide into euerlaſtynge liif: þan haunȝe two feet to be ſente into helle fiſr • þat neuer ſchal be quenchide/ where þe worme of hem dieþ not: & þe fiſr is not quenchide/ þat ȝif þin yze ſclaundre þee: caſte it oute/ it is good to þee to entre gogil yzede into þe reſtome of god: þan haunȝe two yzen for to be ſente into helle fiſr/ where þe worme of hem dieþ not • & þe fiſr is not quenchide//

¶ Forſoþe euery man ſchal be ſaltide (or made ſauery) wiþ fiſr • & euery ſlayne ſacrifice ſchal be ſaueride wiþ ſalte/ ſalte is good þing/ þat ȝif ſalte be vnſauery: in what þing ſchulen ȝee make it ſauery? haue ȝee ſalte in ȝou: and haue ȝee pees amonge ȝou//



And ih̄c riſynge vp fro þengs: came into þe endis of Jude ouer iordan/ and eſteſone þe cumpanye of purple camen to gedir to hym/ and as he was wonte: eſteſone he tauȝte hem/ and phariſees comynge nyȝ ariden hym/ ȝif it be leueful to a man for to leue (or forſake) his wiif: temptynge hym/ and he anſwerynge: ſeiþ to hem/ what comaundide moyſes to ȝou: þe whiche ſeyden/ moyſes ſuffride to write a libil of forſakynge: and to forſake/ to whom ih̄c anſwerynge: ſeiþ/ to þe hardeneſſe of ȝoure herte: moyſes wrote to ȝou þis precepte/ forſoþe fro þe bigynnyng of creature: male & female god made hem/ and he ſeyde/ for þis þing a man ſchal leue fadir & modir: and ſchal cleue to his wiſe • & þei ſchulen be two in one fleſche/ and ſo now þei ben not two: but one fleſche/ þertore þat þing þat god ioynede to gedir: no man departe//

¶ And eſteſone in þe hous: his diſciple ariden hym of þe ſame þing/ and he ſeiþ to hem/ who euer ſchal leue his wiif & wedde anoþer: he doiþ auoutrie vpon hir/ and ȝif þe wiif ſchal leue hir houſbonde • & be weddide to anoþer: ſche doiþ auoutrie/ and þei offreden to hym litil children: þat

C<sup>m</sup> 10<sup>m</sup>

## Mark

þat he schulde touche hem/ soþely disciplis þretiden to men  
offrynge/ whom whan ihc hadde seen/ he bare heuply (or vn-  
worpily) • & seiþ to hem/ suffre zee litil children to come to  
me/ and forbede zee hem not/ forsoþe of suche is þe kyngdom  
of god/ treuely I seye to zou • who euer schal not receyue þe  
kyngdom of god as þis litil childe/ he schal not entre into it/  
and he biclippynge hem & puttynge handis vpon hem blesside  
hem/ ¶ And whanne ihc was gone oute in þe weye/ a man  
rennyng bifore/ þe knee bowide/ preyede hym seyinge/ good  
mayster what schal I do • þat I receyue euer lastyngge lijf/ for-  
soþe ihc seyde to hym/ what seyst þou me good/ no man good  
no but god al one/ þou hast knowen þe comaundementis/ do  
þou none auoutrie • flee not • steel not • seye not false witness-  
yngge • do no fraude • worschip þi fadir & modir/ and he an-  
swerynge/ seiþ to hym/ mayster I haue kepte alle þes þingis/  
fro my youþe/ soþely ihc bihelde hym/ and he seyde to hym/  
one þing sayliþ to þee/ go • selle what euer þingis þou hast • &  
gyue to pore men/ and þou schalt haue tresoure in heuene • &  
come þou sue me/ þe whiche made sorowful in þe worde/ wente  
a weye mournyngge/ forsoþe he was haupngemany possessiouns/  
and ihc biholdyngge aboute/ seiþ to his disciplis/ how harde  
þei þat hane money/ schulen entre into þe kyngdom of god/  
forsoþe þe disciplis weren astonpede in his wordis/ and ihc  
estesones answerynge/ seiþ to hem/ zee litil sones • how harde  
þing is it men tristynge in richessis/ for to entre into þe kyng-  
dom of god/ it is lizter (or esier) a camel for to passe þourgh a  
nedlis yze/ þan a riche man for to entre into þe kyngdom of  
god/ whiche wondriden more at hem self seyinge/ and who may  
be made saaf/ and ihc biholdyngge hem/ seiþ to hem/ anentis  
men it is impossible/ but not anentis god/ for alle þingis ben  
possible anentis god// ¶ And aftirwarde petre bigan for to  
seye to hym/ lo we hane lefte alle þingis/ and hane suede þee/  
Ihc answerynge/ seiþ/ treuely I seye to zou • þer is no man  
þat schal leue hous or breþeren • or sistris • or fadir or modir •

or

## Mark

or sones or feeldis for me & for þe gospel · þe whiche schal not take an hundridfold to myche now in þis tyme · housis & breperen & sistris & modris & sones & feeldis wip persecucōns · and in þe worlde to compnge euerlastyng lijf/ forsoþe many schulen be þe firste · þe laste/ & þe laste þe firste// ¶ Forsoþe þei weren in þe weye steþzinge to ierlm̄ & ih̄c wente bifore hem · and þei wondriden/ and folowynge dreden/ and eftesone ih̄c takynge to twelue · bigan for to seye to hem · what þingis weren to come to hym/ for lo we steþzen to ierlm̄ · and mannes sone schal be bitrapede to prynces of pristis & to scribis & to eldre men · and þei schulen dampne hym by deþ/ and þei schulen bitake hym to heþene men · and þei schulen scorne hym · & dispite hym · & beet hym · & þei schulen flee hym · and in þe þridde day he schal rise azen/ and James & Joon zebedees sones · comen nyȝ to hym seyinge/ mayster we wolen þat what euer we schulen are · þou do to vs/ and he seyde to hem/ what wolen zee þat I do to zou · and þei seyden ȝue to vs þat we sitte one at þi rizt halfe · & þat oþer at þi liste · in þi glorie/ forsoþe ih̄c seiþ to hem/ zee witen not what zee schulen are/ motone zee drynke þe cuppe whiche I am to drynke · or be waschen wip þe bapty m̄ in whiche I am baptiside · and þei seyden to hym we motone/ soþely ih̄c seiþ to hem · treuely zee schulen drynke þe cuppe þat I drynke & zee schulen be waschen wip þe bapty m̄ in whiche I am baptiside/ soþely for to sitte at my rizt halfe · is not myn for to ȝue to zou · but to whom it is ordeynyde// ¶ And þe ten herynge hadden indignacōn of James & Joon/ soþely ih̄c clepyng hem · seiþ to hem/ zee witen þat þei þat seemen (or ben seyn) to haue pryncehode of folkis · lordeschipen of hem · & þe prynces of hem haue power of hem/ forsoþe it is not so in zou · but who euer schal wole be made more · schal be zoure mynystre/ and who euer schal wole be firste in zou · schal be seruaunt of alle/ for whi and mannes sone came not þat it schulde be mynystride to hym · but þat he schulde mynystre · & ȝue his soule azen bynginge for manye//

¶ And

## Mark

**¶** And þei cament to Jericho/ and hym goinge forþ fro Jericho & his disciplis & a ful myche cumpange of puple: þe sone of thymey barthymeus blynde: satte bisidis þe weye beggynge/ þe whiche whan he had herde · for it is ihc̃ of nazareth: bygan for to crie & seye/ Jhū þe sone of dauid: haue mercy on me/ and manye þretiden hym: þat he schulde be stille/ and he criede myche more/ Jhū þe sone of dauid: haue mercy on me/ and ihc̃ stondynge comaundide hym for to be clepide/ and þei clepiden þe blynde man: seyinge to hym/ be þou of better herte/ rise vp: he clepiþ þee/ þe whiche his cloþe caste aweye: stiryng came to hym/ and ihc̃ answeyng: seyde to hym/ what wolte þou I do to þee? þe blynde man seyde to hym mayster þat I se/ soþely ihc̃ seyde to hym · go: þi seih haþ made þee saaf/ and anone he sizen and suede hym in þe weye//

C<sup>m</sup> II<sup>m</sup>



**¶** And whanne ihc̃ came nyȝ to ierlm̃ & to bethanye to þe mounte of olyuete · he sente two of his disciplis · & seiþ to hem/ go see to þe castel þat is azenes zou/ and anone see entrynge in þidir: schulen fynde a colte tizede · on þe whiche none of men sate zit/ vnbynde see & brynge hym/ and zif any schal seye any þing to zou: seye see þat he is nedeful to þe lorde · & anone he schal leue hym þidir/ and þei goinge forþ: founden a colte bounden bifore þe zate wiþ outhen forþ in þe metynge of two weyes: and þei vnbounden hym/ and summe of men stondyng þere: seyden to hem · what done see · vnbyndyng þe colte? & þei seyden to hym: as ihc̃ comaundide hem/ and þei lesten hem/ and þei brouȝten þe colte to Jhū · & þei puttiden to hym here cloþes: and ihc̃ satte vpon hym/ forsoþe manye strewiden here cloþes in þe weye/ soþely oþer men kuttiden bowis fro trees? and strewiden in þe weye/ and þei þat wenten biforne/ & þat sueden: crieden seyinge/ osanna · bleßide is he þat cometh in name of þe lorde/ bleßide þe kyngdom þat cometh of oure fadir dauid: osanna in heȝȝes// **¶** And he entride into ierlm̃ into þe temple · and alle þingis

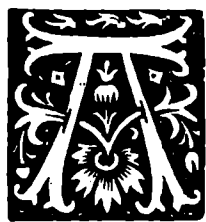
## Mark

þingis seen aboute whanne þe houre was now euenynge: he wente into bethanþe wiþ twelue/ and anoþer day when he wente oute of bethanþe: he hungride/ and whanne he had seen a fige tree afer haupinge leeuës: he came zif happely he schulde fynde any þing þerinne/ and whanne he came to it · he fonde noþing · outaken leeuës/ for it was no tyme of figgis/ and ih̄c answerynge seyde to it/ now no more wiþouten ende: any man ete fruyte of þee/ & his disciplis herden: and þei camen to ierlm̄// ¶ And whanne he had entride into þe temple: he bigan for to caste oute men sellynge & byinge in þe temple/ and he turnyde vpsodoune þe bordis of chaungers: and þe chapers of men sellynge culuers/ and he suffride not þat any schulde bere a vessel þourgh þe temple/ and he tauzte hem seyinge/ wher it is not writen · for myn hous schal be clepide a hous of preyinge to alle folkis/ forsoþe zee hane made it a denne of þeeves/ þe whiche þing herde · þe princis of pristis & scribis souzten how þei schulden leese hym · forsoþe þei dredde hym · for al þe cumpanye of puple wondride on his techynge/ and whanne euenynge was made: he wente oute of þe cytee/ and whanne þei passiden erly: þei sizen þe fige tree made drie fro the rootis/ and petre haupnge mynde: seyde to hym/ mayster lo þe fige tree whom þou cursidist: haþ driede vp/ and ih̄c answerynge seiþ to hym/ hane zee þe seiþ of god/ trewely I seye to zou · þat who euer seiþ to þis hil · take & sende þee into þe see & doutiþ not in his herte but bileueþ: for what euer seye be it made: it schal be made to hym/ þerfore I seye to zou · all þingis whateuer þingis zee preyinge schulen axe: bileue zee þat zee schulen take · & þei schulen come to zou/ and whanne zee schulen stonde for to preye: forþyue zee zif zee hane any þing azenes any man · þat and zoure fadir þat is heuenes forþyue to zou zoure synnes/ þat zif zee schulen not forþyue: neþer zoure fadir þat is in heuenes schal forþyue to zou zoure synnes// ¶ And estefones þei comen to ierlm̄ and whanne he walkide into þei temple: þe biȝest pristis & scribis & eldre men comen

## Mark

nyz to hym · & seyn to hym/ in what power doist þou þes þingis/ or who ȝaue to þee þis power/ þat þou do þes þingis/ forsoþe Iħc answerynge/ seih to hem/ and I schal are ȝou one worde · & answere ȝee to me/ and I schal seye to ȝou in what power I do þes þingis/ wheþer was þe baptysm of Ioon/ of heuene or of men/ answere ȝee to me/ and þei þouzten wiþ/ inne þemself/ seyinge/ ȝif we schulen seye of heuene/ he schal seye to vs/ whi þerfore bileuen ȝee not to hym/ ȝif we schulen seye of men/ we dredde þe puple/ for alle men hadden ioon/ for he was verreyly a prophete/ and þei answerynge/ seyn to ihū/ we witen neuer/ and iħc answerynge/ seith to hem/ neþer I seye to ȝou in what power I do þes þingis//

C<sup>m</sup> 12<sup>m</sup>



nd ihū bigan to speek to hem in parablis/ a man plauntide a vynezerde · & putte aboute it an hegge · & dalse a lake & bildide a toure · & hijride it to erþe tiliers/ and wente forþe in pilgrymage/ and he sente to þe erþe tiliers in tyme a seruaunt þat he schulde receyue of þe fruyte of þe vynezerde · at þe erþe tiliers/ þe whiche taken/ beeten hym · & lesten hym voyde/ and estefones he sente to hem an oþer seruaunt/ and þei woundiden hym in þe heede · & punyschiden wiþ chydnyngis (or reprounyngis)/ and estefones he sente an oþer/ and þei slowen hym/ and oþer moo · beetynges summe/ but sleinge oþer/ þerfore ȝit he haupinge a sone moſte derworþe/ and to hem he sente hym þe laste seyinge/ for by hap þei schulen schame my sone (or drede wiþ reuerence)/ forsoþe þe tenauntis seyden to hemself (or togedir)/ þis is þe eyre/ come ȝee flee we hym/ & þe heritage schal be ouren/ and þei takynge hym · castiden oute wiþ outen þe vynezerde/ and slowen/ þerfore what schal þe lorde of þe vynezerde do/ he schal come & leese þe tenauntis/ & ȝyue þe vynezerde to oþer/ wher ȝee hane not red þis scripture/ þe ſoon whiche men bildyng haue dispiside/ þis is made into þe heed of þe corner/ þis þing is made of þe lorde/ and is wondirful in oure ȝzen/ and þei

## Mark

þei souzten for to holde hym; and þei dredden þe cumpanyes of  
puple/ soþely þei knewen for to hem he seyde þis parable/ and  
hym lefte; þei wenten aweye// And þei senten to hym summe of  
þe pharisees & herodians · for to take hym in worde/ þe whiche  
comynge; seyn to hym/ mayster we witen for þou art soþefast;  
and reckist not of any man/ soþely neþer þou seest into þe face  
of man; but techeest þe weye of god in treuþe/ is it leueful for to  
ȝyue tribute to cesar; or we schulen not ȝyue? þe whiche wi-  
tyngge þere prȝue falsenesse; seiþ to hem/ what tempten zee me?  
bryng zee to me a peny þat I se/ and þei offreden (or token) to  
hym · & he seiþ/ whos is þis ymage · & þe intwertynges; þei seyn  
to hym/ cesars/ forsoþe ih̄c answerynge; seiþ to hem/ þerfore  
ȝilde zee to cesar · þat ben of cesar; and to god þo þingis þat ben  
of god/ and alle wondren on hym// And saduceis þat seyn no  
resurreccōn to be; comen to hym & axiden hym seyinge/ mayst-  
er moyses wrote to us þat ȝif þe broþer of a man were deade  
& lefte a wiif & lefte not sones; his broþer schal take his wiif ·  
& reyse vp seed to his broþer/ þerfore seuene breþeren weren ·  
& þe firste took a wiif & is deade; no seede lefte/ and the se-  
counde took hire & he is deade; and neþer þis lefte seede/ and  
þe þridde also/ and seuene taken hire · & leften not seed/ and  
þe womman laste of alle is deade/ þanne in þe resurreccōn  
whan þei schulen rise azen; whos wife of þes schal sche be?  
soþely seuene hadden hir wife/ and ih̄c answerynge; seiþ to  
hem/ wher zee erren not þerfore; not knowynge scriptures  
neþer þe vertue of god; forsoþe whanne þei schulen rise azen  
fro deade men; neþer þei wedden ne ben weddide; but þei  
schulen be as aungels of god in heuenes/ soþely of deade men ·  
þat þei risen azen zee haue not red in the booc of moyses on  
þe busche; how god seyde to hym seyinge/ I am god of abra-  
ham · & god of ysaac & god of iacob/ he is not god of deade men;  
but god of lyuynge men/ þerfore zee erren myche/ And one of  
þe scribis þat had herde hem aringe to gedir; came nyȝ/ and  
seinge þat he had wel answeride hem; axide hym whiche was

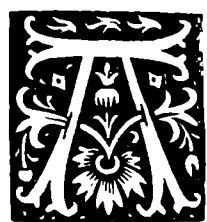


## Mark

þe firste maundement of alle/ ih̄c answeride to hym: þat þe firste of alle maundementis is/ here is̄rl: þe lorde þi god is one/ and þou schalte loue þe lorde þi god of al þin herte · & of alle þi soule · & of al þi mynde · & of al þi vertue (or myzte)/ þis is þe firste maundement · forsoþe þe secounde is lijk to þis/ þou schalt loue þi neyzebore as þi self/ þer is none oþer maundement more þan þis/ and þe scribe seiþ to hym/ mayster in treuþe þou hast wel seyde: for one god is/ and þere is none outaken hym/ and þat he be louyde of al herte & of al þouzte (or mynde) · & of al vnderstondynge · & of al þe soule · & of al þe strengþe · & to loue þe neyzebore as hym self: is more þan al brent offeryngis & sacrificis/ ih̄c forsoþe seinge þat he had answeride wisely: seyde to hym/ þou art not fer fro þe kyngdom of god/ and nowe no man durste axe hym more/ and ih̄c answerynge seyde: techynge in þe temple: þerfore how seyn scribis · criste for to be þe sone of dauid: to whom dauid hym self in þe holy gost seyde/ þe lorde seyde to my lorde: sitte on my rizt halfe: til I putte myn enemyes þe stool of þi feet/ þerfore dauid hymself seiþ hym lorde: and wher of is he his sone? and myche cumpanye: gladly herde hym/ and he seyde to hem in his techynge/ be zee war of scribis þat wolen wandre in stolis · & be salu tide in þe chepyng · & sitte in þe synagogis in þe firste chapters · & in þe firste sittynge places in sopers: þe whiche deuouren þe housis of widowis vnder coloure of longe preyers/ þei schulen take lenger doom// ¶ And ih̄c sittynge azen þe tresorie · bihelde how þe cumpanye of puple castide money into þe tresorie/ and many riche men castiden many þingis/ soþely whanne one pore widowe had comen: sche sente two mynutis · þat is a ferþinge/ and his disciplis clepide to gedir: he seiþ to hem/ treuely I seye to zou for þis pore widowe sente more þan alle þat senten into þe tresorie/ soþely alle senten of þat þing: þat was plenteuouse to hem/ but þis of hire myseyfte · sente alle þingis þat sche had: alle hire lyuelode//

And

## Mark



And whanne he wente oute of þe temple: one of his C<sup>m</sup> 13<sup>m</sup>  
disciplis seyde to hym/ mayster: biholde what ma-  
ner stonys: and what maner bildyngis/ and he an-  
swerynge: seih to hym/ seest þou alle þes grete bild-  
yngis/ þer schal not be lefte a stoon vpon a stoon: þe whiche  
schal not be distrupede/ and whanne he satte in þe mounte of  
olpueete azenes þe temple: þei axiden hym by hem self • petir  
& James & andrewe/ seye þou to vs: whanne þes þingis schu-  
len be made: and what token whanne alle þes þingis schulen  
bygynne • for to be endide/ and ihc answerynge: bigan for  
to seye to hem/ se zee þat no man deceyue zou/ for many schu-  
len come in my name: seyinge/ for I am: and þei schulen de-  
ceyue manye/ soþely whanne zee schulen heere bataylis and  
oppynpouns of batayls: drede zee not/ forsoþe it bihouep þes  
þingis for to be done but not zit anone þe ende/ for folc schal  
rise vpon folc • & rewme vpon rewme • & erþe mounge schal  
be by places & hunger/ bigynnyngis of sorowis (ben) þes  
þingis/ soþely se zee zou self/ for þei schulen take zou in coun-  
seylis: & zee schulen be beten in synagogis/ and zee schulen  
stonde bifore kyngis & domesmen for me into witnessynge to  
hem/ and into alle folkis • & it bihouep firste þe gospel to be  
prechide/ and whanne þei schulen leede zou bitrayinge: nyl  
zee þenke what zee schulen speke/ but speke zee þat þing þat  
schal be zouen to zou in þat houre/ soþely zee ben not spek-  
ynge: but þe hooly gost/ forsoþe a broþer schal bitray a broþer  
into deþ: and þe fadir þe sone/ and sones schulen rise to gedir  
azenes fadirs & moders: & punysche hem by deþ/ and zee schu-  
len be in haat to alle men: for my name/ but he þat schal suf-  
teyne (or suffre) into þe ende: þis schal be saaf// ¶ Forsoþe  
whanne zee schulen se þe abhomynacōn of discoumfort stond-  
ynge wher it owip not: vnderstonde he þat reedip/ þanne  
þei þat ben in Jude: fle into hillis/ and he þat aboue þe roof:  
come not doune into þe hous/ neþer entre he: þat he take any  
þing

## Mark

þing of his hous/ and he þat schal be in þe feelde: turne not  
azen bihynde for to take his cloob/ soþely wo to hem þat ben  
wif childe & norischynge in þo dayes/ þerfore prepe zee þat  
þei ben not done in wynter// ¶ forsoþe þe ilke dayes of tribu-  
lacoñ schulen be suche · whiche maner weren not fro þe bigyn-  
nyng of creature · þe whiche god made til now: neþer þei  
schulen be/ and no but þe lorde had breggide þo dayes: al  
fleysche (or mankynde) · had not been saaf/ but for þe chosen  
whom he chees: þe lorde hap breggide þe dayes (or made  
thorte)/ and þanne zif any man schal seye to zou · lo heere is  
crist · lo þer: bileue zee not/ for false cristis & false prophetis  
schulen rise vp: and schulen gyue tokenes & grete wondris · to  
deceyue zif it may be done: zhe þe chosen/ þerfore se zee: lo I  
haue bifore seyde to zou alle þingis/ but in þo dayes aftir þat  
tribulacoñ: þe sunne schal be made dirke · & þe mone schal not  
zyue hir schynnyng & sterres of heuenes schulen be fallynge  
doun · & vertues þat ben in heuenes schulen be mouede/ and  
þanne þei schulen se mannes sone comynge in cloudis of he-  
uene: wif greet vertue & glorie/ and þanne he schal sende his  
aungels & gedir his chosen fro foure wyndis/ fro þe lowest  
þing of erþe: vnto the hizest þingis of heuene// ¶ forsoþe of  
þe sijge tree lerne zee þe parable/ whanne nowe his braunche  
schal be tendre · & leeuës ben sprungen oute: zee witen for  
somer is in the nexte/ so & whanne zee schulen se alle þes þin-  
gis be made: wite zee þat it is in þe nexte in þe dore/ treuely  
I seye to zou for þis generacoñ schal not passe aweye: tille alle  
þes þingis ben done/ heuene & erþe schulen passe: forsoþe my  
wordis schulen not passe/ treuely of þat daye or houre · no man  
woot/ neþer aungels in heuene · neþer þe sone: no but þe fa-  
dir/ so zee · wake zee · & prepe zee · soþely zee witen not whan  
tyme is/ for as a man þe whiche is gone fer in pilgrymage ·  
feste his hous · & zaue to his seruauntis power of euery werke:  
and comaundide to þe porter · þat he schulde wake/ þerfore  
wake zee/ forsoþe zee witen not whanne þe lorde of þe hous  
comeþ

## Mark

comeþ/ in þe euen or in mydnyzt • or in cockis crowynge: or  
in þe mornynge/ lest þat whanne he schal come sodeynly: he  
fynde zou slepyngē/ forsoþe þat þat I seye to zou • I seye to  
alle: wake zee//

**F**orsoþe paske & þe feeste of þerfe looues • was astir C<sup>m</sup> 14<sup>m</sup>  
þe secounde daye • & þe hizest pristis & scribis souzten  
how þei schulden holde (crist) wiþ gile & flee hym/  
soþely þei seyden not in þe feest day: lest parauen-  
ture noyse were made in þe puple/ and whanne he was at be-  
thane in þe hous of symount leprouse & restide: a womman  
comynge haupnge a bore of precious oynement spikanarde/  
and þe bore broken: (sche) hilde oute on his heede/ forsoþe  
þere weren summe berynge vnworþily (or heuely) wiþinne  
hem self: and seyinge/ wherto is þis losse of oynement made:  
for þis oynement myzte haue ben solde: more þan for þre  
hundride pens: and be zouen to pore men/ and þei groyneden  
into hire/ soþely ih̄c seyde/ suffre zee hir/ what ben zee heupe  
to hir? sche haþ wrouzt a good werke in me/ for euer zee  
schulen haue pore men wiþ zou • & whanne zee schulen wille •  
zee mowne do wel to hem/ forsoþe zee schulen not euermore  
haue me/ sche dide þat sche had/ sche bifore come for to an-  
oynte my body: into byrpyngē/ treuely I seye to zou • wher  
euer þis gospel schal be prechide in al þe worlde: and þat þis  
womman haþ done: schal be tolde into mynde of hire/ and  
Judas scarioth one of þe twelue • went to þe hizest pristis:  
þat he schulde bitraye hym to hem/ þe whiche berynge ioy-  
zedē: and bihizte hem to zyeue hym money/ and he souzte  
how he schulde bitraye hym couenably/ and þe firste day of  
þerfe looues • whanne paske was offride: his disciplis seyn to  
hym/ whidir wolte þou we gone & make reedy to þee: þat þou  
ete paske? and he sendiþ two of his disciplis: and seiþ to hem/  
go zee into þe cytee • and a man berynge a galoune of water:  
schal renne to zou • (or come azenes zou) • sue zee hym whider  
euer

## Mark

euere he schal entre: seye zee to þe lorde of þe hous · for þe  
mayster seiþ/ where is my fulfilling or (etyng) place? where  
I schal ete paske wiþ my disciplis? & he schal schewe to zou a  
greet soupyng place strewide: and here make zee redy to vs/  
and his disciplis wenten forþ · & comen into þe cytee: and  
founden as he had seyde to hem · & þei maden reedy pask/  
soþely euene made: he came wiþ twelue/ and hem sittynge at  
þe mete and etynge: ih̄c seiþ treuely I seye to zou · for one of  
zou þat etih wiþ me: schal bitraye me/ and þei bygunnen for  
to be soory & to seye eche by hym self/ wher I? þe whiche seiþ  
to hem/ one of þe twelue · þat puttih in þe hande wiþ me in  
þe plater/ and soþely mannes sone goih: as it is writen of hym/  
forsoþe wo to þat man by whom mannes sone schal be bitray-  
ede/ it were good to hym: zif þe ilke man had not ben borne/  
and hem etynge: ih̄c took breed/ and blessinge brake to hem  
& seiþ/ take zee/ þis is my body/ and þe cuppe taken: he doinge  
graces · zæue to hem/ and alle drynken herof/ and he seiþ to  
hem/ þis is my blood of þe newe testament: þe whiche schal  
be sched oute for manye/ treuely I seye to zou · for nowe I  
schal not drynke of þis fruyte of vyne: til into þat day · whan  
I schal drynke it newe in þe rewme of god/ and þe ympne (or  
herynge) seyde: þei wenten oute into þe hil of olyues/ and  
ih̄c seiþ to hem/ alle zee schulen be sclaunderide in me: in þis  
nyzt/ for it is writen/ I schal smyte þe scheperde: and þe  
scheep of þe flocke schulen be disparplide/ but aftir þat I schal  
risen azen: I schal go bifore zou into galilee/ forsoþe petre  
seiþ to hym/ and zif alle schulen be sclaunderide: but not I/  
and ih̄c seiþ to hym/ treuely I seye to þee · for þou to day bi-  
fore þat þe cocke in þis nyzt twyes zyeue his voyce: þries þou  
art to denye me/ and he spac more/ and zif it bihoue me for to  
dye togedir wiþ þee: I schal not denye þee/ soþely lijk maner  
and alle seyden/ and þei comen into þe place · to whom þe  
name gethsamany · & he seiþ to his disciplis sitte zee here: þe  
while I preye/ and he takis petre & James & Joon wiþ hym:  
and

## Mark

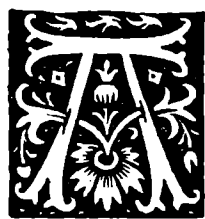
and biganne for to drede & to heupe/ and he seip to hem/ my soule is sorowfultil to þe deþ/ susteyne zee (or abide zee) heeres/ and preye zee wiþ me/ and whanne he had gone forþ a litil he fel doune on þe erþe & prepede: þat zif it myzte be · þe houre schulde passe fro hym/ and he seide fadir alle þingis ben possi- ble to þee: turne fro me þis cuppe/ but not þat I wole: but þat þou/ and he came & fonde hem slepyngē/ and he seip to petre/ Symount slepist þou: myztist þou not wake wiþ me one houre? wake zee & preye zee: þat zee entre not into temptacōn/ for- soþe þe spirit is reedy: but þe fleysche sijk/ and eftesone he go- inge: prepede þe same wordis seyinge/ and he turnyde azen eftesone: fonde hem slepyngē/ soþely here yzen weren greuyde · & þei knewen not what þei schulden answeren to hym/ and he come þe þridde tyme: and seip to hem/ slepe zee now & reste zee/ soþely it sufficij/ þe houre cometh: lo mannes sone schal be bitrayede into handis of synful men/ rise zee: go we/ lo he þat schal bitraye me is nyz// ¶ And zit hym spekyngē: Judas scarioth one of þe twelue: came/ and wiþ hym myche cumpa- nyē wiþ swerdis & staues · sente fro þe hizest priistis & scribis & fro þe eldre men/ forsoþe þe traytour had zouen to hem a to- ken: seyinge/ whom euer I schal kisse: he it is · holde zee hym & leede zee warly (or queyntly)/ and whanne he came: anone he comynge to hym · seip/ mayster/ and he kyside hym/ and þei leyden hondis into hym: and helden hym/ soþely one of þe men stondynge aboute · leedyngē oute a swerde: smote þe seruaunt of þe hizest priist · & kutte of to hym an eere/ and ihc answerynge: seip to hem/ as a þeef zee hane gon oute wiþ swerdis and staues for to take me/ forsoþe day bi day · I was at zou techynge in þe temple: and zee helden not me/ but þat þe scriptures ben fulfildē/ þanne hym forsaken: alle his disciplis fledden/ soþely sum zonge man cloþde wiþ san- del (or lynnen cloþ) on þe bare: suede hym · & þei helden hym/ and þe lynnen cloþ forsaken: he nakiden fledde aweye fro hem/ and þei ledde ihu to þe hizest priist/ and alle camen  
togedir

## Mark

togedir into one: þe pristis & scribis & eldre men/ forsoþe petre suede hym afer til to wiþinne into þe halle of þe hizest prist/ and he sate wiþ þe mynystris: and warmyde hym at þe fir/ forsoþe the hizest pristis & alle þe counseyl · souzten witnesynge azenes ihū: þat þei schulden ȝpue hym to deþ: neþer þei founden/ soþely manȝe seyden false witnesynge azenes hym: and þe witnesynges weren not couenable/ and summe risynge: souzte false witnesynge azenes hym seyinge/ for we hane herde hym seyinge/ I schal vndo þis temple made wiþ handis · & aftir þe þridde day I schal bilde anoper: not made wiþ handis/ & þe witnesynge of hem was not couenable/ forsoþe þe hizest prist rysynge vp into þe mydle: axide hym seyinge/ answerist þou not any þing · to þo þingis þat ben putte to þee of þes? soþely he was stille: and no þing answeride/ eftesone þe hizest prist axide hym: and seyde to hym/ art þou crist þe sone of blessid god? soþely ihc seyde to hym/ I am/ and ȝee schulen se mannes sone sittynge on þe rizthalfe of þe vertue of god: and comynge in cloudis of heuene/ forsoþe þe hizest prist kuttynge his clothes: seih/ what ȝit desiren ȝee witnesis? ȝee hane herde blasfemye/ what seemeþ to ȝou? þe whiche alle condempnyde hym: for to be giltȝ of deþ/ and summe bigunnen for to bispitte hym & bid his ȝzen · and smyte hym wiþ buffetis · & seye to hym/ prophecye þou/ and þe mynystris beeten hym wiþ buffetis/ and whanne petre was in þe halle byneþen: one of þe hande maydens of þe hizest prist came/ and whanne sche hadde seen petre warmynge hym: sche biholdynge seih/ and þou were wiþ ihū of nazereth/ and he denyede seyinge/ neþer I woot · neþer I haue knowen: what þou seist/ and he wente forþ bifore þe halle: and anone þe cocke crewe/ eftesones forsoþe whanne anoper hande mayden hadde seen: sche bigan for to seye to men stondynge aboute · for þis is of hem/ and he eftesone denyede/ and aftir a litil · & eftesone þat stoden nyȝ: seyden to petre/ verrepley þou art of hem/ for whi þou art of galilee/ soþely he bigan for to curse & to

## Mark

to swere: for I knowe not his man whom zee seyn/ and anone  
estefones þe cocke crewe/ and petre biþouzte on þe worde þat  
ihū hadde seyde to hym · bifore þe cocke synge twyes: þries  
þou schalt denye me/ and he bigan for to weep/ and anone þe  
morne made: þe hizeste pristis makynge counseyl wiþ þe eldre  
men & scribis · & al þe counseyl byndynge ihu: ledde & bito-  
ken to pilate//



And pilate axide hym/ art þou kyng of iewis? and C<sup>m</sup> 15<sup>m</sup>  
he answerynge: seih to hym/ þou seyst/ and þe hi-  
zest pristis accusiden hym: in manye þingis/ pilate  
forsoþe estefone axide hym seyinge/ þou answerist  
not any þing/ seest þou in how many þingis þei accusen þee/  
forsoþe ihc more no þing answeride: so þat pilate schulde won-  
dre// ¶ Forsoþe by a solempne day he was wonte to leue to  
hem one bounden: whom euer þei axiden/ forsoþe þer was he  
þat was seyde barrabas þat was bounden wiþ fleers of men ·  
& þat had done manslaughter in sedicion (þat is debate in þe cy-  
tee)/ and whanne þe cumpanye had steyzede vp: he bigan for  
to preye · as he euer more dide to hem/ soþely pilate answer-  
ide to hem & seyde/ wolen zee I leue to zou þe kyng of Jewis/  
soþely he wiste þat þe hizest pristis hadden take hym by enuye/  
forsoþe þe bischopis stireden þe cumpanye of puple: þat more  
he schulde leue to hem barrabas/ forsoþe pilate answerynge:  
seih to hem/ what þerfore wolen zee: I schal do to þe kyng of  
iewes? and þei estefones crieden/ crucifie hym/ forsoþe pilate  
seyde to hem/ soþely what of euyl haþ he done? and þei cri-  
eden more: crucifie hym/ soþely pilate willynge to do inowz  
to þe puple · (or to fulfille here wille): leste to hem barrabas ·  
& bitoke to hem ihū smyten (or beeten) wiþ scourgis · þat he  
schulde be crucifiede/ ¶ Forsoþe knyztis ledde hym wiþinne  
into þe floor of þe moot halle: and clepiden to gedir alle þe  
cumpanye of knyztis · clopiden hym wiþ purpur/ and þei fold-  
ynge a crowne of þornis · puttiden to hym: and bigunnen for



## Mark

to grete hym seyinge/ heyle kyng of iewes/ and þei smyten his  
heuede wip a reed · & bispittiden hym/ and puttynge (or bow-  
yng) here knees/ þei worschipiden hym/ and aftir þat þei had-  
den scornynge hym/ þei uncloþeden hym fro purpur · & clo-  
þiden hym wip his cloþes · & ledde hym þat þei schulden cru-  
cifie hym/ & þei constreyneden summan passynge forþ · Sy-  
mount of sirynence comynge fro þe toune · þe fadir of alisaun-  
der & rufe/ þat he schulde take his crosse/ and þei ledde hym  
into a place · galgatha · þat is interpretide (or expounyde) þe  
place of caluarie/ and þei zauen hym for to drynke wyn med-  
delide wip myrre/ and he took not/ and þei crucifynge hym ·  
departiden his cloþes · & sendynge lotte · who what schulde  
take/ forsoþe it was þe þridde houre (þat men clepen vndren)/  
and þei crucifieden hym/ and þe title of his cause was wryten/  
ihc̄ of nazereth kyng of Jewis/ and þei crucifieden wip hym ·  
two þeefes/ one at þe rizthalse/ and one at þe listehalse/ and  
þe prophecie is fulfild þat seiþ/ and he is gesside (or ordeyn-  
yde) wip wickide men/ and passynge forþ þei blasfemed  
hym mounge here heedis · & seyinge bath (or fy) · þou þat  
distruyest þe temple of god · & in þre dayes azen bildest it/ þou  
comynge doune fro þe crosse/ make þi self saaf/ also & þe hi-  
zest pristin scornynge hym/ eche to oþer wip scribis seyden/  
crist kyng of isrl̄ · made oþer men saaf/ he may not saauē hym  
self/ come he doune nowē fro þe crosse/ þat we se & bileue/  
and þei þat weren crucifiede wip hym/ puttiden wronge (or  
false reprove) to hym/ and þe sirte houre (or vndrun)/ dirke-  
nesses ben made vpon alle erþe · til into þe nynþe houre (þat  
is noon)/ and in þe nynþe houre ihc̄ criede wip greet voyce/  
seyinge/ heloy heloy lamazabathane · þe whiche is interpre-  
tide · my god my god · whi (or wherto) hast þou forsaken me/  
and summe of men stondynge aboute & herynge/ seyden/ lo he  
clepiþ helie/ soþely one rennyng & fyllynge a spounge wip vy-  
negre · & puttyng aboute to a reede/ zae hym drynke sey-  
inge/ suffre zee se we zif helie come/ for to do hym doune/ for-  
soþe

## Mark

soþe ih̄c a greet voyce sente oute: diede (or sende oute þe breeþe/ and þe beyle of þe temple is kitte into two· fro þe hizeste til to byneþe/ forsoþe centurio seinge · whiche stood even azenes · for so cryinge he had diede: seih/ verreyly þis man was goddis sone/ soþely þere weren & oþer wymmen · biholdynge fro afer/ amonge whiche was marye mawdeleyne & marie of James þe lesse: and þe modir of Joseph & Salome/ and whanne ih̄c was in galilee: þei folowiden hym & mynystreden to hym · & manye oþer wymmen · þat to gedir steyzeden vp wiþ hym to ierlm̄// ¶ And whanne euene was now made· for it was þe euene bifore þe saboth: Joseph of armathie þe noble decurioun (þat hadde ten men vnder hym) came: þe whiche & he was abydynge þe rewe of god/ and hardily he entride into pilate: and axide þe body of Ih̄u/ forsoþe pilate wondride: zif he had now deide/ and centurio axide to (or brouzte to): he axide zif he were now deade/ and whanne he hadde knowen of centurio: he ȝaue þe body of Ih̄u to Joseph/ soþely ioseph byinge sandel (or linnen cloþ) · & doinge hym doune: wlapide hym in þe linnen cloþ · & putte hym in a newe sepulcre · þat was hewen in a stoon/ and walowide to a stoon: at þe mouþe of þe sepulcre//

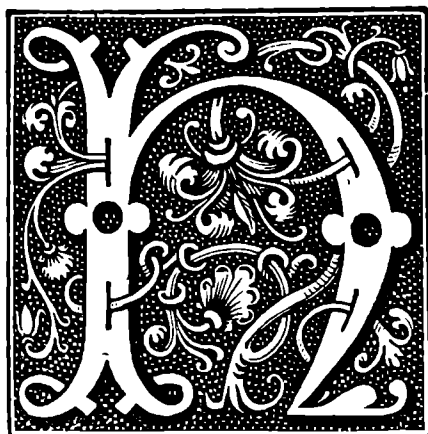


**M**ary mawdeleyne forsoþe & marie of Joseph: bihelden C<sup>m</sup> 16<sup>m</sup>  
 where he was putte/ and whanne the saboth had passide: mary mawdeleyne & marye of James & salome brouzten oynementis: þat þei comynge schulde anoynte Ih̄u/ and ful erly in one of þe woke dayes: þei camen to þe sepulcre · þe sunne now sprungen vp/ and þei seyden togedir/ who schal azen turne to vs þe stoon of þe dore of þe sepulcre: and þei byholdynge: sizen þe stoon walowide aweye/ forsoþe it was ful greet/ and þei ingoinge into þe sepulcre: sizen a zonge one hilide wiþ a whijt stool · sittynge at þe rizthalse · & þei weren abaysche (or gretely aferde)/ þe whiche seih to hem/ nyl ȝee drede/ ȝee seeken ih̄u of nazareth crucifiede/

## Mark

fiede/ he haþ risen: he is not heere/ lo þe place wher þei putti-  
den hym/ but go zee · seye zee to his disciplis & to petre: for  
he schal go bifore zou into galilee/ þere zee schulen se hym: as  
he haþ seyde to zou/ and þei goinge oute: fledden fro þe sepul-  
cre/ forsoþe dreede and quakyng · had assaylide hem/ and to  
no man þei seyden any þing · forsoþe þei dredde// ¶ And  
ihū rysynge erly in þe firste day of þe wook · apperide firste to  
mary maudeleyne · of whom he had caste oute seuene deuylis/  
sche goinge tolde to hem þat weren wif hym · hem weylng  
& wepyng/ and þei herynge þat he lyuede & was seen of hir:  
bileueden not/ soþely aftir þes þingis two of hem wandrynge:  
he is schewide in anoter lickenesse to hem goinge into a toun/  
and þei goinge tolden to oþer: neþer þei bileueden to hem/  
forsoþe at þe laste hem elleuene restynge: ihc apperide to hem/  
and reprouede þe unbileue of hem · & þe hardenesse of herte:  
for þei bileueden not to hem þat hadden seen hym to haue  
risen fro deade/ and he seyde to hem/ zee goinge into al þe  
worlde: prechih þe gospel to eche creature/ he þat schal bileue  
& schal be baptiside (or cristenyde:) schal be saaf/ soþely he  
þat schal not bileue: schal be dampnyde/ forsoþe þes tokenes  
schulen sue hem þat schulen bileue in my name/ þei schulen  
caste oute fendis · þei schulen speke wif newe tungis · þei  
schulen do aweye serpentis/ and zif þei schulen dryncke any  
venym (or deadely þing) þat bryngeþ deeth: it schal not noye  
hem/ þei schulen putte here handis vpon sick men: and þei  
schulen haue hem wel/ and soþely þe lorde Ihū aftir þat he  
had spoken to hem: is taken vp into heuene · & sittih on þe  
rizthalfe of god/ soþely þei gon forþ · prechiden euery where ·  
þe lorde worchyng wif · & confermyng þe worde · wif signes  
folowynge//

## Luke



Ere bigynnes þe gospel of luke. Ther C<sup>m</sup> 1<sup>m</sup>  
was sum prist zacharie by name · in þe  
dayes of heroude kyng of Jude · of þe  
sorte of Abia · & his wife of þe douztris  
of aaron & hire name elizabeth/ soþely  
þei boþe weren iuste · bifore god goinge  
in alle þe maundementis & iustifyingis  
of þe lordes wip outhen playnte/ and a  
sone was not to hem/ for þat elizabeth was bareyne/ and boþe  
hadden gone forþe fer in here dayes// ¶ Soþely it is done  
þat zacharie was sette in pristhode in þe ordre of his sorte bi-  
fore god/ aftir þe custome of pristehode · bi sorte he wente  
forþ þat he entride into þe temple of þe lordes schulen putte  
encense/ and al þe multitude of þe puple was wip outhen forþ  
preyinges/ in þe houre of encense/ soþely an aungel of þe lorde  
apperide to hym · stondynge on þe rizthalse of þe auter of en-  
cense/ and zacharie seinge is distourblide/ and drede felde  
doune vpon hym/ forsoþe þe aungel seip to hym/ zacharie  
drede þou not/ for þi preyer is herde/ and elizabeth þi wife  
schal bere to þee a sone/ and his name shal be clepide Joon/  
and he schal be ioye to þee & gladynges/ and manye schulen  
ioye in his natpuyte/ soþely he schal be greet bifore þe lorde/  
and he schal not dryncke wyn & cyser · & he schal be fulfilde wip  
þe holy goost/ zit of his modir wombe/ & he schal conuerte  
manye of þe sones of isrl/ to þe lorde god of hem/ and he schal  
go bifore hym · in þe spirit & vertue of helie · & schal turne þe  
hertis of faderis into sones · & men outhen of bileue · to þe pru-  
dence of iuste men · for to make reedy a parfite puple to þe  
lorde/ and zacharie seyde to þe aungel/ wher of schal I wite  
þis/ for I am olde/ and my wife has gone fer in hir dayes/  
and

## Luke

and þe aungel answerynge: seyde to hym/ forsoþe I am gabriel þat stonde nyȝ bifore: and I am sente to þee for to spec & to euangelize (or schewe) to þee þes þingis/ and lo þou schalt be stille (or doumbe) · & þou schalt not mowe speek til into þe day · in whiche þes þingis schulen be done: for þat þat þou hast not bileuede to my wordis þe whiche schulen be fulfild in here tyme/ and þe puple was abydyng zacharie: and þei wondriden for he taryede in þe temple/ forsoþe he gone oute · myȝte not speek to hem: and þei knewen þat he had seen a visioun in þe temple/ and he was bekenyng to hem: and dwellide doumbe/ and it is made · as þe dayes of his office were fulfild: he wente into his hous/ forsoþe aftir þes dayes · elizabeth his wiif consyquede · & hid hir fyue monethes · seyinge/ for so þe lorde dide to me in þe dayes in whiche he bihilde for to take away my schenschip amonge men/ soþely in þe sirte moneth · þe aungel gabriel is sente fro god into a cytee of galilee · to whom þe name nazareth · to a virgyn weddide to a man · to whom þe name was Ioseph · of þe hous of dauid: and þe name of þe mayden marie/ and þe aungel gone in to hire: seyde/ heyle ful of grace · þe lorde wiþ þee: blesside þou amonge wymmen/ þe whiche whanne sche hadde herde: is turblide in his worde · & þouȝte: what maner salutacon þis was/ and þe aungel seyde to hire/ ne drede þou marie/ soþely þou hast founden grace anentis god/ lo þou schalt consygue in wombe & bere a sone: and þou schalt clepe his name ihc̃/ þis schal be greet: & he schal be clepide sone of þe hizest/ and þe lorde god schal ȝyue to hym þe seet of dauid his fadir: and he schal regne in þe hous of Iacob wiþ outhen ende/ and of his rewme schal be none ende/ forsoþe marie seyde to þe aungel/ on what maner schal þis þing be done: for I knowe not man: and þe aungel answerynge: seyde to hire/ þe holy goost schal come fro aboue into þee: and þe vertue of þe hizest · schal shadowe to þee/ þerfore & þat hooly þing þat schal be borne of þee schal be clepide þe sone of god/ and lo elizabeth þi cosyn:  
and

## Luke

and ſche haþ conſeyupde a ſone in hir elde/ and þis moneþ is þe ſirte to hire þat is clepide bareyne/ for euery worde ſchal not be impoſſible anentis god/ forſoþe marie ſeyde/ lo þe hande mayden of þe lorde/ be it done to me aftir þi worde/ and þe aungel departide fro hir// ¶ Forſoþe marie riſynge vp in þo dayes wente wiþ haſte into hilly places • into a cytee of Jude/ and ſche entride into þe hous of zacharie/ and grette elizabeth/ and it is done as elizabeth herde þe ſalutacōn of marie • þe zonge childe in hir wombe gladide/ and elizabeth is fulfilde wiþ þe hooly goost & criede wiþ grete voyce • & ſeyde/ bleſſide þou amonge wpmmen/ and bleſſide þe fruyte of þi wombe/ and wher of þis þing to me/ þat þe modir of my lorde come to me/ lo forſoþe as þe voyce of þi ſalutacōn is made in myn eris/ þe zonge childe gladide in ioye in my wombe/ and bleſſide þou þat haſt bileuede/ for þe ilke þingis þat ben ſeyde to þee of þe lorde/ ſchulen be parfitely done/ and marie ſeyde// ¶ My ſoule magnyfieth þe lorde/ and my ſpirit haþ ful oute gladide in god myn helpe zyuere/ for he haþ biholden þe mekenesse of his hande mayden/ lo forſoþe of þis • alle generacoñs ſchulen ſeþe me bleſſide/ for he þat is myzty haþ done to me greet þingis/ & his name is holy/ and his mercy fro kynrede into kynrede/ to men dredynge hym/ he made myzte in his arme/ he ſcateride proude men wiþ mynde of his herte/ he puttide doune myzty men fro þe ſeet/ and enhauncide meke/ he haþ fulfilde hungri men wiþ good þingis/ & he haþ leſte riche men voyde/ he hauynge mynde of his mercy/ took vp iſt his childe/ as he haþ ſpoken to oure faderis/ to abraham & to his ſeed into worldis// forſoþe marie dwellyde wiþ hire as þre moneþes/ and turnyde azen into hire hous/ ſohely þe tyme of berynge childe is fulfilde to elizabeth/ and ſche childe a ſone/ and þe neyzebors & coſyns of hire herden • for þe lorde haþ magnyfiede his mercy wiþ hir/ & þei togedir ioyeden to hire/ and it is done in þe eyzthe day þai camen for to circumcide þe childe/ and þei clepiden hym zacharie by name of his fadir/

and

## Luke

and his modir answerynge: seyde/ nay: but he schal be clepide ioon/ and þei seyden to hire/ for no man is in þi kyn: þat is clepide by þis name/ soþely þei made a signe to his fadir: whom he wolde hym for to be clepide/ and he aringe a poyntel: wrote seyinge/ Ioon is his name/ and alle men wonderiden// ¶ Forsoþe his mouþ is openyde anone & his tunge: and he spac blessinge god/ and drede is made on alle here neyzebors/ and þes wordis weren puplischide vpon alle þe hilly places of Iudee/ and alle men þat herden: puttiden in here herte seyinge/ who gessist þou þis childe schal be/ and soþely þe hande of þe lorde was wiþ hym/ and zacharie his fadir is fulfildre wiþ þe holy gost: and propheciede sayinge// ¶ Blesside þe lorde god of isrl: for he haþ visitide · & made redempcōn of his puple/ & he haþ reride to vs an horne of helpe: in þe hous of dauid his childe/ as he spac by þe mouþ of seyntis: þat ben fro þe worlde his prophetis/ helpe of oure enemyes: and of þe hande of alle men þat hatiden vs/ to be done mercy wiþ oure faderis: and to haue mynde of his holy testament/ þe oþe þat he swore to abraham oure fadir: to geue hym to vs: þat we delyueride fro þe hande of oure enemyes: serue to hym wiþ outen drede/ in holynes & ríztwesse bífóre hym: alle oure dayes/ and þou childe schalt be clepide þe prophete of þe hízest · for þou schalt go bífóre þe face of þe lorde: for to make reedy his weyes/ for to geue science & helpe to his puple: into remyssioun of here synnes/ by þe entraylis of mercy of oure god · in þe whiche he spryngyge vp fro an híz: haþ visitide vs/ for to geue líz to hem þat saten in dirkeness & in schadowe of deþ: for to dresse oure feet into þe wey of pees/ soþely þe childe weride & was comfortide in spirit: and was in deserte til to þe day of his schewing to isrl//

Forsoþe

## Luke



Forsoþe it is done in þo dayes a maundement wente C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>  
oute fro cesar august (or noble): þat al þe worlde  
schulde be distrynede/ þis firste distrynynge was  
made of cyryne iustice (or keper of cirie) and alle  
men wenten þat þei schulden make professiōn or knowelech-  
ynge: eche by hym self into his cytee/ soþely & Ioseph steyzede  
vp fro galilee of þe cytee of nazareth: into Jude into þe cytee  
of dauid · þat is clepide bethlem · for þat he was of þe hous  
meyne of dauid · þat he schulde knoweleche wiþ marie spouside  
to hym wiif wiþ childe/ soþely it is done whanne þei weren  
þer: þe dayes ben fulfild þat sche schulde bere childe/ and sche  
childide hire firste bigoten sone/ and inwolappide hym in clothes  
& puttide hym in a cracche: for þer was not place to hym in þe  
comyn stable// ¶ And scheperdis weren in þe same cuntre ·  
wakynge & kepyng þe watchis of þe nyzt: vpon here floc/ and  
lo þe aungel of þe lorde stood bisides hem: & clerenes of god  
schynnde aboute hem: and þei dredde wiþ greet drede/ and  
þe aungel seyde to hem/ nyl zee drede/ lo soþely I euangelize  
(or preche) to zou greet ioie: þat schal be to al puple/ for a  
saueour is borne to day to vs · þat is crist a lorde in þe cytee  
of dauid/ and þis a token to zou/ zee schulen fynde þe childe  
wolappide in clothes: and putte in a cracche/ and sodeynly þer  
is made wiþ þe aungel a multitude of heuenely knyztþode ·  
herpyng god & seyinge/ glorie in þe hizest þingis of god: and  
in erþe pees to men of gode wille/ and it is done þat whanne  
þe aungels passiden aweye fro hem into heuene: þe scheperdis  
spaken to gedir seyinge/ go we ouer til to bethlem: and se we  
þis worde þat is made · þe whiche þe lorde made & schewide  
to vs/ and þei hizinge camen: and founden marie & Ioseph ·  
& a zonge childe putte in a cracche/ soþely þei seinge knewen  
of þe worde þat was seyde to hem of þe childe/ and alle men  
þat hadden herde wondriden: & of þes þingis þat weren seyde  
to hem of þe scheperdis/ forsoþe marie kepte alle þes wordis:



## Luke

berynge to gedir in hir herte/ and þe scheperdis turneden azen  
glorifynge & herpyng god · in alle þingis þat þei hadden herde  
& seen: as it is seyde to hem/ and aftir þe eyzte dayes weren  
endide · þat þe childe schulde be circumcidide: his name is cle-  
pide ihc: þe whiche was clepide of þe aungel: bifore he was  
consepude in wombe/ and aftir þat þe dayes of purgacōn of  
marie weren fulfillide aftir moyfes lawe: þei tooken hym into  
irlm̄ · þat þei schulden offer hym to þe lorde · as it is writen  
in þe lawe of þe lorde/ for euery male kynde openynge þe  
wombe for to go oute: schal be clepide hooly to þe lorde/ and  
þat he schulde ȝue an offerynge aftir þat it is seyde in þe lawe  
of þe lorde · a payre of turturs: or two culuer briddis/ and lo  
a man was in irlm̄: to whom þe name symeon/ and þis man  
was iuste & dredeful abidyng þe comfort of isrl̄/ and þe holy  
gost was in hym/ & he had taken answer of þe holy gost hym  
not for to se deþ: no but he s̄ze firste crist of þe lorde/ and he  
came into þe temple/ and whanne his eldris ledden þe childe  
þat þei schulden do aftir þe custom of lawe for hym: and he  
toke hym into his armes: and he bleſside god & seyde/ lorde  
now þou leuest þi seruaunt: aftir þi worde in pees/ for myn  
ȝzen haue seen: þin helpe ȝuer/ þe which þou hast made reedy:  
bifore þe face of alle puplis/ lizt to þe schewynge of heþen men:  
& glorie of þi puple of isrl̄// ¶ And his fadir & his modir weren  
wondrynge vpon þes þingis þat weren seyde of hym/ and sy-  
meon bleſside hem: and seyde to marie his modir/ lo þis is  
putte into fallynge & into ryſynge azen of manye men in isrl̄/  
and into a token: to whom it schal be azen seyde/ and a ſwerde  
schal passe þorow þin owne soule: þat þou ȝtis ben schewide of  
many hertis// ¶ And anna was a prophetesse · þe douzter of  
phanuel of þe lynage of aser/ and sche had gone forþe in ma-  
nye dayes · and had lyuede wih hir housbonde ſeuene ȝeeris fro  
hir maydenhede/ and þis was a widowe: til to fourscore ȝeer  
& foure/ þe whiche departide not fro þe temple: ſerupnge nyzt  
& day to faſtyngis & beſechyngis/ and ſche þis in þe ilke houre  
aboue

## Luke

aboue compynge · knowelechide to þe lorde; and spac of hym to alle þat abiden þe redempcōn of isrl/ and as þei hadden partitely done alle þingis aftir þe lawe of þe lorde; þei turneden azen into galilee; into here cytee nazereth/ soþely þe childe were & was comfortide; ful of wisdom · & þe grace of god was in hym// ¶ And his eldris þat is fadir & modir wenten by alle zeeris into irlm; in þe solempne day of pask/ and whanne ihc̄ was made of twelue zeeris · hem steyzinge vp into irlm; aftir þe custom of þe feeste day/ and þe dayes endide; whanne þei turneden azen · þe childe dwelte in irlm; and his fadir & modir knewen not/ forsoþe þei gessynge hym for to be in þe cumpanye (or felowschip); camen þe wey (or iourney) of one day · & souzten hym amonge his cosyns & knewen/ and þei not fyndynge; wenten azen into irlm · seekynge hym/ and it is done aftir þe þridde day · þei founden hym in þe temple · sit-tyng in þe mydel of doctours heryng hem & aringe/ soþely alle men þat herden hym; wondriden vpon þe prudence & answeris of hym/ and þei seinge wondriden/ and his modir seyde to hym/ sone; whi hast þou done to vs þis; lo þi fadir & I sorowynge; hane souzte þee/ and he seip to hem/ what is þat zee souzten me; wisten zee not for in þo þingis þat ben of my fadir; it bihouep me for to be; and þei vnderstoden not þe wordes; þe whiche he spac to hem/ and he came doune wip hem · & came to nazereth · & was sujet (or vndirloute) to hem/ and his modir kepte to gedir alle þes wordis; berynge to gedir in hir herte/ and ihc̄ profitide in wisdom age & grace; anentis god & men//



Forsoþe in þe fiffenþe zeer of þe empire of tyberye C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>  
 emperour · pilate of pounceprocuryng (or keepynge)  
 Jude · soþely heroude prynce of þe fourþe parte of  
 galilee · philip forsoþe his broþer prynce of the  
 fourþe parte of yturie · & of þe cuntre of tracon · & lysany  
 prynce of þe furþe part of abilyn · vndir þe prynces of pristin  
 annas

## Luke

annas & cayphas: þe worde of þe lorde is made vpon ioon þe  
sone of zacharie in deserte/ and he came into al þe cuntre of  
iordan prechynge bapty[m] of penaunce into remyssion of  
synnes · as it is writen in þe booc of þe wordis of ysaie þe pro-  
phete/ þe voyce of (one) crynge in deserte/ make zee reedy þe  
weye of þe lorde: make zee his paves rizt/ eche valey schal be  
fulfillide · & euery hil & hilloc schal be made lowe: and schrew-  
ide þingis schulen be into dresside þingis: and scharpe þingis  
into playne weyes/ and euery fleytche (or man): schal se þe  
helpe of god/ þerfore he seyde to þe cumpanyes · þe whiche  
wenten oute · þat þei schulden be baptiside of hym/ kyndelyn-  
gis of neddris who schewide to zou for to fle fro þe wrappe to  
comynge: þerfore do zee worþi fruytis of penaunce: and bi-  
gynne zee not for to seye · we hane a fadir abraham/ soþely I  
seye to zou · god is myzty for to reyse of þes stoness: þe sones  
of abraham/ forsoþe now an axe is putte to þe root of þe tree/  
soþely euery tree not makynge good fruyte · schal be kutte  
doun · and he sente into þe fjr/ and þe cumpanyes axiden  
hym: seyinge/ what þerfore schulen we do? soþely he aun-  
swerynge: seyde to hem/ he þat haþ two cootis: ȝyue to none  
haupng/ and he þat haþ metis: do on þe like maner/ soþely &  
puplicans camen for to be baptiside: and þei seyden to hym/  
mayster what schulen we do? and he seyde to hem: do zee no  
þing more: þan þat is ordeynede to zou/ forsoþe & knyztis  
axiden hym: seyinge/ what schulen & we do? and he seiþ to  
hem/ smyte zee wrongefully no man · neþer make zee false  
challenge: and be zee apayede wip zoure soudis/ forsoþe al þe  
puple gessynge · & alle men þenkyng in here hertis of ioon ·  
lest þe parauenture he were c̄st: ioon answeride · seyinge to alle  
men/ soþely I baptise zou in water · forsoþe a strengier þan I  
schal come aftir me · whos I am not worþi for to vnbynde þe  
þwonge of his schone/ he schal baptise zou in þe hooly goft &  
fjr/ whos wenowynge tool in his hande · & he schal purge his  
corne floor · & schal gedir þe wheet into his berne: soþely þe  
chaffes

## Luke

chaffes he schal brenne wih fir vnquencheable/ forsoþe & he  
monestynge manye oþer þingis euangelizide to þe puple//  
¶ Soþely heroude prynce of þe fourþe parte of galilee . whanne  
he was blamyde of ioon . of herodias wife of his broþer . & of  
alle þe euplis þat heroude dide/ he castide to þis ouer alle . &  
thitte ioon in prisoune/ forsoþe it is doune . whan al þe puple  
was baptiside . & ihū cristenpde & prechynge/ heuene is open=  
pde . & þe holy gost came doune in bodily likenesse as a culuer  
into hym/ and a voyce is made fro heuene/ þou art my der=  
worþe sone/ in þee it hap pleside to me/ and he ihc was by=  
gynnyng as of þritty zeer/ þat he was gesside þe sone of Jo=  
seph/ þe whiche was of hely . þe whiche was of mathath . þe  
whiche was of leui . þe whiche was of melchi/ þat was of  
Jamne/ þat was of Joseph/ þat was of mathatie/ þat was  
of amos/ þat was of naum/ þat was of hely/ þat was of nagge/  
þat was of mathath/ þat was of mathatie/ þat was of semey/  
þat was of Joseph/ þat was of Juda/ þat was of Johanna/ þat  
was of resa/ þat was of zorobabel/ þat was of salatiel/ þat was  
of nery/ þat was of melchi/ þat was of addy/ þat was of cosan/  
þat was of elmadan/ þat was of her/ þat was of ihū/ þat was  
of eleazar/ þat was of Jorym/ þat was of mathath/ þat was  
of leuy/ þat was of symeon/ þat was of Juda/ þat was of Jo=  
seph/ þat was of Jona/ þat was of eliachym/ þat was of mel=  
cha/ þat was of menna/ þat was of mathatha/ þat was of na=  
than/ þat was of dauid/ þat was of Jesse/ þat was of obeth/  
þat was of booz/ þat was of salmon/ þat was of naason/ þat  
was of amynadab/ þat was of aram/ þat was of esrom/ þat  
was of phares/ þat was of Judas/ þat was of Jacob/ þat was  
of ysaac/ þat was of abraham/ þat was of thare/ þat was of  
nachor/ þat was of seruth/ þat was of ragan/ þat was of pha=  
leth/ þat was of heber/ þat was of sale/ þat was of caynan/  
þat was of arfarat/ þat was of sem/ þat was of noe/ þat  
was of lameth/ þat was of matusale/ þat was of enok/ þat  
was of iareth/ þat was of malaliel/ þat was of caynan/ þat  
was

## Luke

was of enos/ þat was of seth/ þat was of adam/ þat was of  
god//

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>



Forsoþe ih̄c ful of þe holy goost • turnyde azen fro ior-  
dan/ and was led by þe spirit into deserte fourty  
dages/ and was temptyde by þe deupl: and ete no  
þing in þo dages/ and þo dages endide: he hungride/  
forsoþe þe deupl seyde to hym/ zif þou art goddis sone: seye to  
þis stoon • þat it be made breed/ and ih̄c answerynge to hym  
seih/ it is writen/ for a man lyueþ not in oneliche breed: but  
in euery worde of god/ and þe deupl ledde hym into an hize  
hil • and schewide to hym al þe rewmes of þe roundnesse of  
erþe • in moment of a tyme: and seih to hym/ I schal ȝyue to  
þee al þis power • & þe glorie of hem: for to me þei ben ȝouen •  
& to whom I wole I ȝyue hem/ þerfore zif þou schalt worschip  
bifore me: alle þingis schulen be þin/ and ih̄c answerynge:  
seih to hym/ þou schalt worschip þe lorde þi god: and to hym  
al one þou schalt serue/ and he ledde hym into ierlm̄ • & sette  
hym on þe pynacle of þe temple: and seyde to hym/ zif þou art  
goddis sone: sende þi self hens doune/ for it is writen/ for he  
haþ comaundide to his aungels of þee • þat þei kepe þee in alle  
þi weyes/ and for in handis þei schulen take þee lest þe parauen-  
ture þou hirte þi foot at a stoon/ and ih̄c answerynge: seih to  
hym/ it is seyde/ þou schalt not tempte þe lorde þi god/ and  
euery temptacōn endide: þe sende wente aweye fro hym til to  
a tyme// ¶ And ih̄c turnede azen in vertue of þe spirit • into  
galilee/ and þe fame wente forþe of hym: þourgh al þe cuntre/  
and he tauzt in þe synagogis of hem: and was magnyfiede of  
alle men/ and he came into nazereth where he was norischide/  
and he entride aftir his custom in þe saboth day into þe syna-  
goge: and roos for to reed/ and þe booc of ysaye þe prophete  
is taken to hym/ and as he turnyde þe booc • he fonde a place  
where it was writen/ þe spirit of þe lorde on me: for whiche  
þing he enoyntide me/ he sente me for to euangelize to pore  
men:

## Luke

men: for to heele contrite men in herte • & for to preche remysſioun to captyues • & ſiȝte to blynde men/ and for to leue (or delyuer) broken men into remysſion/ for to preche þe zeer of þe lorde acceptide (or pleaſaunt) • & þe day of retribucon (or zildynge azen)/ & whanne he hadde foldide (or cloſide) þe booc: he ȝaue it to þe myniſtre & ſatte/ and þe ȝzen of alle men in þe ſynagoge: weren biholdynge into hym/ ſoþely he bigan for to ſeye to hem/ for in þis daye þe ſcripture is fulfilde in ȝoure eris/ and alle men ȝauen witneſſynge to hym • & won- driden in þe wordis of grace: þat comen forþ of his moup/ and þei ſeyden/ wher þis is not þe ſone of Joſeph? and he ſeiþ to hem/ ſoþely ȝee ſchulen ſeye to me þis likenesſe/ leeche heele þi ſelf/ þei ſeyden/ how greet þingis hane we herde done in capharnaum: make þou & here in þi cuntre/ ſoþely he ſeiþ/ trewely I ſeye to ȝou for no man a prophete is acceptide (or recepuede): in his owne cuntre/ in treuþe I ſeye to ȝow • for manȝe widowis weren in þe dayes of helpe þe prophet in iſrl • whanne heuene was cloſide þre zeer • & ſire moneþes • whanne greet hungre was made in al erþe/ and to none of hem was helpe ſente • no but into ſarepta of ſydon to a womman wi- dowe/ and manȝe meſels weren in iſrl vnder heliſe þe pro- phete: and none of hem was clenſide no but naaman of ſirie/ and alle in þe ſynagoge herynge þes þingis: ben fulfilde wiþ wrapþe/ and þei riſen vp & caſtiden hym oute wiþouten þe cy- tee • & ledden hym to þe toppe of þe hil on þe whiche here cytee is founden • þat þei ſchulen ſende hym doune/ ſoþely ih̄c paſſ- ynge: wente by þe mydel of hem// ¶ And he came doune into capharnaum a cytee of galilee: and þer he tauȝte hem in ſabo- this/ and þei weren aſtonȝede in his techynge: for his worde was in power/ and in þe ſynagoge was a man hauynge an vn- clene fende: and he criede wiþ greet voyce ſeyinge/ ſuffre • what to vs & to þee ih̄u of nazareth • haſt þou comen for to leeſe vs? I woot þee þat þou art þe hoolȝ of god/ and ih̄c blamyde hym ſeyinge/ ware dumber: and go oute fro hym/ and

## Luke

and whanne þe fende had caste hym forþe into þe mydel; he wente aweye fro hym/ and no þing noyzedde hym/ and drede is made in alle men; and þei spaken to gedir seyinge/ & in vertue he comaundiþ to vnclene spiritis; and þei gone oute/ and þe fame was puplischide of hym • into eche place of þe cuntre// forsoþe ih̄c r̄spynge of þe synagoge; entride into þe hous of symount/ soþely þe modir of symountis wife; was holden wiþ grete feueris/ and þei preyeden hym for hire/ and ih̄c stondynge vpon hir • comaundide to þe feuer • & it lefte hir/ and anone sche risynge; mynysþride to hem/ forsoþe whanne þe sunne wente doune • alle þat hadde sijk men • wiþ diuerse langewischynge (or achis); ledde hem to hym/ and he puttyng handis to eche by hym; helide hym/ soþely fendes wenten oute fro manye crynge & seyinge; for þou art þe sone of god/ and he blamyng suffride hem not for to speke; for þei wisten hym for to be crist/ soþely þe day made • he gone oute • wente into deserte place; and þe cumpanyes of puplis souzten hym/ & þei camen til to hym; and þei helden hym þat he schulden not go awey fro hem/ to whom he seyde/ for & to oþer cytees it bihoueh me for to euangelize þe kyngdom of god • for þefore I am sente/ and he was prechynge in þe synagogis of galilee//

C<sup>m</sup> 5<sup>m</sup>



Soþely it is done whanne cumpanyes of puple camen faste (or felden in) • into Ihu • þat þei schulden here þe worde of god; and he stode biþidis þe stondynge water of genazareth • & siþe two bootis stondynge biþidis þe stondynge water/ soþely þe fischers hadden gone doune; and waschiden nettis soþely he stepzinge into a boot þat was symountis; preyede hym for to leede azen a litil fro þe lande/ and he sittyng • tauzte þe cumpanyes fro þe boot/ soþely as he ceesþe for to speek; he seyde to symount/ leede þou into an hize/ aslake ȝee ȝoure nettis into takynge/ and Symount answerynge; seyde to hym/ comaundour we traueplynge

## Luke

ueplynge by al nyzt · token no þyng; but in þi worde · ¶ I schal  
lepe oute þe nette/ and whanne þei hadden done þis þing;  
þei closiden to gedir a plenteuous multitude of fischis/ for-  
soþe here nette was broken/ and þei beckenyden to felowis  
þat weren in anoter boot; þat þei schulden come & helpe  
hem/ and þei camen & fulfilden boþe þe litil bootis; so þat  
þei weren almost drenchide/ þe whiche þing whanne symount  
petre sate; he felde doune · to þe knees of ihū · seyinge/ lorde  
go oute fro me; for I am a man synner/ soþely greet wonder  
had bigon hym aboute; and alle þat weren wip hym in þe  
takynge of fischis · whiche þei token/ soþely on þe like maner ·  
James & Joon þe sones of Zebedee · þat weren felowis of  
Symount petre/ and ihc seip to Symount/ nyl þou drede ·  
nowe fro þis tyme þou schalt be takynge men/ and þe bootis  
ledde vp to þe lande · alle þingis leste (or forsaken); þei sueden  
hym// ¶ And it is done whanne he was in one of þe cytees ·  
& lo a man ful of lepre · & seinge ihū & fallynge doune in to  
his face; preyede hym seying/ lorde zif þou wolte; þou myzte  
make me clene/ and ihc holdynge forþ þe hande; touchide  
hym seyinge/ I wole · be þou made clene/ and anone þe lepre  
passide aweye fro hym/ and ihc comaundide to hym þat he  
schulde seye to no man; but go · schewe þou þee to a prist · &  
offer for þi clensynge as moyses had; into witnessynge to hem/  
soþely þe worde walkide aboute þe more of hym; and many  
cumpanyes camen togedir þat þei schulden heere; and he bi-  
hilde of here sekenesses/ forsoþe he wente into deserte & prey-  
ede// ¶ And it is done in one of dayes; and he sittynge tauzte/  
and þere weren pharisees sittynge & doctours of lawe · þat  
came of eche castel of galilee & Judee & irlm; and þe vertue  
of þe lorde was · for to heel seeke men/ and lo men beryng  
in a bed a man þat was sijk in palesie; and þei souzte for to  
bere hym in · & putte bifore hym/ and þei myzte not fynde  
in what parte þei schulden bere hym in · for þe cumpanye of  
puple · steyzeden on þe roof · & by sclatis þei senten hym



## Luke

doune wiþ þe bed into þe mydil bifore ihū/ þe seiþ of whom  
as Jhū siþe/ he seyde/ man þi synnes ben forzouen to þee/ and  
scribis & pharisees bigunnen for to þenke/ seyinge/ who is  
þis þat spekiþ blasfempes/ who may forzyue synnes/ no but  
god al one/ forsoþe as ihc̄ knewe þe þouztis of hem/ he an-  
swerynge · seyde to hem/ what þenken zee euyl þingis in zoure  
hertis/ what is lizter for to seye synnes ben forzouen to þee/  
or for to seye rise vp & walke/ soþely þat zee witen for mannes  
sone haþ power in erþe to forzyue synnes/ he seiþ to þe sijk man  
in paleſie/ to þee I seye rise vp bifore hem/ took þe bed in  
whiche he laye · & wente into his hous/ magnyfyinge god/  
and greet wondre took alle/ and þei magnyfieden god/ and  
þei ben fulfildes wiþ greet drede/ seyinge/ for we haue seen  
merueylous þingis to day// ¶ And aftir þes þingis ihc̄ wente  
oute & siþe a puplican · leuy by name · sittynge at þe tolboþe/  
and he seiþ to hym/ sue þou me/ and alle þingis forsaken/ he  
risynge suedde hym/ and leuy made to hym a greet feest in his  
hous/ and þer was a greet cumpanye of puplicans · & of oþer  
þat weren with hem/ sittynge at þe mete/ and pharisees &  
scribis of hem grucchiden seyinge to his disciplis/ whi eten zee  
& dryncken wiþ puplicans & synful men/ and ihc̄ answer-  
ynge/ seiþ to hem/ þei þat ben hool haue no nede to a leche/  
but þei þat haue euyl/ soþely I came not for to clepe iuste men/  
but synful men to penaunce/ and þei seyden to hym/ whi þe  
disciplis of Joon fasten ofte & maken bisechyngis · also & þe  
pharisees/ but þi (disciplis) eten & dryncken/ to whom he seiþ/  
wher zee moun make sones of þe spouse for to faste · þe while  
þe spouse is wiþ hem/ soþely Dages schulen come · whanne þe  
spouse schal be taken aweye fro hem/ þanne þei schulen faste  
in þo Dages/ forsoþe he seyde to hem & a lickenesse/ for no man  
sendiþ a medelynge of newe cloþ/ into an olde cloþ/ ellis  
& he brekis þe newe/ and þe mendynge of þe newe acordiþ  
not to þe olde/ and no man sendiþ newe wynn into olde wynn  
vessels/ ellis þe newe wynn schal breke þe wynn vessels · & þe  
wyn

## Luke

wyn schal be schedde oute · & the vessels schulen perische/ but newe wyn is to be sente into newe wijn vessels: and bothe ben kepte/ and no man drynkyng olde wijn: wole anone newe: sohely he seih þe olde is þe better//



**F**orsoþe it is done in þe secounde saboth · firste C<sup>m</sup> 6<sup>m</sup>  
whanne he passide bi cornes: his disciplis pluck-  
iden eris · & þei frotynge wiþ handis · eten/ sohe-  
ly summe of þe pharisees: seyden to hem/ what  
done zee þat · þat is not leueful in sabothis? and ihc answer-  
ynge seyde to hem/ hane zee not redde þat · þat daupd dide  
whanne he hungride · & þei þat weren wiþ hym? how he en-  
tride into þe hous of god & took looues of proposicion & ete ·  
& zæue to hem þat weren wiþ hym/ whiche looues it was not  
leueful for to eete: no but onely to pristin al one/ and he seyde  
to hem/ for mannes sone is lorde: zhe of þe saboth// ¶ Sohely  
it is done and in anoter saboth · þat he entride into þe syna-  
goge: & tauzt/ and a man was here: & his rizt hande was  
drie/ forsoþe scribis & pharisees aspieden hym zif he schulde  
heeke hym in þe saboth: þat þei schulden fynde cause wherof for  
to accuse hym/ sohely he wiste þe houytes of hem/ and he seih  
to þe man: þat hadde a drie hande/ rise vp into þe mydel &  
stonde/ and he rysynge: stood/ sohely ihc seih to hem/ I are of  
zou zif it is leueful for to do wel in þe saboth: or euyl? for to  
make a soule saaf: or for to leese? and alle men lokeden aboute:  
he seyde to þe man/ holde forþ þin hande/ and he helde forþ &  
his hande is restoryde to helpe/ sohely þei ben fulfilde wiþ vn-  
wisdom · & spak togedir what þei schulden do of Ihu// forsoþe  
it is done in þo dayes: he wente oute into an hil for to preye:  
and he was al nyzt dwellynge: in þe prayer of god/ and whanne  
day was made: he clepide his disciplis & chees twelue of hem ·  
whom & apostlis ben nempnyde/ Symount whom he clepide  
Petre: & Andrew his broþer/ James and Joon · Philip &  
Bartholomeu · Mathew & Thomas · James alphei: and Sy-  
mount

# Luke

mount þat is clepide zelotis/ Judas of James; and Judas  
scarioth þat was traytour// ¶ And ihc comynge doune fro þe  
hil wip hem; stode in a feeldy place & þe cumpange of his dis-  
ciplis · & a plenteuouse multitude of smale (or pore puple) of al  
Judee & irlm · & of þe see costis & of tyre & of Sydon þat camen  
þat þei schulden heere hym; & þat þei schulden be heelide of  
here langewischis (or achis)/ and þei þat weren traueplide of  
vnclene spiritis; weren heelide/ and eche cumpange of puple  
souzte for to touche hym; for vertue wente oute of hym & helide  
alle/ and his yzen caste vp into his disciplis; he seyde/ blesside  
(be zee) pore men; for þe kyngdom of god is zoure/ blesside (be  
zee) þat now hungren; for zee schulen be fulfillide/ blesside (be  
zee) þat nowe wepen; for zee schulen leize/ zee schulen be  
blesside whanne men schulen hate zou & departe zou & putte  
schenschip on zou & caste oute zoure name as yuel for mannes  
sone/ ioyze zee in herte in þat day · & glade zee wip oute forþ;  
lo soþely zoure mede is myche in heuene/ forsoþe aftir þes  
þingis; þe faderis of hem diden to prophetis/ neþeles wo to  
zou riche men þat haue zoure comfort/ wo to zou þat ben ful-  
fildes; for zee schulen hungre/ wo to zou þat nowe leizen; for  
zee schulen mourne & wepe// ¶ Wo whanne men schulen blesse  
zou/ aftir þes þingis · þe faderis of hem diden to false pro-  
phetis/ but I seye to zou þat heren/ loue zee zoure enemyes;  
do zee wel to hem þat haten zou/ blesse zee to men cursynge  
zou; preye zee for men þat falsely chalengen zou/ and who  
shal smyte þee to þe one cheek; ȝyue to hym & þe toþer/ and  
fro hym þat takeþ away fro þee þi clooth; ȝhe nyl forbede þi  
coot/ soþely ȝif þou to eche aringe þee/ and he þat takith away  
þe þingis þat ben þin; are þou not azen (wip strif)/ and as zee  
wolen þat men done to zou; and do zee to hem on liche  
maner/ and ȝif zee louen hem þat louen zou; what grace  
(or þanke) is to zou; for whi & synful men louen men lou-  
ynge hem/ and ȝif zee done wel to hem þat done wel to zou;  
what þanke is to zou/ soþely & synful men done þis þing/ and  
ȝif

## Luke

zif zee zyuen borowynge (or leenen) to hem . of whom zee hopen for to take azen: what grace (or þanke) is to zou for whi & synful men leenen to synful men: þat þei take azen euen þingis/ neþeles loue zee zoure enemyes . & doiþ wel . & zyue zee borowynge (or leeneþ): no þing hopynge þereof . & zoure mede schal be myche/ & zee schulen be þe sones of þe hizeft: for he is benynge (or of good wille) . vpon vnkynde & euyl men/ þerfore be zee mercyful: as & zoure fadir is mercyful/ nyl zee deme folily . & zee schulen not be dempde/ nyl zee condempne: & zee schulen not be condempnyde/ for: zyue zee: and it schal be forzouen to zou/ zyue zee: & it schal be zouen to zou/ þei schulen zyue into zoure bosum a good mesure & wel fillide . & schaken to gedir: & ouer flowynge/ forsoþe by þe same mesure by whiche zee schulen mete: it schal be meten to zou/ and he seyde to hem/ & a likenesse (or ensaumple/ wheþer a blynde man may leede a blynde: wheþer þei fallen boþe into þe ditch: a disciple is not aboue þe mayster/ soþely eche disciple schal be parfite: zif he be as his mayster// ¶ Soþely what seest þou in þi broþeris yze a festu (or a mote): but þou biholdest not a beem þat is in þin owne yze: or how mayste þou seye to þi broþer: broþer suffre/ I schal caste oute a mote of þin yze: þou biholdest not a beem in þin owne yze: ypocrite firste take oute þe beem of þin yze: and þanne þou schalt biholde þat þou leede oute a mote of þi broþeris yze// forsoþe it is not a good tree þat makith euyl fruyte: neþer an euyl tree þat makith good fruytis/ soþely euery tree is known of his fruyte/ soþely neþer men gederen fygis of þornes: neþer men gederen a grape of a busche of breris/ a good man of þe good tresoure of his herte: bryngiþ forþ good þing/ and an yuel man of euyl tresoure: bryngiþ forþ euyl þing: soþely of þe plente of þe herte: þe mouþ spekiþ/ forsoþe what clepen zee me lorde lorde: and doon not þo þingis þat I seye/ eche þat cometh to me & hereþ my wordis & doiþ hem: I schal schewe to zou . to whome he is liche/ he is liche to a  
man

## Luke

man bildynge an hous: & diggih deep • & putte þe fundament on a stoon/ soþely greet flowynge made: flood is hurlide to þat hous • & it myzte not moue it/ for it was foundide on a sad stoon/ soþely he þat hereþ & doih not: is liche to a man bildynge his hous vpon erþe wiþ outen fundament: into whiche þe flood is hurlide to: and anone it fel doune/ and þe fallynge doune of þat hous: is made grete//

C<sup>m</sup> 7<sup>m</sup>



Ersoþe whanne he had fulfild alle his wordis into þe eris of þe puple: he entride into capharnaum/ soþely a seruaunt of summan centurio • þat had an hundride men vndir hym • haupnge euyl: was to die • þe whiche was precious to hym/ and whanne he hadde herde of ihū: he sente to hym þe eldre men of iewis • preyinge hym þat he come & heele his seruaunt/ and whanne þei camen to ihū: preyeden bisily seyinge to hym/ for he is worþi þat þou ȝyue to hym þis þing/ for he loueþ oure folc: and he bilde to vs a synagoge/ soþely ihc̄ wente wiþ hem/ and whanne now he was not fer fro þe hous: centurio sente to hym frendis • seyinge/ lorde nyl þou be traueplide/ for I am not worþi þat þou entre vndir my roof/ for whiche þing & I demyde not my self worþi: þat I schulde come to þee/ but seye þou by wordes: and my childe schal be heelide/ for whi & I am a man ordeynede vndir power: haupnge vndir me knyztis/ and I seye to þis go • & he goþ/ & to anoper come & he comeþ/ and to my seruaunt do þis þing • & he doþ it/ þe whiche þing herde: Ihc̄ wondride/ and he turnyde: seyde to þe cumpanyes supnge hym/ treuely I seye to ȝou: ne in isrl̄ I fonde so greet feih/ and þei þat weren sente turneden azen hoom: founden þe seruaunt hool þat was siȝk// ¶ And it is done aftirwarde ihc̄ wente into a cytee þat is clepide naym: and his disciplis wenten wiþ hym • & a ful greet cumpanye of puple/ soþely whanne he came nyȝ to þe ȝate of þe cytee: lo an onelepy sone of his modir was borne oute deade/ and þis was a widowe: and myche

## Luke

myche cumpanye of þe cytee (came) wiþ hir/ whom whanne  
þe lorde ihū had seen/ he mouede by mercy vpon hir • seyde to  
hir/ nyl þou weep/ and he came to/ and touchide þe beer/ for-  
soþe þei þat baren/ stoden/ and he seiþ zonge man/ I seye  
to þee rise vp/ and he þat was deade/ sate azen/ and bigan  
for to speek/ and he zawe hym to his modir/ soþely dreede  
took alle men/ and þei magnyfieden god seyinge/ for a greet  
prophete haþ risen amonge vs/ for & god haþ visitide his pore  
puple/ and þis worde wente oute of hym into al Iudee/ and  
into al þe cuntre aboute// And þe disciplis of Ioon tolden to  
hym/ seyinge of alle þes þingis/ and Ioon clepide togedir two  
of his disciplis/ and sente to Ihū seyinge/ art þou þat art to  
come/ or abide we anoþer/ soþely whanne men hadden comen  
to hym/ þei seyden Ioon baptist sente vs to zee/ seyinge/ art  
þou þat art to come/ or abide we anoþer/ forsoþe in þat houre  
he helide many men of here langwischis and woundis & puel  
spiritis/ & he zawe sizte to manye blynde men/ and Ihū an-  
werpunge seyde to hem/ zee goinge telle azen to Ioon þo þingis  
þat zee haue herde & seen/ for blynde men seen • crokide men  
gone/ mesels ben made cleen/ deaf men heren • deade men  
risen azen/ pore men ben take to preche þe gospel • (or made  
kepers of þe gospel)/ and who euer schal not be sclaunderide  
in me/ is bleffide/ and whanne þe messangers of ioon hadden  
gone aweye/ he bigan for to seye of Ioon to þe cumpanyes/  
what wenten zee oute into deserte for to se/ a rede wawide  
wiþ wynde/ but what wenten zee oute for to se/ a man clo-  
þide wiþ softe cloþes/ lo þei þat ben in precious cloþ & in  
delices/ ben in kyngis housis/ but what þing wenten zee oute  
for to se/ a prophete/ soþely I seye to zou • and more þan a  
prophete/ þis is of whom it is writen/ lo I sende myn aungel  
bifore þi face/ þat schal make þi weye redie bifore þee • soþely  
I seye to zou amonge children of wymmen/ no man is more  
prophete þan Ioon baptist/ soþely he þat is lesse in þe kyng-  
dom of heuenes/ is more þan he/ and al þe puple herynge &  
puplicans

## Luke

puplicans • baptiside wiþ þe baptym of Jon: iustificiden god/  
forsoþe pharisees & wisemen of þe lawe: not baptiside of hym:  
dispideden þe counseyl of god into hem self/ and þe lorde seyde •  
þerfore to whom schal I seye men of þi generacon liche: and  
to whom ben þei liche? þei ben liche to children sittynge in a  
chepynge: and spekyngge togedir & seyinge/ we haue songen to  
zou wiþ pipis: and zee haue not lippide (or daunside)/ we  
haue made lamentacion (or mournynge): and zee haue not  
wepte/ forsoþe ioon baptist came neþer etynge breed ne drynk-  
ynge wyn: and zee seyn he haþ a fende/ mannes sone came  
etynge & dryngynge: and zee seyn/ lo a man vourer (or glo-  
toun) • & drynkyng wyn • frende of puplicans & of synful men/  
and wysdom is iustifiede of alle sones/ forsoþe summe one of  
þe pharisees preyeden ihū: þat he schulde ete wiþ hym/ and  
he entrynge into þe hous of þe pharisee: sate at þe mete/ and  
lo a womman synner þat was in þe cytee • as sche knewe þat  
ihc hadde seten at þe mete in þe hous of a pharisee: brouzte  
an alabastrre bore of oynement/ and sche stondynge bihynde •  
bisidis his feet: bigan to moyst his feet wiþ teeris • & wipide  
hem wiþ heeris of hire heed • & kiste his feet: anoyntide wiþ  
oynement/ soþely þe pharisee seinge þat clepide hym: seih  
wiþinne hym self seyinge/ zif þis were a prophet • soþely he  
schulde wite • who & what maner womman it were þat touch-  
ih hym: for sche is a synner/ and ihū answerynge: seyde to  
hym/ Symount I haue sum þing for to seye to þee/ and he  
seih/ mayster seye þou/ and he answeride/ two dettours weren  
to sum one lener (or vsurer)/ one auzte fyue hundride pens:  
and anoper fifty/ soþely hem not haupnge wher of þei schulden  
zilde: heforzaue frely to boþe/ who (of hem) þerfore loueþ hym  
more? symount answerynge: seyde/ I gesse for he to whom he  
forzaue more/ & he answeride to hym/ þou hast demede ríztly/  
and he turnyde to þe womman: seyde to symount/ seest þou  
þis womman? I entride into þin hous: þou hast not zouen  
water to my feet/ forsoþe þis haþ moystide my feet wiþ teeris:  
and

## Luke

and wipte wiþ hir heeres/ þou hast not zouen to me a cosse/ forsoþe þis siþ I entride ceefide not for to kisse my feet/ þou anoyntidist not myn heede wiþ oyle/ forsoþe þis anoyntide my feet wiþ oynement/ for whiche þing I seye to þee· many synnes ben forzouen to hir/ for sche haþ louede myche/ soþely to whom is lesse forzouen/ loueþ lesse/ Soþely ihc seyde to hire/ synnes ben forzouen to þee/ and þei þat saten to gedir at þe mete/ bygunnen for to seye wiþinne hem self/ who is þis þat also forþyueþ synnes/ forsoþe he seyde to þe womman/ þi seiþ haþ made þee saaf/ go þou in pees//



**A**nd it is done astirwarde & Jhc made iourney by C<sup>m</sup> 8<sup>m</sup> cytees & castels/ prechynge & euangelizynge þe rewme of god · & twelue wiþ hym/ and summe wymmen þat weren heelide of wickide spiritis & sekenessis/ mary þat is clepide maudeleyn · of whom seuene deuelis wenten oute/ and Joone þe wife of chuse procuratour of heroude/ and susanne & many oþer þat mynystriden to hym of here facultees (or richessis)/ forsoþe whanne ful myche compagne came to gedir · & fro cytees hastiden to hym/ he seyde by a likenesse (or ensaumpel) he þat sowiþ/ goiþ oute for to sowe his seed/ and þe while he sowiþ sum felde biþidis þe weye · & is defoulide · & briddis of þe eyre· eten it/ and anoper felde doune on a stoon · & it sprungen vp driede · for it had not moysture/ and anoper felde doune amonge þornes · & þe þornes sprungen vp to gedir/ straungeliden it/ and anoper felde doune into good erþe · & is sprungen vp/ made an hundred folde fruyte/ he seyinge þes þingis criede/ he þat haþ eris of heryng here he/ soþely his disciplis axiden hym/ what þis parable was/ to whom he seyde/ to zou it is zouen to knowe þe mysterie of þe kyngdom of god/ forsoþe to oþer men in parablis · þat þei seinge/ seen not · & þei herynge/ vnderstonde not/ soþely þis is þe parable/ þe seed is goddis worde/ soþely þo þat fellen biþidis þe weye/ ben þes þat heren/ astir-



## Luke

warde he fende comeþ & takip awey he worde fro here herte:  
leste þei bileupnge he made saaf/ for whi þei þat fellen vpon a  
stoon: ben þes þat whanne þei haue herdes: receyuen þe worde  
wiþ ioye/ & þes haue not rootis/ for at a tyme þei bileuen:  
and in tyme of temptacōn · þei gone aweye/ forsoþe þat þat  
felde doune in þornes: ben þes þat herden & of þe bisynes  
& richessis & voluptees of lijf þei goinge ben strangelide · &  
bryngen not azen fruyte/forsoþe þat þat felde into good erþe ·  
ben þes þat in good herte & beste · herynge þe worde holden:  
and bryngen forþ fruyte in pacience// ¶ Forsoþe no man  
liztynge a lanterne · hilip it wiþ a vessel · or puttiþ vnder a  
bed: but vpon a candilsticke · þat men entrynge se lizte/ for  
þere is not pryue þing · whiche schal not be openyde/ neþer  
hid þing whiche schal not be knowen · & come to aperte/ þer-  
fore se zee how zee heren/ forsoþe it schal be zouen to hym  
þat haþ/ & who euer haþ not · also þat þat he wenep hym for  
to haue: schal be taken aweye fro hym// ¶ Forsoþe his modir  
& breþeren camen nyȝ to hym: and þei myȝten not go fully  
to hym for þe cumpange of puple/ and it is tolde to hym/ þi  
modir & þi breþeren stonden wiþ oute forþ: willynge for to see  
þee/ þe whiche answerynge: seyde to hem/ my moder & my  
breþeren ben þes: þat heren þe worde of god & done(aftir it)//  
¶ Forsoþe it is done in one of þe dayes · & he steyzede into a  
boot & his disciplis/ and he seiþ to hem/ passe we ouer þe stond-  
ynge water/ and þei steyzeden vp/ soþely hem rowynge: he  
slepte/ and a tempest of wynde came doune into þe water: and  
þei weren dryuen hidir & þidir wiþ watwis · & weren in perel/  
forsoþe þei comynge nyȝ: reysiden hym seyinge/ comaundour ·  
we perischen/ and he risynge blamyde þe wynde & þe tempest  
of water · & it ceefide/ and peesiblenes is made/ forsoþe he  
seyde to hem/ where is zoure seiþ/ þe whiche dredyng: won-  
driden to gedir · seyinge/ who gessist þou is þis · for he com-  
aundiþ to wyndis & to see: & þei obeyen to hym/ and þei row-  
iden to þe cuntre of genazareth: þat is azenes galilee/ and  
whanne

## Luke

whanne he wente oute to þe lande: summan ran to hym/ þe  
whiche had a deuyll nowē myche tyme & was not cloþide wiþ  
cloþe · neþer dwellide in hous: but in sepulcris/ þis as he siȝe  
ihū: felde doune bifore hym and crynge wiþ greet voyce:  
seyde/ what to me & to þee ihū: þe sone of þe hiȝest god/ I be-  
seche þee þat þou turmente not me/ soþely he comaundide to  
þe vnclene spirit: þat he schulde go oute fro þe man/ forsoþe  
he took hym myche tymes · & he kepte in stockis · was bound-  
en wiþ cheynes: and þe bondis broken he was ledde of deuēlis  
in deserte/ soþely ihc̄ axide hym: seyinge/ what name is to  
þee/ and he seyde/ a legiounē/ for many deuēlis hadden entride  
into hym/ and þei preyeden hym · þat he schulde not comaunde  
to hem · þat þei wenten not into þe depnesse/ forsoþe þer was  
a floc of many hoggis · lesowynge in an hil/ and þei preyeden  
hym · þat he schulde suffre hem for to entre into hem/ and he  
suffride hem/ þerfore þe deuēlis wenten oute fro þe man: and  
entriden into hoggis/ and wiþ birre þe floc wenten hedelynge  
into þe lake of water: & is strangeliȝe/ þe whiche þing as þei  
þat lesowiden (or kepten in lesowis) siȝen done: fledden &  
tolden into þe cytee & in tounes/ soþely þei camen oute for  
to se þat þing þat is done: and þei founden þe man sittynge  
cloþide · fro whom þe fendis wente oute · & in hool mynde at  
his feet · & þei dredde/ soþely & þei þat siȝen tolden to hem  
how he was made hool of þe legiounē/ and al þe multitude of  
þe cuntre of genazareth · preyede hym þat he schulde go fro  
hem · for þei weren holden wiþ greet drede/ soþely he stepȝing  
into a boot: turnȝde aȝen/ and þe man of whom deuēlis  
wenten oute preyeden hym: þat he schulde be wiþ hym/ soþely  
ihc̄ lefte hym seyinge/ go aȝen into þin hous · & telle how  
many þingis god haȝ done to þee/ and he wente þourgh al þe  
cytee · prechynge how many þingis Ihu had done to hym//  
¶ forsoþe it is done whanne ihū hadde gone aȝen: þe cum-  
panye of puple receyuede hym/ forsoþe alle weren abidyng  
hym/ and lo a man to whom þe name Japrus: and he was  
prynce

## Luke

prynce of þe synagoge/ and he fel doune at þe feet of ihū: prey-  
inge hym · þat he schulde entre into his hous/ for an onelepy  
douzter was to hym almost of twelue zeer: and þis diede/ & it  
bifel þat while he wente he was þrongen (or presside) of þe  
cumpanyes of puple/ and sum womman was in flure of blood  
fro twelue zeer · þe whiche had spendide al hire substaunce into  
leechis · neþer sche myzte be curide of any/ sche came nyȝ bi-  
hynde: and touchide þe hemme of his cloob/ and anone þe  
flure of hir blood stode/ and ihc seih/ who is it þat touchide  
me? soþely alle men denyinge: petre seyde & þei þat weren  
wiþ hym/ comaundour · cumpanyes of puple · þryngen & tur-  
menten þee · & þou seist · who touchide me? and Jhc seyde/  
summan touchide me/ for whi & I haue knowen vertue to  
haue gone oute of me/ soþely þe womman seinge for it was  
not pryueþ: sche came tremblyng & fel doune bifore his feet/  
and for what cause sche had touchide hym: sche schewide bifore  
alle þe puple · & how anone sche is heelide/ and cō seide to  
hire · douzter þi seih haþ made þee saaf: go þou in pees/ zit  
hym spekyng · summan came to þe prynce of þe synagoge:  
seyinge to hym/ for þi douzter is deade nyl þou traueyle þe  
mayster/ þis worde herde: Jhc answeride to þe fadir of þe  
wenche/ nyl þou drede but bileue þou onely: and sche schal  
be saaf/ and whanne he came to þe hous he suffride not any  
man for to entre wiþ hym · but petre & Joon & James: & þe  
fadir & modir of þe wenche/ soþely alle wepten & weyliden  
hire/ and he seyde nyl zee wepe/ soþely þe wenche is not deade:  
but slepiþ/ and þei scorniden hym: wityng þat sche was deade/  
forsoþe he holdynge hire hande: criede seyinge/ wenche rise  
þou vp/ and hire spirit turnede azen: and sche roos anone/  
and he comaundide to ȝyue to hire for to ete/ and hire fadir &  
modir wondreden gretely/ to whiche he comaundide · þat þei  
schulden not seye to any: þat þat was done//

Forsoþe

## Luke



**F**orsoþe twelue þe apostlis clepide togedir: Jhu zæue C<sup>m</sup> 9<sup>m</sup>  
to hem vertue & power vpon alle deuelis · & þat þei  
schulden heele langewischyngis/ and he sente hem  
to preche þe kyngdom of god: & for to heele seeke  
men/ and he seiþ to hem/ no þing take zee in þe weye: neþer  
zerde ne scrippe · neþer breed ne money · & ne haue zee two  
cootis/ & into whateuer hous zee schulen entre: dwelle zee  
þere · & go zee not oute þens/ & who euer schal not receyue  
zou · zee goinge oute of þat cytee: schake of also þe poudre of  
zoure feet into witnessyngge vpon hem/ soþely þei gone oute  
enuprounden by castels euangelyzyngge & helyngge euery  
where// ¶ Forsoþe heroude prynce of þe fourþe parte: herde  
alle þes þingis þat weren done of hym · & he doutide for þat it  
was seyde of summen: for Joon roos fro deade · forsoþe of  
summen · for helie apperide soþely of oþer: for one of þe olde  
prophetis roos/ and heroude seiþ/ I haue behedide Joon/  
soþely who is þis of whom I here suche þingis? and he souzte  
for to se hym/ and þe apostlis turnyde azen: tolden to hym  
what euer þingis þei diden// ¶ And hem taken to: he wente  
on anoder halfe into deserte place · þe whiche bethsayda/ þe  
whiche þing whanne þe cumpanyes of puple hadden knowen:  
þei folowiden hym/ and he receyuyde hem · & spac to hem of  
þe kyngdom of god · & heelde hem þat hadden nede of cure/  
soþely þe dæge bigan for to bowe downe/ & þe twelue compnge  
nyz: seyden to hym/ leue þe cumpanyes of puple · þat þei  
goinge turne into castels & tounes þat ben aboute · þat þei  
finde metis · for we ben here in deserte place/ [ ]  
zyue zee to hem for to ete/ and þei seyden/ þer ben not to vs  
more þan fyue looues & two fischis: no but parauenture & we  
gone & bie metis into al þis cumpanye/ soþely þe men weren  
almost fyue housande/ for he seiþ to his disciplis/ make zee hem  
for to sitte to mete: by feestis fifties/ and þei diden so/ and þei  
maden alle men sitte at þe mete/ forsoþe þe fyue looues & two  
fischis

## Luke

fischis taken: he bihelde into heuene • & bleſſide hem & brake  
& delide to his diſciplis • þat þei ſchulden putte it before þe cum-  
panyes/ and alle men eten: and ben fulfildē/ and þat þat leſte  
to hem of broken metis • is taken vp: twelue coſyns// ¶ And  
it is done whanne he was alone preyinge: & his diſciplis weren  
wiþ hym/ and he aride hem ſeyinge/ whom þe cumpanyes ſeyn  
me for to be? and þei answereden & ſeyden/ Ioon baptiſt/ for-  
ſoþe oþer ſeyn helie/ but oþer • for one prophete of þe former  
haþ riſen/ ſoþely he ſeyde to hem/ but whom ſeye zee me for  
to be? Symount petre anſweride ſeyde/ þe cñt of god/ and he  
blampnge hem þat þei ſchulden ſeye to no man ſeyinge þes  
þingis/ for it bihoueþ mannes ſone for to ſuffre many þingis •  
& for to be reſprouede of þe eldre men & of prynces of priſtis &  
of ſcribis • & for to be ſlayne: and þe þridde day for to riſe  
azen/ forſoþe he ſeyde to alle men • zif any wole come aftir  
me denye he hym ſelf & take his croſſe euery dayer: and ſue he  
me/ and he þat ſchal wole make his ſoule (þat is lijf) ſaaf:  
ſchal leeſe it/ for whi he þat ſchal leeſe his ſoule (þat is lijf)  
for me: ſchal make it ſaaf/ ſoþely what profiteþ it to a man  
zif he winne al þe worlde • leeſe forſoþe hymſelf • & do pey-  
rynge of hym ſelf? for why who þat ſchal ſchame me & my  
werdis: and mannes ſone ſchal ſchame hym • whanne he ſchal  
come in his majeſte • & of þe faderis & of þe holy aungels/  
¶ Forſoþe I ſeye to zou verreyly • þer ben ſomme ſtondynghe  
heer þe which ſchulen not taſte deþ till þei ſeen þe retorne/  
ſoþely it is done aftir þes wordis • almoſt eyzte dayes: & he  
took petre & James & ioon • & he ſtepyede into an hil: þat he  
ſchulde preye/ and þe while he preyide: þe likenenſſe of his cheer  
is made oþer maner • & his cloþinge white ſchynnynghe/ and lo  
two men ſpaken wiþ hym/ forſoþe moyſes & helpe weren ſeen  
in majeſte • & þei ſeyden his goinge oute • þe whiche he was to  
fulfille in irtm/ forſoþe petre & þei þat weren wiþ hym: weren  
greuede wiþ ſleep/ and þei waknynghe ſizen his majeſte: and  
two men þat ſtoden wiþ hym/ and it is done whanne þei de-  
partiden

## Luke

partiden fro hym: petre seiþ to ihū/ comaundour • it is gode to vs for to ben here & make we here þre tabernaclis • one to þee & one to moyses • & one to helie: not wytynge what he schulde seye/ soþely hym spekyng þes þingis: a cloude is made & schadowide hem/ and hem entrynge into þe cloude: þei dredden/ and a voyce is made of þe cloude: seyinge/ þis is my derworþ sone: here see hym/ and lo while þe voyce was made: Ihū is founden al one/ and þei helden pees • & to no man seyden in þo dayes ouzte of þo þingis þat þei hadden seen/ ¶ forsoþe it is done in þe dayes supnge • hem comynge doune of þe hil: myche cumpanyes of þe puple rennep to hem/ and lo a man of þe cumpanye: criede seyinge/ mayster I biseche þee biholde into my sone: for he is onelepy to me/ and lo a spirit takip hym • & sodeynly he crieþ & hurtip hym doune • & disparpliþ (or to drawip) hym wip froþþe • & vnnep he goip away to drawynge hym/ and I preyede þi disciplis þat þei schulden caste hym oute: and þei myzten not/ soþely ihc answerynge: seyde to hem/ an vnfeipful generacōn & waywarde: how longe schal I be at zou • & suffre zou? leede hidir þi sone/ and whanne he came nyȝ: þe deuel hurlide hym doune • & disparplide/ and ihc blamyde þe vncleue spirit • & helide þe childe: & zelde hym to hys fadir/ soþely alle men wondriden gretely in þe gretenesse of god/ and alle men wondrynge in alle þingis þat he dide: he seyde to his disciplis/ putte see in zoure hertis þes wordis/ soþely it is to come þat mannes sone be bitrayede • into þe handis of men/ and þei knewen not þis worde • & it was hidde bifore hem: þat þei feliden it not/ and þei dredden for to are hym of þis worde// ¶ forsoþe þouzte entride into hem: who of hem schulde be more/ and Ihū seinge þe þouztis of þe herte of hem • takynge a childe sette hym bisides hym: and seiþ to hem: who euer schal receyue þis childe in my name: receyueþ me/ and who euer schal receyue me: receyueþ hym þat sente hym/ for whi he þat lasse amonge zou alle: þis is more/ forsoþe ion answeride seyinge/ comaundour we sizen summan

## Luke

summan castynge oute fendis in þi name · & we haue forbeden hym: for he sueþ not þee wiþ vs/ and Ih̄c seip to hym/ nyl zee forbede/ forsoþe he þat is not azenes vs: is for vs/ ¶ Sophe-ly it is done whanne þe dayes of his takynge vp weren fulfildē · & he sette faste his face · þat he schulde go into irlm̄ · & sente mes- sangers bifore his sizte/ and þei goinge hidir entreden into a cytee of samaritans: þat þei schulden make reedy to hym/ and þei receyueden not hym: for þe face of hym was goinge in- to irlm̄/ forsoþe whanne James & Jon his disciplis hadden seen: þei sedden/ lorde wolte þou we seyn þat sijr come doune fro heuene & waste hem: as helie dide/ and he turnyde: blam- yde hem seyinge/ zee witen not whos spirit zee ben/ forsoþe mannes sone come not to leese mennes soulis: but for to saue/ and þei wenten into anoper castel// ¶ Forsoþe it is done hem walkynge in þe weye: summan seyde to hym/ I schal sue þee: whider euer þou schalt go/ and ih̄c seip to hym/ for is haue dichis (or dennes): and briddis of þe eyre nestis/ but mannes sone haþ not wher he reste his hede/ forsoþe he seyde to anoper/ sue þou me/ sophe-ly he seyde/ lorde suffre þou me firste for to go & birie my fadir/ and ih̄c seyde to hym/ suffre þat þe deade men birie here deade: but go þou & telle þe kyngdome of god/ and anoper seyde/ lorde I schal sue þee: but firste suffre me to telle azen to hem þat ben at home/ forsoþe ih̄c seip to hym/ no man sendynge his hande to þe plowe & biholdynge azen: is able to þe retorne of god//

C<sup>m</sup> 10<sup>m</sup>



Forsoþe aftir þes þingis þe lorde ih̄u ordeynede & oþer seuenty & two: and sente hem by two & two bifore his face into euery cytee & place · whidir he was to come/ and he seyde to hem/ sophe-ly myche ripe corne: but fewe werkemen/ þerfore preye zee þe lorde of þe ripe corne: þat he sende werkemen into his ripe corne/ go zee/ lo I sende zou as lambren amonge wolues/ nyl zee bere a sachel · ne scrippe · neþer schoon: and grete zee no man by þe

## Luke

þe wepe/ into what euer hous zee schulen entre: firste seye zee/  
pees to þis hous/ and zif a sone of pees schal be þere zoure pees  
schal reste on hym/ zif noon: it schal turne azen to zou/ forsoþe  
in þe same hous dwelle zee etynge & drynkynge þo þingis þat  
ben at hem/ forsoþe a werkeman is worþi his hire/ nyl zee  
passe fro hous into hous/ and into what euer cytee zee schulen  
entree: & þei schulen receyue zou: ete zee þo þingis þat ben  
putte to zou: & heel zee þe seek men þat ben in þat (cytee):  
& seye zee to hem/ þe kyngdom of god schal neze into zou/ into  
what euer cytee zee schulen entre: & þei schul not receyue  
zou: zee goinge oute into þe strectis of it: seih/ also we wipen  
of into zou: þe poudre þat cleuede to vs of zoure cytee/ ne-  
þeles wite zee þis þing: for þe retorne of god schal come nyȝ/  
forsoþe I seye to zou: for to sodom it schal be esier (or lesse  
peyne): in þat cytee in þat daye// ¶ Wo to þee corozaym:  
wo to þee bethsayda/ for zif in tyre & sydon hadden þe vertues  
ben done: þe whiche ben done in zou: sumtyme þei sittynge  
in heyre & asche: schul haue do penaunce/ neþeles to tyre &  
sydon it schal be esier in þe doom: þan to zou/ and þou cha-  
pharnaum art enhaunside til to heuene: þou schalt be dren-  
chide til into helle/ he þat hereþ zou: hereþ me/ and he þat  
dispisih zou: dispisih me/ forsoþe he þat dispisih me: dispisih  
hym þat sente me// ¶ Forsoþe þe two & seuentȝ disciplis turn-  
eden azen wiþ ioȝe: seyinge/ lorde also deuelis ben suȝet to vs  
in þi name/ and he seih to hem/ I siȝe sathanas: fallynge  
doun fro heuene as leyte/ and lo I haue zouen to zou power  
of defoulȝng vpon serpentis & scoriounis: & vpon al þe vertue  
of þe enemye: and no þing schal neuze zou/ neþeles nyl zee  
enioȝe in þis þing: for spiritis ben suȝet to zou/ but ioȝe zee  
þat zoure names ben writen in heuenes/ ¶ In þe ilke houre  
he gladide in þe holy goȝt: and seyde/ I knowleche to þee fadir:  
lorde of heuene & erþe: þe whiche haȝt hid þes þingis fro wise-  
men & prudent: and haȝt schewide hem to litil/ zhe fadir for so  
it plesih bifore þee/ alle þingis ben taken to me of my fadir/

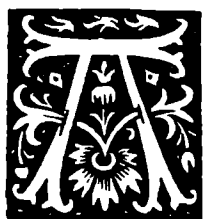


## Luke

and no man woot who is þe sone: no but þe fadir: and who is þe fadir no but þe sone: & to whom þe sone wole schewe/ ¶ And he turnyde to his disciplis: seyde/ bleffide þe yzen þat seen þo þingis þat zee seen/ soþely I seye to zou þat many prophetis & kyngis wolden se þo þingis þat zee seen: & þei seen not • & here þo þingis þat zee heren: & þei herden not/ and lo a wise man of þe lawe roose temptynge hym & seyinge/ mayster what þing doinge: schal I welde euerlastynge lijf/ and he seyde to hym/ what is writen in þe lawe/ how redist þou/ he answerynge seyde/ þou schalt loue þe lorde þi god of al þin herte • & of al þi soule or lijf • & of al þi strengþes • & of al þi mynde: and þi neyzebor as þi self/ and ihc seyde to hym/ þou hast answeriderightly/ do þis þing & þou schalt lyue/ forsoþe he willynge for to iustifie hymself: seyde to Ihu/ and who is my neyzebore/ soþely ihc biholdynge vp seyde/ summan came doune fro irlm̄ in Jericho: and felde into þeefes/ þe whiche also robbiden hym • & woundis putte in • wenten aweye: þe man lefte halfe quicke/ forsoþe it bifel þat sum priest came doune in þe same weye: and hym seen • passide forþ/ also forsoþe & a deken whanne he was bisidis þe place & siȝe hym: passide forþ/ forsoþe sum samaritan makynge iourney: came bisidis þe weye/ and he seinge hym: is stiride by mercy/ and he comynge nyȝ: bonde togedir his woundis: heldynge in oyle & wijn/ and he puttynge into his iument (or hors): ledde into a stable • & dide þe cure of hym/ and anoper day he brouȝte forþ two pens • & ȝaue to þe keper of þe stable/ and seiþ/ haue þou cure of hym/ and what euer þou schalt ȝyue ouer: I schal ȝilde to þee whanne I schal come aȝen/ who of þes þre semeh to þee to haue be neyȝbore to hym þat fel into þeefes/ and he seyde he þat dide mercy into hym/ and ihc seiþ to hym/ go þou & do þou on like maner/ ¶ fforsoþe it is done þe while þei wenten • & he entride into sum castel: and summe womman martha by name receyuede hym into hir hous/ and to þis was a suster: mary by name • þe whiche also sittynge bisidis þe feet of þe lorde: herde þe worde of hym/ soþely martha bisiede

## Luke

bisiede aboute þe ofte seruyce/ þe whiche stode & seiþ/lorde it is not of charge to þee þat my suster leste me al one for to myn-  
ystrē.þerfore seye þou to hir: þat sche helpe me. and þe lorde  
answerynge: seyde to hire/ martha martha þou art bisie: and  
art distourblide azenes ful manye þingis/ forsoþe one þing is  
necessarie/ mary haþ chosen the beste parte: þe whiche schal  
not be taken aweye fro hir//



**A**nd it is done whanne he was preyinge in sum place. C<sup>m</sup> II<sup>m</sup>  
as he ceeside one of his disciplis seyde to hym/lorde  
teche vs for to preye: as & Ioon tauzte his disciplis/  
and he seiþ to hem/ whanne zee preyen: seye zee/  
fadir · halowide be þi name/ þi kyngdom come to/ [

] ʒpue to vs to day: oure eche day  
breed/ and forʒpue to vs oure synnes: as & we forʒpuen to eche  
owynge to vs/ and leede vs not into temptacōn/ and he seiþ  
to hem/ who of zou schal haue a frende · & schal go to hym at  
mydnyzt: and schal seye to hym/ frende leene to me þre looues/  
for my frende cometh to me of þe weye/ & I haue not what I  
schal putte bifore hym/ and he wiþin forþ answeyng seiþ/ nyl  
þou be heuy to me · þe dore is now shutte · & my children ben  
wiþ me in my couche: I may not rise & ʒpue to þee/ and zif he  
schal dwelle stille knockyng · I seye to zou · & zif he schal not  
ʒpue to hym risyng for þat he is his frende: neþeles for his  
inprobite (or contynuel aringe) · he schal rise & ʒpue to hym ·  
how many he haþ nedeful/ and I seye to zou/ are zee: and it  
schal be ʒouen to zou/ secke zee & zee schulen fynde/ knocke  
zee: & it schal be openyde to zou/ forsoþe eche þat ariþ: takith/  
and he þat seekith: fyndith/ and to a man knockyng it schal be  
openyde/ þerfore who of zou ariþ his fadir breed · wher he schal  
ʒpue to hym a stoon. or zif he are a fische: wher he schal ʒpue  
to hym a serpente for þe fische. or zif he schal are an eye: wher  
he schal dresse to hym a scorioun. þerfore zif zee whan zee ben  
euyt · haue knowen for to ʒpue goode þingis ʒouen to zoure chil-  
dren:

## Luke

dren: how myche more zoure fadir of heuene schal ȝyue a good spirit to men aryngge hym/ and he was castynge oute a fende: and he was doumbe/ and whanne he hadde caste oute þe fende: þe doumbe man spac • & þe cumpanyes of puple wondriden/ forsoþe summe of hem seyde/ in belzebug prynce of deuelis: he castiþ oute deuelis/ and oþer temptynge ariden of hym a token fro heuene/ forsoþe as he siȝe þe þouztis of hem: seyde to hem/ euery rewme departide in it self: schal be desolate (or discoumfortede) • & an hous schal not falle vpon an hous/ forsoþe & zif sathanas be departide azenes hym self: how schal his rewme stande • for ȝee seyn me for to caste oute fendis in belzebug/ forsoþe zif I in belzebug caste oute fendis: in whom zoure sones casten oute: þerfore þei schulen be zoure domesmen/ forsoþe zif I caste oute fendis in þe fynger (or sutel wirchyng) of god: soþely þe rewme of god is comen into ȝou/ ¶ Whanne a stronge armyde man kepiþ his hous: alle þingis þat he weldiþ ben in pees/ soþely zif a strengier þan he comynge aboue ouercome hym: he schal take away alle his armes in whiche he tristiȝde • & schal dele abroad his spouplis (or robberies)/ he þat is not wiþ me: is azenes me/ and he þat gediȝiþ not to gediȝ wiþ me: scateriþ abroad/ whanne an unclene spirit schal gone oute of a man: he wandriþ by drie places seekynge reste • & he fyndiþ not • seiþ/ I schal turne azen into myn hous: wher of I came oute/ and whanne he schal come: he findiþ it clenȝide wiþ besemes & ournyde/ þanne he goiþ & takiþ wiþ hym seuene oþer spiritis worse þan hym self: and þei dwellen þere/ and þe laste þingis of þat man: ben made worse þan þe former// ¶ Forsoþe it is done whanne he spac þes þingis: summe woman of þe cumpanye reryng vp hir voyce: seyde to hym/ blesside be þe wombe þat bare þee: & blesside be þe tetis þat þou hast soken/ & he seyde/ raper blesside ben þei þat heren þe worde of god & kepen it/ forsoþe þe cumpanyes of puples rennyng to gediȝ: he bigan for to sepe/ þis generacō is a weywarde generacō/ it seekiþ a token: and a token schal not be ȝouen

## Luke

zouen to it · no but þe token of Jonas þe prophete/ for whi as  
Jonas was a token to men of nynyue/ so mannes sone schal  
be to þis generacōn:/ ¶ þe queen of þe south schal rise in dome  
wip men of þis generacōn · & schal condempne hem/ for sche  
come fro þe endis of þe erþe · for to here þe wisdom of salamon/  
and lo here more þan salamon/ men of nynyue schulen rise in  
doom · wip þis generacōn/ & schulen condempne it/ for þei  
diden penaunce · at þe prechynge of Jonas/ and lo here more  
þan Jonas/ ¶ No man tendiþ a lanterne & puttiþ it in hidels ·  
neþer vndir a buschel/ but vpon a candilstike · þat þei þat gone  
in · se lizte/ þe lanterne of þi body is þin yze/ zif þin yze schal  
be symple/ al þin body schal be lizty/ forsoþe zif þin yze schal  
be weywarde/ also þe body schal be dirkeful/ þerfore se þou/  
lest þe lizte þat is in þee ben dirkenessis/ þerfore zif al þi body  
schal be lizt · (or schynynge) · not haupnge any parte of dirke-  
nessis/ it schal ben al lizty/ and as a lanterne of briztnesse (or  
schynynge)/ it schal ȝyue schynynge to þee/ ¶ and whanne  
he spac sum pharise prepede þat he schulde ete at hym/ forsoþe  
he gon in/ restide/ soþely þe pharisee gessynge wipinne hymself/  
seyde/ whi he was not waschen bifore þe mete/ and þe lorde  
seiþ to hym/ now ȝee pharisees clensen þat is wip oute forþ of  
þe cuppe & plater/ but þat þing þat is wipinne forþ of ȝou/ is  
ful of raueyne & wickidnesse/ foolis wheþer he þat made þat is  
wipouten forþ · made not & þat þat is wipinne forþ/ neþeles  
þat þat is ouer (or superflu) · ȝyue ȝee almes/ and lo alle þingis  
ben clene to ȝou// ¶ But [ ] to ȝou pharisees þat tyþen mynt &  
rue & al worte (or erbe)/ and passen dome & þe charite of god/  
forsoþe it bihoueþ for to do þes þingis/ and not to leue hem//  
¶ Wo to ȝou pharisees þat louen þe firste chayers in synago-  
gis/ and salutacōns in chepynges// ¶ Wo to ȝou þat ben as se-  
pulcris þat apperen not/ and men walkyng aboue witen not/  
forsoþe one of þe wisemen of lawe answerynge/ seiþ to hym/  
mayster þou seyinge þes þingis/ also to vs þou doist dispite (or  
wronge)/ and he seiþ/ and wo to ȝou wisemen of lawe for ȝee  
chargen

## Luke

chargen men wiþ birpens: þe whiche þei motone not bere/and zee zoure self wiþ zoure one fynger · touchen not þe heupnessis// ¶ Mo to zou þat bidden biriels (or toumbis) of prophetis: forsoþe zoure faderis slowen hem/ treuely zee witnessen · þat zee consenten to þe werkis of zoure faderis/ for soþely þei slowen hem: but zee bidden her sepulcris/ þerfore & þe wisdom of god seyde/ I schal sende to hem prophetis & apostlis & of hem þei schulen flee & pursue · þat þe blood of alle prophetis þat is helde oute fro þe makynge of þe worlde: be souzte of þis generacōn · fro þe blood of abel · unto þe blode of zacharie · þat perischide bitwene þe auter & þe hous/ so I seye to zou: so it schal be souzte · of þis generacōn// ¶ Mo to zou wisemen of lawe: for zee hane taken away þe keye of kunnyng/ zee zou self entren not in: and zee hane forbeden hem þat entreden/ soþely whanne he spac þes þinges to hem · pharisees & wisemen of lawe · bigunnen greuouly to azenstonde (hym) · & opresse his moup: aspyng hym of manye þingis · sekynge for to take sum þing of his moup: þat þei schulden accuse hym//

C<sup>m</sup> 12<sup>m</sup>



Soþely manye cumpanyes of puplis stondynge aboute · so þat þei defouliden (or troden) eche oþer: he bigan for to seye to his disciplis/ be zee war & flee fro þe sordowe of pharisees: þat is ypocrisie/ forsoþe no þing is hidde: þat schal not be schewide/ neþer hid: þat schal not be wiste/ for whi þo þingis þat zee haue seyde in dirkenessis: schulen be seyde in lizte/ þat þat zee hane spoken in ere in couchis: schal be prechide in rooves/ forsoþe I seye to zou my frendis: ben not aferde of hem þat fleen þe body · & astir þes þingis hane no more what þei schul do/ soþely I schal schewe to zou whom zee schulen drede/ drede zee hym þat astir he haþ slayne: haþ power for to sende into helle/ so I seye to zou · drede zee hym/ wher fyue sparowis ben not solde for two halpens: and one of hem is not in forzetyng before god: but & þe heeris of zoure heed: ben nowmbride/ þerfore nyl zee drede:

## Luke

drede: zee ben of more prise þan manye sparowis/ trewely I  
seye to zou · who euer schal knoweleche me bifore men: and  
mannes sone schal knoweleche hym bifore þe aungels of god/  
forsoþe he þat schal denye me bifore men: schal be denyede  
bifore þe aungels of þe lorde/ and eche þat seiþ a worde azenes  
þe sone of man: it schal be forzouen to hym: soþely it schal not  
be forzouen to hym þat schal blaffeme into þe holy goſt//  
¶ Forsoþe whanne þei schulen leede zou into synagogis · &  
magistratis & potestatis (or powers): nyl zee be bisie how or  
what zee schulen answere · or what zee schulen seye/ forsoþe  
þe holy goſt schal teche zou in þat houre: what it bihoueþ zou  
for to seye/ soþely summan of þe cumpanye seiþ to hym/ may-  
ster seye þou to my broþer: þat he departe wiþ me þe heretage/  
and he seyde to hym/ man who ordeynede me domesman or  
departer vpon zou: and he seyde to hem/ se zee & be war fro  
al coueytise/ for not in þe aboundaunce of any man is his lijf ·  
of þo þingis þat he weldiþ/ soþely he seyde to hem a likenesse  
seyinge/ þe feelde of sum riche man brouzte forþ plenteuouse  
fruptis: and he þouzte wiþinne hym self seyinge/ what schal  
I do · þat I haue not whidir I schal gedir my fruptis: and he  
seiþ/ þis þing I schal do/ I schal distrupe my bernex and I  
schal make more: & þidir I schal gedir alle þingis þat ben borne  
to me and my godis/ and I schal seye to my soule/ soule þou  
hast many goodis putte vp or kepte into ful manye peeris/ reste  
þou · ete · drynke · & plenteuouſly ete/ soþely god seyde to hym/  
fool in þis nyzt: þei schulen are of þee þi soule/ forsoþe whos  
schulen þo þingis ben þat þou hast made reedy: so is he þat  
tresouriþ to hym self: and is not riche into god/ and he seyde  
to his disciplis/ þerfore I seye to zou · nyl zee be bisie to zoure  
soule (or lijf) · what zee schulen ete: neþer to zoure body · wiþ  
what zee schulen be cloþide/ þe soule (or lijf) is more þan mete:  
and þe body more þan cloþynge/ biholde þe crowis for þei soten  
not neþer repen · to whom is no seler neþer berne: and god  
feediþ hem/ how myche more ben zee of more prise þan þei:  
forsoþe

## Luke

forsoþe who of zou by þenkynge may putte one cubite to his stature/ þerfore zif zee mowne not (do) þat þat is leste/ what ben zee bisie of oþer þingis/ biholde zee þe lilies of þe felde/ how þei waren/ þei traueylen not neþer spynnen/ I seye to zou for neþer salamon in al his glorie/ was cloþide as one of þes/ forsoþe zif god cloþis þus þe hay þat to day is in þe feelde & to morne is sente into a furney/ how myche more zou of litil seiþ/ and nyl zee seek what zee schulen ete/ or what zee schulen dryncke/ & nyl zee be taken vp into an hize/ forsoþe folkis of þe worlde seeken alle þes þingis/ soþely zoure fadir wote for zee neden þes þingis/ neþeles seeken zee firste þe kyngdom of god/ and alle þes þingis schulen be caste to zou// ¶ Nyl zee litil floe drede/ for it pleside to zoure fadir for to ȝyue to zou a kyngdom/ selle zee þo þingis þat zee haue in possession/ and ȝyue zee almes/ make zee to zou sachelis þat waren not olde/ tresour not faylynge in heuenes/ whidir a þeef neȝȝeþ not/ neþer mouȝte distruȝeþ/ forsoþe wher is þi tresour/ þere & þin herte schal be// ¶ Be zoure leendis girde bifore/ & lanternes brennyng in zoure handis/ and be zee lijk to men abydynge here lorde/ whanne he schal turne fro weddyngis/ þat whanne he schal come & knoke/ anone þei open to hym/ blefside þo seruauntis/ whom whanne þe lorde schal come/ he schal fynde wakynge/ trewely I seye to zou/ þat he schal bifore girde hym/ & make hem for to sitte at þe mete/ and he passynge schal mynystre to hem/ and zif he schal come in þe secounde wakynge/ & zif he schal come in þe þridde wakynge & schal fynde so/ þo seruauntis ben blefside/ forsoþe wite zee þis þing/ for zif an housbonde man wiste in what houre þe þeef schulde come/ soþely he schulde wake/ and not suffre his hous to be mynyde/ and be zee reedy/ for in what houre zee gessen not/ mannes sone schal come/ forsoþe petre seyde to hym/ lorde seyst þou þis parable to vs or to alle/ soþely þe lorde seyde/ who gessist þou is a feiþful dispender and prudent/ whom þe lorde ordeynede vpon his meyne þat he ȝyue to hem in tyme/

mesure

## Luke

mesure of wheet; blesside þat seruaunt whom whanne þe lorde schal come; he schal fynde so doinge/ verreyly I seye to zou for vpon alle þingis þat he weldeþ · he schal ordeyne hym/ þat zif þat seruaunt schal seye in his herte · my lorde makih dwellyng for to come · & begynne for to smyte children & hande maydens · & ete & drynke · & be fillide ouer mesure; þe lorde of þat seruaunt schal come in þe day þat he hopih not · & houre þat he woot not · & schal departe hym & putte his parte wih vnfeihful men// ¶ Forsoþe þe ilke seruaunt þat knewe þe wille of his lorde · & made not hym reedy · & dide not aftir his wille; schal be beten wih manye plagis (or woundis) / soþely he þat knewe not · & dide worþi þingis of woundis; schal be beten wih fewe / forsoþe to eche man to whom myche is zouen; myche schal be souzte of hym / & þei schulen are more of hym; to whom þei lenten myche/ I came for to sende sijr into þe erþe · & what wole I · but þat it be kyndelide; soþely I haue for to be baptiside wih baptym; and how am I constrainede til þat it be parfiteþ done/ zee gessen for I came for to ȝyue pees into þe erþe; nay I seye to zou · but departynge/ forsoþe fro þis tyme · þer schulen fyue be departide in one hous/ þre schulen be departide in two (or azenes two)/ and two into þre schulen be departide/ þe fadir into þe sone; and þe sone into þe fadir/ þe modir azenes þe douzter; and þe douzter azenes þe modir/ þe housbonde modir azenes þe sones wife; and þe sones wife azenes þe housbondes modir// forsoþe he seyde & to þe cumpanyes/ whanne zee schulen se a cloude risynge fro þe sunne goinge doune; anone zee seyn reyne cometh · & so it is done/ and whanne þe souþe blowynge; zee seyn for heet schal be/ and it is made/ ypocritis zee hane knowe for to profe þe face of heuene & erþe; soþely how prouen zee not þis tyme; soþely what & of zou self · deme zee not þat þat is iuste/ forsoþe whanne þou gost wih þin aduersarie to þe prync in þe weye; ȝyue þou bisynesse to be delyueride from hym · lest þe parauenture · he drawe þee to þe domesman · & þe



## Luke

domesman bitake þee to þe wrongeful arer • & þe wrongeful arer sende þee into prisounē/ I seye to þee þou schal not go þens; til þou zilde also þe laste ferþinge//

C<sup>m</sup> 13<sup>m</sup>



Forsoþe summen camen to in þat tyme • tellynge to hym of galilees; whos blood pilate mengide wip þe sacrifices of hem/ and he answerynge seyde to hem/ wenen zee þat þes men of galilee weren synners bifore alle galilees • for þei suffreden suche þingis; naye I seye to zou/ but alle zee schulen perische in like maner; but zif zee schulen haue penaunce/ and as þe ten & eyzte • vpon whom þe toure in siloa felde doune & stowe hem; gessen zee for & þei weren dettours • more þan alle men dwellynge in ierlm; naye I seye to zou/ but also zee alle schulen perische; zif zee schulen not do penaunce/ ¶ Forsoþe he seyde þis likenesse/ summan had a fige tree plauntide into his vynezerde; and he came seekyng fruyte in it • & fonde not/ soþely he seyde to þe tilier of þe vynezerde/ lo þre zeeris ben siþ I came seekyng fruyte in þis litil fyge tree; and I fonde not/ þerfore kitte it doune/ wherto ocupieþ it zhe þe erþe; and he answerynge seyde to hym/ lorde suffre it & þis zeer • til þe while I delue aboute it; and sende tordis/ and zif it schal make fruyte • zif none; or ellis in tyme comynge þou schalt kutte it doune/ forsoþe he was techyng in þe synagoge of hem; in sabotis/ and lo a womman þat had a spirit of likenesse ten & eyzte zeeris & was bowide doune • neþer any þing myzte loke vwardis/ whom whanne ihū had seen; he clepide to hym & seiþ to hire/ womman þou art leste of likenesse/ and he putte to hire þe handis; and anone sche is reride • and glorifiede god/ soþely þe pryncce of þe synagoge answerynge • haupng dedeyn (or wrappe) • for ihc had helide in þe saboth; seyde to þe cumpanye of puple/ þer ben sixe dages • in whiche it bihoueþ for to worche/ þerfore come zee in þes • & be zee heelide • & not in þe day of saboth/ forsoþe þe lorde answerynge to hym seyde/ ypocrite

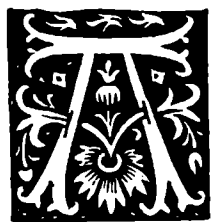
## Luke

ypocrite wher eche of zou in þe saboth vntieþ not his ore or  
asse fro þe cracche (or stalle) · & leediþ for to water/ bihouede  
it not þis douzter of abraham whom sathanas haþ bounden  
lo ten & eyzte zeeris for to be vnbunden of þis bonde in þe  
day of saboth/ and whanne he seyde þes þingis · alle þys ad-  
uersaries weren ashampte & al þe puple ioyede in alle þingis  
þat weren gloriously done of hym/ ¶ herfore to what þing is  
þe kyngdom of god liche/ it is liche to a corne of seneney ·  
þe whiche taken/ a man sente into his zerde · & it were & is  
made into a greet tree · & foules of þe eyre restiden in  
braunchis þer of/ & estesone he seyde/ to what þing schal I  
geße þe kyngdom of heuene liche/ it is liche to sourdowe · þe  
whiche taken/ a womman hidith in þre mesures of mele · til  
al were sourdowide/ and he wente by cytees & castels tech-  
ynge & makynge iourney into irfm/ soþely summan seyde  
to hym/ lorde zif þer ben fewe · þat ben sauede/ soþely he  
seyde to hem/ stryue zee for to entre by þe streyte zate · for  
I seye to zou manye seeken for to entre · & þei myzten not/  
forsoþe whanne þe housbondeman haþ entride & closide þe  
dore/ zee schulen bygynne for to stonde wiþ oute forþ · &  
rynge þe dore seyinge/ lorde open to vs/ & he answerynge  
schal seye to zou/ I knowe zou not of whens zee ben/ þanne  
zee schulen bigynne to seye/ we haue eten bifore zee & drunken/  
& in oure stretis þou hast tauzte/ and he schal seye to zou/ I  
knowe zou not of whens zee ben/ go aweye fro me alle wirkers  
of wickidnesse/ þere schal be wepynge & beetyng to gedir of  
teeh · whanne zee schulen se abraham & ysaac & Iacob & alle  
prophetis in þe kyngdom of god/ soþely zou for to be putte  
oute/ and þei schulen come fro þe este & weste & norþe & souþe/  
& sitte at þe mete in þe rewme of god/ and lo þei þat weren  
þe firste/ ben þe laste · & þei þat weren þe laste ben þe firste//  
¶ In þat day summe of pharisees camen nyz/ seyinge to hym/  
go oute & go hens/ for heroude wole slee þee/ and he seiþ to  
hem/ go · zee & seye zee to þat fore/ lo I caste oute fendis · &  
I make

## Luke

I make partitely helpes to day & to morowe: & þe þridde day  
 I am endide/ neþeles it bihouep me to day & to morowe: &  
 þe supnge day for to walke · for it falliþ not a prophete for to  
 perische oute of irlm/ Irlm irlm þat sleest prophetis & stonest  
 hem þat ben sente to þee/ how ofte wolde I gadir to gedir þi  
 sones · as a bridde his neste vndir pennes (or wengis) & þou  
 woldist not: lo zoure hous schal be lefte to zou deserte/ soþely  
 I seye to zou · for zee schulen not se me: til it come whanne  
 zee schulen seye/ bleffide is he þat cometh in name of þe  
 lorde//

C<sup>m</sup> 14<sup>m</sup>



**A**ND it is done whanne he hadde entride into þe hous  
 of summe prynce of pharisees in þe saboth for to  
 ete breed: and þei kepten (or aspieden) hym/ and  
 lo summan sijk in dropestie: was bifore hym/ and  
 ihc answerynge seyde to þe wiseman of lawe · & to pharisees:  
 seyunge/ zif it is leueful for to heel in sabotis: and þei hilden  
 pees/ forsoþe ihc heelide hym taken to: & lifte/ and he answer-  
 ynge to hem: seyde/ whos of zou alle or ore schal falle into a  
 pitte: and not anone schal he drawe oute hym · in þe day of  
 saboth: and þei myzten not answer to hym to þes þingis/  
 forsoþe he seyde & a parable to men beden to a feest · bihold-  
 ynge how þei cheseden þe firste sittynge places: seyunge to  
 hem/ whanne þou schalt be beden to weddyngis: sitte not  
 at þe mete in þe firste place · lest þe paraventure · a worþier  
 þan þou be beden of hym · & he comynge þat clepide þee &  
 hym: seye to þee/ zif place to þis/ and þanne þou schalt by-  
 gynne wiþ schame for to holde þe laste place/ but whanne þou  
 schalt be beden to a feste: go & sitte doune in þe laste place/  
 þat whanne he cometh þat had þee to feest: seye to þee/ frende  
 steppe vp heyzer/ þanne glorie schal be to þee: bifore men  
 sittynge to gedir at þe mete/ for eche þat enhauncith hym: schal  
 be lowide/ and he þat mekiþ hym schal be hizede/ forsoþe  
 he seyde & to hym þat had beden hym to feest/ whanne þou  
 makist

## Luke

makist a mete (or soper) nyl þou clepe þi frendis · neþer þi breþeren · neþer cosyns · neþer neyzeþors · neþer riche men · lest þe parauenture & þei bidde þee azen to feest · & retribuciōn (or zildynge azen) be made to þee/ but whanne þou makist a feest · clepe pore men · feble · crokide · blynde · and þou schalt be bleßide · for þei haue not wherof to zilde azen to þee/ forsoþe it schal be quytte azen to þee · in þe risynge azen of iuste men/ whanne summan of þe sittynge at mete had herde þes þingis · he seyde to hym/ bleßide he þat schal ete breede in þe rewme of god/ and he seyde hym/ summan made a greet soper · and clepide manye/ & he sente his seruauntis in þe houre of soper for to seye to men beden to feest · þat þei schulden come/ for nowe alle þingis ben redy/ and alle bygynnen to gedir · for to excuse/ þe firste seyde/ I haue bouzte a toun · and I haue neede for to go oute & se it/ I preye þee · haue me excuside/ & þe oþer seyde/ I haue bouzte fyue yokis of oren · & I go for to proue hem/ I preye þee · haue me excuside/ and anoder seyde I haue weddide a wif · and þerfore I may not come/ and þe seruaunt turnyde azen · tolde þes þingis to his lorde/ þanne þe housbondeman wroþe · seyde to his seruaunt/ go oute sone into greet stretis & smale stretis of þe cytee · and pore men & feble · blynde & crokide · brynge þou hidir/ and his seruaunt seith/ lorde it is done as þou hast comaundide · and zit þere is place/ and þe lorde seih to þe seruaunt/ go oute in weyes & heggis · & constreyne for to entre · þat myn hous be fulfild · forsoþe I seye to þou · for no man of þe men þat ben clepide · schal taste my soper//

**¶** Soþely many cumpanyes wenten wiþ hym/ & he turnyde · seyde to hem/ zif any come to me · & hatih not his fadir & modir & wif & sones & breþeren & douztris · zit forsoþe & his soule (or lijf ·) may not be my disciple/ & he bereþ not his crosse & cometh not aftir me · may not be my disciple/ forsoþe who of þou willynge for to bilde a toure · where þe firste sittynge acountis not þe spensis þat ben nedeful zif he haue to parfourme

## Luke

fourme/ leste aftir þat he haþ putte þe foundement & myzte not parfourme/ alle þat seen hym bigynne to scorne hym seyinge/ for þis man bigan for to bilde & myzte not ende/ or what kyng to go for to sende (or make) batayle azenes an- oþer kyng/ wher he sittynge firste byþenke not zif he may wip ten housande goo azenes hym þat cometh to hym wip twenty housande/ ellis zit doinge afer/ he sendynge a mes- sanger · preyeþ þo þingis þat ben of pees/ so þerfore eche of zou þat renounsiþ not (or forsakiþ not) alle þingis þat he weldiþ/ may not be my disciple// Salte is good þinge/ for- soþe zif salte vanysche/ in what þing schal it be saueride/ neþer in dungehil is it profitable/ but it schal be sente oute/ he þat haþ eris of herynge/ here//

C<sup>m</sup> 15<sup>m</sup>



Drsoþe puplicans & synful men weren neyzinge to hym/ þat þei schulden here hym/ and pharisees & scribis grucchiden seyinge/ for þis receyueþ synful men/ and etih wip hem/ and he seiþ to hem þis parable/ seyinge/ what man of zou þat haþ an hundride scheep · & zif he schal leese one of hem · wher he leeueþ not nynty & nyne in deserte & goiþ to it þat perischide · til he fynde it/ he ioyinge puttih into his schuldres/ and comynge home/ clepiþ to gedir his frendis & neyzbors seyinge to hem/ þanke zee to me · for I haue founden þe scheepe þat I had losse/ soþely I seye to zou · so ioye schal be in heuene on one synful man doinge penaunce/ þan vpon nynty & nyne iuste þat hane no nede to penaunce/ or what womman haupnge ten dragmes (or besauntis) · & zif sche schal leese one dragme/ wher sche tendis not a lanterne · & turneþ vpsodoune þe hous · & seekih diligently til sche fynde/ and whanne sche haþ founden/ sche clepiþ to gedir frendis & neyzebors seyinge/ to gedir þanke zee me · for I haue founden þe dragme þat I had losse/ so I seye to zou · ioye schal be to aungels of god · vpon one synful man doinge penaunce// ¶ fforsoþe he seis/ summan had two sones/

## Luke

sones: & þe zonger seyde to his fadir/ fadir ȝyue to me þe porcioune of substaunce (or catel) þat bifallip me/ and he departide to hem substaunce/ and not aftir manye dayes alle þingis gederide to gedir: þe zonger sone wente fer on pilgrymage into afer cuntre · & þere wastide his substaunce (or goodis) in lyuyng leccheroufly/ and aftir þat he had endide alle þingis: a stronge hunger is made in þat cuntre · & he bigan for to haue nede/ and he wente & cleuede to one of þe burgeysis of þat cuntre: and he sente hym into his toun · þat he schulde feede hoggis/ and he coueptide for to fulfille his wombe of þe coddis þat þe hoggis eten: and no man ȝaue to hym/ soþely he turnede azen into hym self: seyde/ how manye hiride men in my fadir hous abounden in looues: I forsoþe perische heere in hunger/ I schal risen vp & go to my fadir: and I schal seye to hym/ fadir I haue synnede into heuene & bifore þee: nowe I am not worþi for to be clepide þi sone · make me as one of þin hiride men/ and he risynge came to his fadir/ soþely whanne he was ȝit fer: his fadir siȝe hym · & is styrede by mercy/ & he rennyng to · felde vpon his necke: and kisside hym/ and þe sone seyde to hym/ fadir I haue synnede into heuene & bifore þee: and nowe I am not worþi for to be clepide þi sone/ forsoþe þe fadir seyde to his seruauntis/ soone brynge ȝee forþe þe firste stool & cloþide hym · & ȝyue ȝee a ryng in his hande: & schoon into feet/ and brynge ȝee to · a calue made fatte: and flee ȝee & ete we & glade we in plenteuous etynge · for þis my sone is deade & haþ lyuede azen: he perischide & is founde/ and alle men bigunnen for to ete gladly/ forsoþe his elder sone was in þe feelde/ and whanne he came & neȝede to þe hous: he herde a symphonie & carole (or croude)/ and he clepide one of þe seruauntis: and axide what þes þingis weren/ & he seyde to hym/ þi broþer is comen · & þi fadir flewe a fattide calue · for he receyuede hym saaf/ forsoþe he was wroþe: and wolde not entre/ þerfore his fadir gon oute bigan to preye hym/ & he answerynge to his fadir: seyde/

## Luke

Io so many zeeris I serue to þee · and I neuer passide ouer  
(or brake) þi comaundement: & þou neuer haste zouen to me  
a kide þat I schulde wiþ my frendes be fulfillide/ but aftir þat  
þis þi sone þat hæþ deuouride his substaunce wiþ hooris came:  
þou hast slayne to hym a fattide calue/ and he seyde to hym/  
sone þou art euermore wiþ me: and alle my þingis ben þin/  
forsoþe it bihouede for to ete plenteuouesly & to ioye for þis  
þi broþer was deade: & lyuede azen/ he perischide & is foun-  
den//

C<sup>m</sup> 16<sup>m</sup>



Forsoþe he seyde & to his disciplis/þer was sum ryche  
man þat had a fermour (or bayly): and þis is de-  
famyde at hym · as he had wastide his goodis/ &  
he clepide hym · & seiþ to hym/ what here I þis  
þing of þee? zilde resoune of þi ferme/ for now þou schalt  
not mowe hold þe ferme/ forsoþe þe fermour seyde wiþinne  
hym self/ what schal I do · for my lorde takih aweye fro me  
þe ferme/ delue may I not: I schame for to begge/ I woot  
what I schal do: þat whanne I schal be mouede fro þe ferme:  
þei receyue me into here housis/ and so alle þe dettours of  
his lorde clepide to gedir: he seyde to þe firste: how myche  
owist þou to my lorde/ & he seyde to hym/ an hundride barels  
of oyle/ and he seyde to hym/ take þe caucion (or obligacion)·  
& sitte soone · & write fifty/ aftirwarde he seyde to anoter/  
soþely how myche owest þou? þe whiche seiþ/ an hundride  
mesuris of wheet/ and he seyde to hym/ take þi lettris & write  
foure score/ & þe lorde preyside þe fermour of wickidnesse ·  
for he had done prudently/ for þe sones of þis worlde ben  
more prudent (or war) in here generacon: þan þe sones of  
lizte/ & I seye to zou/ make to zou frendis of þe richesse of  
wickidnesse · þat whanne zee schulen fayle: þei receyue zou  
into euerlastyng tabernaclis/ he þat is trewe in þe leste þing:  
& in þe more is trewe/ & he þat in a litil þing is wickide: & in  
þe more is wickide/ þerfore zif in þe wickide richessis zee  
weren

## Luke

weren not trewe: þat þat is soþe who schal bileue (or bitake) to zou/ and ȝif in oþer mennes þing ȝee weren not trewe: þat þat is ȝoure who schal ȝpue to zou/ no man seruaunt may serue to two lordis/ forsoþe oþer he schal hate þe toon & loue þe toþer: oþer cleue to þe toon & dispise þe toþer/ ȝee motwne not serue to god & to richesse/ forsoþe pharisees þat weren coueytous herden alle þes þingis: & þei scorneden hym/ & he seiþ to hem/ ȝee it ben þat iustifien zou bifore men/ soþely god haþ knowen ȝoure hertis/ for þat is hiȝe to men: is abhomy-  
nacoñ to god/ þe lawe & prophetis til to Joon fro þat tyme þe rewme of god is euangelizide • & eche man doiþ strengþe (or violence) into it/ forsoþe it is lizter heuene & erþe for to passe ouer: þan one tittle falle of þe lawe// ¶ Euery man þat forsakiþ his wiif • & weddiþ anoper • doiþ auoutrie/ and he þat weddiþ þe forsaken of þe housbonde: doiþ auoutrie// ¶ Sum-  
man was riche & was cloþide in purpur & bijs (or white silke) • & ete euery day schynnyngly/ & þer was sum begger lazar by name • þat laye at his ȝate • ful of bijslis • coueytynge to be fulfillide of þe crommes þat fellen doune fro þe riche mannes borde: & no man ȝaue to hym/ but & houndis camen: & lick-  
iden his bijslis/ forsoþe it is done þat þe begger diede: and was borne of aungels into abrahams bosum/ forsoþe & þe riche man is deade: and is biriede in helle/ soþely he castyngge vp his eyȝen • whanne he was in turmentis: siȝe abraham afer • & lazar in his bosum/ & he crynge seyde/ fadir abraham haue mercy on me: and sende lazar þat he dippe þe lasse parte of his fynger in water þat he kele my tunge • for I am turmentide in þis flawme/ and abraham seyde to hym/ sone haue mynde • for þou hast receyuede good þingis in þi lijf: and lazar also euyl þingis/ soþely he is nowwe comfortioe: but þou art turmentide/ & in alle þes þingis bitwixe vs & zou • a greet dirke place is flablide • þat þei þat wolen fro hens passe to zou: motwne not neþer passe ouer hidir/ and he seiþ/ þerfore I prepe þee fadir abraham: þat þou sende hym into þe hous of my fadir/ soþely



## Luke

I haue fyue breþeren · þat he witnesse to hem · leste & þei comen into þis place of turmentis/ and abraham seiþ to hym/ þei hane moysen & þe prophetis: here þei hem/ and he seyde/ nay fadir abraham · but zif any of deade men schal go to hem: þei schulen do penaunce/ forsoþe he seiþ to hym/ zif þei heren not moyses & prophetis: neþer zif any of deade men schal rise azen: þei schulen bileue to hym/ and he seiþ to his disciplis/ it is impossible þat sclaunderis comen not/ forsoþe wo to þat man by whom þei comen/ it is more profitable to hym zif a mylne stoon be putte aboute his necke & he caste into þe see: þan þat he sclaundre one of þes litil/persepueþ (or takip heede) to zou self/ zif þi broþer schal synne in þee: blame hym/ & zif he schal do penaunce · forȝue to hym/ & zif seuene tipes in þe day · he schal synne in þee · & seuene tipes in þe day he schal be conuertid to þee: seyinge/ it forþinkip me: forȝue to hym//

C<sup>m</sup> 17<sup>m</sup>



And þe apostlis seyde to þe lorde/ encrese to vs seiþ/ forsoþe þe lorde seyde/ zif zee hadden seiþ/ as þe corne of seneuey: zee schulen seye to þis tree more · be þou drawen vp by þe root · & be ouer plauntide into þe see: and it schal obeie to zou/ forsoþe who of zou haupinge a seruaunt · erynge or lesowynge þe oris · þe whiche turnyde azen fro feelde · he seiþ anone to hym · go sitte at þe mete · & not seiþ to hym make reedy þat I soupe · & girde þee bifore · and mynystre to me til þat I ete or drynke · & astir þes þingis þou schalt ete & drynke/ wher he haþ grace to þat seruaunt · for he dide þat þat he comaundide to hym/ nay I gesse/ so & zee whanne zee hane done alle þingis þat ben comaundide to zou: seye/ we ben vnprofitable seruauntis/ þat þat we ouzten for to do: we haue done// ¶ And it is done þe while I hē wente into irlm: he passide þourgh þe mydil of samarie & galilee /and whanne he entride into sum castel · ten leprous men camen azenes hym/ þe whiche stoden afer & listiden vp a voyce: seyinge/ I hū comaundour: haue mercy on vs/ whom

as

## Luke

as he ſize: he ſeyde/ go zee ſchewe zee zou to priſtis/ it is done  
þe while þei wenten: þei ben clenſide/ forſoþe one of hem as he  
ſize for he is clenſide: wente azen wiþ greet voyce magnyfy-  
inge god/ and he felle doune into þe face bifore his feet: doinge  
graces (or þankyngis)/ and þis was a ſamaritan/ forſoþe ihc  
anſwerynge ſeyde/ wher ten ben not clenſide: and where ben  
þe nyne/ þer ben none founden þat turnyde azen & 3aue glorie  
to god: no but þis alien (or ſtraunger)/ and he ſeiþ to hym riſe  
up go þou: for þi ſeiþ haþ made þee ſaaf/ forſoþe he aride of  
phariſees whan þe rewme of god cometh: anſweride to hem &  
ſeyde/ þe rewme of god cometh not wiþ aſpiynge: neþer þei  
ſchulen ſeye/ lo here: or lo þere/ forſoþe lo þe rewme of god is  
wiþinne zou/ & he ſeiþ to his diſciplis/ dayes ſchulen come:  
whanne zee ſchulen deſire for to ſe one day of mannes ſone:  
and zee ſchulen not ſe/ & þei ſchulen ſeye to zou/ lo here & lo  
þere/ nyl zee go: neþer ſue þee/ forwhi as lepte ſchynynge from  
vnder heuene · ſchyneth into þo þinges þat ben vndre heuene:  
ſo ſchal mannes ſone be in his day/ forſoþe firſte it bihoueth hym  
for to ſuffre manye þingis: & for to be reprobued of þis genera-  
con/ & as it was done in þe dayes of noe: ſo it ſchal be in þe dayes  
of mannes ſone/ þei eten & drunken · weddiden wiſes & weren  
zouen to weddyngis til into þe day · in þe whiche noe entride  
into þe ſchippe: & þe greet flode came & loſte alle/ alſo it was  
done in þe dayes of loth · þei eten & drunken · bouzten & ſolden ·  
plauntiden & bildiden/ ſoþely in what day loth wente oute of  
ſodom · þe lorde reynyde ſijr & brinnſton fro heuene · & loſte  
alle/ aftir þis þing it ſchal be in what day mannes ſone ſchal be  
ſchewide/ in þat day he ſchal ben in þe roof · & his veſſels in þe  
houſ: come he not doune for to take hem aweye/ and he þat is  
in þe feelde: alſo turne not azen byþynde/ be zee myndeful of þe  
wife of loth/ who euer ſchal ſeek for to make his ſoule (þat is  
his lijf) ſaaf: ſchal leeſe it/ & who euer ſchal leeſe it: ſchal quyen  
it/ I ſeye to zou in þat nyzt two ſchulen be in one bed · one  
ſchal be taken to · & þe toþer forſaken/ two wymmen ſchulen be  
gryndynge

## Luke

gryndynge to gedir · þe one schal be taken to · & þe toþer forsaken/ þei answerynge seyn to hym/ where lorde/ þe whiche seyde to hem/ wher euer þe body schal be: þidir schulen be gederide to gidir & þe eglis//

C<sup>m</sup> 18<sup>m</sup>



Drsoþe he seyde to hem & a parable/ for it bihouep for to preye euermore: & not fayle seyinge/ þer was sum iuge in sum cytee: þat dredde not god · neþer schamyde men/ forsoþe sum widowe was in þat cytee: and came to hym seyinge/ venge me of myn aduersarie/ and he wolde not by myche tyme/ soþely astir þes þingis he seyde wiþinne hym self/ and zif I drede not god · & schame not man: neþeles for þis widowe is heup to me: I schal venge hire/ lest at þe laste sche comynge strangle me/ soþely þe lorde seiþ/ here zee what þe domesman of wickidnesse seiþ/ forsoþe wher god schal not do vengeaunce of his chosen · crynge to hym nyzt & day · & schal haue pacience in hem/ soþely I seye to zou for sone he schal do vengeaunce of hem/ neþeles gessit þou mannes sone comynge schal fynde seiþ in erþe/ forsoþe he seyde & to summen þat tristiden in hym self as ryztful · dispiseden oþer · þis parable seyinge/ two men steyzeden vp into þe temple for to preye · þe one a pharisee · & þe oþer a puplican/ forsoþe þe pharisee stondynge: preyede anentis hym self þes þingis seyinge/ god I do þankyngis to þee · for I am not as oþer of men · rauenours · vniust · auoutrers · as also þis puplican/ I faste twyes in þe wike · I zpyue tyþes of alle þingis þat I haue in possession/ and þe puplican stondynge afer · wolde not neþer lifte vp þe yzen to heuene: but smote his breste seyinge/ god be helpesful (or mercyful) to me synner/ trewely I seye to zou · þis discendide iustificide into his hous from hym/ for eche þat enhauncip hym: schal be made lowe/ and he þat mekip hym: schal be enhauncide/ ¶ Forsoþe þei brouzten to hym zonge children þat he schulde touche hem/ þe whiche whanne disciplis sizen: þei blameden hem/ soþely ih̄c clepyng to gedir hem: seyde/

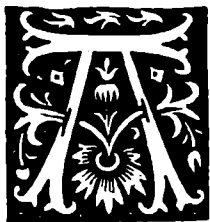
## Luke

seyde/ suffre zee children for to come to me: & nyl zee forbede hem/ soþely of suche is þe kyngdom of heuenes/ trewely I seye to zou · who euer schal not take þe kyngdom as a childe: schal not entre into it/ and sum prynce axide hym seyinge/ gode mayfter what þing doinge · schal I welde euerlastyngge lijf? soþely ih̄c seyde to hym/ what seyst þou me gode/ no man gode: no but god alone/ þou haste knowen þe comaundementis/ þou schalt not flee · þou schalt not do leccherie · þou schalt not do þeste · þou schalt not seye false witnesyngge · worschip þi fadir & modir/ þe whiche seiþ/ I haue kepte alle þes þingis fro my zouthē/ þe whiche þing herde: ih̄c seiþ to hym/ zit one þing sayliþ to zee · selle þou alle what euer þingis þou hast: and ȝue to pore men · & þou schal haue tresoure in heuene · & come & sue me/ þes þingis herde: he was sorowful: for he was ful riche/ soþely ih̄c seyinge hym made soory: seyde how harde þei þat hane money · schulen entre into þe kyngdom of god/ forsoþe it is lizter a camel for to passe þourz an edlis yze: þan a riche man to entre into þe kyngdom of god/ & þei þat herden þes þingis: seyden/ and who may be saaf/ & he seiþ to hem/ þo þingis þat ben impossible anentis men: ben possible anentis god/ forsoþe petre seiþ/ lo we haue lefte alle þingis: and suen þee/ þe whiche seyde to hym/ treuely I seye to zou · þer is no man · þat schal forsake hous or fadir or modir or breþeren or wife or sones or feeldis for þe reſſume of god: & schal not receyue moo þingis in þis tyme · & in þe worlde to comyngge euerlastyngge lijf// ¶ Forsoþe ih̄c took to his twelue disciplis: and seiþ to hem/ lo we steyzen vp to ierl̄m · & alle þingis schulen be endide · þat ben writen by prophetis of mannes sone/ forsoþe he schal be bitrayede to heþen men · & he schal be scornyd & scourgide & byspitte/ and aftir þat þei haue scourgide (or beeten): þei schulen flee hym/ and þe þridde day he schal rise azen/ and þei vnderstoden no þing of þes/ and þis worde was hidde fro hem: & þei vnderstoden not þo þingis þat weren seyde/ forsoþe it is done whanne ih̄c came nyz to Jericho: sum blynde man satte  
besides

## Luke

besides þe weye beggynge/ and whanne he herde þe cumpā-  
nye of puple passynge/ aride what þis þing was/ sobely þei  
seyden to hym/ þat ih̄c of nazareth passide/ and he criede sey-  
inge/ Jhū þe sone of dauid/ haue mercy on me/ and þei þat  
wenten bifore/ blameden hym þat he schulde be stille/ sobely  
hemychemore cryinge/ þou sone of dauid/ haue mercy on me/  
forsoþe Jh̄c stondynge/ comaundide hym for to be brouzte forþ  
to hym/ and whanne he came nyȝ/ he aride hym seyinge/ what  
wolte þou I schal do to þee/ and he seyde/ lorde þat I se/ and  
ih̄c seyde to hym/ biholde/ þi seip haþ made þee saaf/ and  
anone he sizen/ and suede hym • magnifynge god/ and al þe pu-  
ple as it sizen/ ȝaue herpynges to god//

C<sup>m</sup> 19<sup>m</sup>



And Jh̄c goinge in/ walkide to Jericho/ and lo a man  
zache by name • & þis was prynce of puplicans/ &  
he riche/ and he souzte for to se Jhū who he was/  
& he myȝte not for þe cumpānye of puple • for he  
was litil in stature/ and he rennynges bifore/ stepzede vp into  
a sicomore tree • þat he schulde se hym/ for he was to passe  
þens/ and ih̄c biholdynge vp • whan he came to þe place/ sizen  
hym & seyde to hym/ zache bizynge come doune/ for to daye  
I must dwelle in þin hous/ & he bizynge came doune/ and  
ioyinge receyuede hym/ & whanne alle men sizen/ þei grucchi-  
den seyinge/ for he had turnyde to a synful man/ forsoþe zache  
stondynge/ seyde to þe lorde/ lo lorde þe halfe of my godis/ I  
ȝyue to pore men/ and ȝif I haue any þing defraudide any  
man/ I ȝilde þe foure folde/ Jh̄c seip to hym/ for in þis day  
helpe is made to þis hous/ for þat he is abrahams sone/ for-  
soþe mannes sone came for to seek & for to make saaf þat þing  
þat perischide// ¶ Them herpynges þes þingis • he puttynges to •  
seyde a parable • for þat he was nyȝ ierlm̄ • & for þei gesside þat  
anone þe kyngdom of god schulde be shewide/ þerfore he seyde/  
Sum noble man wente into a fer cuntre • for to take to hym  
a kyngdom • & for to turne aȝen/ sobely his ten seruauntis  
clepide/

## Luke

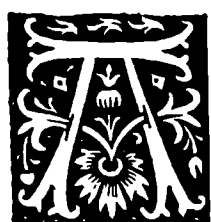
clepide: he gaue to hem ten besauntis • & seih to hem/ **Mar-**  
chaundise zee þe while I come/ forsoþe his cyteseyns hatiden  
hym • & senten a messenger aftir hym: seyinge/ we wolen not  
hym for to regne vpon vs/ and it is done þat he turnede azen  
þe kyngdom taken: he comaundide his seruauntis to be cle-  
pide to whom he gaue þe money • þat he schulde wite how  
myche eche had wonnen by chaffarynge/ forsoþe þe firste came  
seyinge/ lorde þi besaunt haþ wonnen ten besauntis/ he seih  
to hym/ wel be þou goode seruaunt in litil þing þou hast ben  
trewe: þou schalt be hauping power vpon ten cytees/ and þe  
toþer came seyinge/ lorde þi besaunt haþ made fyue besauntis/  
and to þis he seih/ and be þou vpon fyue cytees/ and þe þridde  
came seyinge/ lorde lo þi besaunt þat I had putte vp in a suda-  
rie (or swetyng clooth)/ forsoþe I dredde þee for þou art auf-  
terne man • þat takist awey þat þat þou settist not • & þou re-  
pist þat þat þou hast not soten/ he seih to hym/ weywarde ser-  
uaunt: of þi mouþe I deme þee/ wistist þou þat I am an auf-  
terne man takyng aweye þat þing þat I sette not • & reppnge  
þat þing þat I sette not: and whi hast þou not zouen my money  
to þe boorde • & I comynge schulde haue receyuede it • soþely  
wiþ vsures/ and he seyde to men stondyng nyz/ take zee aweye  
fro hym þe besaunt: and zye zee it to hym þat haþ ten be-  
sauntis/ and þei seyden to hym/ lorde he haþ ten besauntis/  
soþely I seye to zou • for to eche haupnge it schal bezouen: and  
he schal abounde (or be plenteuouse)/ but fro hym þat haþ  
not & þat þing þat he haþ: schal be taken of hym/ neþeles  
brynge zee hidir þo myn enemyes • þat wolen not me regne  
vpon hem: and flee bifore me/ and þes þingis seyde: he wente  
bifore stepzyng to irlm/ and it is done whanne he came nyz to  
bethfage & bethanye at þe mounte þat is clepide of olyuete: he  
sente his two disciplis seyinge/ go zee into þe castel þat is azenes  
zou • into whiche zee entrynge schulen fynde a colte of a sche-  
asse tizede: to whom none of men euer satte/ vnbynde zee hym:  
and brynge zee to me/ and zif any man are whi zee vnbynden:  
þus

## Luke

hus zee schulen seye to hym/ for þe lorde desireþ his werke/ for-  
soþe þei þat weren sente wenten forþ · & founden as he seyde to  
hem: a colte stondyng: soþely hem vnbryndyng þe colte: þe  
lordis of hem seyden to hem/ what vntizen zee þe colte? and  
þei seyden/ for þe lorde haþ hym nedeful/ and þei ledden to ihū/  
and þei castyng here cloþes vpon þe colte: puttiden ihū (on  
hym)/ forsoþe hym goinge: þei vndre strewiden here cloþes in  
þe weye/ and whanne now he came nyȝ to þe comyng doun  
of þe mounte of olyuete: alle þe cumpanyes of men comyng  
doun: bygunnen ioyzyng for to herie god wiþ greet voyce  
on alle þe vertues þat þei sizen seyinge/ blesside is þe kyng  
þat cometh in þe name of þe lorde: pees in heuene & glorie  
þingis// ¶ And summe of pharisees of þe cumpanyes: seyden  
to hym/ mayster blame þi disciplis/ to whom he seih/ I seye  
to zou · for zif þes schulen be stille: stonys schulen crie/ and  
whanne he neyzede · he seinge þe cytee: wepte on it seyinge/  
for zif þou haddest knowen: & þou/ & soþely in þis þi day: þe  
whiche to pees to þee/ but now þei ben hid fro þin eyzen/ for  
dayes schulen come in þee · & þin enemyes schulen enuproune  
þee wiþ a paale · & þei schulen enuproune þee & make þee strepte  
on alle sidis: & caste þee doun to þe erþe · & þi sones þat ben  
in þee/ and þei schulen not leue in þee a stone vpon a stone ·  
for þat þat þou hast not knowen þe tyme of þi visitacōn//  
¶ And he gone into þe temple: bigan for to caste oute men sell-  
yng þer inne & byyng · seyinge to hem/ it is writen yat myn  
hous: is an hous of preyer/ forsoþe zee hane made it a denne  
of þeefes/ and he was techyng euerý day in þe temple/ forsoþe  
þe prynces of pristis & þe scribis & þe prynces of þe puple:  
souzten for to leese hym/ and þei founden not what þei schul-  
den do to hym/ soþely alle þe puple was hangide vp · or al oc-  
cupiede heryng hym//

And

## Luke



**A**nd it is done in one of þe dayes · hym techyng þe C<sup>m</sup> 20<sup>m</sup>  
 puple in þe temple & euangelizynges: þe prynces of  
 pristis & scribis camen to gedir · wiþ þe eldre men ·  
 & seyn to hym seyinge/ seye to vs in what power  
 þou doist þis þing or who ȝaue to þee þis power/ forsoþe ihū  
 answerynge: seyde to hem/ and I schal are ȝou a worde: an-  
 swere ȝee to me/ was þe baptysm of Ioon of heuene or of men/  
 and þei þouȝten wiþinne þemself seyinge/ for ȝif we schulen  
 seye of heuene: he schal seye/ whi þirfore bileue ȝee not to  
 hym/ forsoþe ȝif we schulen seye of men: al þe comoune puple  
 schal stonen vs/ for þei ben certeyn: Ioon for to be a pro-  
 phete · & þei answeriden · hem to not knowe (or wite) of whens  
 it was/ and ihc seip to hem/ neþer I seye to ȝou: in what  
 power I do þes þingis// ¶ Forsoþe he bigan for to seye to þe  
 comoune puple þis parable/ summan plauntide a vynezerde ·  
 & hijride it (or sette) to ferme to tiliers/ and he was in pil-  
 grymage myche tymes/ and in tyme of gederynge of grapis:  
 he sente a seruaunt to þe tiliers: þat þei schulden ȝpue to hym  
 of þe fruyte of þe vynezerde/ þe whiche lesten hym beten:  
 voyde (or wiþouten fruyte)/ and he putte to for to sende ano-  
 þer seruaunt/ forsoþe & þei beetynge þis · and punyschyng  
 wiþ conteckis (or wrongis): lesten voyde/ and he putte to for to  
 sende þe þridde/ þe whiche & woundynge hym: castiden oute/  
 soþely þe lorde of þe vynezerde seyde/ what schal I do/ I  
 schal sende my der worþesone/ parauenture whanne þei schulen  
 se hym: þei schulen schame/ whom whanne þe tiliers hadden  
 seen: þei þouȝten wiþinne hem self seyinge/ þis is þe eire/ flee  
 we hym: þat þe heretage be made oure/ and þei slowen hym  
 caste oute of þe vynezerde/ what þerfore schal þe lorde of þe  
 vynezerde do to hem/ he schal come & leese þes tiliers · & ȝpue  
 þe vynezerde to oþer/ whiche þing herde: þei seyden to hym/  
 be it fer: (or god forbede)/ forsoþe he biholdynge hem · seyde/  
 what þerfore is þis þing þat is writen/ þe soon whom men



## Luke

bildynge reproueden: his is made into þe heede of þe corner/  
eche þat schal falle vpon þat stoon: schal be schaken or broken/  
forsoþe vpon whom it schal falle: it schal breke hym to smaale  
parties// ¶ And þe prynces of pristis & þe scribis: souzte for  
to leye on hym handis in þat houre: and þei dredde þe puple/  
forsoþe þei knewen: þat to hem he had seyde þis likenesse/ and  
þei keppynge: senten aspiers þat seyneden hem iuste: þat þei  
schulden take hym in worde · & bitake hym (or bitraye) to þe  
principate (or power of þe prynce) · & to þe power of þe mayre  
(or iustice)/ and þei axiden hym seyinge/ mayster we witen  
for riztly þou seyst & techist · & þou takist not þe persone of man:  
but þou techist in treuþe þe weye of god/ is it leueful to vs for  
to ȝyue tribute to cesar or nay? forsoþe he biholdynge þe de-  
seyte of hem: seyde to hem/ what tempten ȝee me? schewe ȝee  
to me a penye/ whos ymage & superscripcon (or writynge  
aboute) haþ it? þei answerynge seyden to hym/ cesars/ and  
he seiþ to hem/ ȝilde ȝee þerfore to cesar · þo þingis þat ben  
cesars: and þo þingis þat ben of god · to god/ and þei myzten  
not reproue his worde: bifore þe pore puple/ and þei wondr-  
ynge in his answeris: helden pees// ¶ Summe of þe sadu-  
ceis · þat denyen aȝen risynge for to be: camen to & axiden  
seyinge/ mayster · moyses wrote to vs · ȝif þe broþer of any  
man haupnge a wife be deade · & he was wiþ outen fre chil-  
dren: þat his broþer take his wife & reyse seede to his broþer/  
þerfore seuene breþeren weren: þe firste took a wife · & is  
deade wiþ outen fre children/ and þe supynge took hir: and he  
is deade wiþ outen sone/ and þe þridde took hir/ also & alle  
seuene/ & leften not seede · but ben deade/ þe laste of alle: &  
þe womman is deade/ þerfore in þe rysynge aȝen: whos wife  
of hem schal sche be: forsoþe seuene hadden hire wife/ and ihc  
seiþ to hem/ sones of þis worlde wedden & ben ȝouen to wed-  
dyngis/ forsoþe þei þat schulen be hadde worþi of þat worlde  
& risynge aȝen fro deade men: neþer ben weddide neþer wed-  
den wifes · neþer euer schulen mowe die · forsoþe þei ben euen  
wiþ

## Luke

wiþ aungels · & ben þe sones of god: siþ þei ben sones of ris-  
 ynge azen/ forsoþe for deade men risen azen: and moyses  
 schewide besides þe busche as he seiþ/ þe lorde god of abra-  
 ham · & god of ysaac · & god of Jacob/ forsoþe god is not of  
 deade men: but of lyuynge men/ forsoþe alle men lyuen to  
 hym/ soþely summe of þe scribis answerynge: seyden/ may-  
 ter þou hast wel seyde/ and þei dursten no more are hym any  
 þing// ¶ forsoþe he seyde to hem/ how seyn men crist for to be  
 þe sone of dauid · & dauid hym self seiþ in þe booc of psalmes ·  
 þe lorde seyde to my lorde · sitte þou on my rizthalfe · til þat  
 I putte þei enemyes a stool of þi feet: þerfore dauid clepiþ  
 hym lorde: and how is he his sone: soþely al þe puple her-  
 ynge: he seyde to his disciplis/ be zee war of scribis þat wolen  
 wandre in stolis & louen salutacons in þe chepyng · & þe  
 firste chapers in sinagogis · & þe firste sittynge places in feestis/  
 þat deuouren þe hous of widowis: feynynge longe preyinge/  
 þei schulen take more dampnacoñ//



Forsoþe he biholdynge siþe hem · þat senten here C<sup>m</sup> 21<sup>m</sup>  
 ziftis in to þe tresorie riche men/ forsoþe he siþe &  
 sum litil pore widowe sendynge two mynutis (or  
 ferþingis): and he seyde/ treuely I seye to 3ou · for  
 þis pore widowe: sente more þan alle men/ for whi alle þes  
 of þe aboundaunce or plenteuouse to hem: senten into þe ziftis  
 of god/ forsoþe þis widowe · of þat þing þat sayliþ to hir:  
 sente al hir lyuelode þat sche hadde// ¶ And summan seinge  
 of þe temple þat it was ournyde wiþ good stoones & ziftis: he  
 seyde/ þo þingis þat zee seen · dayes schulen come in þe whiche  
 a stoon schal not be lefte on a stoon: þe whiche schal not be  
 distrupede/ soþely þei axiden hym seyinge/ comaundour ·  
 whanne schulen þes þingis be: and what token whan þei  
 schulen bigynne for to be done/ þe whiche seyde/ se zee þat zee  
 be not decepuede/ soþely many schulen come in my name ·  
 seyinge for I am · & þe tyme schal neze/ þerfore nyl zee go  
 astir

## Luke

astir hem/ forsoþe whanne zee schulen here bataylis & sedu-  
coñs (or stryues) wiþinne forþ: nyl zee be aferde/ it bihouep  
firste þes þingis for to be done: but not zit anone an ende/  
þanne he seyde to hem/ folc schal rise azenes folc · & rewme  
azenes rewme · & greet mouyngis of erþe schulen be bi places ·  
& pestilences · & hungriſ · & dredis from heuene & grete tokenes  
schulen be/ but bifore alle þes þingis þei schulen putte here  
hondis to zou · & schulen pursue · bitakynge into synagogis &  
kepyngis · Drawynge to kyngis & mayres (or iustices) for my  
name/ forsoþe it schal falle to zou into witnesſynge/ þerfore  
putte zee in zoure hertes · not to þenke bifore: how zee schulen  
answere/ forsoþe I schal ȝyue to zou mouþ & wysdom: to  
whiche alle zoure aduersaries schulen not mowe azenſtonde  
& azen seye/ soþely zee schulen be bitrayede (or taken) of fa-  
dir & modir & breþeren & cosyns & frendis: & by deþ þei schulen  
turmente of zou/ and zee schulen be in hate to alle men for  
my name/ and an heer of zoure heed: schal not perische/ in  
zoure pacience zee schulen welde (or haue in quyet) zoure  
soulis/ forsoþe whanne zee schulen se irlm enuyrounyde of an  
ooste of batayle: þanne wite zee for þe desolacon (or discoun-  
forþ) of it schal neyze/ þanne þei þat ben in Jude flee to þe  
mounteyns/ & þei þat in þe myddil of it: go aweye/ & þei þat  
in þe cuntrees: entre not into it/ for þes ben dayes of ven-  
geaunce · þat alle þingis þat ben writen: be fulfilde/ forsoþe  
wo to (wymmen) wiþ childe & norischnge in þo dayes/ for-  
soþe a greet pressure (or ouerleyinge) schal be on þe erþe · &  
wrappe to þis puple/ and þei schulen falle in þe mouþ of swerde:  
& þei schulen be ledde captife (or prisoners) into alle folkis/ &  
irlm schulen be defoulide (or to troden) of heþene men: til þe  
tyme of naciouns be fulfilde// ¶ And tokenes schulen be in  
sunne & mone & sterres: & in erþe ouerleyinge of folkis for con-  
fusiõ of sounne of þe see & watwis · men waringe drie for drede  
& abidyng þat schulen come to al þe worlde/ for whi vertues  
of heuene schulen be mouede/ and þanne þei schulen se mannes  
sone

## Luke

sone comynge in a cloude: wip greet power & maieste/ soþely  
þes þingis bigynnynge for to be made: biholde zee & reyse zee  
zoure hedis · for zoure redempcoñ (or byinge azen) neyzeþ/  
& he seyde to hem a likenesse/ se zee þe fige tree & alle trees ·  
whanne þei bryngen forþ nowe of hem fruyte: zee witen for  
somer is nyz/ so & zee whanne zee schulen se þes þingis for to  
be done: wite zee for ze kyngdom is nyz/ treuely I seye to zou ·  
for þis generacoñ schal not passe: til alle þingis ben done/  
heuene & erþe schulen passe: soþely my wordis schulen not  
passe// ¶ Forsoþe perseyue zee (or take zee heede) to zou self:  
leste parauenture zoure hertis ben greuede wip glotonie &  
drunkenesse & by synnes of þis lijf: & þe ilke day come sodeyn-  
ly vpon zou/ forsoþe as a gnare (or snare) it schal come vpon  
þe face of al erþe/ and so walke zee in eche tyme · preyng  
þat zee be hadde worþi for to flee alle þes þingis þat ben to  
come · & for to stonde bifore mannes sone/ forsoþe in dayes  
he was techynge in þe temple: soþely in nyztis he goinge oute ·  
dwelte in þe mounte þat is clepide of olyuete/ and al þe puple  
hastide (or came erly) for to come to hym · in þe temple for  
to here hym//



Forsoþe þe haly day of þerfe looues · þat is seyde C<sup>m</sup> 22<sup>m</sup>  
pask came nyz: and þe prynces of pristis & þe scribis  
souzten hou þei schuiden flee ihū/ forsoþe þei dred-  
den þe pore puple/ soþely sathanas entride into Ju-  
das þat was clepide of scarioth · one of þe twelue: & he wente  
& spac wip þe princes of pristis & maiestratis · how he schulde  
bitraye hym to hem/ and þei ioyzeden & maden couenaunt:  
for to ȝyue hym money: & bihizte/ & he souzte couenablete:  
þat he schulde bitraye hym wip oute cumpanyes/ soþely þe  
day of þerfe looues came: in þe whiche it was nede pask (þat  
is sacrifice of pask) for to be slayne/ and he sente petre & Ion  
seyng/ zee goinge make reedy to vs pask: þat we ete/ and  
þei seyden/ wher wolte þou we make reedy? and he seyde to  
hem/

## Luke

hem/ lo zou entrynge into þe cytee · summan berynge a vessel of water schal come azenes zou/ sue zee hym into þe hous · into whiche he entriþ; and zee schulen seye to þe housbonde man of þe hous/ þe mayster seiþ to þee/ where is þe herbergerie; where I schal ete paske wiþ my disciplis; and he schal schewe to zou a greet souppynge place · strewide; & þere make zee reedy/ soþely þei goinge · founden as he seyde to hem; and þei maden reedy paske/ and whanne þe houre was made; he sate to þe mete · & twelue apostlis wiþ hym/ and he seiþ to hem/ wiþ desire I haue desiride · for to ete wiþ zou þis pask; bifore I suffre/ forsoþe I seye to zou for fro þis tyme I schal not ete it; til it be fulfild in þe rewme of god/ and þe cuppe taken; he dide graces & seyde/ take zee & departe zee amonge zou/ soþely I seye to zou · I schal not drynke of þe generacon of þis vyne; til þe rewme of god come/ and þe breed taken he dide graces (or þankyngis) & brake & zawe to hem seyinge/ þis is my body þat for zou schal be zouen/ do zee þis þing into my comemoracō (or into mynde) of me/ also & þe chalice · aftir þat he had soupyde; seyinge/ þis cuppe is þe newe testament in my blood · þat schal be schedde for zou/ neþeles lo þe hande of a man bitrayinge me; is wiþ me in þe boorde/ and soþely mannes sone goiþ; aftir þat is diffynede (or determynede)/ neþeles wo to þat man; by whom he schal be bitrapede/ & þei bigunnen for to seke amonge hem · who it was of hem; þat was to do þis þing// ¶ And strif is made amonge hem · whiche of hem schulde be seen for to be more/ soþely he seyde to hem/ kyngis of folkis ben lordis (or lordeschipen) of hem/ & þei þat haue power vpon hem; ben clepide gode doers (or gode zpuers)/ forsoþe zee not so/ but he þat is more in zou; be made as zonger/ and he þat is bifore goer; as a seruaut/ for whi who is more; he þat restiþ or he þat mynystriþ; wher not he þat restiþ; forsoþe I am in þe mydle of zou; as he þat mynystriþ/ soþely zee ben þat haue dwellide wiþ me in my temptacon; & I dispose to zou · as & my fadir haþ disposide to

## Luke

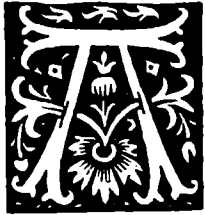
to me a rewme: þat zee ete & drynke on my boorde in my  
rewme · & sitte on trones demynge þe twelue kynredis of isrl/  
forsoþe þe lorde seyde to Symount/ Symount lo sathanas haþ  
aride zou þat he schulde redle as whete/ soþely I haue preyede  
for þee: þat þi feiþ fayle not/ and þou sumtyme conuertide:  
conferme þi breþeren/ þe whiche seyde to hym/ lorde I am  
reedy wiþ þee for to go into prisoune & into deþ/ and he seyde/  
I seye to þee petre · þe cocke schal not crowe to day: til þou  
þries forsake · for to haue knowen me/ and he seyde to hem/  
whanne I sente zou wiþ ouden sachel & scrippe & schoon · wher  
any þing faylide to zou/ and þei seyden/ no þing/ þerfore he  
seyde to hem/ but now he þat haþ a sachel: take also & a  
scrippe/ & he þat haþ not: selle his coot & bie a swerde/ soþely  
I seye to zou/ for zit it bihoueþ þat þat þing þat is writen ·  
for to be fulfilde in me/ and wiþ wickide men he is putte (or  
demyde)/ forsoþe þo þingis þat ben of me: haue ende/ & þei  
seyden/ lorde lo two swerdis heere/ & he seyde to hem/ it is  
ynow/ and he gone oute: wente astir custum into þe hil of  
olyues/ soþely & disciplis sueden hym/ and whanne he came  
to þe place: he seyde to hem/ preye zee · leste zee fallen into  
temptacioune/ and he is taken awey fro hem: how myche a  
stones caste/ & þe knees putte: he preyede seyinge/ fadir zit  
þou wolte: turne ouer þis cuppe fro me/ neþeles not my wille  
be done: but þin/ forsoþe an aungel apperide to hym fro he-  
uene: confortynge hym/ and he made in agonye (or striff):  
preyede lenger/ and his swote is made as dropis of blode  
rennyng doune into þe erþe/ and whanne he hadde risen fro  
preyer · & had comen to his disciplis: he fonde hem slepyng  
for heuynesse/ and he seiþ to hem/ what slepen/ rise zee · &  
preye zee · þat zee falle not into temptacon// ¶ zit hym spek-  
ynge: lo a cumpanye · & he þat was clepide Judas one of þe  
twelue: wente bifore hem/ and he came nyȝ to ihū: þat he  
schulde kyſse hym/ soþely ihc seyde to hym/ Judas wiþ a cosse  
þou bitrayest mannes sone/ soþely þei þat weren aboute hym:  
seinge

## Luke

seinge þat þat was to come/ seyden to hym/ lorde zif we smyten in swerde/ and one of hem smote þe seruaunt of þe prynce of pristis/ and kitte of his litil rizt ere/ forsoþe ihc answerynge seih/ suffre zee til hidir/ and whanne he hadde touchide his litil ere/ he helide hym/ forsoþe ihc seyde to hem þat camen to hym • þe prynces of pristis & magistratis (or mayres) of þe temple & eldre men/ as to a þeef zee hane gon oute wiþ swardis & staues/ whanne I was eche day wiþ zou in þe temple/ zee streizten not oute handis into me/ but þis is zoure houre • & þe power of dirkenessis/ soþely þei takynge hym/ ledde to þe hous of þe prynce of pristis/ petre forsoþe suede hym afer/ soþely a sijr kyndelide in þe mydle floor (or greet hous) and hem sittynge aboute/ petre was in þe mydle of hem/ whom whanne sum hande mayden had seen sittynge at þe lizte & had biholden hym/ sche seyde/ and þis was wiþ hym/ and he denyede hym seyinge/ womman I knewe not hym/ & aftir a litil anoper man seinge hym seyde/ and þou art of hem/ petre forsoþe seih/ o man I am not/ and a space made as of one houre • soþely anoper affermyde/ seyinge/ treuely & þis was wiþ hym/ for whi & he was of galilee/ and petre seih/ man I noot what þou seist/ and anone zit hym spekynge/ a cocke crewe/ and þe lorde turnede azen/ bihelde petre/ and petre hadde mynde on þe worde of ihu as he had seyde • for bifore þe cocke crowe/ þries þou schalt denye me/ & petre gon forþ/ wepte bittirly/ and þe men þat helden hym • scorneden hym smytnge (or beetynge) hym/ and þei veyliden (or hidden) hym • & smyten his face • & ariden hym seyinge/ prophecie þou • who is it þat smote þee/ also many oþer þingis þei blasfemynge/ seyden azenes hym/ and as þe day was made/ þe eldre men of þe puple & prynces of pristis & þe scribis camen to gedir & ledde hym into þe counseyl seyinge/ zif þou art crist seye to us/ & he seih to hem/ zif I schal seye to zou/ zee schulen not bileue to me/ soþely & zif I schal axe/ zee schulen not answere to me • neþer zee schulen leue/ forsoþe aftir þis tyme/

## Luke

tyme: mannes sone schal be sittynge on þe rȳt halfe of þe  
vertue of god/ þerfore alle seyden/ þerfore þou art þe sone of  
god/ þe whiche seiþ/ zee seyn: for I am/ and þei seyden what  
zit desire we witnessynge/ forsoþe we oure self hane herde of  
his mouþ//



And al þe multitude of hem risynge: ledde hym to C<sup>m</sup> 23<sup>m</sup>  
pilate/ forsoþe þei bigunnen for to accuse hym •  
seyinge/ we haue founden þis turnynge vpsodoune  
oure folc: and forbedynge tribute for to be zouen  
to cesar • & seyinge hym self for to be c̄st kynge/ forsoþe pilate  
aride hym seyinge/ art þou kynge of iewis/ and he answerynge  
seiþ/ þou seist/ forsoþe pilate seiþ to þe prynces of pristis: & to  
þe cumpanyes of puple/ I fynde no þing of cause in þis man/  
and þei weren strengere seyinge/ he moueþ togedir þe puple  
techyng þoruȝ al Jude: bigynnyng fro galilee til hidir/ pilate  
forsoþe herynge galilee: aride zif he were a man of galilee/ &  
as he knewe þat he was of þe power of heroude: he sente hym  
azen to heroude • þe whiche & he was at irlm þes dayes/ for-  
soþe hym seen: heroude ioyede ful myche/ for he was of myche  
tyme coueptyng for to here hym • for þat he herde manye  
þingis of hym: and he hopide for to se sum tokēn for to be  
made of hym/ soþely he aride hym in many wordis/ and he  
no þing answeride to hym// ¶ Forsoþe þe prynces of pristis  
& scribis stoden stidfastly accusyng hym/ soþely heroude for-  
soke (or dispiside) hym wiþ his ooste • & scornede hym • cloþide  
wiþ a white cloþ • & sente azen to pilate/ and heroude & pi-  
late ben made frendis in þe ilke day/ for whi bifore þei weren  
enemyes togedir/ pilate soþely þe prynces of pristis & magis-  
tratis of þe puple clepide to gedir seyde to hem/ zee hane  
offride to me þis man • as turnynge aweye þe puple: & lo I  
aringe bifore zou • fynde no cause in þis man of þes þingis in  
whiche zee accusen hym • but neþer heroude/ for whi I azen  
sente zou to hym: & lo no þing worþi þe deþ is done in hym/



## Luke

¶ I schal leese hym amendide (or delyueride) hym chastifide/  
forsoþe he hadde nede for to dysmytte (or delyuer) to hem one  
by þe feest day/ soþely al þe cumpange criede to gedir: seyinge/  
do hym away: and delyuer to hym barrabas/ þe whiche was  
sente into prysonne for sum seducōn (or distourblyng) made  
in þe cytee · & for mansleinge/ forsoþe eftesone pilate spac to  
hem willyng for to delyuer ihū/ & þei vnder crieden seyinge/  
crucifie crucifie hym/ soþely þe þridde tyme he seyde to hem/  
soþely what of euyl þing haþ þis done? ¶ I fynde no cause of  
deþ in hym/ þerfore ¶ I schal chastise hym · & delyuer/ and þei  
conteyneden wiþ greet voyces aringe · þat he schulde be cru-  
cifiede/ and þe voyces of hem waren stronge/ and pilate de-  
myde here aringe for to be done/ Soþely he delyueride to hem  
hym þat for mansleinge & seducōn was sente into prisoun ·  
whom þei axiden · soþely he bitoke ihū to here wille/ and  
whanne þei ledde hym þei tooken summan Symount of  
cirenene compng fro þe toune · & þei puttiden to hym a crosse  
for to bere after Ihū/ soþely þer suede hym myche cumpange  
of puple · & of wymmen þat weyliden & mourneden hym/  
soþely ihc turnede to hem: seyde/ douztris of iherlām nyl zee  
wepe vpon me: but wepe zee on zou self & on zoure sones/ for  
lo dayes schulen come · in whiche it schal be seyde/ blesside be  
bareyne wymmen · & þe wombis þat haue not gendride · & þe  
tetis þat haue not zouen souke/ þanne þei schulen bygynne  
for to seye to mounteyns falle zee doune on vs: and to smale  
hilles couer zee vs/ for zif in a greene tree þei done þis þing:  
what schal be done in a drie? Soþely and oþer two wickide  
men weren ledde wiþ hym: þat þei schulden be slayne/ and  
aftir þat þei camen into a place · þat is clepide of caluarie:  
þere þei crucifieden hym/ and þe þeefes: one on þe rizthalse ·  
& þe toþer on þe listehalse/ forsoþe Ihc seyde/ fadir forþyue  
to hem: for þei witen not what þei done/ forsoþe þei depart-  
yng his cloþes: senten lottis/ & þe puple stood abidyng · & þe  
prynces scorneden hym wiþ hem seyinge/ oþer men he made  
saaf:

## Luke

saaf: make he hym self saaf/ zif þis be crist þe chosen of god/  
forsoþe & knyztis scorneden hym comynge nyȝ · & offreden  
vynegre to hym · seyinge/ zif þou art kyng of iewis: make  
þee saaf/ forsoþe & þe superscripcōn was writen on hym wiþ  
greec lettris · of latyn & of ebreu/ þis is ih̄c kyng of iewis/  
forsoþe one of þe þeefes þat hangiden: blasfemyde hym sey-  
inge/ zif þou art c̄st: make þi self saaf & vs/ soþely þe oþer  
answerynge: blamyde hym seyinge/ neþer þou dredist god:  
þat þou art in þe same dampnacōn/ and treuely we iustly/ for  
whi we haue receyuede worþi þingis to dedis: soþely he þis  
no þing of euyl/ and he seyde to Jhū/ lorde haue mynde of  
me: whan þou schalt come into þi kyngdom/ and Jh̄c seyde  
to hym/ treuely I seye to þee: þis day þou schalt be wiþ me in  
paradise/ soþely it was almost þe sirte houre (or vndrun)/ and  
dirkenessis ben made in al þe worlde: til þe nyȝte houre (or  
none)/ and þe sunne is made dirke: & þe beyle of þe temple is  
kitte in þe mydle/ and ih̄c cryinge wiþ greet voyce: seiþ/ fadir  
into þin handis · I bitake my spirit/ and he seyinge þes þingis:  
fente oute þe spirit (or diede)/ and centurio seyinge þat þing  
þat was done: glorifiede god seyinge/ verreyly þis man was  
iuste/ and al þe cumpanye of hem þat weren here to gedir at  
þis spectacle · & sizen þo þingis þat weren done: smytynge here  
brestis turneden azen/ forsoþe alle his knowe stoden afer: and  
wymmen þat sueden hym fro galilee · seinge þes þingis/ and  
lo a man Joseph by name · þat was a decurioune (or haupnge  
ten vndre hym) · a good man & iuste/ and þis man consentide  
not to þe counseyl & dedis of hem of armathie a cytee of Judee:  
þe whiche & he abode þe kyngdom of god/ þis came nyȝe to  
pilate: and aride þe body of Jhū/ and wlappide it done doune  
in a linnen clooth · & puttide hym in a graue hewen · þe  
whiche not zit any man was putte/ and þe day was para-  
ceues · (þat is euen of þe holy day) · and þe saboth bigan to  
schyne/ soþely þe wymmen supnge þat camen wiþ hym fro  
galilee: sizen þe graue · & how his body was putte/ and þei  
turnynge

## Luke

turnynge azen: maden redy swete spices & oynementis/ and  
sophely in þe saboth þei restiden aftir þe maundement//

C<sup>m</sup> 24<sup>m</sup>



Forsoþe in one of þe wijk ful erly þei camen to þe  
graue · bryngynge swete spices · þat þei hadden  
made reedy/ and þei founden þe stoon turnyde  
away fro þe graue: and þei gon in founden not þe  
body of Ihu/ and it is done þe while þei in þouzte weren  
astonyede of þis þing: lo two men stoden bisides hem in schyn-  
nyng clooth/ sophely whanne þei dredden · & botwiden here sem-  
blaunt into þe erþe: þei seyden to hem/ what seeken zee þe  
lyuynge wiþ deade? he is not here: but haþ risen/ haue zee  
mynde how he spac to zou · whan he was zit in galilee · sey-  
inge/ for it bihoueþ mannes sone to be bitaken into þe handis  
of synful men & to be crucifiede · & þe þridde day for to rise  
azen/ and þei biþouzten on his wordis/ and þei gone azen fro  
þe graue: tolden alle þes þingis to þe elleuene & to alle oþer/  
forsoþe þer was mary maudeleyn & Joon & mary of James &  
oþer wymmen þat weren wiþ hem · þat seyde to apostlis þes  
þingis/ and þes wordis ben seen bifore hem as madnessis:  
and þei bileueden not to hem// ¶ Forsoþe petre rysynge ran  
to þe graue · & he botwynge doune size þe lynnyn cloþes (or  
schetis) putte al one: and he wente by hym self wondrynge  
þat þat was done// ¶ And lo two of hem wenten in þat day  
into a castel þat was fro ierlm̄ in þe space of sixty furlongis ·  
by name emaus · & þei spaken to gedir of alle þes þingis þat  
hadden bifalle/ and it is done þe while þei talkeden (or fable-  
den) & by hym self souzten/ & ihc̄ hym self neyzinge wente wiþ  
hem/ sophely here yzen weren holde · lest þei knewen/ and he  
seih to hem/ what ben þes wordis þat zee speken togedir wan-  
drynge · & zee ben sorowful/ and one to whom þe name was  
cleophas answerynge: seyde/ þou al one art a pilgrym in  
ierlm̄ · & hast þou not knowen what þingis ben done in it in  
þes dayes? to whom he seyde what? and þei seyden to hym/  
of

## Luke

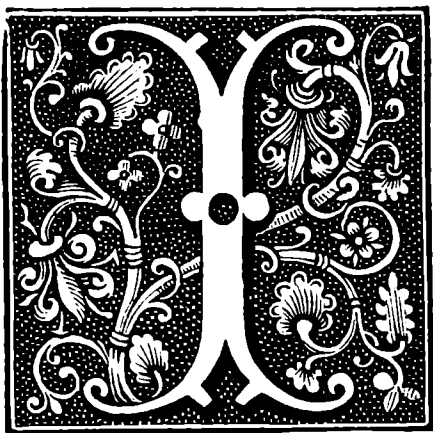
of Ihu of nazareth þat was a man prophet myzty in worde & werke · bifore god & al þe puple/ & how þe hizeſt priſtis & oure prynces bitoken hym into dampnacioune of deþ · and crucifieden hym/ forſoþe we hopeden he was to bie azen iſrl/ and now vpon alle þes þingis þe þridde day is to day þat þes þingis ben done/ but & ſumme wymmen of oures maden vs aferde · þe whiche bifore þe lizte weren at þe graue/ and his body not founden/ þei camen ſeyinge hem alſo for to haue ſeen a ſizte of aungels · þe whiche ſeyn hym for to lyue/ and ſummen of oures wenten to þe graue · & ſo þei founden as þe wymmen ſeyden/ but hym þei founden not/ & he ſeyde to hem/ o fooliſ & ſlowe of herte for to bileue in alle þingis þat þe prophetis haue ſpoken/ wheþer it bihoſte not criſt for to ſuffre · & ſo to entre into his glorie/ and he bygynnyng at moyſes & alle þe prophetis/ interpretide (or declaride) to hem in alle ſcriptures þat weren of hym/ and þei camen nyȝ to þe caſtel whider þei wenten/ and he made countenaunce hym for to go forþir/ and þei conſtreyneden hym ſeyinge/ dwelle wiþ vs · for it drawiþ to nyȝt/ & þe day is nowe bowide doune/ & he entride in wiþ hem/ and it is done þe while he reſtide wiþ hem at mete/ he took brede & bleſſide & brake & dreſſide to hem/ and þe pȝen of hem ben openyde/ and þei knewen hym & he vanyſchide fro here pȝen/ and þei ſeyden to gedir/ wher oure herte was not brennyng in vs · þe while he ſpac in þe weye · & openyde to vs ſcriptures/ and þei ryſynge in þe ſame houre/ wenten azen to iſrlm & founden elleuene gederide to gedir · & hem þat weren wiþ hem ſeyinge/ for þe lorde roſe verreyly & apperide to Symount/ and þei tolden what þingis weren done in þe weye · & how þei knewen hym in brekynge of breede/ forſoþe þe while þei ſpaken þes þingis · Ihu ſtood in þe mydle of hem/ and ſeyde to hem/ pees to ȝou/ I am nyl zee drede/ ſoþely þei diſtourblide & agaſt/ geſſide hem for to ſe a ſpirit/ and he ſeyde to hem/ what ben zee turblide · & þouȝtis ſteȝzen vp into ȝoure hertis/ ſe zee myn handis & my feet/

for

## Luke

for I my self am/ feele zee & se zee · for a spirit haþ not  
fleysche & boones: as zee seen me for to haue/ and whanne he  
had seyde þis þing: he schewide handis & feet/ forsoþe zit hem  
not bileuyng · & wondryng for ioþe: he seyde/ haue zee here  
any þing þat schal be eten/ and þei offreden to hym a parte  
of fische rostide: and a combe of honye/ and whanne he had  
eten bifore hem: he takyng þe relyfes · ȝaue to hem/ and he  
seyde to hem/ þes ben þe wordis þat I spac to ȝou whan I  
was zit wiþ ȝou/ for it is nede alle þingis to be fulfild · þat  
ben writen in þe lawe of moyses · & in prophetis & in psalmes  
of me/ þanne he openyde to hem witte: þat þei schulden vn-  
derstonde scriptures/ & he seyde to hem/ for þus it is writen · &  
þus it bihoſte cōst for to suffre · & rise aȝen fro deade þe þridde  
day · & penaunce & remysſiō of synnes for to be prechide in  
his name into alle folkis · men bigynnyng fro ierlīm/ forsoþe  
zee ben witnessis of þes þingis/ and I schal sende þe bihizte  
þing of my fadir into ȝou/ soþely sitte zee in þe cytee: til þat  
zee be cloþide wiþ vertue from an hize/ forsoþe he ledde hem  
forþe into bethanye · & his hondis lifte vp: he bleſside hem/ and  
it is done þe while he bleſside hem: he departide fro hem &  
was borne into heuene/ and þei worschippyng · wenten aȝen  
into ierlīm wiþ greet ioþe: and weren euermore in þe temple  
herpyng & blesſyng god//

## ye euuangelie of Ioon



**I**n þe bygynnynge was þe worde (þat is C<sup>m</sup> 1<sup>m</sup>  
goddis sone)/ and þe worde was at  
god · & god was þe worde/ þis was in  
þe bigynnynge at god/ alle þingis ben  
made by hym; and wiþ outen hym is  
made nouzt/ þat þing þat is made; in  
hym was lijf/ and þe lijf was þe lizte of  
men/ and þe lizte schyneþ in dirkenessis  
& dirkenessis comprehendē (or taken) not it/ a man was sente  
fro god; to whom þe name was ioon/ þis man came into wit-  
nessynge · þat he schulde bere witnessynge of þe lizt · þat alle  
men schulde bileue by hym/ he was not þe lizt; but þat he  
schulde bere witnessynge of þe lizt · it was verrey lizte þe  
whiche liztenē eche man comynge into þis worlde/ he was  
in þe worlde · & þe worlde was made by hym; and þe worlde  
knewe hym not/ he came into his owne þingis; and hes re-  
cepueden hym not/ forsoþe how manye euer recepueden hym;  
he ȝaue to hem power for to be made þe sones of god; to hem  
þat bileueden in his name/ þe whiche not of bloodis · neþer of  
wille of fleysche · neþer of wille of man; but ben borne of god/  
and þe worde (þat is goddis sone); is made fleysche (or man) ·  
& haþ dwellide in vs/ and we hane seen þe glorie of hym; þe  
glorie as of þe one bigoten of þe fadir/ þe sone ful of grace &  
treuþe// ¶ Ioon berip witnessynge of hym; and criep seyinge/  
þis it was of whom I seyde/ he þat is to come astir me · is  
made bifore me · for he was þe former þan I/ and of þe plenty  
of hym; we alle hane taken & grace for grace/ for þe lawe is  
ȝouen by moyses; forsoþe grace & treuþe is made by ihū crist/  
no man euer sȝe god · no but þe one bigoten sone þat is in þe  
bosum of þe fadir; he haþ tolde oute/ and þis is þe witnessynge  
of

## Joon

of Joon • whanne Jewis senten fro irlm pristin & dekenes to hym: þat þei schulden are hym/ who art þou/ and he knowelechide & denpede not/ and he knowelechide: for I am not crist/ and þei axiden hym/ what þerfore art þou helie? and he seyde I am not/ art þou a prophete? and he answeride/ nay/ þerfore þei seyden to hym/ who art þou: þat we ȝyue answere to þes þat senten vs/ what seist þou of þi self? he seih/ I (am) a voyce of (a man) cryinge in deserte: dresse zee þe weye of þe lorde • as ysaie þe prophete seyde/ and þei þat weren sente: weren of þe pharisees/ and þei axiden hym & seyden to hym/ what þerfore baptisist þou • zif þou art not crist • neþer helie • neþer a prophete? Joon answeride to hem seyinge/ I baptise in water • soþely þe mydil (man) of ȝou stood whom zee knewen not/ he it is þat aftir me is to come • þat is made bifore me • of whom I am not worþi þat I vnbynde þe þwonge of his schoo/ þes þingis ben done in bethanye ouer iordan: where Joon was baptisynge/ another day Joon siȝe ihū comynge to hym: and he seih/ lo þe lombe of god: lo þat doiþ away þe synnes of þe worlde/ þis is he of whom I seyde/ aftir me cometh a man þat is made bifore me • for he was þe former þan I/ I knewe hym not/ but þat he be schewide in isrl þerfore I came baptisynge in water/ and Joon bare witnessynge: seyinge/ for I siȝe þe spirit comynge as a culuer from heuene • & dwellynge vpon hym • & I knewe hym not/ but he þat sente me for to baptise in water: seyde to me/ vpon whom þou schalt se þe spirit comynge doune • & dwellynge vpon hym • þis is it þat baptisih in þe holy goost/ and I siȝe & bare witnessynge • for þis is þe sone of god// ¶ Another day Joon stode & two of his disciplis/ and he biholdynge ihū walkynge: seih/ lo þe lombe of god/ and two disciplis herden hym spekyng: and folowiden ihū/ soþely ihc conuertide (or turnyde aȝen) • & seinge hem supynge hym: seih to hem/ what seeken zee? þe whiche seyden to hym/ raby þat is interpretide mayster • where dwellest þou? he seith to hem/ come zee & se zee/ þei

## Joon

hei camen & sizen where he dwellide: and dwelten at hym in  
 þat day/ soþely þe houre was at þe tenþe/ forsoþe andrew  
 broþer of Symount petre was one of þe two þat herden of  
 Joon: and hadden suede hym/ þis sonde firste his broþer sy-  
 mount: and he seiþ/ we haue founden messias · þat is inter-  
 pretide crist/ and he ledde hym to Jhū/ soþely biholdynge hym:  
 seyde/ þou art symount þe sone of Johanna · þou schalt be cle-  
 pide cephas · þat is interpretide petre/ forsoþe on þe morowe  
 he wolde gon oute into galilee: and he sonde philip/ and Jh̄c  
 seiþ to hym sue þou me/ philip was of bethsayda þe cytee of  
 andrew & petre/ Philip sonde nathanael: and he seiþ to hym/  
 we haue founden Jhū þe sone of Joseph of nazareth · whom  
 moyses wrote in þe lawe & prophetis/ and nathanael seyde to  
 hym/ of nazareth may sum þing of good be/ Philip seiþ to  
 hym/ come & se/ and Jh̄c sise nathanael comynge to hym: and  
 seiþ to hym/ lo verreyly a man of isrl · in whom is no gile/  
 nathanael seiþ to hym/ wher of hast þou knowen me/ Jh̄c an-  
 sweride & seiþ to hym/ bifore þat philip clepide þee · whanne  
 þou were vndre þe fyge tree: I sise þee/ nathanael answeride  
 to hym: & seiþ raby · þou art þe sone of god: þou art kyng of  
 isrl/ Jh̄c answeride & seyde to hym/ for I seyde to þee · I sise  
 þee vndre þe fyge tree: þou bileuest/ þou schalt se more þan  
 þes þingis/ and he seyde to hem/ treuely I seye to zou · zee  
 schulen se heuene openyde · & þe aungels of god stepynge vp  
 & comynge doune vpon mannes sone//



And þe þridde day weddyngis ben made in þe chane C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>  
 of cuntre of galilee: and þe modir of ihū was þere/  
 soþely Jh̄c is clepide & his disciplis to þe wed-  
 dyngis/ and wijn saylynge: þe modir of ihū seyde  
 to hym/ þei haue not wijn/ and Jh̄c seiþ to hire/ what to me &  
 to þee womman? myn houre came not zit/ þe modir of hym  
 seiþ to þe mynystres/ what euer þing I schal seye to zou: do zee/  
 forsoþe þere weren putte fire stonen pottis aftir þe clenſing of



## Joan

iewis: takyng eche two or þre mesures/ Jh̄c seip to hem/ fille  
zee þe pottis wiþ water/ and þei filliden hem vnto þe hizest  
parte/ & ih̄c seyde to hem/ draw zee now & berip to architric-  
lyn (þat is prynce of þe hous of þre stagis)/ and þei taken/  
and as architriclyn tastide þe water made wijn · & he wiste not  
wher of it was · soþely þe mynystres wisten þat drowen þe  
water: architriclyn clepiþ þe spouse & seip to hym/ eche man  
puttiþ firste good wijn · and whanne men schulen be fulfildes:  
þan þat þat is worse/ soþely þou hast kepte good wyn vnto  
nowe/ Jh̄c dide þis bigynnyng of signes in þe chane of gali-  
lee · & schewide his glorie: & his disciplis bileueden into hym/  
aftir þes þingis he came doune to capharnaum · & his modir &  
his breþeren & his disciplis: & þei dwelten here not manye  
dages/ and þe paske of iewis was nyȝ: and ih̄c wente vp to  
irlm̄/ & he fonde in þe temple men sellynge scheep & oren &  
culueris & money chaungers sittynge/ and whanne he hadde  
made of smale coordis as a scourge: he caste oute alle of þe  
temple · & scheep & oren/ and he schedde oute money of chaun-  
gers: and turnede vpsodoune þe boordis/ and he seyde to hem  
þat folden culuers/ takip awey hens þes þingis · & nyl zee  
make þe hous of my fadir: an hous of marchaundise/ forsoþe  
his disciplis hadden mynde: for it is writen/ þe zeele (or fer-  
uoure of loue) of þin hous haþ eten me/ þerfore þe iewes an-  
sweriden & seyden to hym/ what signe (or token) schewist þou  
to vs · for þou doist þis þingis/ Jh̄c answeride & seyde to hem/  
vndo zee þis temple · & in þre dages I schal reyse it azen/ þer-  
fore þe iewis seyden/ in fourty & sire zeer þis temple is bil-  
dide: and þou in þre dages schalt azen / forsoþe  
he seyde of þe temple of his body · (þat wiþ outhen compari-  
soun was more)/ þerfore whanne he had risen fro deade  
(men): his disciplis hadden mynde · for he seyde þis þing/ and  
þei bileueden to þe scripture: and to þe worde þat ih̄c seyde//  
**¶** forsoþe whanne ih̄c was at irlm̄ in paske in þe feest day ·  
many bileueden in his name · seinge þe signes of hym þat he  
dide/

## Joan

dide/ soþely ihc̃ hym self · bileefede not hym self to hem · for  
þat he knewe alle men · & for it was not neede to hym: þat  
any man schulde bere witnessyng of man/ soþely he wiste  
what was in man//



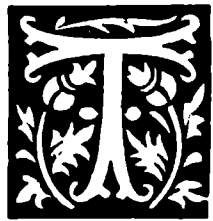
**E**rsoþe þer was a man of þe pharisees nychodeme C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>  
by name: a prynce of iewis/ he came to Ihu in þe  
nyzt: and seyde to hym/ raby we witen · for of god  
þou hast comen mayster/ Soþely no man may do  
þes signes þat þou doist: but zif god were wih hym/ Ihc̃ an-  
sweride & seyde to hym/ treuly treuly I seye to þee · but zif a  
man schal be borne azen: he may not se þe kyngdom of god/  
nychodeme seyde to hym/ how may a man be borne whanne  
he olde? wher he may entre azen into his modir wombe · & be  
borne azen? Ihc̃ answeride/ treuly treuly I seye to þee · but  
zif a man schal be borne azen of water · & þe holy gost: he may  
not entre into þe kyngdom of god/ þat þat is borne of flesche:  
is flesche/ and þat þat is borne of þe spirit: is spirit/ wondre  
þou not for I seyde to þee it bihoueh þou for to be borne azen/  
þe spirit breþeh (or quykeneþ) where it wole: and þou herest  
his voyce: but þou woste not fro whens he comeþ · or whidir  
it goiþ/ so is eche man þat is borne of þe spirit/ nychodeme  
answeride: and seyde to hym/ how mowne þes þingis be  
done? Ihc̃ answeride & seyde to hym/ art þou a mayster in  
isrl · & knowest not þes þingis? treuely treuly I seye to þee ·  
for þat þat we witen we speken · & þat þat we haue seen · we  
witnessen: & zee taken not oure witnessyng/ zif I haue seyde  
to zou erþely þingis · & zee bileuen not: how zif I schal seye  
to zou heuenely þingis schulen zee bileue? & no man steyzeth  
vp into heuene: but he þat came doune fro heuene · mannes  
sone þat is in heuene/ and as moyses reride vp a serpent in  
deserte: so it bihoues mannes sone for to be reyside vp/ þat  
eche man þat bileueþ into hym perishe not: but haue euer-  
lastyng liif// ¶ Forsoþe god louede so þe worlde · þat he gaue  
his

## Joon

his one bigotten sone · þat eche man þat bileueþ into hym ·  
perische not; but haue euerlastynge lijf/ soþely god sente not  
his sone into þe worlde þat he iuge þe worlde; but þat þe  
worlde be sauede by hym/ he þat bileueþ into hym; is not  
demyde (or dampnyde)/ forsoþe he þat bileueþ not · is now  
demyde; for he bileueþ not in þe name of þe one bigotten sone  
of god/ soþely þis is þe doom/ for lizte came into þe worlde;  
and men loueden more dirkeness þan lizte/ forsoþe here  
werkis weren euyl/ soþely eche man þat doih euyl; hatih lizt/  
and comeþ not to lizt; þat his werke be not reproude (or vn-  
dirnomen)/ soþely he þat doih treuþe · comeþ to lizt · þat his  
werkis be schewide; for þei ben in god/ aftir þes þingis Jh̄c  
came & his disciplis into þe lande of Jude; and here he dwel-  
lide wiþ hem & baptizide/ soþeli Joon was baptisynge in  
ennon bisidis salym · for manye watris weren here; and þei  
camen · & weren baptiside/ soþely Joon was not zit sente into  
prisoune/ soþely a question (or aringe) is made of Jones dis-  
ciplis wiþ þe iewis of þe purificacōn (or clensynge)/ and þei  
camen to Joon; and seyden to hym/ raby (or mayster) · he þat  
was wiþ þee ouer Jorden to whom þou hast borne wit-  
nessynge; lo he baptisih · and alle men comen to hym/ Joon  
answeride & seyde/ a man may not take any þing; but zif it  
be zouen to hym/ from heuene/ zee zoure self beren wit-  
nessynge to me þat I seyde I am not c̄st; but for I am sente  
bifore hym/ he þat haþ a spouse (or wiif); is þe spouse (or  
houfbonde)/ forsoþe a frende of þe spouse þat stondih & herih  
hym ioieþ in ioie · for þe voyce of þe spouse/ þerfore in þis  
þing; my ioie is fulfildē/ it bihoueh hym for to ware; forsoþe  
me for to be munyschide (or made lasse)/ he þat came from  
aboue; is vpon alle/ he þat is of þe erþe; spekih of þe erþe/ he  
þat comeþ fro heuene; is aboue alle/ and þis þing þat he siþe  
& herde · he witnessih; & no man takih his witnessynge/ forsoþe  
he þat haþ taken his witnessynge; haþ markide þat god is  
soþefast/ forsoþe he whom god sente; spekih þe wordis of god/  
forsoþe

## Joan

forsoþe not to mesure · god ȝyueþ þe spirit/ þe fadir loueþ þe sone · & he haþ ȝouen alle þingis in his hande/ he þat bileueþ into þe sone · haþ euerlastyng e lif/ forsoþe he þat is vnbeleueful to þe sone · schal not se euerlastyng e lif · but þe wraþþe of god dwelliþ on hym/



Herfore as Ihu knewe þat pharisees herden þat C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>  
Ihu makith mo disciplis & baptisith þan Jon · þouȝ  
ihc baptiside not but his disciplis · he leste Jude &  
wente aȝen into galilee/ soþely it bihouede hym to  
passe by samarie/ þerfore Ihc came by a cytee of samarie ·  
þat is seyde sicar · biȝidis þe maner (or feelde) þat Jacob ȝaue  
to Joseph his sone/ forsoþe þe welle of Jacob was þere/ soþely  
ihc made wery (or faynte) of þe iourney · satte þus at þe  
welle/ soþely þe houre was as þe sirtē (or vndrun)/ a wom-  
man came of samarie for to drawe water/ Ihc seiþ to hire/  
ȝyue me for to drynke/ forsoþe his disciplis hadden gon into  
þe cytee · þat þei schulden bye metis/ þerfore þe ilke womman  
of samarie · seiþ to hym/ how þou whanne þou art a iewe arist  
of me for to drynke · þat am a womman of samarie/ forsoþe  
iewis vsen not to comoune wiþ samaritans/ Ihc answeride &  
seyde to hire/ ȝif þou wistist þe ȝifte of god · & who it is þat  
seiþ to þee · ȝyue to me for to drynke · parauenture þou  
schuldist haue axide of hym · & he schulde haue ȝyue to þee  
quycke water/ þe womman seiþ to hym/ Sire neþer þou hast  
in what þing þou schalt drawe · & þe pitte is deep/ þerfore  
wher of hast þou quicke water/ wher þou art more þan oure  
fadir Jacob þat ȝaue to vs þe pitte · & he dranke þerof · & his  
sones & his beestis/ Ihc answeride & seyde to hir/ eche man  
þat drynkiþ of þis water · schal þirste estesones/ forsoþe he  
þat schal drynke of þe water þat I schal ȝyue to hym · schal  
not þirste into wiþ outen ende/ but þe water þat I schal ȝyue to  
hym · schal be made to hym a welle of spryngyng vp water ·  
into euerlastyng lif/ þe womman seiþ to hym/ sire ȝyue to me  
þis

## Joan

his water þat I þriste not · neþer come hidir for to drauwe/ Jh̄c  
seih to hire/ go clepe þin housbonde & come hidir/ þe womman  
answeride & seyde/ I haue not an housbonde/ Jh̄c seih to hire/  
þou seydist wel · for I haue not an housbonde/ for þou hast  
hadde fyue housbondis/ and he whom þou hast · is not þin  
housbonde/ þis þing þou seydist soþely/ þe womman seih to  
hym/ lorde I se · for þou art a prophete/ oure faderis wor-  
schipeden in þis hil · & zee seyn for at irlm̄ is place · where it  
bihoueh for to worschip/ Jh̄c seih to hire/ womman bileue þou  
to me for þe houre schal come · whanne neþer in þis hil ·  
neþer in irlm̄ · zee schulen preye (or worschip) þe fadir/ zee  
worschipen þat zee witen not · we worschipen þat we witen ·  
for helþe is of Jewis/ but þe houre cometh & now it is · whan  
trewe worschippers schulen worschip þe fadir in spirit & treuþe/  
for whi & þe fadir seekiþ suche · þat schulen worschip hym/  
god is a spirit · & it bihoueh hem þat worschipen hym · for to  
worschip in spirit & treuþe/ þe womman seih to hym/ I wote  
for messyas is comen · þat is seyde crist/ þerfore whanne he  
schal come · he schal telle to vs alle þingis/ Jh̄c seih to hire/ I  
am · þat speke wiþ þee/ and anone his disciplis camen & won-  
driden for he spac wiþ þe womman/ neþeles no man seyde  
what sekist þou · or what spekist þou wiþ hire/ þerfore þe  
womman leste hire water pottle · & wente into þe cytee & seih  
to þe men/ come zee & se zee a man þat seyde to me alle þingis ·  
what euer þingis I haue done/ wher he is crist/ and þei  
wenten oute of þe cytee · and þei camen to hym/ in þe mene-  
while his disciplis preyeden hym seyinge/ raby (or mayster)  
ete/ soþely he seyde to hem/ I haue mete for to ete þat zee  
witen not/ þerfore disciplis seyden to gedir/ wher any man  
brouzte to hym for to ete/ Jh̄c seih to hem/ my mete is þat I  
do þe wille of hym þat sente me · and þat I parfourme þe  
werke of hym/ wher zee seyn not · for zit foure moneþes · ben  
& ripe corne cometh/ lo I seye to zou · lifte vp zoure yzen · &  
se zee þe regiouns (or cuntrees) for nowe þei ben whijt to  
ripe

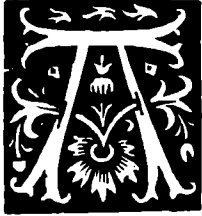
## Joan

ripe corne/ and he þat reepiþ takiþ hijre (or meede): and he þat gediriþ frupte into euerlastynghe lijf/ þat & he þat sowiþ haue ioþe to gedir & he þat reepiþ/ in þis þing soþely is þe worde trewe · for anoþer is þat sowiþ: & anoþer þat reepiþ/ I sente zou for to reepe þat þat zee trauepliden not/ oþer men trauepliden: and zee entriden into here traueplis/ forsoþe of þat cytee mane samaritans bileueden into hym: for þe worde of þe womman berynghe witnessynghe · for he seyde to me alle þingis what euer þingis I dide/ þerfore whanne samaritans camen to hym: þei preyeden hym þat he schulde dwelle þere/ and he dwellide þere two dayes/ and many mo bileueden for his worde · & seyden to þe womman/ for now not for þi speche we bileuen/ forsoþe we hane herde & we witen: for þis is verreyly þe saueour of þe worlde// ¶ Forsoþe aftir two dayes he wente þens · & wente into galilee/ Soþely he bare witnessynghe · for a prophete in his owne cuntre · haþ not honoure (or worschip)/ þerfore whanne he came into galilee: men of galilee receyueden hym · whanne þei hadden seen alle þingis þat he hadde done in ierlīm in þe feest day (or halyday)/ and soþely þei hadden comen to þe feest day/ þerfore he came estesone into þe chane of galilee · wher he made þe water wyn/ and sum litil kyng was: whos sone was sijk at capharnaum/ whanne he þis had herde · þat Ihsū schulde come fro Jude into galilee: he wente to hym & preyede hym · þat he schulde come doune & heele his sone/ forsoþe he bigan for to dye/ þerfore Ihsū seyde to hym/ no but zee schulen se tokenes & grete wonderis: zee bileuen not/ þe litil kyng seiþ to hym/ lorde come doune bifore my sone dye/ Ihsū seiþ to hym/ go þi sone lyueþ/ þe man bileuede to þe worde þat Ihsū seyde to hym: and he wente/ soþely now hym compynge doune: þe seruauntis camen azenes hym · & tolden hym seynghe for his sone lyuede/ þerfore he axide of hem þe houre in whiche he hadde hym better/ & þei seyden to hym/ for zistirday in þe seueneþ houre · þe feuer lefte hym/ þerfore þe fadir knewe þat þe ilke houre it was

## Joon

was in whiche Jh̄c seyde to hym þi sone lyueþ/ and he bi-  
leuede & al his hous/ Jh̄c dide este þis secounde token:  
whanne he came fro Jude into galilee//

C<sup>m</sup> 5<sup>m</sup>



Aftir þis þing was a feest day of iewis: and ih̄c  
wente into irlm̄/ forsoþe in irlm̄ is a stondynge  
water of beestis · þat in ebrewe is namyde bethsay-  
da · haupng fyue litil zatis/ in þis lay a greet mul-  
titude of langewischynge men · blynde & crokide · drie · aby-  
dynge þe styrpge of þe water/ forsoþe þe aungel of þe lorde  
aftir tyme came doune into þe stondynge water: and þe water  
was mouede/ and he þat first came doune in þe cesterne · aftir  
þe mounge of þe water: was made hool · of what sekenesse  
he was holden// ¶ Forsoþe summan was þere haupinge &  
þritty zeeris in his sekenesse/ whanne Jh̄c hadde seen hym lig-  
gynge · & had knowen · for nowe he hadde myche tyme: he  
seih to hym/ wolte þou be made hool? þe siik man answeride  
to hym/ lorde I haue not a man þat whanne þe water is  
turblide · he sende me into þe cesterne/ forsoþe þe while I  
come: anoper goih doune bifore me/ Jh̄c seih to hym/ rise vp  
take þi bed & wandre/ and anone þe man is made hool: &  
took vp his bed & wandride/ and saboth was in þat day/ þer-  
fore þe iewis seyden to hym þat was made hool/ it is saboth  
it is not leueful to þee: for to take þi bed/ he answeride to  
hem/ he þat made me saaf: seyde to me/ take þi bed & wan-  
dre/ þerfore þei axiden hym/ who is þat man þat seyde to þee ·  
take þi bed & wandre/ soþely he þat was made hool: wiste  
not who it was/ forsoþe Jh̄c bomide fro þe cumpanye ordey-  
nyde (or sette) in þe place/ aftirwarde Jh̄c fonde hym in þe  
temple: and seyde to hym/ lo þou art made hool · now nyl  
þou synne · lest any þing bifalle to þee/ þe ilke man wente  
& tolde to þe iewis · for it was Jh̄u þat made hym hool/ þer-  
fore þe iewis pursueden Jh̄u: for he dide þis þing in þe saboth/  
forsoþe Jh̄c answeride to hem/ my fadir worchih til now:

&

## Joon

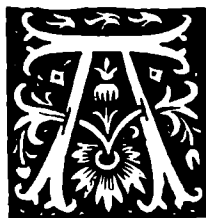
& I wirche/ herfore þanne þe iewis souzten more to flee hym/ for not onely he brake þe saboth • but & he seyde his fadir god • makynge hym euen to god/ and so Jh̄c answeride & seyde to hem/ treuely treuely I seye to zou • þe sone maye not of hym self do any þing; no but þat þing þat he schal se þe fadir doyngē/ what euer þingis soþely he doih; þes þingis also & þe sone doih/ forsoþe þe fadir loueh þe sone; & schewih to hym alle þingis þat he doih/ and he schal schewe to hym more werkis þan þes þat zee wondre/ forsoþe as þe fadir reysih deade men & quykenih so & þe sone quykenih whom he wole/ soþely neþer þe fadir iugih any man; but haþ ȝyue al þe dome to þe sone • þat alle men honoure þe sone • as þei honouren þe fadir/ he þat honoureh not þe sone; honoureh not þe fadir þat sente hym/ treuely treuely I seye to zou • for he þat herih my worde • & bileueh to hym þat sente me; haþ euerlastynge lijf • & comeh not into doom; but passih fro deþ into lijf/ treuely treuely I seye to zou • for þe houre comeh & now it is • whanne deade men schulen here þe voyce of goddis sone; & þei þat heren schulen lyue// ¶ Soþely as þe fadir haþ lijf in hym self; so he ȝaue & to the sone • for to haue lijf in hym self/ and he ȝaue hym power for to make doom; for he is mannes sone/ nyl zee wondre þis þing • for þe houre comeh in whiche alle men þat ben in biriels schulen here þe voyce of goddis sone/ and þei þat haue done good þingis; schulen come forþ into rysynge azen of lijf/ forsoþe þei þat haue done euyl þingis into risynge azen of doom/ I may not of my self do any þing; but as I here I iuge & my doom is iuste for I seek not my wille; but þe wille of þe fadir þat sente me/ ȝif I bere witnessynge of my self; my witnessynge is not trewe/ anoter is þat berih witnessynge of me; and I woot for his witnessynge is trewe þat he berih of me/ zee senten to Joon; and he bare witnessynge to þe trewe/ soþely I take not witnessynge of man; but I seye þes þingis þat zee be saaf/ he was a lanterne brennyngē • & schynnyngē (or ȝyupnyngē) lizte/ forsoþe zee wol-



## Joon

den glade at an houre in his lizte/ soþely I haue more lizt  
 þan Joon/ forsoþe þe werkis þat my fadir ȝaue to me þat I  
 parfourme hem/ þe ilke werkis þat I do beren witnesynge of  
 me/ for þe fadir sente me/ and þe fadir þat sente me/ he bare  
 witnesynge of me/ neþer ȝee herden euer his voyce/ neþer  
 sizen his likenesse (or fourme)/ and ȝee hane not his worde  
 dwellynge in ȝou/ for ȝee bileuen not to hym whom he sente/  
 seeke ȝee scriptures in whiche ȝee wenen for to haue euerlast-  
 ynge lijf/ & þo it ben þat beren witnesynge of me/ and ȝee  
 wolen not come to me/ þat ȝee haue lijf// ¶ I take not clere-  
 nesse of men/ but I haue knowen ȝou · for ȝee haue not þe  
 loue of god in ȝou/ I came in þe name of my fadir/ and ȝee  
 taken not me/ ȝif an oþer schal come in his owne name/ ȝee  
 schulen receyue hym/ how mowne ȝee bileue þat receyuen  
 glorie eche of oþer/ & ȝee seeken not þe glorie þat is of god al  
 one/ nyl ȝee gesse þat I came to accuse ȝou anentis þe fadir/  
 it is moyses þat accusiþ ȝou in whom ȝee hopen/ forsoþe ȝif  
 ȝee bileueden to moyses/ parauenture ȝee schulden bileue & to  
 me/ soþely he wrote of me/ soþely ȝif ȝee bileuen not to his  
 lettris/ how schulen ȝee bileue to my wordis/

C<sup>m</sup> 6<sup>m</sup>



¶ Tir þes þingis Jh̄c wente ouer þe see of galilee ·  
 þat is tiberiadis · & a greet multitude suede hym ·  
 for þei sizen þe tokenes þat he dide on hem þat  
 weren sijk/ þerfore Jh̄c wente into an hil · & satte  
 þere wiþ his disciplis/ forsoþe pask was ful nyȝt/ a feest day of  
 þe iewis/ þerfore whanne Jh̄c hadde lifte vp þe ȝzen & had  
 seen for a greet multitude came to hym/ he seiþ to philip/  
 wherof schulen we bie loues · þat þes men ete/ soþely he seyde  
 þis þing temptynge hym/ forsoþe he wiste what was to do/  
 philip answeride to hym/ þe looues of two hundride pens suf-  
 ficen not to hem · þat eche man take a litil what/ one of his  
 disciplis andrew þe broþer of symount petre seiþ to hym/  
 one childe is here þat haþ fyue barly looues & two fischis · but  
 what

## Joan

what ben þes þingis amonge so many men/ þerfore Jh̄c seiþ/  
make zee men for to sitte at þe mete/ for þere was myche hay  
in þe place/ þerfore men saten at þe mete in nowmbre of fyue  
þousandis/ þerfore Jh̄c took þe fyue looues/ & whanne he had  
done þankyngis/ he departide to men sittynge at þe mete/  
also & of þe fischis/ as myche as þei wolden/ forsoþe as þei  
ben fulfildes/ he seyde to his disciplis/ gadir zee þe relifes þat  
ben lefte • þat þei perische not/ þerfore þei gederiden & fillide  
twelue cofyns of relifes • of þe fyue barley loues & two fischis  
þat leften to hem þat hadden eten/ þerfore þo men whanne  
þei hadden seen þe token (or myracle) þat he had done/ seyden/  
for þis is verrepley a prophete þat is come into þe worlde/  
forsoþe whanne Jh̄u had knowen þat þei weren to come þat  
þei schulden rauysche hym & make hym kyng/ he al one  
steyze eyzt into an hyl/ soþely as euen was made/ his disciplis  
wenten doune to þe see/ and whanne þei hadden steyzede vp  
into þe boot/ þei camen ouer þe see into capharnaum/ and  
dirkenessis weren now made/ and ih̄c had not now comen to  
hem/ forsoþe a greet wynde blowynge/ þe see roos vp/ þer-  
fore whanne þei hadden rowide as fyue & twenty furlongis or  
þritty/ þei sizen Jh̄u walkynge on þe see & to be made nexte  
to þe boot & þei dredde/ soþely he seyde to hem/ I am/ nyl  
zee drede/ þerfore þei wolden take hym into þe boot/ & anone  
þe boot was at þe lande to whiche þei wenten// ¶ On þe toþer  
day þe cumpanye þat stode ouer þe see/ sizen for þer was none  
oper boot þere • no but one/ & for ih̄c entride not wip disciplis  
into þe boot • but his disciplis weren al one • forsoþe oper  
bootis camen fro tiberiaois • bisidis þe place where þei eten  
brede • doinge þankyngis to god/ þerfore whanne þe cum-  
panye had seen for Jh̄u was not þere neþer his disciplis/ þei  
steyzeden into bootis • & camen into capharnaum • seekyng  
Jh̄u/ and whanne þei hadden founden hym ouer þe see/ þei  
seyden to hym/ raby how hast þou comen hidir/ Jh̄c answeride  
to hem & seyde/ treuely treuely I seye to zou • zee seeken me  
not

## Joan

not for zee fizen þe tokenes (or myracles): but for zee eten of looues & ben fulfildē/ wirche zee not mete þat perischē: but þat dwellē into euerlastyngē lijf. þe whiche mete mannes sone ȝyueþ to ȝou/ forsoþe god þe fadir bitokenyde (or markide) hym/ þerfore þei seyden to hym/ what schulen we do. þat we wirche þe werkis of god? Jh̄c answeride & seyde to hem/ þis is þe werke of god. þat zee bileue into hym. whom he sente/ þerfore þei seyden to hym/ þerfore what token dost þou. þat we se. & bileue to þee? what wirchist þou? oure faderis eten manna in deserte: as it is writen/ he ȝaue to hem brede fro heuene for to ete/ þerfore Jh̄c seih to hem/ treuely treuely I seye to ȝou. not moyses ȝaue to ȝou verrey breed fro heuene: but my fadir ȝyueþ to ȝou verrey breed fro heuene/ soþely it is verrey breed þat comēþ doune fro heuene. & ȝyueþ lijf to þe worlde/ þerfore þei seyden/ lorde euermore ȝyue to vs þis breed/ soþely Jh̄c seyde to hem/ I am breed of lijf/ he þat comēþ to me: schal not hungre/ & he þat bileueþ in me: schal neuer þirste/ but I seye to ȝou. for & zee haue seen me: and zee bileueden not/ al þing þat þe fadir ȝyueþ to me: schal come to me/ & I schal not caste oute hym þat comēþ to me/ for I came doune fro heuene. not þat I do my wille: but þe wille of hym þat sente me/ forsoþe þis is wille of hym þat sente me þe fadir: þat alle þing þat þe fadir ȝaue to me. I leese nouzt of it but aȝen reyse it in þe laste dāye/ soþely þis þe wille of my fadir þat sente me. þat eche man þat seþ þe sone & bileueþ into hym: haue euerlastyngē lijf: & I schal aȝen reyse hym: in þe laste dāy/ þerfore ietwis grucchiden of hym: for he had seyde. I am breed þat camen doune from heuene. & þei seyden/ wher þis is not. Jh̄c þe sone of Joseph: whos fadir & modir we haue knowen? þerfore how seih he þis. for I came doune from heuene/ þerfore Jh̄c answeride & seyde to hem/ nyl zee grucche togedir/ no man may come to me: no but þe fadir þat sente me schal drawe hym/ and I schal aȝen reyse hym in þe laste dāye/ it is writen in prophetis.

## Joan

& alle men schulen be able for to be tauzte of god/ eche man  
pat hap herde of þe fadir & lernyde/ comeþ to me/ not for  
any man sise þe fadir · no but þis pat is of god/ þis sise  
þe fadir/ soþely soþely I seye to zou · he þat bileueþ in me/  
hap euerlastyngge lijf/ I am breed of lijf/ zoure faderis eten  
manna in deserte/ and ben deade/ þis is breed comyng doune  
from heuene · pat zif any man schal ete þerof/ he dieþ not/ I  
am quycke breed pat came doune fro heuene/ zif any man  
schal ete of þis breed/ he schal lyue wihouten ende/ & þe breed  
pat I schal zyue/ is my fleysche · for lijf of þe worlde/ þerfore  
þe ietwis chidden togeder seyng/ how may he þis zyue to us  
his fleysche for to ete/ þerfore Jh̄c seih to hem/ treuely treuely  
I seye to zou · no but zee schulen ete þe fleysche of mannes  
sone · & drynke his blood/ zee schulen not haue lijf in zou/ he  
pat etih my fleysche & drynkih my blood/ hap euerlastyngge  
lyfe/ & I schal azen reyse hym in þe laste day/ forsoþe my  
fleysche is verreyly mete/ & my blood is verreyly drynke/ he  
pat etih my fleysche & drynkih my blood/ dwellih in me & I in  
hym/ as my fadir lyuyngge hap sente me/ & I lyue for þe fadir/  
and he þat etih me/ & he schal lyue for me/ þis is breede pat  
came doune fro heuene/ not as zoure faderis eten manna &  
ben deade/ he þat etih þis breed · schal lyue wihouten ende/  
he seyde þes þingis in þe sinagoge/ techyngge in capharnaum/  
þerfore manye of his disciplis heryngge/ seyden/ þis worde is  
harde & who may here hym/ soþely Jh̄c wityngge at hym self ·  
for his disciplis grucchiden of þis þing/ seyde to hem/ þis þing  
sclaunderih zou/ þerfore zif zee schulen se mannes sone step-  
zing vp where he was bifore/ it is þe spirit pat quykeneþ · þe  
fleysche profiteþ no þing/ þe wordis pat I haue spoken to zou/·  
ben spirit & lijf/ but þere ben summe of zou þat bileuen not/  
soþely Jh̄c wiste at þe bigynnyngge · whiche weren bileuynges/  
& who was to bitraye hym/ and he seyde/ þerfore I seye to  
zou · pat no man may come to me/ no but it were zouen to  
hym of my fadir/ fro þis tyme manye of his disciplis wenten  
abak/

## Joan

abak: and nowē wenten not wip hym/ perfore Jh̄c seyde to þe  
twelue/ wher & zee wolen go aweye/ perfore Symon petre  
answeride to hym/ lorde to whom schulen we gon/ þou hast  
wordis of euerlastyngē lijf/ and we hane bileuede & knowen:  
for þou art crist þe sone of god/ perfore Jh̄c answeride to hem/  
wher I chees not zou twelue: and one of zou is a fende/ for-  
soþe he seyde of Judas of Symount scarioth/ forsoþe he þis  
was to bitraye hym: whanne he was one of þe twelue//

C<sup>m</sup> 7<sup>m</sup>



Forsoþe aftir þes þingis Jh̄c walkide into galilee/  
for he wolde not walke into Judee: for Jewis  
souzten for to flee hym/ soþely þer was in þe nerte  
a feest day of Jewis senophogia · (þat is a feest of  
tabernaclis) forsoþe his breþeren seyden to hym/ passe fro  
bens & go into Jude · þat & þi disciplis se þe werkis þat þou  
doist/ forsoþe no man doih any þing in hide place (or pryueþ):  
& he seekih for to be into opyn/ zif þou doist þis þing: schewe  
þi self to þe worlde/ forsoþe neþer his breþeren bileueden into  
hym/ perfore Jh̄c seih to hem/ my tyme came not zit but  
zoure tyme is euermore reedy/ þe worlde may not haue  
hatide/ [ ] soþely it hatih me: for I bere witnessyngē  
þerof · for þe werkis of it ben euyl/ steyze zee vp at þis feest  
day · but I schal not steyze vp at þis feest day · for my tyme is  
not zit fulfilde/ whanne he had seyde þes þingis he dwellte  
in galilee/ forsoþe as his breþeren steyzeden vp at þe feest  
day: þanne & he steyzede vp · not opynly but as in pryueþ/  
perfore þe iewis souzten hym in þe feest day & seyden/ where  
is he/ and myche grucchyngē was of hym: in þe cumpanye  
of puple/ forsoþe summe seyden for he is gode · forsoþe oþer  
seyden naye: but he deceyueþ þe cumpanyes/ neþeles no  
man spak opynly of hym: for dreede of Jewis/ forsoþe nowē  
þe feest day medelyngē (or goinge bitwixe): Jh̄c wente vp  
into þe temple · & tauzte/ and þe iewis wondriden seyingē/  
how can þis (man) lettris · siþen he haþ not lernede/ Jh̄c  
answeride

## Joon

answeride hem and seyde my doctryne is not myn: but his þat sente me/ zif any man wole do his wille: he schal knowe of þe techyng. wher he be of god: or I speke of myself/ he þat spekiþ of hymself: seekiþ his owne glorie/ forsoþe þat seekiþ þe glorie of hym þat sente hym: þis is soþefast & vn-  
rizztwesnesse is not in hym/ wher moyses zaue not a lawe: and no man of zou doiþ þe lawe: what seeken zee for to flee me: þe cumpange answeride & seyde/ þou hast a deupl/ who seekiþ for to flee þee: Jh̄c answeride & seyde to hem/ I haue done one werke: & alle zee wondren/ þerfore moyses zaue to zou circumcision. not for it is of moyses: but of faderis/ & in þe saboth zee circumciden a man/ zif a man take circumcision in þe saboth. þat þe lawe of moyses be not broken: haue zee indignacon or wrapþe to me. for I made al þe man hool in þe saboth: nyl zee deme after þe face but deme zee a rizztful doom/ þerfore summen of irīm seyden/ wher þis is not whom þe iewis seeken for to flee/ and lo he spekiþ openly: & þei seyn no þing to hym/ wher þe prynces knewen verreþly. for þis is crist: but we witen þis man of whens he is/ forsoþe whanne crist schal come: no man woot of whens he is/ þerfore Jh̄c criede in þe temple techyng & seyinge/ and zee witen me of whens I am/ and I came not of my self: but he is trewe þat sente me: whom zee knowen not/ I woot hym. & zif I schal seye for I woot hym not: I schal be lijk to zou a lier/ and I woot hym. for of hym I am: & he sente me/ þerfore þei souzten for to take hym. and no man sente into hym handis. for his houre came not zit/ soþely many of þe cumpange beleueden into hym. & seyden/ whanne c̄st schal come. wher he schal do mo tokenes þan þis doiþ: pharisees herden þe cumpange of puple grucchyng of hym þes þingis/ and þe prynces of pharisees senten mynys̄tris. þat þei schulden take hym/ þerfore ih̄c seyde to hem/ zit a litil tyme I am wip zou: & I go þe fadir þat sente me/ zee schulen seeke me & zee schulen not fynde. & where I am. zee may not come/ þerfor iewis  
seyden

## Joon

seyden to hem self/ whidir is he þis to go: for we schulen not  
fynde hym/ wher he is to go into scaterynge (or distrupinge)  
of heben men: and is to techynge heben men/ what is þis  
worde þe whiche he seyde · zee schulen seeke me · & zee schulen  
not fynde/ & where I am zee may not come// forsoþe in þe  
laste day of þe greet feste: Ih̄c stode & criede seyinge/ zif any  
man þristiþ: come he to me & drynke he/ he þat bileueþ into  
me as þe scripture seiþ: flodis of quicke water schulen flowe of  
his wombe/ soþely he seyde þis þing of þe holy goſt · whom  
men bileuynge into hym · weren to take/ forsoþe þe spirit was  
not zit zouen: for ih̄c was not zit glorifiede/ þerfore of þat  
cumpanye whan þei hadden herde þes wordis of hym þei sey-  
den/ þis is verreyly a prophete/ oþer seyden · þis is crist/ for-  
soþe summe seyden · wher crist comeþ fro galilee: wher þe  
scripture seiþ not þat of þe seed of dauid · & of þe castel of beth-  
lem where dauid was crist comeþ: and so discencon is made  
in þe cumpanye for hym/ forsoþe summe of hem wolden haue  
taken hym: but no man sente to handis vpon hym/ þerfore  
þe mynystris camen to þe bischopes & to þe pharisees: and  
þei seyden to hem/ whi brouzten zee not hym: þe mynystris  
answeriden/ neuer man spac so: as þis spekith/ þerfore þe  
pharisees answeriden to hem/ wher & zee ben deceyuede:  
wher any of þe prynces bileueden into hym · or of þe phari-  
sees: but þis cumpanye of puple þat knewe not þe lawe: ben  
curside/ nychodeme seiþ to hem · he þat came to hym by nyzt:  
þat was one of hem/ wher oure lawe demeth a man · no but  
firſte it haue herde of hym: and knowe what he doith/ þei an-  
sweriden & seyden to hym/ wher & þou art a man of galilee:  
seeke þou scriptures & se: for a prophete risith not of galilee/  
and þei turneden azen eche into his owne hous//

Forsoþe

## Joon



**F**orsope Jh̄c wente into þe mounte of olyuete: and C<sup>m</sup> 8<sup>m</sup>  
 erly este he came into þe temple/ & al þe puple  
 came to hym: & he sittynge tauzte hem/ forsope  
 scribis & pharisees ledden to a womman taken in  
 auoutrie: & sette hire into þe mydel: and seyde to hym/ mayf-  
 ter þis womman is nowe taken in auoutrie/ forsope in þe  
 lawe moyses comaundide vs for to stoon suche/ þerfore what  
 seyst þou? soþely þei seyden þis þing temptynge hym: þat þei  
 myzte accuse hym/ forsope Jh̄c bowynge doune hym self:  
 wrote wip þe fynger in þe erþe/ soþely whanne þei lastiden  
 aringe hym: he reyside hym self: & seyde to hem/ he whom of  
 zou is wip outhen synne: firste sende a stoon into hire/ and este  
 he bowynge hym self: wrote in þe erþe/ soþely þei herynge þes  
 þingis wenten aweye: one aftir anoder: þei bygynnyng at  
 þe eldre men/ and Jh̄c dwelte al one: and þe womman stond-  
 ynge in þe mydil/ soþely Jh̄c reysynge hym self: seyde to hire/  
 womman where ben þei þat accusen? no man dampnyde þee/  
 þe whiche seyde/ no man lorde/ Jh̄c seyde to hire/ neþer I  
 schal dampne þee/ go þou: and nowe aftirwarde nyl þou do  
 synne// ¶ þerfore Jh̄c este spac to hem seyinge/ I am þe lizte  
 of þe worlde/ he þat sueþ me: walkiþ not in dirkeness: but  
 he schal haue þe lizte of liif/ þerfore þe pharisees seyden/ þou  
 berest witnessynge of þi self: þi witnessynge is not trewe/ Jh̄c  
 answerde & seyde to hem/ and zif I bere witnessynge of my-  
 self: my witnessynge is trewe/ for I wote fro whens I came:  
 & whidir I go/ forsope zee witen not fro whens I came or  
 whidir I go/ forsope zee demen aftir þe fleysche: I deme not  
 any man/ and zif I deme: my dome is trewe/ for I am not al  
 one: but I & þe fadir þat sente me/ & in zoure lawe it is wri-  
 ten: for þe witnessynge of two men is trewe/ I am þat bere  
 witnessynge of myself: and þe fadir þat sente me: beriþ wit-  
 nessynge of me/ þerfore þei seyden to hym: where is þi fadir?  
 Jh̄c answerde neþer zee witen (or knowen) me: neþer zee



## Joan

witen my fadir/ zif zee wisten me: paraventure & zee schulden wite my fadir/ Jh̄c spac hes wordis in þe tresorie: techynge in þe temple/ and no man took hym: for his houre came not zit// ¶ Þerfore este Jh̄c seyde to hem/ lo I go & zee schulen seeke me: and zee schulen die in zoure synne/ whidir I go: zee motone not come/ þerfore þe iewis seyden/ wher he schal flee hym self: for he seip whidir I go zee motone not come/ & he seyde to hem/ zee ben of byneþe: I am of aboue/ zee ben of þis worlde: I am not of þis worlde/ þerfore I seyde to zou: for zee schulen die in zoure synnes/ forsoþe zif zee schulen not bileue for I am: zee schulen dye in zoure synnes/ forsoþe þei seyden to hym/ who art þou/ Jh̄c seyde to hem/ þe bygynnyng (or þe firste of alle þing) · þe whiche I speke to zou/ I haue many þingis for to speke of to deme of zou: but he þat sente me is soþefaste/ & I speke in þe worlde þes þingis þat I herde of hym/ and þei knewen not for he seyde his fadir god/ þerfore Jh̄c seip to hem/ whanne zee haue reyside mannes sone: þanne zee schulen knowe for I am/ and of my self I do no þing: but as my fadir tauzte me · I speke þes þingis/ and he þat sente me is wiþ me · & leste me not al one: for I do euermore þo þingis þat ben plesaunt to hym// ¶ Hym spekyng þis þingis: manye bileueden into hym/ þerfore Jh̄c seyde to hem þe iewis þat bileueden into hym/ zif zee schulen dwelle in my worde: verreyly zee schulen be my disciplis/ and zee schulen knowe þe treweþe: and treweþe schal delyuer zou/ þerfore þe Jewis answeriden to hym/ we ben þe seed of abraham: and to no man we euer serueden/ how seyst þou · for zee schulen be fre: Jh̄c answeride to hem treuly treuly I seye to zou: for eche man þat doip synne: is seruaunt of synne/ soþely þe seruaunt dwellip not in þe hous into wiþ outen ende/ þerfore zif þe sone schal delyuer zou: verreyly zee schulen be free/ I wote for zee ben abrahams sones · but zee seeken for to flee me · for my worde takip not in zou/ and I speak þo þingis þat I siþe at my fadir: & zee done þo þingis þat zee siþen

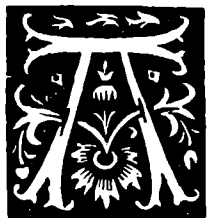
## Joon

ſizen at zoure fadir/ þei anſweriden & ſeyden to hym/ abra-  
ham is oure fadir/ Jh̄c ſeiþ to hem/ zif zee ben þe ſones of  
abraham/ do zee þe werkis of abraham/ ſohely nowē zee  
ſeeken for to flee me · a man þat haue ſpoken to zou þe treuþe  
þat I herde of god/ abraham dide not þis þing/ zee done þe  
werkis of zoure fadir/ and ſo þei ſeyden to hym/ we ben not  
borne of fornicacōn/ we haue one fadir god/ þerfore Jh̄c ſeyde  
to hem zif god were zoure fadir/ ſohely zee ſchulden loue mee/  
forſoþe I procedide (or came forþ of god/ and came/ neþer  
ſohely I came of my ſelf/ but he ſente me/ whi knowen zee  
not my ſpeche · for zee mōwne not here my word/ zee ben of  
þe fadir þe deuyl/ and zee wolen do þe deſires of zoure fadir/  
he was a man ſleer fro þe bigynnynges/ and in treuþe he ſtood  
not · for treuþe is not in hym/ whanne he ſpekiþ leſynge/ he  
ſpekiþ of his owne þingis · for he is a lier · & fadir of it/ ſohely  
zif I ſeye treuþe/ zee bileuen not to me/ who of zou ſchal re-  
proue me of ſynne/ zif I ſeye treuþe/ whi bileuen zee not to  
me/ he þat is of god heriþ þe wordis of god/ þerfore zee heren  
not/ for zee ben not of god/ þerfore þe iewis anſweriden &  
ſeyden/ wher we ſeyn not wel · for þou art a ſamaritan · &  
haſt a deuyl/ Jh̄c anſweride & ſeyde/ I haue not a deuyl · but  
I honoure my fadir · & zee haue vnhonouride me/ forſoþe I  
ſeek not my glorie/ þer is þat ſeekiþ & demeth/ treuely treuly  
I ſeye to zou · zif any man ſchal kepe my worde/ he ſchal not  
ſe deþ into wiþ ouden ende/ þerfore þe iewis ſeyden/ now we  
haue knowen · for þou haſt a deuyl/ abraham is deade & þe  
prophetis · & þou ſeiſt zif any ſchal kepe þi worde · he ſchal not  
taſte deþ into wiþ ouden ende/ wher þou art more þan oure  
fadir abraham þat is deade · & þe prophetis ben deade/ whom  
makist þou þi ſelf/ Jh̄c anſweride/ zif I glorifie my ſelf/ my  
glorie is nouzte/ my fadir is þat glorifieth me · whom zee ſeyn  
for he is zoure god · & zee haue not knowen hym/ forſoþe I  
haue knowen hym/ & zif I ſeye for I woot hym not/ I ſchal  
be a lier lijk to zou/ but I woot hym/ and I kepe his worde/  
abraham

## Joan

abraham zoure fadir gladide (or ful oute ioyzede) · þat he schulde se my day · & he siȝe & ioyzede/ þerfore þe iewis seydē to hym/ þou haþ not zit fifty zeer · & haþ þou seen abraham/ þerfore ih̄c seyde to hem/ treuely treuely I seye to zou · bifore þat abraham was made/ I am/ þerfore þei token stones · þat þei schulden caste into hym/ soþely Ih̄c hid him/ and wente oute of þe temple//

C<sup>m</sup> 9<sup>m</sup>



**A**nd Ih̄c passynge siȝe a man blynde fro þe birþe/ and his disciplis axiden hym/ raby þat is mayster · who synnede · þis man or his fadir & modir · þat he schulde be borne blynde/ Ih̄c answeride/ neþer þis man synnede · neþer his fadir & modir/ but þat þe werkis of god be schewide in hym/ it bihouep me for to wirche þe werkis of hym þat sente me · þe while day is/ þe nyzt schal come/ whanne no man may wirche/ how longe I am in þe worlde/ I am þe liȝte of þe worlde/ whanne he had seyde þes þingis/ he spitte into þe erþe · & made clepe of þe spotil/ and layde (or bawmede) þe cley on his yȝen · & seyde to hym/ go & be þou waschen in þe water of siloy/ þat is interpretide sente/ þerfore he wente & waschide/ and came seyinge/ and so neyȝebors & þei þat hadden seen hym bifore · for he was a begger/ seydē/ wher þis is not he þat satte & beggide/ oþer men seydē/ for þis it is/ oþer men seydē nay/ but it is a liche of hym/ forsoþe he seyde for I am he/ þerfore þei seydē to hym/ how ben þin yȝen openyde to þee/ he answeride/ þe ilke man þat is seyde Ih̄c/ made clepe & anoyntide myn yȝen/ and seyde to me/ go þou to þe water of siloye/ and wasche/ & I wente & waschide & siȝe/ and þei seydē to hym/ where is he/ he seiþ I woot not/ þei ledde hym þat was blynde to þe pharisees/ forsoþe it was saboth whanne Ih̄c made clepe & openyde his yȝen/ este þe pharisees axiden hym/ how he had seyn/ and he seyde to hem/ he puttide to me clepe on þe eyȝen/ and I waschide & I siȝe/ þerfore summe of pharisees seydē/ þis

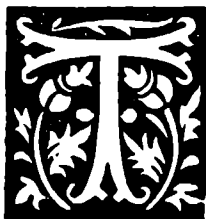
## Joan

this man is not of god: for he kepith not þe saboth/ oþer men  
seyden/ how may a man synner do þes signes (or myracles) ⁊  
and dyupcion was amonge hem/ þerfore þei seyn eftesone to  
þe blynde man/ what seyst þou of hym þat openyde þin yzen ⁊  
soþely he seyde: for he is a prophete/ þerfore iewis bileueden  
not of him for he was blynde & had seen: til þei clepiden his  
fadir & modir þat had seen/ and þei axiden hem: seinge/ þis  
is zoure sone: whom zee seyn for he is borne blynde: how þer-  
fore seest he now ⁊ his fadir & modir answereden to hem we  
witen for þis is oure sone: & he is borne blynde/ soþely how  
he seest now we witen not: or who openyde his yzen we witen  
neuer/ are zee hym/ he haþ age: speke he of hym self/ his fadir  
& modir seyden þes þingis: for þei dredde þe iewes/ forsoþe  
nowe þe iewes hadden conspirt: þat zif any man knowelech-  
ide hym crist: he schulde be done oute of þe synagoge/ þerfore  
his fadir & modir seyden/ for he haþ age: are zee hym/ þerfore  
eftesone þei clepiden þe man þat was blynde: and seyden to  
hym/ zyeue þou glorie to god/ we witen for þis man is a syn-  
ner/ þerfore he seyde/ zif he is a synner I woot nere/ one þing  
I woot: for whanne I was blynde nowe I se/ þerfore þei  
seyden to hym/ what dide he to þee: howe openyde he þin  
yzen ⁊ he answeride to hem/ I seyde to zou now: & zee herden:  
what wolen zee eftesone ⁊ wher & zee wolen be made his dis-  
ciple ⁊ þerfore þei cursiden hym & seyden/ be þou his disciple:  
we ben þe discipulis of moyses/ we witen for god spac to moy-  
ses: forsoþe we witen not þis of whens he is/ þe ilke man  
answeride & seyde to hem/ forsoþe in þis þing is wondreful  
þat zee witen not of whens he is: & he haþ openyde myn  
yzen/ soþely we witen: for god hereþ not synners/ but zif any  
man is worschiper of god & doith his wille: hym he heriþ/ fro  
þe worlde it is not herde þat any man openiþ þe yzen of  
blynde borne men/ no but þis were of god: he myzt not do  
any þing/ þei answereden & seyden to hym/ þou art al borne  
in synnes: & þou techist vs ⁊ and þei castiden hym oute/ Ihesu  
herde

## Joon

herde for þei hadden caste hym oute/ and whanne he hadde founden hym/ he seyde to hym/ bileuest þou into þe sone of god? he answeride & seyde/ lorde who is he? þat I bileue in hym/ and Jh̄c seyde to hym/ and þou hast seen hym/ and he it is þat spekiþ wiþ zee/ and he seiþ lorde I bileue/ and he fallynge doune/ worschipide hym/ þerfore Jh̄c seyde to hym/ I came into þe worlde · into doom · þat þei þat seen not · se/ and þei þat seen · he made blynde/ and summe of þe pharisees herden þat weren wiþ hym/ and þei seyden to hym/ wher & we ben blynde? Jh̄c seyde to hem/ zif zee weren blynde/ zee schulen not haue synne/ but now zee seyn for we seen/ zoure synne dwelliþ//

C<sup>m</sup> 10<sup>m</sup>



Reuly treuly I seye to zou · he þat cometh not in by þe dore · into þe foolde of scheep · but steyzeth vp by anoter weye he is nyzt þeef & day þeef/ forsoþe he þat entriþ by þe dore/ is þe scheperde of þe scheep/to þis þe porter openyþ/ and þe scheep heren his voyce/ and he clepiþ his owne scheep by name/ and leediþ hem oute/ whanne he haþ sente oute his owne scheep/ he goiþ bifore hem · and þe scheep suen hym · for þei knowen his voyce/ soþely þei suen not an alien/ but fleen fro hym · for þei hane not knowen þe voyce of aliens/ Jh̄c seyde to hem þis pro- uerbe/ forsoþe þei knowen not what he spač to hem/ þerfore Jh̄c seyde to hem estesone/ treuely treuely I seye to zou · for I am þe dore of scheep/ alle how many euer camen/ ben nyzt þeefes & day þeefes · but þe scheep herden not hem/ I am þe dore/ zif any man schal entre by me/ he schal be sauede/ and he schal go in & schal go oute/ & he schal fynde lesowis/ a nyzt þeef cometh not · but þat he stele & flee & leese/ I came þat þei haue lijf/ and haue more plenteuouly/ I am a gode scheperde/ a good scheperde ȝyueþ his soule (þat is lijf) for his scheep/ forsoþe a marchaunt (or hiride hyne) · & þat is not a scheperde/ whos ben not þe scheep his owne/ seeth a wolfe comynge · & he leueþ

## Joan

leeueþ þe ſcheep & ſleep/ & þe wolfe rauyſchþ (or ſcaterþ) þe ſcheep/ forſoþe þe marchaunt ſleep · for he is a marchaunt; and it parteynþ not to hym of þe ſcheep/ I am a gode herde · & I knowe my ſcheep; (& my ſcheep) knowen me/ as þe fadir haþ knowen me; & I knowe þe fadir · & I putte my lijf for my ſcheep/ & I haue oþer ſcheep þat ben not of þis folde; and bihoueþ me for to leede hem to · & þei ſchulen here my voyce/ and it ſchal be made one folde & one ſcheperde/ þerfore þe fadir loueþ me; for I putte my ſoule þat eſteſone I take it/ no man takþ it fro me; but I putte it fro my ſelf/ I haue power for to putte it; and I haue power for to take it away/ þis mandement haue I taken of my fadir/ and ſo diſcencōn was made amonge þe iewis; for þes wordis/ forſoþe many of hem ſeyden/ he haþ a deuyl & maddiþ (or warþ wood)/ what heren zee hym/ oþer men ſeyden/ þes wordis ben not of a man haupnge a fende/ wher a deuyl may open þe yzen of blynde men; forſoþe newe feſtis of halowynge of þe temple ben made in ierlēm; and it was wynter/ and Jh̄c walkide in þe temple; in þe porche of ſalomon/ þerfore iewis enuyrounden hym; and ſeyden to hym/ how longe doiſt þou aweye oure ſoule; zif þou art c̄ſt; ſeye to vs pleyndly (or openly)/ Jh̄c anſweride to hem/ I ſpeke to zou; and zee bileuen not/ þe werkis þat I do in name of my fadir; þes beren witneſſynge of me/ but & zee bileuen not; for zee ben not of my ſcheep/ my ſcheep heren my voyce; and I knowe hem · & þei ſuen me/ and I zȳue to hem euerlaſtynge lijf; & þei ſchulen not periſche into wiþ outen ende/ and any man ſchal not rauyſche hem of myne hande/ þat þing þat my fadir zæue to me is more þan alle/ þerfore no man may rauyſche fro my faderis hande/ I & þe fadir ben one þing/ Jewes token vp ſtones; for to ſtoon hym to deþ/ Jh̄c anſweride to hem/ I haue ſchewide to zou manye werkis of my fadir; for whiche werkis of hem ſtonen zee me; þe iewes anſweriden to hym/ we ſtoonen þee not of good werke; but of blaſfemye/ & for þou ſiþen

## Joon

sihen þou art a man: makist þiself god/ Jh̄c antweride to hem/ wher it is not writen in zoure lawe · for I seye zee ben goddis: zif he seyde hem goddis · to whom þe worde of god is made · & þe scripture whiche þe fadir halowide & sente into þe worlde may not be vndone · & zee seyn for I blasfeme · for I seyde I am goddis sone: zif I do not þe werkis of my fadir: nyl zee bileue to me/ soþely zif I do · þouz zee wolen not bileue to me: bileue zee to þe werkis/ þat zee knowe & bileue: for þe fadir is in me · & I in þe fadir/ þerfore þei souzten for take hym: & he wente oute of here handis/ and he wente estesone ouer iordan · into þat place where Joon was firste baptysynge: and he dwelte þere/ and manye camen to hym & seyden: for soþely Jon dide no signe (or myracle)/ forsoþe alle þingis what euer Joon seyde of þis: weren soþe/ and many bileueden into hym//

C<sup>m</sup> II<sup>m</sup>



Orsoþe þer was sum sijk man lazarus of bethanye of þe castel of mary & marthe his sistris/ forsoþe it was mary þe whiche anoyntide þe lorde wiþ oynement · & wepte his feet wiþ hire heres · whos broþer lazarus was sijk/ þerfore his sistris senten to hym seyinge/ lorde lo he whom þou louest is sijk/ forsoþe Jh̄c herynge: seyde to hem/ þes seekenesse is not vnto þe deþ: but for þe glorie of god · þat mannes sone be glorifiede by it/ soþely Jh̄c louede martha & hire sister marie & lazarus/ þerfore as ih̄c herde for he was sijk: þanne soþely in þe same place two dayes/ þer of aftir þes þingis · he seyde to his disciplis/ go we este into Jude/ þe disciplis seyn to hym/ raby (or mayster) nowe þe iewis souzten for to stoon þee · & este þou gost þidir: Jh̄c antweride/ wher þer ben not twelue houres of þe day: zif any man schal wandre in þe day: he hurtiþ not · for he seþ þe lizte of þe worlde/ soþely zif he schal wandre in þe nyzt: he hurtiþ for lizte is not in hym/ þes þingis he seiþ/ and aftir þes þingis: he seiþ to hem/ lazarus oure frende slepiþ:

## Joan

ih̄: but I go for to reyse hym fro sleep/ perfore his disciplis  
seyden/ lorde zif he slepih̄: he schal be saaf/ forsoþe Ih̄c had  
seyde of his deþ/ but þei gessiden þat he seyde of slepyng of  
sleep/ þanne perfore Ih̄c seyde opynly/ lazarus is deade: and  
I enioye for zou þat zee bileue for I was not here/ but go we  
to hym/ perfore thomas þat is seyde didymus: seyde to euen  
disciplis/ and go we: þat we die wiþ hym/ and so Ih̄c came · &  
fonde hym haupnge nowe foure dayes in þe graue/ soþely be-  
thane was bisidis irlm̄ as fiftene furlonges/ forsoþe many of  
Iewis camen to mary & marthe · for to coumforte hem of  
here broþer/ perfore as martha herde for Ih̄u came: sche ren-  
neþ to hym/ mary forsoþe sette at home/ perfore martha seyde  
to Ih̄u/ lorde zif þou haddist ben here: my broþer had not ben  
deade/ but & nowe I woot · þat whateuer þingis þou schalt  
are of god: god schal ȝue to þee/ Ih̄c seiþ to hire/ þi broþer  
schal rise azen/ martha seiþ to hym/ I woot for he schal rise  
azen in þe azen rysyng in þe laste day/ Ih̄c seiþ to hire/ I am  
azen risyng & lijf/ he þat bileueþ into me: zhe zif he schal  
be deade: schal lyue/ and eche þat lyueþ & bileueþ into me:  
schal not die into wiþ ouden ende/ bileuest þou þis þing? sche  
seiþ to hym/ forsoþe (or zhe) lorde/ I haue bileuede for þou  
art crist · þe sone of quycke · [ ] þat haste comen into þis  
worlde/ and whanne sche had seyde þis þing: sche wente & cle-  
pide mary hire syster in silence or (stillenesse) seyinge/ þe mayf-  
ter cometh & clepiþ þee/ sche as sche herde roos anone: and  
came to hym/ soþely Ih̄c came not zit into þe castel: but he  
was zit in þat place · where martha had comen azenes hym/  
perfore þe iewis þat weren wiþ hire in þe hous & comfortiden  
hire · whanne þei sizen mary · for soone sche roos & wente  
oute: sieden hire seyinge/ for sche goiþ to þe graue: for to  
wepe here/ forsoþe mary whanne sche hadde seyn where Ih̄c  
was: seinge hym felde to his feet · & seyde to hym/ lorde zif  
þou haddist ben: my broþer had not ben deade/ perfore as Ih̄c  
sise hire wepyng & þe iewis þat weren wiþ hire wepyng: he



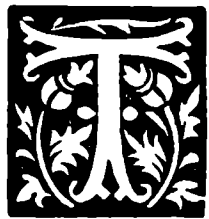
## Stoon

made noyse in spirit & trublide hym self & seyde/ where haue zee putte hym/ hei seyden to hym/ lorde come and se/ and Jh̄c wepte/ perfore he Jewis seyden lo how helouede hym/ forsoþe summe of hem seyden/ wher þis man þat openyde þe yzen of þe borne blynde • myzte not make • & þis diede not/ perfore este Jh̄c makynge noyse of hymself/ come to þe graue/ forsoþe þer was a den/ and a stoon putte þer on/ Jh̄c seiþ take zee away þe stoon/ martha þe sister of hym þat was deade/ seiþ to hym/ lorde he synkiþ now • soþely he is of foure dayes/ Jh̄c seiþ to hire/ haue I not seyde to þee/ for zif þou schalt bileue/ þou schalt see glorie of god/ perfore hei token away þe stoon/ forsoþe þe yzen reyside vpwarde/ Jh̄c seyde/ fadir I do þankyn- gis to þee/ for þou euermore herdist me/ forsoþe I wiste þou euermore herist me/ but for þe puple þat stondiþ aboute I seyde þat hei bileue • for þou haste sente me/ whanne he had seyde þes þingis/ he criede wiþ greet voyce/ lazar come þou forþ/ and anone he þat was deade/ came forþ • bounden þe handis & þe feet wiþ bondis/ and his face was bounden wiþ a sudarie (or swetyng clooth/) Jh̄c seiþ to hem/ vnbynde zee hym/ and suffre zee go away/ perfore many of þe iewis þat camen to mary & martha • & sizen what þingis he dide/ bile- ueden in hym/ soþely summe of hem wenten to þe pharisees • & seyden to hem what þingis Jh̄c dide// ¶ perfore þe bischopes & þe pharisees gederiden a counseyl azenes Jh̄u/ & seyden/ what done we • for þis man doþ manye signes (or myraclis/) zif we leuen hym þus/ alle men schulen bileue into hym/ and romayns schulen come/ and schulen take oure place & folc/ forsoþe one of hem caphas by name • whanne he was bischop of þat zeer seyde to hem/ zee witen no þing • for it spedith to zou þat one man die for þe puple/ and þat al þe folc perische not/ forsoþe he seyde not þis þing of hym self • but whanne he was bischop of þat zeer • he propheciede for ih̄c was to dye for þe folc/ and not onely for þe folc/ but þat he schulde gedir into one þe sones of god þat weren scateride/ perfore fro þat day/

hei •

## Joan

þei þouzten for to flee hym// ¶ þerfore Jh̄c walkide not nowwe oppnly at þe iewes; but he wente into a regiōn (or cuntre) biſid̄is deſerte; into a cyte þat is ſeyde effraym · and þere he dwellide wiþ his diſciplis/ forſoþe þe paſke of Jewes was nerte; and many of þe cuntre ſteyzedē vp to ierl̄m; and þe day bifore paſk · for to halowe hem ſelf/ þerfore þei ſouzten Jh̄ū; and ſpaken to gedir · ſtōdyngē in þe temple/ what geſſen zee for he comēþ not to þe feſt day/ forſoþe þe biſchopis & phariſees hadden zōuen a maundement · þat zif any man knewe where he is · he ſchewe · þat þei take hym//



¶ Therefore Jh̄c bifore ſire dayes of paſke came to be- C<sup>m</sup> 12<sup>m</sup>  
thane where lazarus was deade · whom Jh̄c re-  
ſide/ forſoþe þei maden to hym a ſoper þere; and  
martha mynſtride to hym/ lazarus forſoþe was  
one of þe men ſittynge at þe mete wiþ hym/ þerfore mary toke  
a pounde of oynement precious ſpykenarde · & anoyntide þe  
feet of Jh̄ū wiþ hire heris/ and þe hous is fulſilde of þe ſauour  
of þe oynement/ þerfore Judas ſcarioth one of his diſciplis þat  
was to bitraye hym; ſeyde/ why is þis oynement not ſolde for  
þre hundride pens & is zōuen to nedȳ men; forſoþe he ſeyde  
þis þing · not for it parteynede to hym of nedȳ men; but for  
he was a þeeſ · & he haupnge purſes · hare þo þingis þat weren  
ſente/ þerfore Jh̄ū ſeyde/ ſuffre zee hire · þat into þe day of  
my birynge ſche kepe þat/ forſoþe zee ſchulen euermore haue  
pore men wiþ zou; ſoþely zee ſchulen not euermore haue me/  
þerfore myche cumpanȳ of iewis knewen þat Jh̄c was þere/  
and þei camen not oppnly for Jh̄ū; but for to ſe lazarus whom  
he reſide fro deade/ ¶ forſoþe þe prynces of priſtis þouzten  
for to flee lazarus · for manȳ of þe iewis for hym wenten  
awey & bileueden into Jh̄ū/ forſoþe þe morow a myche cum-  
panȳ þat came to gedir at þe feſt day · whanne þei hadden  
herde whanne Jh̄ū comēþ to ierl̄m · tooken braunchis of  
palmes · & camen forþe azens hym & crieden/ oſanna bleſſide  
is

## Joon

is he þat cometh in þe name of þe lorde kyng of isrl/ and Jh̄c  
fonde a litil asse · & satte vpon hym: as it is writen/ þe douz-  
ter of sion nyl zou drede/ lo þi kyng cometh · sittynge on þe  
colte of a sche asse/ his disciplis knowen not firste þes þingis:  
but whanne ih̄c is glorifiede: þanne þei recordiden (or hadden  
mynde) for þes þingis weren writen of hym · & þes þingis þei  
diden to hym/ þe cumpanye bare witnessynge þat was wip  
hym · whanne he clepide lazarus fro þe graue · & reyside hym  
fro deade/ þerfore and þe cumpanye came metynge to hym:  
for þei herden hym to haue þis signe/ þerfore þe pharisees sey-  
den to hem self/ zee seen for we profiten no þing/ lo al þe  
worlde wente aftir hym// ¶ Forsoþe þere weren summe he-  
þen men of hem þat hadden steyzede vp for to worschip in þe  
feest day/ þerfore þes came to philip · þat was of bethsayda of  
galilee: and preyede hym seyinge/ sire we wolen se Jh̄u/ philip  
cometh & seiþ to andrewe/ este andrew & philip seyden to ih̄u/  
sophely ih̄c answeride to hem seyinge þe houre cometh þat  
mannes sone schal be clarifiede/ treuely treuely I seye to zou ·  
no but þe corne of wheet fallynge into þe erþe schal be deade:  
it dwelliþ al one/ sophely zif it schal be deade: it bryngis  
myche fruyte/ he þat loues his soule (þat is lijf:) schal leese  
it/ and he þat hatith his soule (þat is lijf) in þis worlde:  
kepiþ it into euerlastynge lijf/ zif any man serue to me:  
sue he me/ and where I am þere & mynystre (or seruaunt)  
schal be/ zif any man schal mynystre to me: my fadir schal  
worschip hym// ¶ Now my soule is turblide/ and what schal  
I seye? fadir saue me fro þis houre/ but for þat þing I came  
into þis houre/ fadir clarifie þi name/ þerfore a voyce came  
fro heuene: seyinge/ and I haue clarifiede: and zit I schal  
clarifie/ þerfore þe cumpanye þat stood & herde: seyde þundre  
for to be made/ oþer men seyden an aungel spac to hym/ Jh̄u  
answeride & seyde/ þis voyce came not for me: but for zou/  
¶ now is doom of þe worlde/ now þe prynce of þis worlde  
schal be caste oute/ and zif I schal be enhaunside fro þe erþe:  
I schal drawe alle þingis to my self/ sophely þis þing he seyde:  
signyfynge

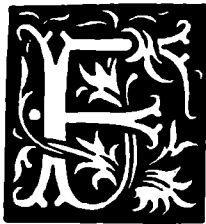
## Joan

signyfyinge by what deþ he was to die/ þe cumpanye answer-  
ide to hym/ we haue herde of þe lawe/ for crist dwelliþ into  
wiþ outhen ende/ how seist þou it bihoueþ mannes sone for to  
be areride/ who is þis mannes sone/ þerfore Jh̄c seih to hem/  
zit a litil lizt is in zou/ walke zee þe while zee haue lizt/ þat  
dirkenessis cacche zou not/ and he wandriþ in dirkenessis/  
woot nere whidir he goiþ/ þe while zee haue lizte/ bileue zee  
into lizt · þat zee be þe sones of lizte/ Jh̄c spac þes þingis/ and  
wente & hidde hym fro hem/ ¶ Soþely whanne he hadde done  
so manye signes bifore hem/ þei bileueden not in hym/ þat  
þe worde of ysaie þe prophete schulde be fulfilde · whiche he  
seyde/ lorde who bileuede to oure herynge · & to whom is þe  
arme of god schewide/ þerfore þei myzten not bileue · for este-  
sone ysaie seyde/ he haþ blyndide here yzen · & he haþ endur-  
ide (or made harde) þe herte of hem · þat þei se not wiþ yzen  
& vnderstande wiþ herte · & þat þei be conuertide (or al turn-  
yde) · & I hele hem/ ysaie seyde þes þingis · whanne he siþe þe  
glorie of hym · & spac of hym/ neþeles & of þe prynces ma-  
nye bileueden into hym/ but for þe pharisees þei knowele-  
chiden not · þat þei schulden not be caste outh of þe synagoge/  
forsoþe þei loueden þe glorie of men/ more þan þe glorie of  
god/ forsoþe Jh̄c criede & seyde · he þat bileueþ into me · bile-  
ueth not into me/ but into hym þat sente me/ he þat seep me/  
seep hym þat sente me/ I lizte came into þe worlde · þat eche  
man þat bileueþ into me · dwelle not in dirkenesses/ and any  
man schal here my wordis & schal not kepe · I deme hym not/  
forsoþe I came not þat I deme þe worlde/ but þat I make þe  
worlde saaf/ he þat dispisiþ me & takith not my wordis/ haþ  
hym þat schal iuge hym/ þe worde þat I haue spoken/ þat  
schal deme hym in þe laste daye/ for I haue not spoken of my  
self · but þe fadir þat sente me · he ȝaue to me a maundement ·  
what I schal seye & what I schal speek/ and I woot for his  
maundement/ is euerlastynge liif/ þerfore þo þingis þat I  
speek · as þe fadir seyde to me/ so I speek//

Forsoþe

## Joon

C<sup>m</sup> 13<sup>m</sup>



Forsope bifore þe feest day of passk · Jh̄c witynge for  
his houre comen · þat he passe of his worlde to þe  
fadir · whan he had louede his þat weren in þe  
worlde · into þe ende he louede hem/ and þe soper  
made whanne þe deupl had sente now into þe herte of Judas ·  
þat Judas of symount scarioth schulde bitraye hym · he wi-  
tynge for þe fadir ȝaue alle þingis to hym into his handis · &  
þat he wente oute fro god · and goþ to god · risiþ fro þe soper  
& puttiþ his clothes/ & whanne he had taken a linnen clooth ·  
he bifore girde hym/ aftirwarde he sente water into a basyn ·  
and bigan for to wasche his disciplis feet · & to wiip wiþ lyn-  
nen cloþe · wiþ whiche he was bifore girde/ þerfore he came  
to Symount petre · & petre seiþ to hym/ lorde what þou wasch-  
ist to me þe feet? Jh̄c answeride & seyde to hym/ what þingis  
I do þou woost not now · forsoþe þou schalt wite aftirwarde/  
petre seiþ to hym/ þou schalt not wasche to me þe feet · into  
wiþ outhen ende/ Jh̄c answeride to hym/ zif I schal not wasche  
þee · þou schalt not haue parte wiþ me/ Symount petre seiþ  
to hym/ lorde not onely my feet · but & þe handis & þe heede/  
Jh̄c seyde to hym/ he þat is wasche haþ no nede · no but þat  
he wasche þe feet · but he is clene al/ and zee ben clene · but  
not alle/ for he wiste wel · who schulde bitraye hym/ þerfore  
he seyde · zee ben not clene alle/ þerfore aftir warde þat he  
waschide þe feet of hem · he toke his clothes/ and whanne he  
had resside azen · este he seyde to hem/ zee witen what I haue  
done to ȝou/ zee clepen me mayster & lorde · & zee seyn wel/  
forsoþe I am/ þerfore zif I lorde & mayster haue waschen  
ȝoure feet · & zee schulen wasche anoper þe toþers feet/ for I  
haue ȝouen ensaumpel to ȝou · þat as I haue done to ȝou · so  
& zee do/ ¶ Trewely trewely I seye to ȝou · þe seruant is  
not more þan his lorde/ neþer apostle is more · þan he þat  
sente hym/ zif zee witen þes þingis · zee schulen be blestide ·  
zif zee schulen do hem/ I seye not of ȝou alle/ I wote þe whiche  
I haue

## Joan

I haue chosen/ but þat þe scripture be fulfilled · he þat etih my breede: schal reyse heel azens me/ treuly treuly I seye to zou · bifore it be done · þat whanne it schal be done: zee bileuen for I am/ treuly treuly I seye to zou · he þat takih whom euer I schal sende: receyueþ me/ for he þat receyueþ me: receyueþ hym þat sente me/ whanne Jh̄c had seyde þes þingis: he was turblide & seyde/ treuly treuly I seye to zou · for one of zou schal bitraye me/ þerfore þe disciplis lokeden to gedir: doutynge of whom he seyde/ þerfore one of his disciplis was restinge in þe bosum of Jh̄u: whom Jh̄u louede/ þerfore symount petre bileupde to hym: and seiþ to hym/ who is it of þe whiche he seiþ/ and so whanne he had restide azen vpon þe breste of Jh̄u: he seiþ to hym/ lorde who is it? Jh̄c answeride/ he it is to whom I schal dresse breed indippide/ and whanne he had dippide in breed: he zawe to Judas of Symount scarioth/ and astir þe mussel: þanne sathanas entrede into hym/ and Jh̄c seiþ to hym/ what þingis þou doest: do þou sunner/ forsoþe no man of sittynge at þe mete wiste þis þing: to what þing he seyde to hym/ forsoþe summe gessiden for Judas has pursis: þat Jh̄c had seyde to hym/ bie þou þo þingis þat ben nedeful to vs: at þe feest day: or þat he schulde zyue sum þing to nedyn men/ þerfore whanne he had taken þe mussel: he wente oute anone/ forsoþe it was nyzt/ þerfore whanne he hadde gon oute: Jh̄c seyde mannes sone is clarifiede & god is clarifiede in hym: & god schal clarifie hym in hym self · & anone he schal clarifie hym/ litil sones · zit a litil I am wih zou/ zee schulen seek me · & as I seyde to þe iewis: whidir I go zee motone not come/ and to zou I seye now/ I zyue zou a newe maundement · þat zee louen to gedir as I louede zou: þat & zee louen to gedir/ in þis þing alle men schulen knowe · þat zee ben my disciplis: zif zee schulen haue loue to gedir/ Symount petre seiþ to hym/ lorde whidir goste þou? Jh̄c answeride: whidir I go þou mayst not sue me nowe · but þou schalt sue astirwarde/ petre seiþ to hym/ whi may I not sue þee nowe? I schal putte my soule (þat

## Joon

(þat is my lijf:) for þee/ Jh̄c anſweride/ þou ſchalt putte þi ſoule (þat is þi lijf) for me/ treuly treuly I ſeye to þee · þe cocke ſchal not crowe til þou ſchalt denye me þries/ & he ſeiþ to his diſciplis//

C<sup>m</sup> 14<sup>m</sup>



Be not zoure herte diſtourblide: ne drede it/ zee bi-  
leuen into god: & bileue zee into me/ in þe hous of  
my fadir: ben many dwellyngis/ zif any leſſe: I  
ſchulde haue ſeyde to zou · for I go for to make  
redy to zou a place/ & zif I ſchal go aweye & ſchal make reedy  
to zou aplace: eftesone I come · & ſchal take zou to my ſelf/  
þat where I am: & zee be/ and whidir I go zee witen: & zee  
wite þe weye/ thomas ſeiþ to hym/ lorde we witen not whidir  
þou goeſt/ and how mowne we wite þe weye/ Jh̄c ſeiþ to hym/  
I am weye treuþe & lijf/ no man cometh to þe fadir: no but  
by me/ zif zee hadden knowe me: ſoþely zee hadden known  
& my fadir/ & aftirwarde zee ſchulen knowe hym: and zee  
haue ſeen hym/ philip ſeiþ to hym/ lorde ſchewe to vs þe fa-  
dir: and it ſufficeth to vs/ Jh̄c ſeiþ to hym/ ſo myche tyme I  
am wiþ zou · & haue zee not knownen me/ philip he þat ſeeþ  
me · ſeeþ & þe fadir/ how ſeyſte þou ſchewe to vs þe fadir/ bi-  
leueſt þou not · for I in þe fadir & þe fadir is in me/ I ſpeke  
not of myſelf: þe wordis þat I ſpeke to zou/ ſoþely þe fadir  
dwellynge in me: he doiþ þe werkis/ bileue zee not for I in þe  
fadir: & þe fadir is in me/ ellis bileue zee for þe ilke werkis/  
treuly treuly I ſeye to zou · he þat bileueþ into me: and he  
ſchal do þe werkis þat I do/ & he ſchal do more werkis þan  
þes · for I go to þe fadir/ and what euer þing zee ſchulen are  
þe fadir in my name: I ſchal do þis þing · þat þe fadir be glo-  
rifiede in þe ſone/ zif zee ſchulen are any þing in my name: I  
ſchal do þis þing · þat þe fadir be glorifiede in þe ſone/ zif zee  
ſchulen are any þing in my name: I ſchal do it/ zif zee louen  
me: kepe zee my comaundementis/ & I ſchal preye þe fadir:  
and he ſchal gife to zou anoper confortoure · þat he dwelle  
wiþ

## Joon

wiþ zou into wiþ ouden ende • þe spirit of treuþe/ whiche  
(spirit) þe worlde may not take: for it seep not hym neþer  
woot hym/ forsoþe zee schulen knowe hym: for he schal dwelle  
at zou • & he schal be in zou/ I schal not leue zou fadirles: I  
schal come to zou/ zit a litil & þe worlde seep not me now/  
forsoþe zee schulen se me: for I lyue: and zee schulen lyue/ in  
þat day zee schulen knowe • for I am in my fadir: & zee in me •  
& I in zou/ he þat haþ my comaundementis & kepith hem: he  
it is þat loueþ me/ forsoþe he þat loueþ me schal be louede of  
my fadir/ & I schal loue hym: & I schal schewe to hym my self/  
Judas seip to hym • not he of scarioth/ lorde what is done: for  
þou art to schewe to vs þi self • & not to þe worlde/ Jh̄c an-  
sweride & seyde to hym/ zif any man loueþ me: he schal kepe  
my worde/ and my fadir schal loue hym • & we schulen come  
to hym • & we schulen make dwellynge at hym/ he þat loueþ  
not me: kepith not my wordis/ and þe worde whiche zee haue  
herde is not myn: but his þat sente me þe faderis/ þes þingis  
I haue spoken to zou: dwellynge at zou/ forsoþe þe holy gost  
comfortoure whom þe fadir schal sende in my name: he schal  
teche zou al þingis/ and schal schewe to zou all þingis: what  
euer I schal seye to zou/ pees I leue to zou: my pees I zyeue  
to zou/ not as þe worlde zyeueþ: I zyeue to zou: be not zoure  
herte distourblide: ne drede it/ zee haue herde for I seyde to  
zou: I go & come to zou: zif zee loueden me: forsoþe zee schu-  
len ioye • for I go to þe fadir • for þe fadir is more þan I/ and  
nowe I haue seyde to zou bifore it be done: þat whanne it  
schal be done: zee bileue/ now I schal not speke many þingis  
to zou/ forsoþe þe prynce of þis worlde comeþ: and he haþ not  
in me any þing/ but þat þe worlde knowe: for I loue þe fadir/  
and as þe fadir zaue to me comaundement: so I do/ rise zee:  
go we hens//



## Joon

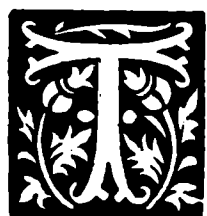
C<sup>m</sup> 15<sup>m</sup>



I am a verrey vyne: and my fadir is an erbe tilier/  
eche syon (or braunche) not berynge fruyte in me:  
he schal do it aweye/ & eche þat berih fruyte: he  
schal purge it • þat it more bere fruyte/ nowe zee  
ben clene: for þe worde þat I haue spoken to zou/ dwelle  
zee in me: & I in zou/ as a sioune (or braunche) may not make  
fruyte of it self: no but it schal dwelle in þe vyne tree: so  
neþer zee no but zif zee schulen dwelle in me/ I am a vyn-  
tree: zee þe siouns (or braunchis)/ who þat dwellih in me &  
I in hym: þis berih myche fruyte/ for wiþ outen me: zee  
moune no þing do/ zif any man schal not dwelle in me: lo he  
schal be sente oute as a scioune • & schal ware drie/ and þei  
schulen gedir hym • & þei schulen sende hym into þe fire • & he  
brenneþ/ zif zee schulen dwelle in me • & my wordis dwelle in  
zou: what euer þing zee schulen wille • zee schulen are • & it  
schal be done to zou/ in þis þing my fadir is clarifiede: þat zee  
brynge moſte fruyte • & zee be made my disciplis/ as my fadir  
louede me: & I louede zou/ dwelle zee in my loue/ zif zee schu-  
len kepe my maundementis: zee schulen dwelle in my loue •  
as I haue kepte þe maundementis of my fadir/ and I dwelle  
in his loue/ þes þingis I spac to zou þat my ioye be in zou:  
and zoure ioye be fulfild// ¶ Þis is þe comaundement • þat  
zee loue togedir as I louede zou/ no man haþ more loue þan  
þis: þat any putte his soule for his frendis/ zee ben my frendis •  
zif zee schulen do þes þingis þat I comaunde zou/ nowe I  
schal not seye zou seruauntis: for þe seruaunt woot not what  
his lorde schal do/ forsoþe I haue seyde zou frendis: for alle  
þingis what euer I herde of my fadir: I haue made known  
to zou/ zee haue not chosen me/ but I chees zou • & putte zou  
þat zee go & brynge fruyte: and zoure fruyte dwelle/ þat what  
euer þing zee schulen are þe fadir in my name: he ȝpue to  
zou/ þes þingis I comaunde to zou þat zee loue togedir/ zif  
þe worlde hate zou: wite zee for it hadde me in haate firste  
þan

## Joon

han zou/ zif zee hadden ben of þe worlde: þe worlde schulde loue þat þing þat was his/ but for zee ben not of þe worlde · but I chees zou fro þe worlde: þerfore þe worlde hatih zou: haue zee mynde of my worde · þe whiche I seyde to zou: þe seruaunt is not more han his lorde/ zif þei haue pursuede me: & þei schulen pursue zou/ zif þei haue kepte my worde: and þei schulen kepe zoure/ but þei schulen do to zou alle þes þingis for my name: for þei witen not hym þat sente me/ zif I had not comen & hadde not spoken to hem þei schulden not haue synne/ forsoþe now þei haue not excusacōn of here synne/ he þat hatih me: hatih & my fadir/ zif I hadde not done werkis in hem · þe whiche none oþer man dide: þei schulden not haue synne/ forsoþe now & þei haue seen & hatide me: & my fadir/ but þat þe worde he fulfilde þat is writen in zoure lawe: for þei hadden me in hate wiþ outen cause/ forsoþe whanne þe confortoure schal come · þe whiche I schal sende to zou fro þe fadir · a spirit of treuþe · þe whiche procedih (or comeh forþe) of þe fadir: he schal bere witnessynge of me/ and zee schulen bere witnessynge: for zee ben wiþ me fro þe bygynnyng//



Thes þingis I haue spoken to zou: þat zee be not sclaunderide/ þei schulen make zou wiþ outen synagogis/ but þe houre comeh · þat eche man þat sleeh zou: deme hym for to ȝyue seruyce to god/ and þei schulen do to zou þingis: for þei haue not knowen þe fadir neþer me/ but þes þingis I spac to zou · þat whanne þe houre of hem schal come: zee haue mynde for I seyde to zou/ ¶ I seyde not to zou þes þingis fro þe bigynnyng: for I was wiþ zou/ & now I go to hym þat sente me: & no man of zou ariþ me whidir goþ þou/ but for I haue spoken to zou þes þingis · sorowe or heuyneſſe haþ fulfilde zoure herte/ but I seye to zou treuþe: it spedih to zou þat I go/ soþely zif I schal not go aweye: þe confortoure schal not come to zou/ forsoþe zif I schal go aweye: I schal sende hym to zou/ and whanne he schal come:

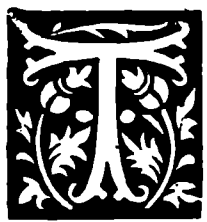
C<sup>m</sup> 16<sup>m</sup>

## Joon

come: he schal reproue þe worlde of synne & of ríztwefneſſe &  
of doom/ forſoþe of synne for zee haue not bileuede into me/  
ſoþely of ríztwefneſſe: for I go to þe fadir · & nowē zee ſchulen  
not ſe me/ forſoþe of doom: for þe prynce of þis worlde is now  
demyde// ¶ zit I haue many þingis for to ſeye to zou: but  
zee mōwne not here now/ ſoþely whanne þe ilke ſpirit of treuþe  
ſchal come: he ſchal teche zou al treuþe/ ſoþely he ſchal not  
ſpeke of hym ſelf: but what euer þingis he ſchal here: he ſchal  
ſpeke/ & he ſchal telle zou: þes þingis þat ben to come/ he  
ſchal clariēfiē me: for of myn he ſchal take · & ſchal telle to zou/  
alle þingis what kyn þingis þe fadir haþ: ben myne/ þerfore  
I ſeyde to zou: for of myn he ſchal take & telle to zou/ ¶ A  
litol & nowē zee ſchulen not ſe me: & eſteſone a litil · & zee  
ſchulen ſe me · for I go to þe fadir/ þerfore ſomme of his diſ-  
ciplis ſeyden to gedir/ what is þis þing þat he ſeiþ to vs · a  
litol & zee ſchulen not ſe me: for I go to þe fadir/ þerfore þei  
ſeyden what is þis þat he ſeiþ to vs a litil/ we witen not what  
he ſpekith/ forſoþe I hē knewe for þei wolden are: and he ſeyde  
to hem/ of þis þing zee ſeeken amonge zou: for I ſeyde/ a litil  
& zee ſchulen not ſe me: & eſteſone a litil & zee ſchulen ſe me/  
treuely treuly I ſeye to zou · for zee ſchulen mourne & wepe:  
forſoþe þe worlde ſchal enioye/ for zee ſchulen be ſorowful:  
but zoure ſorowe (or heuynēſſe): ſchal turne into ioye/ ſoþely  
a womman whanne ſche bereþ childe: haþ ſorowe for hire  
houre comē/ forſoþe whanne ſche haþ borne a ſone: nowē  
ſche þenkiþ not of þe preſſure (or peyne) for ioye · for a man  
is borne into þe worlde/ & þerfore zee haue nowē ſorowe/  
ſoþely eſteſone I ſchal ſe zou: and zoure herte ſchal enioye/  
and no man ſchal take fro zou zoure ioye/ & in þat day zee  
ſchulen not are me any þing/ treuly treuly I ſeye to zou · zif zee  
ſchulen are þe fadir any þing in my name: he ſchal ȝyue it to  
zou/ til nowē zee axiden not any þing in my name/ are zee:  
and zee ſchulen take þat zoure ioye be ful/ I haue ſpoken to  
zou þes þingis in prouerbis (or dirke ſaumples)/ þe houre  
comē ·

## Joan

comeþ · whanne nowe I schal not speke to zou in prouerbis · but oppnly of my fadir I schal telle to zou/ in þat day zee schul are in my name/ & nowe I seye to zou · for I schal prepe þe fadir of zou/ forsoþe he þe fadir loueþ zou · for zee haue louede me · & haue bileuede for I wente oute fro god/ I wente oute fro þe fadir · and I came into þe worlde/ estesone I leue þe worlde · & I go to þe fadir/ his disciplis seyden/ lo nowe þou spekest oppnly · and þou seist no prouerbe/ nowe we witen for þou woste alle þingis · & it is nonede to þee · þat any man are þee/ in þis þing we bileuen · for þou wentist oute fro god/ I hē answeride to hem/ now zee bileuen/ lo þe houre comeþ · & nowe it comeþ · þat zee be disparplide (or scateride) · eche into his owne þingis · and leue me al one/ and I am not al one · for þe fadir is wiþ me/ þes þingis I haue spoken to zou · þat zee haue pees in me/ in þe worlde zee schulen haue pressynge (or ouerleynges)/ but triste zee I haue ouercomen þe worlde//



Thes þingis I hē spac · & þe pzen lifte vp into heuene · he seyde/ fadir þe houre comeþ · clarifie þi sone · þat þi sone clarifie þee/ as þou hast zouen to hym power of eche fleysche (or man) þat alle þing þat þou hast zouen to hym · he ȝpue to hem euerlastynge lijf/ forsoþe þis is euerlastynge lijf · þat þei knowe þee al one verrey god · & whom þou sentist I hū crist/ I haue clarifiede þee on erþe · I haue endide þe werke þat þou hast zouen to me þat I do/ and nowe fadir clarifie þou me at þi self · wiþ clerenesse þat I had at þee · bifore þe worlde was made/ I haue schewide þi name to þe men whom þou hast zouen to me of þe worlde/ þei weren þin · & þou hast zouen hem to me · & þei haue kepte þi worde/ and nowe þei haue knowen · for alle þingis þat þou hast zouen to me · ben of þee/ for þe wordis þat þou hast zouen to me · I ȝaue to hem/ & þei haue taken & haue knowen verreyly · for I wente oute fro þee · & þei bileueden · for þou sentist me/ I prepe for hem · not for þe worlde · but for hem þat þou

C<sup>m</sup> 17<sup>m</sup>

## Joan

pou hast zouen to me/ · for þei ben þin · & þi þingis ben myne/ and I am clarifiede in hem/ and now I am not in þe worlde & þes ben in þe worlde & I come to þee/ holy fadir kepe hem in þi name · whom pou zauest to me · þat þei ben one as & we/ whanne I was wip hem/ I kepte hem in þi name/ whom pou zauest to me I kepte/ & no man of hem perischide · no but þe sone of perdicōn (or dampnacōn) · þat þe scripture be fulfilde/ forsoþe now I come to þee · & þes þingis I speek in þe worlde/ þat þei haue my ioie fulfilde in hem self/ I zaue to hem þi worde · & þe worlde had hem in hate · for þei ben not of þe worlde · as I am not of þe worlde/ I preye not þat pou take hem aweye of þe worlde/ but þat pou kepe hem fro euyl/ þei ben not of þe worlde/ as I am not of þe worlde/ halowe pou hem in treuþe/ þi worde is treuþe/ as þou sentist me into þe worlde/ & I sente hem into þe worlde/ & I halowe myself for hem/ þat & þei ben halowide in treuþe/ soþely I preye not onely for hem/ but & for hem þat ben to bileue into me · bi þe worde of hem/ þat alle ben one · as þou fadir in me · & I in þee · þat & þei in vs ben one · þat þe worlde bileue for þou hast sente me/ and I haue zouen to hem þe clerenesse þat þou hast zouen to me/ þat þei ben one · as we ben one/ I in hem & þou in me/ þat þei ben endide into one/ & þat þe worlde knowe þat þou sentist me & hast louede hem/ as & þou hast louede me/ fadir I wole þat & þei whom pou zauest to me/ be wip me where I am/ þat þei se my clerenesse whiche þou hast zouen to me/ for þou louedist me bifore þe makynge of þe worlde/ fadir Iust (or ryztful) · þe worlde knewe þee not · forsoþe I knewe þee/ & þes knewen for þou sentist me/ and I haue made þi name knownen to hem · & schal make knownen/ þat þe loue by whiche þou hast louede me/ be in hem · & I in hem//

Whanne

## Joon



Whanne Jh̄c hadde seyde þes þingis: he wente oute  
wip his disciplis ouer þe strounde of cedron where  
was a zerde · into whiche he entride & his disciplis/  
sophely & Judas þat bitrapede hym · wiste þe place:  
for ofte ih̄c came to gedir þidir wip his disciplis/ þerfore  
whanne Judas hadde taken a cumpanye of knyztis & of bis-  
chopis & pharisees mynystris: he came þidir wip lanternes &  
brondis & armes/ and so ih̄c witynge alle þingis þat weren  
to come vpon hym: wente forþ & seiþ to hem/ whom seeke  
zee/ þei answeriden to hym/ Jh̄u of nazareth/ Jh̄c seiþ to hem/  
I am/ forsoþe & Judas þat bitrapede hym: stode wip hem/ þer-  
fore as he seyde to hem I am: þei wenten abac & felden doune  
into þe erþe/ eftesone he aride hem/ whom seeke zee/ forsoþe  
þei seyden Jh̄u nazarene/ he answeride to hem/ I seyde to zou ·  
for I am/ þerfore zif zee seeken me: suffre zee þes to go  
awege/ þat þe worde whiche he seyde he fulfildes: for he losse not  
any of hem · þe whiche þou hast zouen to me/ þerfore symount  
petre haupnge a swerde drowe it oute & smote þe seruaunt of  
þe bischop · & kitte of his litil rize ere/ forsoþe þe name to þe  
seruaunt was malcus/ þerfore Jh̄c seyde to petre/ sende þou  
þe swerde into þe scheþe/ wolte þou not þat I drynke þe ilke  
cuppe · þat my fadir zaue to me/ þerfore þe cumpanye of  
knyztis & þe tribune & þe mynystris of iewis tooken Jh̄u &  
bounden hym · & ledde hym first to annas/ sophely he was þe  
fadir of caphphas wife: þat was bischop of þat zeer/ sophely it  
was caphphas þat zaue counseyl to þe Jewis · þat it spedih one  
man for to die for þe puple/ forsoþe Symount petre suede  
Jh̄u: and anoper disciple/ forsoþe þe ilke disciple was known  
to þe bischop: and he entride in wip Jh̄u · into þe halle of þe  
bischop/ forsoþe petre stode at þe dore wip oute forþ/ þerfore  
þe toþer disciple þat was known to þe bischop wente oute: &  
seyde to þe womman kepyng þe dore · & ledde in petre/ þer-  
for þe handemayden keper of þe dore: seyde to petre/ wher &  
þou

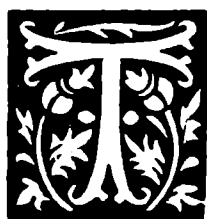
C<sup>m</sup> 18<sup>m</sup>

## Joan

hou art of þe disciplis of þis man? he seyde I am not/ forsoþe þe seruauntis & þe mynystris stoden at þe coolis · for it was colde: & þei warmeden hem/ soþely & petre was wip hem stondynge & warmynge hym/ þerfore þe bischopis axide Ihu of his disciplis: and of his techynge/ Ihu answeride to hym/ I haue spoken opynly to þe worlde/ I tauzte euermore in synagoge & in temple · whider alle þe iewis camen to gedir · & in pryuate I spac no þing/ what arist þou me: are hem þat herden · what I haue spoken to hem/ lo þei witen · what þingis I haue seyde/ whanne he had seyde · one of þe mynystris stondynge nyȝ: ȝaue a buffet to Ihu · seyinge/ answerest þou so to þe bischop? Ihu answeride to hym/ ȝif I haue spoken euyl: bere þou witnessynge of euyl/ soþely ȝif wel: whi smytest þou me: and annas sente hym bounden to caphas þe bischop/ forsoþe Symount petre was stondynge & warmynge hym/ þerfore þei seyden to hym/ wher & þou art his disciple? he denyede & seyde/ I am not/ one of þe bischopis seruauntis cosyn of hym whos litil ere petre kitte of: seyde/ wher I sȝe þee not in þe ȝerde wip hym? þerfore petre eftesone denyede/ and anone þe cocke crewe/ ¶ þerfore þei ledde hym into þe mote halle/ soþely it was morowynge/ and þei entride not into þe mote halle · þat þei schulden not be defoulide: but þat þei schulden ete paske/ þerfore pilate wente oute wip outhen forþ to hem: and seyde/ what accusynge bryngen ȝee aȝenes þis man? þei answereden to hym & seyden/ ȝif þis man were not a mysdoer: we hadden not bitaken hym to þee/ þerfore pilate seiþ to hem/ take ȝee hym: & deme ȝee hym aftir ȝoure lawe/ þerfore þei seyden to hym/ it is not leueful to vs: for to flee any man/ þat þe worde of Ihu schulde be fulfild þe whiche he seyde/ signyfyinge by what deþ he was to die/ þerfore pilat eftesone entride into þe moot hall: and clepide Ihu & seyde to hym/ art þou kyng of Jewis/ Ihu answeride & seyde to hym/ seist þou þis þing of þi self: or oþer to þee seyden of me? pilate answeride/ wher I am a iewe? þi folc & þi bischopis bitoken þee to me/

## Joon

me/ what hast þou done? Jh̄c answeride/ my kyngdom is not of þis worlde/ zif my kyngdom were of þis worlde: soþely my mynystris schulden stryue · þat I schulde not be bitaken to þe iewis/ nowe forsoþe my kyngdom is not of hens (or of þis place/) and so pilate seyde to hym/ þerfore þou art kyng? Jh̄c answeride/ þou seist for I am a kyng/ I in þis þing am borne · & to þis I came into þe worlde: þat I here witnessynge to treuþe/ eche man þat is of treuþe: heriþ my voyce/ pilate seiþ to hym/ what is treuþe/ and whanne he had seyde þis þing: eftesone he wente oute to þe iewis: & seyde to hem/ I fynde no cause azenes hym/ forsoþe it is a custom to zou · þat I leue (or delyuer) one to zou in pask/ þerfore wole zee I schal dismaynte to zou þe kyng of iewes? þerfore þei crieden eftesone alle seyinge/ not þis: but barrabas/ forsoþe barrabas was a þeeff//



Therefore pilate took Jh̄u & scourgide/ & knyztis foldyngge a crowne of þornes: puttiden to his heede/ & diden aboute hym a cloþe of purpur: and camen to hym & seyden to hym [

C<sup>m</sup> 19<sup>m</sup>

] buffetis/ eftesone pilate wente oute: and seyde to hem/ lo I leede hym to zou wiþ oute forþe · þat zee knowe: for I fynde no cause in hym/ þerfore Jh̄c wente oute berynge a crowne of þornes: and a cloþe of purpur/ & he seiþ to hem/ lo þe man/ þerfore whanne þe bischopis & mynystris hadden seen hym þei crieden seyinge crucifie crucifie hym/ pilate seiþ to hem/ take zee hym: and crucifie zee/ soþely I fynde no cause in hym/ þe iewis answeriden to hym/ we haue a lawe · & aftir þe lawe he schal die: for he made hym goddis sone/ þerfore whanne pilate had herde þis worde: he dredde more/ & he wente into þe moot halle: eftesone he seyde to Jh̄u/ of whens art þou? and Jh̄c zawe not answer to hym/ and pilate seiþ to hym/ spekist þou not to me? wost þou not for I haue power for to crucifie þee: and I haue power for to delyuer þee? Jh̄c answeride/

E E

þou



# Joan

at be

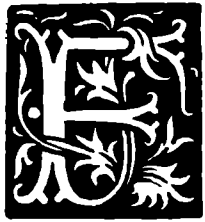
## Joan

& þe disciple stondynge whom he louede: he seiþ to his modir/  
womman lo þi sone/ aftirwarde he seyde to þe disciple/ lo  
þi modir/ & fro þat houre: þe disciple took hire into his mo-  
dir// ¶ Aftirwarde Jh̄c witynge for now alle þingis ben en-  
dide: þat þe scripture schulde be fulfild: he seiþ/ I þriste/  
soþely a vessel was putte ful of vynegre/ þei forsoþe puttynge  
aboute wiþ ysope þe spounge ful vynegre: offerden to his  
mouþ/ þerfore whanne Jh̄u hadde taken þe vynegre: he seyde/  
it is endide/ and þe heed bowide doune: he bitoke þe spirit/ for-  
soþe for it was paske euen · þat þe bodies schulden not dwelle in  
þe crosse in þe saboth · for þe ilke day of saboth was greet: þe  
iewes preyeden pilate þat þe hippis of hem schulden be broken  
& taken away/ þerfore knyztis camen · & soþely þei braken þe  
þies of þe firste · & of þe toþer þat was crucifiede wiþ hym/ soþe-  
ly whanne þei hadden comen to Jh̄u: as þei sizen hym deade ·  
þei braken not his þies: but one of þe knyztis openyde his side  
wiþ a spere/ & anone blood & water wente oute/ and he þat  
sise bare witnessynge: & his witnessynge is trewe · for he woot  
þat he seiþ trewe þingis: þat zee bileue/ forsoþe þes þingis ben  
done: þat þe scripture schulde be fulfild/ zee schulen not breke  
(or make lesse) a boon of hym/ & eftesone anoper scripture  
seiþ/ þei schulen se into whom þei putten þourz/ Soþely aftir  
þes þingis Ioseph of armathie preyede pilate þat þei schul-  
den take away þe body of Jh̄u/ soþely & nythodeme came þat  
had comen to Jh̄u firste in þe nyzt · berynge a medelynge of  
myrrre & aloes: as an hundride ponde/ þerfore þei token þe  
body of Jh̄u & bounde it in linnen cloþes wiþ swete oynementis  
(or spices): as it is custom to Iewes for to birie/ soþely in þe  
place where he was crucifiede: was a zerde/ & in þe zerde a  
newe graue: in þe whiche not zit any man was putte/ þerfore  
þere for þe paske euen of iewis · for þat þe graue was nyzt:  
þei puttiden Jh̄u//

Forsoþe

## Joon

C<sup>m</sup> 20<sup>m</sup>



Orsoþe in one (day) of þe saboth (þat is þe woke):  
mary maudeleyn came erly to þe graue · whanne  
zit dirkenessis weren: and sche s̄ize þe soon turnyde  
azen fro þe graue/ þerfore sche ran & came to Sym-  
mount petre & to anoper disciple whom Jh̄c louede: & seiþ to  
hem/þei haue taken þe lorde fro þe graue: and we witen not  
where þei haue putte hym/ þerfore petre wente oute & þe ilke  
oper disciple: and þei camen to þe graue/ forsoþe þe two run-  
nen togedir: & þe ilke oper disciple ranne bifore sunner þan  
petre: and came firste to þe graue/ and whanne he had inbow-  
ide hym: he s̄ize þe schetis putte · neþeles he entride not in/  
þerfore symount peter came supnge hym/ and he entride into  
þe graue/ and he s̄ize þe schetis putte · & þe sudarie þat was  
on his heede · not putte wiþ þe scheetis: but bi it self wlap-  
pide into one place/ þerfore þanne & þe ilke disciple þat came firste  
to þe graue: entride & s̄ize & bileuede/ forsoþe þei wisten not  
þe scripture: for it bihofte hym for to rise azen fro deade/ þer-  
fore þe disciplis wenten estesone to hem self/ forsoþe mary  
stood at þe graue wiþ outhen forþe wepyng/ þerfore þe while  
sche wepte: sche bowide hire & bihelde forþ into þe graue · &  
sche s̄ize two aungels sittynge in white · one at þe heede & one  
at þe feet where þe body of Jh̄u was putte/ þei seyn to hire/  
womman what wepist þou? sche seyde to hem/ for þei haue  
take away my lorde · & I woot not wher þei haue putte hym/  
and whanne sche hadde seyde þes þingis: sche is turnede abac ·  
& s̄ize Jh̄u stondynge & wiste not for it was Jh̄u/ Jh̄c seiþ to  
hire/ womman what wepist þou: whom seekist þou? sche ges-  
ynge for he was a gardener: seiþ to hym/ s̄ire zif þou hast  
taken hym: seye to me where þou haste putte hym · & I schal  
take hym aweye/ Jh̄c seyde to hire/ mary/ sche conuertide (or  
al turnede): seiþ to hym/ rabony (þat is seyde mayster) Jh̄c  
seiþ to hire/ nyl þou touche me/ for I haue not zit assendide to  
my fadir/ forsoþe go to my breþeren: and seye to hem/ I steyze  
· vp

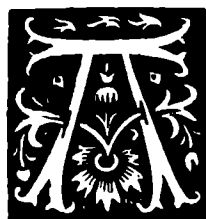
## Joan

up to my fadir & zoure fadir: to my god & zoure god/ mary maudeleyn came tellynge to þe disciplis · for I haue seen þe lorde/ and þes þingis he seyde to me/ whan Ieuen was in þat day in one of þe sabotis · & þe zatis weren schitte where þe disciplis weren gederide for drede of þe ietwis: Jh̄c came & stood in þe mydle of þe disciplis & seiþ to hem/ pees to zou/ and whanne he had seyde þis þing: he schewide to hem handis & syde/ þerfore þe disciplis ioyzeden: þe lorde seen/ þerfore he seiþ to hem este/ pees to zou/ as þe fadir haþ sente me: and I sende zou/ whan he had seyde þes þingis: he blewe & seyde to hem/ take zee þe holy goſt/ whos synnes zee schulen forzyue: þei ben forzouen/ and whos zee schulen wiþ holde: þei ben wiþ holden/ forsoþe thomas one of þe twelue þat is clepide didymus: was not wiþ hem whanne Jh̄c came/ þerfore disciplis seyden/ we haue seen þe lorde/ forsoþe he seyde to hem/ no but I schal se in his handis þe fitchynge of naylis · & schal sende my fyngeris into þe places of þe nayles · & schal sende myn hande into hys side: I schal not bileue/ and aftir eyzte dayes · estesone his disciplis weren wiþinne: and thomas wiþ hem/ Jh̄c came þe zatis schitte: and stode in þe mydle & seyde/ pees to zou/ aftirwarde he seiþ to thomas/ brynge in þi fynger hidir · & se myn handis & brynge to þin hande · & sende (or putte) it into my side · & nyl þou be unbileueful: but seiþful/ thomas answeride & seyde to hym/ my lorde & my god/ Jh̄c seiþ to hym/ thomas for þou haſt seen me: þou bileuedest/ bleſſide þei þat seen not: and haue bileuede/ forsoþe & many oþer signes Jh̄c dide in þe sizte of his disciplis: þe whiche ben not writen in þis booc/ forsoþe þes ben writen þat zee bileue for Jh̄c is þe sone of god/ and þat zee bileuynge: haue liſf in his name//

Aftirwarde

## Joon

C<sup>m</sup> 21<sup>m</sup>



Stirwarde Jh̄c estesone schewide hym to his disci-  
plis at þe see of tyberiadis: soþely he schewide þus/  
þer weren togedir Symount petre & thomas þat  
is seyde didymus · & nathanael þat was of chana  
galilee · & þe sones of zebedee · & oþer of his disciplis two [

] þei seyn to hym/

and we comen wiþ þee/ and þei wenten oute & slepyeden into  
a boot · & in þat nyzt þei token no þing/ forsoþe þe morowe  
made: Jh̄c stood in þe brynke/ neþeles þe disciplis knewen  
not: for it is Jh̄c/ þerfore Jh̄c seiþ to hem: children wher  
zee haue any soupyng þing? þei answereden nay/ he seyde  
to hem/ sende zee þe nette into þe rizthalse of þe rowynges:  
and zee schulen fynde/ þerfore þei senten þe nette & nowē þei  
myzten not drawe it · for multitude of fischis/ þerfore þe ilke  
disciple þe whiche Jh̄c louede: seyde to petre/ it is þe lorde/  
Symount petre whanne he had herde for it is þe lorde:  
girde hym wiþ a coot/ soþely he was nakide · & sente hym  
into þe see/ soþly oþer disciplis camen bi boot/ for þei weren  
not fer fro þe lande · but as two hundride cubitis: draw-  
yngē þe nette of fischis/ þerfore as þei camen doune into  
þe lande: þei sizen coolis putte · & a fische putte þeron · &  
breed: Jh̄c seiþ to hem/ bryngē zee of þe fischis: þe whiche zee  
haue taken nowē/ Symount petre slepyede vp · & drowe þe  
nette into þe lande ful of greet fischis · an hundride fifty & þre/  
and whanne þei weren so manye: þe nette is not broken/ Jh̄c  
seiþ to hem/ come zee: ete zee/ and no man of þe sittynge  
at mete durste are hym · who art þou · wityngē for it is þe  
lorde/ and Jh̄c came & tooke breede & zaue to hem · & þe fische  
also/ nowē þis þridde tyme/ Jh̄c is schewide to his disciplis:  
whan he roos azen fro deade// ¶ þerfore whanne þei hadden  
eten: Jh̄c seiþ to Symount petre/ Symount of Joon louest  
þou me · more þan þes? [

] zhe lorde · þou woste for

I loue þee/ Jh̄c seiþ to hym/ fede þou my lambren/ este he seiþ

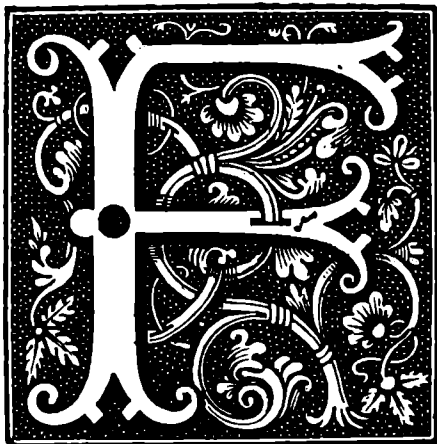
- to

## Joan

to hym/ Symount of Jon louest þou me/ [ ] 3he lorde  
þou woste for I loue þee/ [ ] he seiþ to hym þe  
þridde tyme/ Symount of Jon louest þou me/ petre is heuy  
(or soory) for he seiþ þe þridde tyme louest þou me/ and he seiþ  
to hym/ lorde þou woste alle þingis · þou woste for I loue þee/  
Jhc seiþ to hym/ feet my scheep/ treuely treuely I seye to þee ·  
whan þou were zonger þou girdist þee & wandrist where þou  
woldist/ soþely whanne þou schalt ware eldre/ þou schalt  
holde forþe þin handis · & anoper schal girde þee · & leede þee  
whidir þou wolte not/ soþely he seyde þis þing · signyfyinge  
by what deþ he was to glorifie god/ ¶ And whanne he had  
seyde þes þingis/ he seiþ to hym/ sue þou me/ petre conuertȝde  
(or turnȝde) siȝe þe ilke disciple supinge whom ihc louede · & þe  
whiche restide in þe soper on his breste/ and seyde to hym/ lorde  
who is it þat schal bitrage þee/ þerfore whanne petre had seen  
þis/ he seiþ to Jhū/ lorde what forsoþe þis/ Jhc seiþ to hym/  
so I wole hym dwelle til þat I come · what to þee/ sue þou me/  
þerfore þis worde wente oute amonge breþeren/ for þe ilke  
disciple dieþ not/ and Jhc seyde not to hym for he dieþ not/  
but so I wole hym dwelle til þat I come/ what to þee/ þis is  
þe ilke disciple þat berip witnessynge of þes þingis/ and wrote  
þes þingis/ and we witen for his witnessynge is trewe/ forsoþe  
þer ben & manȝe oþer signes (or myraclis) þat Jhc dide/ þe  
whiche zif þei ben writen by eche by hym self/ I gesse neþer þe  
worlde hym self motone taken þe bookis þat ben to be writen//

Forsoþe

## ye dedis of ye apostlis.



Orsope þou theophil firste I made a ser-  
moune (or worde) of alle þe þingis þat  
Ih̄c bigan for to do & teche: til into þe  
day in whiche he comaundyng to þe  
apostlis by þe holy goſt · whom he chees  
was taken vp/ to whom & he ſaue hym  
ſelfalſue (or quicke) aftir his paſſioun  
in many argumentis (or prouyngis) by  
fourty dayes: apperynge to hem & ſpekynge of þe reſurreccion of  
god/ and he etyng togedir comaundide to hem þat þei ſchul-  
den not departe fro ieruſalem · but þei ſchulden abide þe biheſte of  
þe fadir · þe whiche ſee herden he ſeiþ by my mouþe/ for ſoþely  
I ſon baptiſide in water: but ſee ſchulen be baptiſide in þe holy  
goſt: not aftir þes many dayes/ þerfore þei þat camen to ge-  
dir: aſcenden hym ſeyinge/ lord ſi in þis tyme ſchalt þou re-  
ſtore þe kyngdom of iſrael/ forſoþe he ſeyde to hem/ it is not  
zoure to haue known þe tymes or momentis þe whiche þe  
fadir has putte in his power/ but ſee ſchulen take þe vertue  
of þe holy goſt comynge fro aboue into zou · & ſee ſchulen be  
witneſſis to me in ieruſalem · & in al Jude & in ſamarie: and vnto  
þe vttermoſt of erþe/ and whanne he had ſeyde þes þingis · hem  
ſeinge: he was liſte vp · & a cloude receyuyde hym fro þe eyzen  
of hem/ & whanne þei bihilden hym goinge into heuene: lo two  
men ſtoden nyȝ biſidis hem in white cloþes · þe whiche & ſey-  
den/ men of galilee: what ſtondyng ſee biholdyng into heu-  
ene/ þis Ih̄c þat is taken vp fro zou into heuene: ſo ſchal  
come · as ſee ſizen hym goinge into heuene/ þanne þei turn-  
eden azen to ieruſalem · fro þe hil þat is clepide of olyuete · þe  
whiche is biſidis ieruſalem: hauynge þe iourney of a ſaboth/ and  
whanne þei hadden entride into þe ſoupyng place: þei wenten  
vp

## ye aplis

vp into þe hizer þingis · where þei dwelten · petre & Ion  
James & andrew · Philip & Thomas · Bartholomeu & ma-  
theu · James of Alphei · & Symount zelotes · and Judas of  
James/ alle þes weren dwellynge (or lastyng) to gedir in  
prayer wiþ wymmnen · & mary þe modir of Ihū · and wiþ  
his breþeren// ¶ In þo dayes petre rysyng vp in þe mydle  
of breþeren · seyde/ forsoþe þer was a cumpange of men to  
gedir · almost an hundride & twenty/ men breþeren it bihoueh  
þe scripture to be fulfild · whiche þe holy goſt bifore seyde by  
þe moup of dauid · of Judas þat was leder of hem þat token  
Ihū · þe whiche was nowmbride in vs & gate þe sorte of his  
mynysterie/ and forsoþe þis weldide a feelde of þe hijre of  
wickidnesse · & he hangide to barste þe mydle · and all his en-  
traylis ben sched abroode/ and it is made knowen to alle men  
dwellynge in irlm̄ so þat þe ilke feelde was clepide achildemak  
in þe langage of hem · þat is þe feelde of blood/ forsoþe it is  
writen in þe book of psalmes/ þe habitacōn of hym be made  
deserte · and be þer not þat dwelle in it · & anoper take þe bisch-  
opricke of hym/ þerfore it bihoueh of þes men þat ben geder-  
ide to gedir wiþ vs in al tyme in whiche þe lorde Ihū entride  
in and wente oute amonge vs · byggynnyng fro þe baptyſm of  
Joon vnto þe day in whiche he was taken vp fro vs · one of  
þes for to be made a witnesse of his resurreccōn wiþ vs/ and  
þei ordeynyden two/ Ioseph þat is clepide barfabas · þat is  
namede iustus · and mathie/ and þei preyinge · seyden/ þou  
lorde þat has knowen þe hertis of men · schewe whom þou hast  
chosen of þes two · one for to take þe place of þis mynysterie  
& apostilhede · of þe whiche Judas trespasside · þat he schulde go  
into his place/ and þei zauen lottis to hem/ and þe lotte feld  
on mathie · & he was nowmbrede to gedir · wiþ þe elleuene  
apostlis//



## Dedís

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>



And whanne þe pentecostis dayes (þat is fifty) ·  
 weren fulfildes: alle disciplis weren togedir in þe  
 same place and sodeynly þer was made a sounne  
 from heuene · as a great spirit comynge to: and it  
 fulfildes al þe hous: where þei weren sittynge/ and tungis dy-  
 uerselypartide as fire appereden to hem: and it sate vpon eche  
 of hem/ & alle ben fulfildes wih þe holy goste/ & þei bigunnen  
 for to speec wih dyuerse langagis · as þe holy gost ȝaue to hem  
 for to speke/ forsoþe þere weren in irlm dwellynge iewes re-  
 ligious men: of eche nacōn þat is vndre heuene/ soþely þis  
 voyce made: þe multitude came to gedir/ & in soule (or vn-  
 derstondynge) was confoundide (or astonpede): for eche man  
 herde hem spekyng in his langage/ forsoþe alle men weren  
 astonpede in witte: and wondriden seyinge togedir/ wher not  
 alle þes þat speken ben galilees: & how haue we herde eche  
 man his langage in whiche we ben borne/ parthi · & medy · &  
 elampte · & þei þat dwellen at mesopotanye · Jude · & capadosie ·  
 ponte · & asie · frigie · & pamphilie · egipte & þe parties of libie ·  
 þat is aboute syrenen: and comelyngis romayns/ and iewis &  
 profelitis · men of crete & of arabie/ we haue herde hem spe-  
 kyng in oure langagis: þe grete þingis of god/ forsoþe alle  
 weren stonpede in witte: and wondriden seyinge/ what wole  
 þis þing be/ forsoþe oþer scorneden seyinge: for þei ben ful  
 of muste/ forsoþe petre stondynge wih þe elleuene: reyside his  
 voyce & spac to hem/ men iewis & alle þat dwellen at irlm: be  
 þis þing knowen to ȝou · & wih eres perseyue my wordis/  
 Soþely not as ȝee demen (or gessen) þes ben drunken: whan  
 it is þe þridde houre of þe day (or undrun): but þis þing it is  
 þat was seyde by þe prophete ioel/ and it schal be in þe laste  
 dayes: þe lorde seih/ I schal leede oute of my spirit on al  
 fleysche: and ȝoure sones & ȝoure douztris schulen prophecie/  
 and ȝoure ȝonge schulen se visiouns: and ȝoure eldres schulen  
 dreame sʒenenes/ and soþely on my men seruauntis · & myn  
 hande

## ye aplis

hande maydens · in þo dayes I schal helde oute of my spirit;  
and þei schulen prophecie/ and I schal ȝue grete wondris in  
heuene aboue & signes in erþe byneþe: blood & fir & vapoure  
(or smoke)/ þe sunne schal be turnyde into dirkenessis : & þe  
mone into blood: bifore þat þe greet & open day of þe lorde  
schal come/ and eche man who euer schal inclepe þe name of  
þe lorde schal be saaf/ ȝee men of isrl here þes wordis/ Ihu of  
nazareth a manprouede of god in ȝou by vertues (or myraclis) ·  
& wondris · & tokenes · þe whiche god dide by hym in þe mydel  
of ȝou as ȝee witen: hym þe counseyl endid · & by þe priscience  
(or bifore knowynge) of god · bitaken (or bitrayede) · by þe  
handis of wickide men: and turmentynge slown/ whom god  
repside þe sorowis of helle vnbunden: vp þat it was impos-  
sible · hym for to be holden of it/ soþely dauid seiþ into hym/  
I puruepede þe lorde bifore me euermore: for he is on my rizt  
halfe · þat it be not mouede/ for þis þing myn herte ioyede ·  
& mytunge gladide: more ouer & my fleysche schal reste in hope/  
for þou schalt not forsake my soule in helle: neþer þou schalt  
ȝue þin holy for to se corrupcōn/ þou hast made knowen to  
me þe weyes of lijf: þou schalt fulfille me in myrþe wiþ þi  
face// ¶ ¶ When breþeren be it leueful boldely for to saye to ȝou  
of þe patriarke dauid · for he is deade & byriede · & his sepul-  
cre is at vs til into þis day/ þerfore whanne he was a prophete  
& wiste for wiþ an oþe he had sworne to hym · of þe fruyte of  
his leende for to sitte on his feet: he purueyinge spac of þe re-  
surreccōn of crist/ for neþer he is lefte in helle neþer his fleysche  
size corrupcōn/ god repside þis Ihu: to whom we alle ben  
witnæssis/ þerfore he enhauncide by þe rizt hande of god & by  
þe biheste of þe holy goost taken of þe fadir: he sched oute þis þat  
ȝee seen & heren/ forsoþe dauid assendide not into heuene/  
forsoþe he seiþ/ þe lorde seyde to my lord · sitte on my rizt  
halfe · til I schal putte þin enemyes: þe stool of þi feet/ þerfore  
moſte certeynly wite al þe hous of isrl · for god repside hym  
lorde & crist: þis Ihu whom ȝee crucifieden/ þes þingis herde:  
þei

## Dedis

pei weren compunt in herte/ & pei seyden to petre & to oþer apostlis/ men breþeren: what schulen we do / petre forsoþe seiþ to hem/ penaunce he seiþ do zee: and eche of zou be cristenyde in þe name of Ihu crist into remyscion of zoure synnes: and zee schulen take þe zifte of þe holy gost/ forsoþe repromyscion (or estebiheste) · is to zou & to zoure sones · & to alle þat ben fer: whom euer þe lorde oure god haþ clepide to/ soþely wiþ oþer wordis ful manye he witnesside: & monestide hem seinge/ be zee sauede fro þis wickide (or schrewide) generacon/ þerfore pei þat receyueden his wordis: weren baptiside/ & in þat day ben putte to: aboute þre housande soules/ forsoþe pei weren lastyng in techyng of þe apostlis: and in comunyng of brekyng of breede & in preyers/ forsoþe drede was made to eche soule/ and many wondris & signes weren done by þe apostlis in ierlm/ & greet drede was in alle/ also alle men þat bileueden weren to gedir: and hadden alle þingis comoune/ pei selden possessionis & substaunces (or goodis) · and departiden alle þingis to alle men: as it was nede to eche/ forsoþe day by day pei lastyng to gedir in þe temple · & brekyng breede aboute housis · token mete wiþ gladynge & symplenesse of herte · herpyng to gedir god: and al haupyng grace to al þe puple/ forsoþe þe lorde encreside hem þat weren made saaf: eche day into þe same þing//

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



**D**rsoþe petre & Ion steyzeden into þe temple: at þe nynþe houre of preyinge/ and a man þat was lame fro þe wombe of his modir: was borne/ whom pei puttiden eche day at þe zate of þe temple · þat is seyde sayre: þat he schulde are almes of men entryng into þe temple/ þis whanne he sise petre & Ion bygynnyng for to entre into þe temple: preyeden þat he schulde take almes/ forsoþe petre wiþ Ioon biholdyng hym: seyde biholde into vs/ and he bihelde into hem: hoppyng hym to takyng sum þing of hem/ forsoþe petre seyde/ siluer & golde is not to me/ þat þat I haue

## ye aplis

I haue Iꝑꝑue to þee/ in þe name of Ihu crist of nazereth: rise þou & go/ and his rizte hande taken: he lifte hym vp/ and anone þe groundis & þe plauntis (or foolis) of hym ben saddide to gedir/ and he leepꝑng stode & wandride/ and entride wih hem into þe temple: wandꝑꝑnge & leꝑꝑnge & herꝑꝑnge god/ and al þe puple siꝑe hym walkꝑꝑnge & herꝑꝑnge god/ forsoþe þei knewen hym for it was he þat satte at almes: at þe fayr zate of þe temple/ and þei weren fulfilde wih wondꝑꝑnge & extasy · (þat is leesꝑꝑnge of mynde & resoune & lettꝑꝑnge of tunge:) in þat þing þat felle to hym/ ¶ Soþely whanne þei siꝑen petre & Ioon: al þe puple ran to hem at þe porche · þat was cleꝑide of Salamon · wondꝑꝑnge gretly/ forsoþe petre seyinge: answeride to þe puple/ men of isrl: what wondren zee in þis þing · or what biholdꝑꝑnge zee vs: as by oure vertue or power · we maden þis for to walke: god of abraham · & god of ysaac · & god of iacob · god of oure faderis haþ glorifiede his sone Ihu: whom soþely zee bitrayeden · & denyeden bifore þe face of pilate · hym demꝑꝑng: for to be dismyttide (or leste)/ zee forsoþe denieden þe holy & iuste: & zee axiden a mansleer for to be zouen to zou/ forsoþe zee slouen þe maker of lijf: whom god reꝑꝑside fro deade men/ of whom zee ben witnessis: and in þe seiþ of his name he haþ confermyde þis whom zee seen & haue knowen/ þe name of hym & þe seiþ þat is by hym: zaue þis ful helþe · in þe siꝑte of alle zou/ and nowebreþeren I woot · þat by unwiting zee diden: as & zoure prynces/ god forsoþe þat bifore tolde by þe mouþe of alle prophetis · his crist for to suffre: fulfilde so/ þerfore be zee repentaunt & be zee conuertide: þat zoure synnes be done aweꝑe · whanne þe tymes of kelynge (or refreschyng) fro þe siꝑt of þe lorde schulen come: and he schal sende hym þat nowe is prechide to zou · Ihu crist/ whom soþely it bihoueþ heuene for to receꝑue: til into þe tymes of restitucon of alle þingis: þe whiche þe lorde spak by þe mouþ of his holy prophetis fro þe worlde/ forsoþe moyses seyde/ for þe lorde zoure god schal reꝑꝑse to zou a prophete of zoure breþeren:

## Dedis

heren: as me zee schulen here hym vpon alle þingis · what euer he schal speke to zou/ forsoþe it schal be/ euery soule þat schal not here þe ilke prophete: schal be distrupede (or exilide) of þe puple/ and alle prophetis fro samuel & aftirwarde þat spaken: tolden þes dayes/ zee forsoþe ben þe sones of prophetis · & of þe testament þat god ordeynide to oure faderis: seyinge to abraham/ in þi seed: alle þe meynes of erþe schulen be bleßide/ god reysynge his sone firste to zou · sente hym blesynge zou: þat eche man conuerte hym fro his wickidnesse//

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>



**D**rsoþe hem spekyng to þe puple pristis and magistratis of þe temple camen vpon/ and saduceys sorrowynge þat þei schulden teche þe puple · & tolden into Ihu azen risynge fro deade (men)/ and þei leyden handis into hem: and puttiden hem into kepyng · til into þe morowe/ Soþely it was now euen/ forsoþe many of hem þat hadden herde þe worde: bileueden/ and þe nowmbre of hem is made fyue þousande/ forsoþe in þe morowe it is done · þat þe prynces of hem & eldre men & scribis schulden be gederide in ierlm: and annas prynce of pristis & caphas & Ioon & alexaunder · & how many euer weren of þe kynde of pristis/ and þei ordeynynge hem in þe mydel: axiden in what vertue or what name: haue zee done þis þing: þanne petre fulfilde wip þe holy goft: seyde to hem/ zee prynces of þe puple & eldre men here zee/ zif we to day ben demyde in þe gode dede of a sijk man · in þe whiche þis is made saaf: be it knowen to zou alle · & to al þe puple of isrl · for in þe name of oure lorde ihu crist of nazareth whom zee crucifide · whom god reyside fro deade (men)/ in þis · þis man stondiþ hool bifore zee/ þis is þe stoon þe whiche was reprouede of zou bildynge: þe whiche is made into þe hede of þe corner: & helpe is not in any oþer/ forsoþe neþer oþer name is vndir heuene zouen to men: in whiche it bihoueþ vs for to be made saaf/ forsoþe þei seinge þe stidfastnesse of petre & Ioon · founden þat þei weren men wip outen

## ye aplis

outen lettris & ydiotis: wondriden · & knewen for þei weren  
wiþ Ihu/ and seinge þe man stondynge wiþ hem þat was he-  
lide: þei myzten no þing azen seye/ forsoþe þei comaundiden  
hem for to go forþ wiþ outen þe counseyl: and þei spaken to  
gedir seyinge/ what schulen we do to þes men? for soþely þe  
signe is made knowen by hem: to alle men dwellynge at irlm/  
it is open: & we moten not denye/ but þat it be no more pup-  
lischide in to þe puple: manase we to hem · þat þei speken no  
more in þis name to any men/ and þei clepyng hem de-  
nounsiden: þat on no maner þei schulden speke ne teche: in þe  
name of Ihu/ forsoþe petre & Ion answerynge: seyden to hem/  
zif it be riztful in þe sizte of god · for to here zou raþer þan  
god: deme zee/ forsoþe we motene not þe þingis þat we haue  
seen & herde: but speke/ & þei manasyng: lesten hem · not  
fyndynge how þei schulden punysche hem: for þe puple/ for  
alle men clarifieden þat þing þat was done: in þat þing þat  
bifel/ forsoþe þe man was more þan of fourty zeeris: in whom  
þe signe of helpe was made/ forsoþe þei leste camen to heren  
& tolden to hem: how manye þingis þe prynces & eldre men  
seyden to hem/ þe whiche whanne þei herden: wiþ one herte  
reysiden voyce to þe lorde & seyden/ lorde þou þat madist he-  
uene & erþe · see & alle þingis þat ben in hem · þe whiche by þe  
holy gost by þe mouþe of oure fadir daupde þi childe: seydist/  
whi heþen men wrathiden (or beeten wiþ teþ to gedir): and  
puplis þouzten veyne þingis/ kyngis of þe erþe stoden nyz: &  
prynces camen togedir into one azenes þe lorde · & azenes his  
crist/ for þei camen togedir verreyly in þis cytee azenes þin  
holy childe/ Ihu whom þou anoyntidist: heroude & pounce  
pilate wiþ heþen men & puplis of isrl: for to do þe þingis þat  
þin hande & þi counsayl demeden for to be done/ and now  
lorde biholde into þe þretynngis of hem: & zif to þi seruauntis  
wiþ al triste for to speke þi worde · in þat þing þat þou holde  
forþe þin hande · helþes & signes & wondris for to be made  
by þe name of þin holy sone Ihu/ and whanne þei hadden  
prepede:

## Dedīs

preyede: þe place was mouede in whiche þei weren gederide/  
and alle ben fulfildē wiþ þe holy goſt: & ſpaken þe worde of  
god wiþ triſte/ forſoþe of þe multitude of men bileuynge · þer  
was one herte & one ſoule (or wille)/ neþer any man ſeyde any  
þing of þo þingis þat he weldide for to be his owne: but alle  
þingis weren in comyn to hem/ & wiþ greet vertue þe apoſtliſ  
zolden witneſſynge of þe azen ryſynge of Ihu criſt oure lorde:  
& greet grace was in hem alle/ forſoþe neþer any nedy man  
was amonge hem/ & how many euer weren poſſeſſours (or  
welders) of feeldis (or houſis): þei ſellynge brouzten to · þe  
pryce of þo þingis þat þei ſolden · & puttiden bifore þe feet of  
þe apoſtliſ/ forſoþe þei departiden to eche: as it was nede to  
eche/ forſoþe Joſeph þat is nampde barnabas of þe apoſtliſ ·  
þat is interpretide þe ſone of conforte & deken of þe kynde of  
cypre · whanne he had a feelde · ſelde it & brouzte to þe price ·  
& puttide it bifore þe feet of apoſtliſ//

C<sup>m</sup> 5<sup>m</sup>



**F**orſoþe a man ananye by name wiþ ſaphira his wiſe  
ſelde a feelde · & defraudide of þe priſe · his wiſe  
gilty (or wytyngē): and he bryngynge ſum parte  
puttide it bifore þe feet of þe apoſtliſ/ forſoþe petre  
ſeyde/ ananye whi haſt ſathanas temptide þin herte · þee for  
to lie to þe holy goſt: and for to defraude of þe pryce of þe  
feelde: wher it dwellynge · dwelte not to þee? and it ſolde  
was in þi power? why haſt þou putte þis þing in þin herte?  
þou haſt not liede to men: but to god/ forſoþe ananye herynge  
þes wordis fel doune & diede/ and greet drede was into alle  
þat herden/ forſoþe zonge men ryſynge · moueden hym aweye:  
and berynge oute byrieden/ forſoþe þer was made as þe ſpace  
of þre houres · & þe wiſf of hym not knowynge þat þing þat  
was done: entride in/ forſoþe petre anſweride to hire/ wom-  
man ſeye to me: zif zee ſelden þe feelde for ſo myche? and  
ſche ſeyde zhe: ſo myche/ forſoþe petre ſeyde to hire/ what  
ſophely came to gedir to zou (or acordide) for to tempte þe ſpi-  
rit

## ye aplis

rit of þe lorde/ lo þe feet of hem þat haue biriede þin housbonde  
at þe dore/ and þei schulen bere þee oute/ anone sche fel doune  
at his feet/ & diede/ forsoþe þe zonge men entrynge founden  
hire deade/ & þei baren hire oute & birieden to hire housbonde/  
and greet drede is made in al þe chirche/ and into alle þat  
herden þes þingis/ forsoþe by þe handis of apostlis/ signes &  
manye wondris weren made in þe puple & alle weren to gedir  
in þe porche of salamon/ forsoþe no man of oþer durste ioyne  
hym self wiþ hem/ but þe puple magnyfiede hym/ forsoþe þe  
multitude of men & wymmen byleuyng in þe lorde was more  
encreside/ so þat into stretis þei brouzten sijk men & puttiden  
in litil beddis & couchis/ þat petre comynge/ namely þe scha-  
dowe of hym schulde schadowe eche of hem/ & þei wer dely-  
ueride fro al sekenesse/ forsoþe þe multitude of cytees nyz to  
ierlm ran bryngynge to sijk men & traueylide of vnclene spiri-  
tis/ þe whiche weren heelide alle/ forsoþe þe prynces of pristis  
risynge/ & alle þat weren wiþ hym/ þat is þe heresie of sadu-  
cees/ ben fulfild wiþ enuye/ & leyden handis into apostlis/  
and puttiden hem in comoune kepyng/ forsoþe þe aungel  
of þe lorde by nyzt openynge þe zate of þe prisoune & ledynge  
hem oute/ seyde/ go zee & zee stondynge speke in þe temple to  
þe puple/ and þe wordis of his lijf/ þe whiche whan þei had-  
den herdes/ entreden erly into þe temple & tauzten/ forsoþe þe  
prynce of pristis comynge & þei þat weren wiþ hym/ clepide  
to gedir þe counseyl/ & al þe eldre men of þe sones of isrl/ &  
senten to þe prisoune þat þei schulden be brouzte forþ/ soþely  
whanne þe mynystris came & þe prisoune openyde founden hem  
not/ þei turneden azen tolden seyinge/ forsoþe we founden þe  
prisoune schitte wiþ al diligence/ & þe kepers stondynge at þe  
zatis/ forsoþe we openynge/ founden no man þerinne/ Soþely  
as þe magistratis of þe temple & þe prynces of pristis herden  
þes wordis/ þei doutiden of hem what schulde be done/ forsoþe  
summan comynge/ tolde to hem/ for lo þe men whom zee  
haue putte into prisoune/ ben in þe temple stondynge & tech-  
ynge



## Dedīs

ynge þe puple/ þanne þe magistrate wente wiþ þe mynyſtris:  
and brouzte to wiþ oute ſtrengþe/ forſoþe þei dredde þe pu-  
ple · leſte þei ſchulden be ſtonyde to deþ/ and whanne þei had-  
den brouzte hem to: þei ordeynyden in þe counſeyl/ & þe  
prynces of priſtis: axide hem ſeyinge/ in comaundyng we  
comaundiden to zou: þat zee ſchulden not teche in þis name/  
and lo zee haue fulfild irlm wiþ zoure techynges: and zee  
wolen bryng in on vs þe blood of þis man/ forſoþe petre an-  
ſwerynge & þe apoſtliſ ſeyden/ it bihoueþ for to obeie to god  
more þan to men/ god of oure faderis reſide Ihu whom zee  
ſlowen: hangynge in a tree/ god enhaunſide wiþ his riȝthande  
þis prynce & ſaueoure · for to ȝyue penaunce to iſrl: and re-  
myſſion of ſynnes/ and we ben witneſſis of þes wordis: and þe  
holy goſt whom god ȝaue to alle obſchynge to hym/ whanne  
þei herden þes þingis: þei weren turmentide & þouzten for to  
ſlee hem/ forſoþe ſumman riſynge in þe counſeyl · a phariſe  
gamaliel by name · a doctoure of þe lawe · a worſchipful man  
to al þe puple: comaundide men to be made wiþ outen forþ  
to a ſchorte tyme/ & he ſeyde to hem/ zee men of iſrl take tente  
to zou ſelf on þes men: what zee ben to doinge/ forſoþe bifore  
þes dayes theodas was ſeyinge hymſelf for to be ſumman/ to  
whom a nowmbre of men consentide: aboute foure hundride/  
þe whiche is ſlayne: and alle who euer bileueden vnto hym ·  
ben diſparplide · & brouzte to nouzte/ after þis Judas galilee  
was in þe daye of profeſſiō · & turnede aweye þe puple aftir  
hym/ and alle how manye euer consentiden to hym: ben ſca-  
teride · & he periſchide/ & nowe ſoþely I ſeye to zou · departe  
zee fro þes men & ſuffre zee hem/ for ȝif it be of men þis coun-  
ſeyl (or werke): it ſchal be vndone/ forſoþe ȝif it is of god: zee  
mowne not vndo hem/ but ſuffre zee hem: leſte parauenture ·  
& zee be founden for to repungne to god/ forſoþe þei consen-  
tiden to hym/ and þei clepyng to gedir þe apoſtliſ · denoun-  
ſiden to hem beten: þat þei ſchulden no more ſpeke in þe  
name of Ihu · & leſten hem/ & ſoþely þei wenten ioyinge fro  
þe

## ye aplis

þe sizte of þe counseyl/ for þei ben had worþi for to suffre dispisyng (or wronge) for þe name of Ihu/ forsoþe eche day þei ceesiden not in þe temple & aboute housis: techyng & euangelizyng Ihu crist//



Drsoþe in þo dages þe noumbre of disciplis waxinge: C<sup>m</sup> 6<sup>m</sup>  
grucchyng of grekis is made azenes ebrues · for þat þe widowis of hem weren dispiside in euery dages mynystryng/ forsoþe þe twelue clepyng to gedir þe multitude of disciplis: seyden/ it is not euene þing vs for to forsake þe worde of god: and for to mynyste to bordis/ þerfore breþeren biholde þee men of 3ou of good witnessyng (or fame) · seuene ful of þe holy gost & wisdom: whom we schulen ordeyne on þis werke/ forsoþe we schulen be bispe · to preyer & mynysterie (or prechyng) of þe worde/ & þe worde pleside to al þe multitude/ and þei chesiden steuen a man ful of feiþ & of þe holy gost · & philip & procore · & nychanore & thymon · & permanam · & nychol a geste (or comelyng) antiochene/ þei ordeynyn den þes bifore þe sizte of apostlis: and þei preyinge puttiden þe handis to hem/ and þe worde of þe lorde weride: & þe noumbre of þe disciplis in ierlm was multipliede myche/ also myche cumpanye of pristin obeyede to þe feiþ// ¶ Steuene ful of grace & strengþe: made wondris & greet signes in þe puple/ forsoþe summe risen of þe synagoge þat was clepide of lybertynes & ciryrense & of men of alexandre · & of hem þat weren of cilice & asie disputyng wiþ steuene/ and þei myzten not wiþstonde to þe wisdom & spirit þat spac/ þanne þei pryuelysenten men þat schulden seye hem haue herde hym seyng wordis of blasfemy: in to moyses & god/ and so þei moueden to gedir þe puple & eldre men & scribis: and þei rennyng to gedir raupschiden hym: & brouzten into þe counseyl/ & þei ordeynyn den false witnessis seyng/ þis man ceesiþ not for to speke wordis: azenes þe holy place & lawe/ forsoþe we herden hym seyng/ for þis Ihu of nazareth schal distrue þis place · & schal

## Dedīs

& schal chaunge tradicoñs: þe whiche moyses bitoke to vs/  
and alle men þat saten in þe counseyl biholdynge hym: sizen  
þe face of hym as þe face of an aungel/ forsoþe þe prynce of  
pristis seyde to steuene/ zif þes þingis haue hem so: þe whiche  
seip//

C<sup>m</sup> 7<sup>m</sup>



En breþeren & faderis here zee/ god of glorie appe-  
ride to oure fadir abraham whanne he was in me-  
sopotanye bifore he dwellide in carram: and seyde  
to hym/ go oute of þi lande • & of þi cognacoñ (or  
kynrede): and come into þe lande whom I schal schewe to þee/  
þanne he wente oute of þe lande of caldeis: and dwellide in  
carram/ and þens aftir þat his fadir was deade: he translatide  
hym into þis lande • in whiche zee dwellen nowē/ & he zaue  
not to hym heretage in it • neþer a paas of foot: but he azen  
bihizte for to ȝyue to hym it into possession & to his seede aftir  
hym: whanne he had not a sone/ forsoþe god spac to hym/ for  
his seede schal be a comelynge (or gēste) in an alien lande &  
þei schulen sujet hem to seruage • & schulen euyl treete hem  
foure hundride zeeris & þritty/ and I schal iuge þe folc: to  
whiche þei schulen serue • seip þe lorde/ & aftir þes þingis þei  
schulen go oute: and þei schulen serue to me in þis place/ and  
he zaue to hym a testament of circumcisiōn: & so he gendride  
ysaac & circumcidide hym in þe eyȝthe dāye/ and (ysaac) gen-  
dride iacob: and Iacob þe twelue patriarkis/ and þe patriar-  
kis haupnge enuȝe to Ioseph: solde hym into egipte/ and god  
was wiþ hym & delyueride hym of alle his tribulacoñs: &  
zaue to hym grace & wisdom in þe sizte of pharao kyng of  
egipte/ and he ordeȝnyde hym prouost (or souereyn) on egipte:  
& on al his hous/ forsoþe hungre came into al egipte & ca-  
naan • & grete tribulacōn: & oure faderis founden not metis/  
forsoþe whanne iacob herde • whete for to be in egipte: he sente  
oure faderis firste/ and in þe secounde tyme: Ioseph was  
known of his breþeren: & his kyn is made known to pharao/  
forsoþe

## ye aplis

forsoþe Ioseph sendynge clepide to Iacob his fadir: and al his  
cognacon in seuenty & fyue soulis/ and Iacob discendide into  
egipte · & is deade he & oure faderis · & þei ben translatide in-  
to sicheu · & ben putte in þe sepulcre þat abraham bouzte by  
prise of siluer · of þe sones of emor þe sone of sicheu/ forsoþe  
whan þe tyme of biheste came nyz · þe whiche god had knowel-  
echide to abraham: þe puple were & was multipliede in egipte ·  
til anoþe kyng roos in egipte: þe whiche knewe not Ioseph/  
his bigilynge oure puple · turmentide oure faderis · þat þei  
schulden putte oute here zonge children: lest þei were quyk-  
enyde/ in þe same tyme moyse was borne: and he was ac-  
ceptide (or louede) of god/ and he was norischide þre monethes:  
in þe house of his fadir/ forsoþe hym putte oute þe douzter of  
pharao took hym vp & norischide hym into a sone to hire/ &  
moyse was lernyd in al þe wisdom of egipcians: and he  
was myzty in his werkis/ forsoþe whanne þe tyme of twenty  
zeer was fulfild to hym: it slepye vp into his herte þat he  
schulde visite his breþeren þe sones of isrl/ & whanne he sice a  
man suffrynge wronge: he vengide hym · & dide vengeaunce  
to hym þat suffride wronge · þe egipcian slayne/ forsoþe he  
gesside breþeren for to vnderstonde · for god by þe hande of hym  
schulde ȝyue to hem helpe/ but þei vnderstoden not/ forsoþe in  
þe day supynge · he apperide to hem chydynge · & he recoun-  
seylide hem in pees seyinge/ men zee ben breþeren/ wherto  
noȝen zee eche oþer/ forsoþe he þat dide wronge to his  
neyze bore: puttide hym away seyinge/ who ordeynede þee  
prync & domesman on vs: wher þou wolte flee me as ȝistirday  
þou killidest þe egipcian/ forsoþe in þis worde moyse slepye:  
& was made a comelynge in þe lande of madian: where he  
gendride two sones/ and forty zeer fulfild: an aungel appe-  
ride to hym in fjr of flaume of a busche · in deserte · in þe  
munte of syna/ forsoþe moyse seinge · wondride in sizte/ &  
hym comynge to þat he schulde biholde: þe voyce of þe lorde  
is made to hym seyinge/ I am god of ȝoure faderis/ god of  
abraham ·

## Dedis

abraham · & god of ysaac · god of Jacob/ moyses made trem-  
blyngē: durste not biholde/ forsoþe god seyde to hym/ vnbynde  
þe scho of þi feet/ for þe place in whiche þou stondist is holy  
erþe/ I feinge sīze þe affliccōn of my puple þat is in egipte · & I  
herde þe mournynge of hem: and I came doune for to delyuer  
hem/ & nowē come þou: & I schal sende þee into egipte/ ¶ þis  
moyses whom þei denyeden: seyinge/ who ordeynede þee  
prynce & domesman on vs:/ god sente þis prynce & azen bier ·  
wip þe hande of þe aungel: þat apperide to hym in þe busche/  
þis ledde hem oute doinge wondris & signes in þe lande of egipte  
& in þe reede see: & in deserte fourty zeeris/ þis is moyses þat  
seyde to þe sones of isrl/ god schal reyse to zou a prophete of  
zoure breþeren: as me zee schulen here hym/ þis is þat was  
in þe chirche in wildernesse wip þe aungel þat spak to hym  
in þe mounte of syna · & wip oure faderis: þe whiche took  
wordis of lyfe for to ȝyue to vs/ to whom our faderis wolden  
not obeye · but puttiden hym aweye · & ben turnyde away in  
here hertis into egipte: seyinge to aaron/ make þou to vs  
goddis: þat schulen go bifore vs/ forsoþe to þis moyses þat  
ledde vs oute of þe lande of egipte: we witen not what is done  
to hym/ & þei maden a calue in þo dages: & offerden an ooste  
to þe symulacre · & þei gladiden in þe werkis of here handis/  
forsoþe god turnede & bitoke hem for to serue to þe knyȝthode  
of heuene: as it is writen in þe booc of prophetis/ where zee  
offreden to me slayne sacrifices (or oostis) fourty zeeris in de-  
serte: zee hous of isrl: and zee haue taken þe tabernacle of  
moloc · & þe sterre of zoure god remfam: fygyres þat zee haue  
made for to worschip hem/ & I schal translate zou into babi-  
loyne/ þe tabernacle of witnesynge was wip oure faderis in  
deserte: as god disposide to hem · spekyngē to moyses: þat he  
schulde make it vp þe fourme þat he sīze/ þe whiche & oure fa-  
deris takyng wip Ihū · brouzten into þe possession of heþene  
men: þe whiche god puttide away fro þe face of oure faderis:  
til into þe dages of dauid þat fonde grace anentis god: & axide  
þat

## ye aplis

þat he schulde fynde a tabernacle to god of Jacob/ salamon  
 forsoþe bildide an hous to hym; but þe hize dwelliþ not in made  
 þingis by honde; as he seiþ by þe prophete/ heuene is a feet to  
 me; þe erþe sopely þe stool of my feet/ what hous schulen zee  
 bilde to me seiþ þe lordes; or whiche is þe place of my restynges/  
 wher myn hande made not alle þes þingis; wiþ harde nolle &  
 vncircumcidide hertis & eris · zee wiþ stonden euermore þe  
 holy gost; as & zoure faderis so & zee/ whom of þe prophetis  
 haue not zoure faderis pursuede; & haue slayne hem þat bifore  
 tolden of þe compnge of þe iuste; whos traytours & mansleers  
 zee weren now · þe whiche token þe lawe in ordenaunce of aun-  
 gels; & haue not kepte/ forsoþe þei herpge þes þingis · weren  
 dyuersely turmentide in here hertis · & gnastiden (or grenne-  
 den) in hym/ forsoþe whanne steuene was ful of þe holy gost; he  
 biholdyng into heuene siþe þe glorie of god; and Jhū stond-  
 yng on þe rize halfe of þe vertue of god/ and he seiþ/ lo I see  
 heuenes openyde; and þe sone of man stondyng on þe rize-  
 halfe of þe vertue of god/ forsoþe þei cryng wiþ greet voyce;  
 helden togedir þere eris; & maden to gedir asaute (or feerfe-  
 nesse) into hym/ and þei castyng hym oute of þe cytee; ston-  
 eden/ & þe witneffis diden of here clothes · bisidis þe feet of a  
 zonge man þat was clepide saul/ and þei stoneden steuene;  
 inclepyng & sepyng/ lorde Jhū receyue my spirit/ forsoþe þe  
 knees putte; he criede wiþ greet voyce sepyng/ lorde sette  
 not to hem þis synne; for þei witen not what þei done/ and  
 whanne he had seyde þis þing; he slepte in þe lorde/ forsoþe  
 saul was consentyng to his dep//



Forsoþe greet persecucon was made in þat day in þe  
 chirche; þat was in irlm/ and alle men weren scat-  
 eride by þe cuntrees of Jude · & samarie; out taken  
 þe apostlis/ forsoþe men drededeful birieden steuene;  
 & maden greet mournyng on hym/ forsoþe saul gretely dis-  
 trupde þe chirche · entrynge by houses · drawyng men &  
 wymmen

## Dedís

wymmen bitoke into kepyng (or prisoune)/ þerfore þei þat  
weren scateride · passiden forþ: euangelyzinge þe worde of  
god/ forsoþe philip comynge doune into a cytee of samarie:  
prechide to hem crist/ forsoþe þe cumpanyes zauen tente to  
þes þingis þat weren seyde of philip: to gedir herynge & seinge  
þe signes þat he dide/ forsoþe many of hem þat hadden unclene  
spiritis: crynge wiþ greet voyce wenten oute/ forsoþe many  
sijk in palese & crokide ben helide/ þerfore greet ioþe is maad  
in þat cytee/ forsoþe þer was a man symon by name þe whiche  
bifore was in þe cytee a wicche deceyuyng þe folc of samarie:  
seyinge hym self to be sum greet man to whom alle herkenyden ·  
fro þe leste vnto þe moste: seyinge/ þis is þe vertue of god: þe  
whiche is clepide greet/ forsoþe alle bihilden hym for þis þing ·  
þat myche tyme he had made hem mad (or wood) wiþ his  
wicchyngis/ soþely whanne þei hadden bileuyde to philip  
euangilist of þe kyngdom of god: in þe name of Ihū c̄st · men &  
wymmen weren baptizide/ þanne Symon: & he bileuyde/ and  
whanne he was baptizide: and cleuyde to philip/ he seinge  
also signes & moste vertues for to be made: dredynge wondride/  
forsoþe whanne þe apostlis þat weren at irlm̄ hadden herde ·  
for samarie receyuede þe worde of god: þei senten to hem pe-  
tre & Ion/ þe whiche whanne þei camen: preyeden for hem  
þat þei schulden receyue þe holy goſt/ forsoþe not zit he came  
into any of hem: but þei weren baptiside onely in þe name of  
þe lorde Ihū/ þanne þei puttiden handis on hem: and þei re-  
ceyueden þe holy goſt/ forsoþe whanne Symon had seen for  
þe holy goſt was zouen by puttyng on of þe hande of apost-  
lis: he offerde to hem money · seyinge/ zye zee to me & þis  
power · þat to whom euer I schal putte on handis: he receyue  
þe holy goſt/ forsoþe petre seyde to hym/ þi money be wiþ þee  
into perdicoñ: for þou gessist þe zifte of god for to be had (or  
weldide) by money/ parte is not to þee neþer sorte: in þis  
worde/ for þin herte is not riztful: bifore god/ and so do þou  
penaunce fro þis þi wickidnesse & prepe god: zif parauenture  
þis

## ye aplis

his houzte of þin herte be forzouen to þee/ forsoþe in galle of bittirnesse · & bonde of wickidnesse. I se þee for to be/ forsoþe Symon answerynge seyde/ preye zee for me to þe lorde: þat no þing of þes þat zee haue seyde · come on me/ and þei witnessyng spekyng þe worde of þe lorde · zeeden azen to irlm: & euuangelizeden to many cuntrees & Samaritans/ ¶ Forsoþe an aungel of þe lorde: spac to philip seyng/ rise þou & go azenes þe souzt to þe weye þat goiþ doune fro irlm into gazam: þis is deserte weye/ and he risyng wente forþ/ and lo a man of ethiop · a myzty geldyng of þe queen candace of ethiopies · þe whiche was vpon al hire richessis: came for to worship in irlm/ and he turnyde azen sittyn on his chare: & reedyng ysaie þe prophete/ forsoþe þe spirit seyde to philip/ come to: and ioyn þee to þis chare/ forsoþe philip rennyng: herde hym reedyng ysaie þe prophete/ and he seyde/ gessit þou wher vnderstandist · what þingis þou redist? þe whiche seiþ/ and how may I: zif summan schal not schewe to me? and he preyede philip · þat he schulde steyze vp & sitte wiþ hym/ forsoþe þe place of scripture þat he red: was þis/ as a scheep of sleinge he was led · & as a lombe bifore a man scheryng hym doumbe wiþ outen voyce: so he openyde not his mouþ/ in mekenesse his doom is taken vp/ who schal telle oute þe generacon of hym? for his lijf schal be taken aweye fro þe erþe/ forsoþe þe geldyng answeryng to philip: seyde/ I biseche þee of what prophet seiþ he þis þing: of hym self or of any oþer? forsoþe philip openyng his mouþ · & bigynnyng at þis scripture euuangelizide to hym Ihu/ and þe while þei wenten by þe weye: þei camen to sum water/ and þe geldyng seiþ/ lo water/ who forbediþ me for to be baptiside? forsoþe philip seyde/ zif þou bileuest of al þe herte: it is leueful/ and he answeryng seiþ/ I bileue þe sone of god for to be Ihu/ and he comaundide þe chaar for to stonde/ & þei wenten doune boþe into þe water · philip & þe geldyng · & he baptiside hym/ forsoþe whanne he steyzede vp of þe water · þe spirit of þe lorde · raupschide



## Dedīs

philip: and þe geldynge ſiþe hym no more/ forſoþe he wente  
ioþzinge by his weye/ philip is founden in azoto/ and paſſynge  
forþ euuangelizide to alle cytees: til he came to ceſarie//

C<sup>m</sup> 9<sup>m</sup>



Saul zit breþer (or blower) of manaacis · & betynge  
(or ſleinge) into diſciplis of þe lorde: came nyze to  
þe prynce of priſtis · & axide of hym epiſtliſ into  
damask to ſynagogis/ þat ȝif he fonde any men &  
wymmen of þis liſ: he ſchulde leede bounden to Irlm/ and  
whan he made iourney: it biſel þat he came nyz to damask/ &  
ſodeynly lizt fro heuene ſchoon aboot hym: and he fallynge  
into þe erþe · herde a voyce ſeyinge to hym/ Saul Saul what  
purſueſt þou me: þe whiche ſeyde/ who art þou lorde? and he/  
I am Ihu of nazereth: whom þou purſueſt/ it is harde to þee  
for to kike azenes þe pricke/ & he tremblynge & wondrynge:  
ſeyde/ lorde what wolte þou me for to do? and þe lorde to  
hym/ riſe þou & entre into þe cytee: & it ſchal be ſeyde to þee ·  
what it bihoueþ þee for to do/ forſoþe þo men þat wenten  
wiþ hym: ſtoden made ferde (or oute of mynde)/ ſoþely her-  
ynge a voyce: forſoþe ſeinge no man/ forſoþe ſaul roos fro  
þe erþe: & þe yzen openyde he ſiþe noþing/ forſoþe þei draw-  
ynge hym to hondis ledde into damask/ & he was þre dayes  
not ſeinge: & he ete not breed neþer dranke/ forſoþe a diſ-  
ciple was at damask: by name ananye/ and þe lorde ſeyde  
to hym in a viſioun ananye/ & he ſeiþ/ lo I lorde [and the  
Lorde ſaid] to hym/ riſe þou & go into a ſtreet þat is clepide  
rectus/ and ſeeke in þe houſ of Judas · ſaul by name tarſenſe/  
forſoþe lo he prepeþ/ & he ſiþe a man ananye by name en-  
trynge & puttynge to hym handis: þat he receyue lizt/ forſoþe  
ananye anſweride: lorde I haue herde of many of þis man:  
how many euyl þingis he dide to þe ſeyntis in irłm/ & þis haþ  
power of prynces of priſtis: for to bynde alle men þat inclepen  
þi name/ forſoþe þe lorde ſeiþ to hym/ go þou for þis is to me  
a veſſel of cheſynge: þat he bere my name bifore heþen men &  
kyngis:

## ye aplis

kingis; and þe sones of isrl/ forsoþe I schal schewe to hym • how many þingis it bihouep hym for to suffre for my name/ and ananye wente & entride into þe hous; & he puttyng to hym þe handis seyde/ saul broþer • þe lorde ihū sente me • þat apperide to þee in þe weye • in whiche þou camest; þat þou se & be fulfild wip þe holy goſt/ and anone þere fellen fro his pzen as scalis; & he recepuede ſiȝt/ and he riſyng; is baptiſide/ & whanne he had taken mete; he was confortide/ forsoþe he was wip þe disciplis þat weren at damask; by summe dages/ & anone he entryng into þe ſynagogis • prechide þe lorde Jhū • for þis is þe sone of god/ forsoþe alle men þat herden hym wondreden; and seyden/ wher þis is not þat inpungnede in irlm; hem þat inclepeden þis name; and hidir to þis þing he came; þat he schulde leede hem bounden to þe prynces of priſtis/ forsoþe Saul myche more were ſtronge & confoundide þe iewis þat dwelliden at damask • affermyng for þis is cſt/ forsoþe whan manye dages weren fulfild; Jewes maden a counſeȝl • þat þei schulden flee hym/ forsoþe þe aspies of hem; ben made knowen to Saul/ forsoþe þei kepten & þe ȝatis day & nyȝt þat þei schulden flee hym/ forsoþe his disciplis takyng hym in nyȝt; bi þe wal leſten hym • ſendynge doune & a leep/ forsoþe whanne he came into irlm; he temptide (or aſſayede) for to ioynen hym to þe disciplis; & alle dreden hym • not bileuynge þat he was a diſciple/ forsoþe barnabas led hym to þe apoſtliſ • & tolde to hem how in þe weye he had ſeen þe lorde & for he ſpac to hym; and how in damask he dide triſtily in þe name of Jhū/ and he was wip hem entryng in & goinge oute irlm; doinge triſtily in þe name of þe lorde/ and he ſpac to heben men; & diſputide wip greekis/ forsoþe þei þouȝten for to flee hym/ þe whiche þing whanne breþeren hadden knowen; þei ledden hym in nyȝt to ceſarie • & leſten to tarſis/ ſopely þe chirche by al Jude of galilee & ſamarie; had pees/ & was edifiede; walkyng in dreede of þe lorde; & was fulfild wip comfort of þe holy goſt/ forsoþe it is  
made

## Dedis

made þat petre while þat he passide alle: came to þe holy men þat dwelliden at liddle/ forsoþe he fonde þere summan eneas bi name · fro eyzte zeeris liggynge in bed: þe whiche was sick in paleste/ and petre seih to hym/ eneas þe lorde Jhū crist heele þee/ rise þou & dresse to þee/ and anone he roos/ and alle men þat dwelliden at liddle & sarone · sise hym: þe whiche ben conuertide to þe lorde/ forsoþe in ioppe was sum disciplesse by name tabita: þe whiche interpretide is seyde dorcass/ þis was ful of good werkis & almes dedis þat sche dide/ forsoþe it is made in þo dayes: þat sche made sick diede/ þe whiche whanne þei hadden waschen: þei puttiden hire in a soupyng place/ forsoþe whanne lidda was nyȝt fro ioppe · discipulis herynge for petre was in it · senten two men to hym preyng: þat þou tarie not to come vnto vs/ soþely petre risynge vp: came wiþ hem/ and whanne he came: þei ledde hym into þe soupyng place/ and alle þe widowis aboute hym wepyng & schewyng cootes & clothes: þe whiche dorcass made to hem/ forsoþe alle men caste oute wiþ outenforþ · petre puttyng þe knees: preyde/ and he turnyde to þe body: seyde tabita: rise þou in name of oure lorde Jhū c̄st/ and sche openyde þe yzen/ and petre seyn: sche satte vp azen/ forsoþe he zpyng to hire þe hande: reyside hire/ & whanne he had cleyde holy men & widowis: he assignyde hire quykke/ forsoþe it is made knowen by al ioppe: and þei beleueden in þe lorde/ forsoþe it is made þat many dayes he dwellide in Ioppe at Symon sum curriour or tawer//

C<sup>m</sup> 10<sup>m</sup>



**F**orsoþe summan was in cesarie by name cornelie centurio (þat is haupnge an hundride men vnder hym) · of þe cumpanye of knyȝtis · þat is seyde of ytalie · a religious man & dredynge þe lorde wiþ al his meyne · doinge manye almessis to þe puple: and preyng þe lorde euermore/ þis sise in a visioun openly · as in þe nyȝte houre (or none) · an aungel of god entrynge into hym: and

## ye aplis

and seyinge to hym/ cornely/ and he biholdynge hym: taken  
wih drede · seyde/ who art þou lorde/ forsoþe he seyde to hym/  
þi preyers & þin almes dedis: haue steyzede vp into mynde ·  
in þe sizt of þe lorde/ and nowe sende men into ioppe · & clepe  
a man Symount þat is nampde petre/ þis is herboride at a  
man Symon curriour: whos hous is bisidis þe see/ þis schal  
seye to þee: what it bihoueh þee for to do/ and whanne þe  
aungel þat spac to hym had gon aweye · he clepide to his  
homely men · & a knyzt dredynge þe lorde: of hem þat obe-  
schide to hym to whom whanne he had tolde alle þingis: he  
sente hem into ioppe/ forsoþe on þe day supnge · hem ma-  
kynge iourney & neyzinge to þe cytee · petre steyzede vp into þe  
heyzet þingis of þe hous: þat he schulde preye aboute þe sirte  
houre/ and whanne he hungride: he wolde taste (or ete)/ for-  
soþe hem makynge reedy: an excelle of soule (or raupschynge  
of spirit) fel on hym · & he size heuene openyde · & a vessel com-  
ynge doune as a greet scheet wih foure cordis for to be sente  
doune from heuene into erþe · in þe whiche weren alle foure  
foot beestis & creppynge þingis of erþe: and volatilis of heuene  
(or eire)/ & a voyce is made to hym/ rise petre: & flee & ete/  
soþely petre seiþ/ lorde fer be it fro me: for I neuer ete · al  
comoune þing & vnclene/ and este þe secounde tyme þe voyce  
to hym/ þat þing þat god hap clenſide: þou schalt not seye  
vnclene/ forsoþe þis þing is done by þries/ & anone þe vessel is  
recepuede into heuene/ and þe while petre wihinne hymself  
doutide · what þe visioun was þat he size: lo þe men þat  
weren sente fro cornelye sekynge þe hous of Symon: stoden  
nyzt at þe zate/ & whanne þei hadden clepide: þei axide zif  
Symount þat was nampde petre · had þere herbore/ forsoþe  
petre þenkynge of þe visioun: a spirit seyde to hym/ lo þre  
men seeken þee/ and so rise þou & go doune · & go wih hem · no  
þing doutynge for I sente hem/ forsoþe petre comynge doune  
to þe men: seyde I am whom zee seeken/ what is þe cause for  
whiche zee haue comen: þe whiche seyden/ cornelie centurio ·  
a iuste

## Dedis

a iuste man · & dredynge god · & haupnge gode witnessynge of alle þe folc of iewis · toke answere of an holy aungel for to clepe þee into his hous; & for to heere wordis of þee/ þerfore he leedyng hem wiþinne receyuede in herbore/ forsoþe in þe daye sunge; he risynge wente forþ wiþ hem/ and summe of breþeren fro ioppe folowide hym; þat þei be witnessis to petre/ forsoþe anoper day he entride into cesarie/ forsoþe cornelie abode hem; his cosyns and necessarie frendis clepide to gedir/ and it is done whanne petre had entride; cornelie came metynge hym · & fallynge doune at his feet; he worschipide hym/ petre soþely reyside hym; seyinge/ rise; & I my self am a man as & þou/ and he spekyng wiþ hym entride in; & fonde manye þat camen to gedre/ & he seyde to hem/ zee witen how abhomyable it is to a man iewe; for to be ioynde or to come to an alien/ but god schewide to me no man for to seye a man comyn (or vnclene); for whiche þing I clepide came/ þerfore I are zou for what cause haue zee clepide me; and cornelie seih/ fro þe forþ day passide til to þis houre; I fastynge was preyng in þe nyghte houre in myn hous/ & lo a man stode bi-fore me in whijt cloob; and seih/ cornelie þi preyer is herde; and þin almes dedis ben in mynde in þe sizte of god/ sende þerfore into Joppe · & clepe Symount þat is namyde petre · þis is herboride in þe hous of Symon curriour; bisides þe see/ þis whanne he schal come schal speke to þee/ þerfore anone I sente to þee; & þou didist wel in comynge to vs/ nowwe þerfore we ben alle present in þi sizte; for to here þe wordis what euer ben comaundide to þee · of þe lorde/ forsoþe petre openynge his mouþ seyde/ in treuþe I haue founden · for god is not acceptour of persones; but in eche folc he þat dredith god/ and wirchith ryztwesnesse; is accepte to hym/ god sente a worde to þe sones of isrl schewynge pees by Ihu crist; þis is god of alle men/ zee witen þe worde þat is made by alle Judee/ forsoþe bygynnyng fro galilee · aftir þe baptyme þat Jon prechide Ihu of nazareth · how god anoyntide hym wiþ  
þe

## ye aplis

þe holy gost · & vertue þe whiche þourgh passide in wel doinge  
& helpnge alle men oppresside of þe deupl: for god was wip  
hym/ and we ben witnessis of alle þingis þe whiche he dide in  
þe cuntre of iewis & Irlm: whom þei slouen hengynge in a  
tree/ god reyside þis in þe þridde day · & ȝaue hym for to be made  
known · not to eche puple · but to witnessis bifore ordeynede  
of god to vs þat eten & drunken wip hym: aftir þat he roos  
azen fro deade men/ and he comaundide to vs for to preche to  
þe puple & for to witnesse: for he is ordeynede of god domes-  
man of quicke & deade/ to þis alle prophetis heren wit-  
nessynge · alle men þat bileuen into hym for to receyue re-  
myssiō of synnes by his name/ ȝit petre spekyng þe wordis:  
þe holy gost fel on alle þat herden þe worde/ and þe feiþful  
(or cristen men) of circumcisiō þat camen wip petre: [where  
astonnede] for & into nacon̄s þe grace of þe holy gost is schede  
oute/ forsoþe þei herden hem spekyng wip tungis (or langa-  
gis): and magnifyng god/ þanne petre answeride: wher  
any man may forbede water · þat þes ben not baptiside þat  
haue receyuede þe holy gost: as & we: and he comaundide hem  
for to be baptiside in name of þe lorde Ihū c̄st/ þanne þei  
prepeden hym þat he schulde dwelle wip hem summe dages//



Forsoþe þe apostlis herden þat weren in Iudee: for  
& heþen men receyueden þe worde of god · & þei  
glorifiede god/ forsoþe whanne petre came to irlm:  
þei þat weren of circumcisiō disputiden azenes  
hym seyinge/ whi entredist þou to men haupng prepusie: and  
hast eten wip hem: Petre sobely bygynnyng: expounyde to  
þem þe ordre seyinge/ I was in þe cytee of ioppe prepyng: &  
I siȝe in excelle of my soule a visiōne · sum vessel comynge  
doun as a greet scheet (or lynnen cloþe) · wip foure cordis for  
to be sente doun fro heuene: & it came vnto me/ in whiche I  
biholdynge bihilde & siȝe foure footide þingis of erþe · & beestis  
& creppynge þingis: & volatilis of þe eire/ forsoþe I herde & a  
voyce

C<sup>m</sup> 11<sup>m</sup>

## dedis

voyce seyinge to me/ petre riise/ flee & ete/ forsoþe I seyde/  
nay lorde comoune þing (or vnclene)/ entride neuer into my  
mouþ/ soþely þe voyce answeride þe secounde tyme fro he-  
uene/ þo þingis þat god haþ clenstide/ þou schalt not seye vn-  
clene/ forsoþe þis is done by þries/ and alle þe þingis ben  
receyuede azen into heuene/ and lo þre men anone stoden nyze  
in þe hous in whiche I was/ sente fro cesarie to me/ forsoþe a  
spirit seyde to me þat I schulde go wiþ hem no þing doutynge/  
forsoþe & þes sire breþeren camen wiþ me/ and we entreden  
into þe hous of þe man soþely he tolde how he sise an aungel  
in his hous/ stondynge & seyinge to hym/ sende into ioppe  
& clepe Symount þat is nampde petre/ þe schal speke to þee  
wordis/ in whiche þou schalt be saaf & al þin hous/ forsoþe  
whan I had bigunnen for to speke/ þe holy goft fel on hem  
as into vs in þe bigynnyng/ forsoþe I bihouzte on þe worde  
of þe lorde/ and he seyde/ soþely Ioon baptiside in water/ for-  
soþe zee schulen be baptiside in þe holy goft/ þerfore zif god  
zaue þe same grace as & to vs þat bileueden in þe lorde Ihu  
crist/ who was I þat myzte forbede þe lorde/ þat he schulde not  
zyue þe holy goft to men bileuynge in þe name of Ihu crist/  
þes þingis herde/ þei helden pees & glorifieden god/ seyinge/  
þerfore & to heþen men/ god haþ zouen penaunce to lijf/ and  
soþely þei þat weren scateride of þe tribulacoñ/ þat was made  
vndre steuene/ walkiden forþ til to fenyce & cypre & antioche  
to no man spekyng þe worde/ no but to iewes al one/ forsoþe  
sum of þe men weren of cypre & cyrnen/ þe whiche whanne  
þei entreden into antioche/ spaken to greekis schewyng þe  
lorde Ihu/ & þe hande of þe lorde was wiþ hem/ & myche  
nowmbre of men bileuynge/ is conuertide to þe lorde/ forsoþe  
þe worde came to þe eris of þe chirche þat was at irlm on þes  
þingis/ & þei senten barnabas vnto antioche/ þe whiche  
whanne he had comen/ & seen þe grace of þe lorde/ ioyede/ and  
he monestide alle men in purpos of herte/ for to dwelle in þe  
lorde/ for he was a good man & full of þe holy goft & feiþ/ &  
myche

## ye aplis

myche cumpanye is putte to þe lorde/ forsoþe he wente forþ  
to tarsis: þat he schulde seek saul/ whom whan he had founden/  
he ledde to antioche/ and al a zeer þei lyueden þere in þe  
chirche · & tauzten myche cumpanye: so þat firste cristen dis-  
ciples weren namyde at antioche/ forsoþe in þes dayes: pro-  
phetis camen ouer fro irlm̄ to antioche/ & one of hem risynge  
agabus by name: signyfiede by þe spirit a greet hungre to  
comynge in al þe roundenesse of erþis: þe whiche hungre is  
made vndre claudius/ forsoþe þe disciplis purposiden alle as  
eche had · for to sende mynysterie to breþeren dwellyng in Ju-  
dee/ þe whiche þing & þei diden · sendynge to þe eldre men: by  
þe hande of barnabas & saule//



**F**orsoþe in þe same tyme heroude þe kyng sente hon-  
dis · for to turment summen of þe chirche/ forsoþe  
he slowe by swerde · James þe broþer of Joon/  
forsoþe he seinge for it pleside to þe iewis · puttide  
to for to cacche & petre/ forsoþe þe dayes of þerfe loues weren/  
whom whanne he had cauhte he sente into prisounes: and bi-  
takynge to foure quaternyouns of knyztis · (þat eche had  
foure vndir hym) for to kepe hym: willynge aftir pask for to  
bryng hym forþ to þe puple/ & soþely petre was kepte in pri-  
sounes/ forsoþe preyer was made of þe chirche: wip outen ceef-  
ynge to god for hym/ forsoþe whan heroude was to bryng  
forþ hym: in þat nyzt petre was slepyng bitwixe two knyztis  
bounden wip two cheynes: & keepers before þe dore kepten þe  
prisounes/ and lo an aungel of þe lorde stood nyzt: & lizte schone  
azen in þe habitacle/ and þe side of petre smyten: he reyside (or  
wakynge) hym seyinge/ rise swiftly/ and anone þe cheynes fel-  
len doune of his handis/ forsoþe þe aungel seyde to hym/ be  
þou girde bifore: & do on þi hoofis/ & he dide so/ & he seyde to  
hym/ do aboute to þee þi clooth: & sue me/ and he goinge oute  
suede hym: and he wiste not for it is soþe þat was made by þe  
aungel/ forsoþe he gefside hym self for to se a visiounes/ forsoþe

C<sup>m</sup> 12<sup>m</sup>



## Dedīs

þei passynge þe firste & þe secounde keppnge: camen to þe Jren  
zate þat leediþ to þe cytee · þe whiche wilfully is openyde to  
hem/ and þei goinge oute camen forþ into one strete: and  
anone þe aungel passide aweye fro hym/ and petre turnynge  
azen to hym self: seyde/ nowe I woot verreyly for þe lorde  
sente his aungel · & delyueride me fro þe hande of heroude · &  
of al abydyngge of þe puple of Jewis/ and he biholdynge came  
to þe hous of mary modir of Jon þat is namyde markus:  
were many weren gederide to gedir & preyinge/ forsoþe hym  
knockynge at þe dore of þe zate: a wenche rode by name  
came forþ to se/ and as sche knewe þe voyce of petre: for ioþe  
sche openyde not þe zate/ but rennyng in: tolde petre for to  
stonde bifore þe zate/ & þei seyden to hire/ þou maddist (or art  
woot)/ sche soþely affermyde: for to haue hym so/ forsoþe þei  
seyden/ it is his aungel/ forsoþe he lastide knockynge/ soþely  
whanne þei hadden openyde: þei sizen hym & wondriden/  
soþely he bekenynge to hem wiþ hande for to be stille: tolde  
how þe lorde had ledde hym oute of prisoune/ and he seyde/  
telle zee to James & to breþeren þes þingis/ and he gon oute:  
wente into anoper place/ forsoþe þe day made: þer was not  
litol turblynge amonge þe knyztis · what was done of petre/  
soþely whanne heroude had souzte hym azen & not founden:  
inquesicion (or seekynge) make of þe keepers · he comaundide  
hem for to be brouzte/ and he comynge doune fro Judee into  
cesarie: dwellide þere/ forsoþe he was wroþ to men of tyre &  
of sidon/ and þei of one acorde come to hym: & blasus þat was  
on þe couche of þe kyng · softely stiride · þei axiden pees: for  
whi þat here cuntrees weren norischide (or susteynyde) by  
hym/ forsoþe a day ordeynyde: heroude cloþide wiþ kyngis  
cloþinge satte for domesman: and spac to hem/ forsoþe þe  
puple criede þe voyces of god: not of man/ soþely anone an  
aungel of þe lorde smote hym: for he had not done honoure  
to god/ and he wastide of wormes: diede/ soþely þe worde of  
þe lorde waxide/ & was multipliede/ forsoþe barnabas & saul  
turnyde

## ye aplis

turnyde azen fro irlm̄ · þe mynyſterie fulfildes: Iſon taken to  
þat was namyde markus//



Drsoþe þer weren in þe chirche þat was at antioche:  
prophetis & dottours · in whiche barnabas & Sy-  
mon þat is clepide blac · & lucius syronense & ma-  
naen þat was þe soukynge feer of heroude tetrark  
(þat is prynce of þe furþe parte) & saul/ forsoþe hem mynyſ-  
trynge in þe lorde & fastynge: þe holy goſt ſeyde to hem/ de-  
parte zee to me saul & barnabas into þe werke: to whiche I  
haue taken hem/ þanne þei fastynge & preyinge & puttyng han-  
dis to hem: leſten hem/ and ſoþely þei ſente of þe holy goſt:  
wenten forþ to ſeleucia/ and fro þens þei wenten by boot to  
cypre · & whanne þei camen to ſalamyne: þei prechiden þe  
worde of god in ſynagogis of iewis/ forsoþe þei hadden & Iſon  
in mynyſterie (or ſeruice)/ and whanne þei hadden walkide by  
al þe ile vnto paphum: þei founden a man wicche · a falſe  
prophete a iewe · to whom þe name was barieu · þat was wiþ  
þe pro conſul ſerigious poul prudent man/ þis barnabas poul  
clepide to: deſiride for to here þe worde of god/ ſoþely helymas  
wicche wiþſtode hem · ſo ſoþely is interpretide his name:  
ſekynge for to turne away þe proconſul fro bileue/ forsoþe  
saul wicche & poul · fulfildes wiþ þe holy goſt: biholdynge into  
hym · ſeyde/ a þou ful of al gile · & al falſeneſſe · þou ſone of þe  
deuyl · þou enemye of al riȝtwelneſſe: þou leueſt not for to  
ſubuerte (or diſtruye) þe riȝtful weyes of þe lorde/ and lo now  
þe hande of þe lorde on þee: and þou ſchalt be blynde · & not  
ſeinge ſumme vnto a tyme/ & anone a myſte fel doune on hym:  
and dirkenelſe/ and he goinge aboute ſouzte hym þat ſchulde  
ȝyue þe hande to hym/ þanne þe proconſul whanne he had  
ſeen þe dede: bileuede · wondrynge on þe techynge of þe lorde/  
and whanne fro paphum poul had gon by boot · & þei þat we-  
ren wiþ hym: þei camen to pergen of pamphile/ for ion depart-  
ynge fro hem: turnyde azen to irlm̄/ ſoþely þei goinge to per-  
gen:

C<sup>m</sup> 13<sup>m</sup>

## Dedīs

gen: camen to antioche of perfidie/ and þei gone into þe syna-  
goge: þe day of sobotis · faten/ forsoþe aftir reedyng of þe lawe  
& prophetis: þe prynces of þe synagoge senten to hem seyinge/  
men breþeren · zif any worde of exortacoñ (or techyng) to þe  
puple is in zou: seye zee/ forsoþe poul rysyng & wiþ hande bid-  
dyng silence: seih/ men of isrl & zee þat dreden god: herih/ god  
of þe puple of isrl chees oure faderis & enhauncide þe puple ·  
whanne þei weren comelyngis in þis lande of egipte: and in  
an hize arme he ledde hem oute of it · & by tyme of fourty  
zeeris: he susteynede þere maners in deserte/ and he destruy-  
inge seuene folkis in þe lande of chanaan: by sorte departide  
to hem þe lande of hem · as aftir foure hundride & fifty zeeris/  
and aftir þes þingis he zaue domesmen: vnto samuel þe pro-  
phete/ and fro þens: þei axiden a kyng/ and he zaue to hem  
faul þe sone of cis · a man of þe lynage of beniamyn: by fourty  
zeeris/ and hym done away: he reyside to hem dauid kyng ·  
to whom he beryng witnessyng · seyde/ I haue founden  
dauid · þe sone of iesse · a man aftir myn herte · þe whiche  
schal do alle my willis/ of whos seed vp biheste · god ledde  
oute of isrl a saueour ihū: Jon prechyng before þe face of his  
comyng þe baptysm of penaunce to al þe puple of isrl/ forsoþe  
whan Jon had fulfild his cours: he seyde/ whom zee demen  
me for to be I am not/ but lo þere cometh aftir me of whos I  
am not worþi: for to vnbynde þe schoon of his feet/ men bre-  
þeren sones of þe kynde of abraham · & þat in zou dreden god:  
to zou þe worde of helpe is sente/ soþely þei þat dwelliden at  
irlm & prynces of it unknowyng þis Jhū · & þe voyces of pro-  
phetis þat by euery saboth ben red: demyng fulfilden/ and  
þei fyndyng in hym no cause of deþ: axiden of pilate · þat þei  
schulden flee hym/ and whanne þei hadden endide alle þingis  
þat weren writen of hym: þei puttyng hym doune of þe tree ·  
puttiden hym in a graue/ forsoþe god reyside hym fro deade  
(men) in þe þridde day · þe whiche is seen by many dayes to  
hem þat to gedir steyzeden vp fro galilee to irlm: þe whiche  
ben

## ye aplis

ben to now his witneſſis to þe puple/ & we ſchewen to zou þe ilke þat is made biheſte azen to our faderis · for god haþ ful-  
filde þis to zoure ſones · azen reſpynge Ihu · as in þe ſecounde  
pſalme it is writen/ þou art my ſone to day I gendride þee/  
forſoþe þat he azen reſide hym fro deade men · now no more  
to turnynge into corrupcion · þus he ſeiþ/ for I ſchal ȝue to  
zou þe holy trewe þingis of dauid/ and herfore in anoþer  
ſtede he ſeiþ/ þou ſchalt not ȝue þin holy for to ſe corrupcion/  
forſoþe dauid in his generacion whanne he had mynyſtride  
to þe wille of god · ſlepte (or diede)/ and is putte to his fa-  
deris · & ſize corrupcion/ ſoþely he whom god reſide fro deade  
(men) · ſize not corrupcion/ herfore men breþeren be it knowen  
to zou · for by hym remyſſion of ſynnes is tolde to zou · fro  
alle ſynnes · of þe whiche zee myȝten not be iuſtifiede in þe  
lawe of moyſes/ in þis eche man þat bileueþ · is iuſtifiede/ her-  
fore ſe þee þat it come not to zou · þat is aboue ſeyde in pro-  
phetis/ ſe zee diſpiſers & wondre zee · & be zee ſcateride abroad ·  
for I worche a werke in zoure dayes · a werke þat zee ſchulen  
not bileue · zif any man ſchal telle oute to zou/ forſoþe hem  
goinge oute · þei preyden · þat anoþer ſynge ſaboth · þei  
ſchulen ſpeke to hem þes wordis/ and whanne þe ſynagoge  
was lefte · manye of Jewes & of comelyngis worſchippynge ſue-  
den poul & barnabas/ þe whiche ſpekynge ſoftely counſeyliden  
hem · þat þei ſchulden in þe grace of god/ ſoþely in þe ſaboth  
ſynge · almoſt al þe cytee came to gedir · for to heere þe worde  
of god/ forſoþe iewes ſeinge þe cumpanyes of puple ben ful  
filde wiþ eneupe · & azen ſeyden þes þingis þat weren ſeyde  
of poul · blaſfemyng/ þanne poul & barnabas ſtedefaſtly ſey-  
den/ to zou it bihoſte firſte for to ſpeke þe worde of god · but for  
zee putten it aweye & haue demyde zee unworþi of euerlaſt-  
ynge liſ · lo we turnen to gedir to heþen men/ forſoþe ſo þe  
lorde comaundide vs/ I haue putte þee into liȝte to heþen  
men · þat þou be into helpe · vnto þe untirmoſt of erþe/ ſoþely  
heþen men herynge · ioyzeden & glorifieden þe worde of þe  
lorde

## Dedīs

lorde & bileueden · how manye euer weren bifore ordeynpde to euerlastyngge lijf/ forsoþe þe worde of þe lorde was fer sown · by al þe cuntre/ soþely iewes stireden religious wymmē & oneste & þe firste men of þe cytee/ & stireden persecucoñ into poul & barnabas · and castiden oute hem of here cuntrees/ and þei þe powdre of feet schaken away into hem/ camen to yconye/ & þe disciplis weren fulfildē wip ioye of þe holy gost//

C<sup>m</sup> 14<sup>m</sup>



**F**orsoþe at ychonye it is done · þat to gedir þei entre-  
den into a synagoge of Jewes & spaken/ so þat a plenteuouse multitude of iewis & grekis bileuede/ forsoþe þe iewis þat weren unbileueful · reysiden persecucion/ and to wrap stireden þe soulis of heþen men azenes breþeren/ þerfore þei dwelten myche tyme · doinge tristily in þe lorde · beryngge witnessyngge þe worde of his grace/ zuyng signes & wondris for to be made by þe handis of hem/ forsoþe þe multitude of þe cytee is departide/ & soþely summe weren wip iewis · summe soþely wip þe apostlis/ forsoþe whanne asaute of heþen men & iewes was made wip here prynces for to punysche wip dispisyngis (or false blamyng) · & to stoon hem/ þei vnderstondyngge fledden to gedir to þe cytees of lycaonye · listris & derben · & al þe cuntree in enuyroune/ & þei weren prechyngge þere þe gospel/ and al þe multitude is mouede to gedir in þe techyngge of hem/ poul soþely & barnabas dwelten at listris/ and summan at listris seek in þe feet · satte crokide fro his moderis wombe/ þe whiche neuer had gon/ þis herde poul spekyngge þe whiche biholdyngge hym · & seinge for he had seiþ þat he schulde be made saaf/ seyde wip greet voyce/ rise þou ryzt on þi feet/ and he lepte & walkide/ forsoþe þe cumpanges whanne þei hadden seen þat þat poul dide/ reriden here voyce in lycaon tunge seyinge/ goddis made like to men/ camen doune to vs/ and þei clepiden barnabas Jouem · poul soþely mercurie/ for he was leder of þe worde/ and þe priest Iubiter þat was bifore þe cytee · bryngyngge to  
bolis

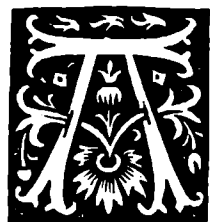
## ye aplis

holis & crounes bifore þe zatis wiþ puplis: wolde make sacrifice/  
þe whiche þing whanne þe apostlis barnabas & poul herden ·  
here cootis cutte to gedir: þei skippiden oute into þe cumpa-  
nyes · crynge & seyinge/ men what done zee þis þing? and we  
be deadely men lijk to zou · schewinge to zou to be conuertede  
fro þes veyne þingis · to quicke god þat made heuene & erþe &  
þe see: & alle þingis þat ben in hem/ þe whiche in generacons  
passide: lefte alle folkis for to entre into here owne weyes/  
and soþely not wiþ ouden witnessynge · he wel doinge lefte  
hym self · fro heuenes zpyunge reynes & tymes berynge fructe:  
fulfyllinge wiþ mete & gladenesse zoure hertis/ and hem sey-  
inge þes þingis: vnnepþe swagiden þe cumpanyes · þat þei of-  
freden to hem/ forsoþe summe iewis camen ouer fro antioche ·  
& yconye · & þe cumpanyes swetely styrede þei stonyng poul  
drowen oute of þe cytee: gessynge hym for to be deade/ soþely  
þe disciplis enuprounyng hym: he risynge entride into þe  
cytee/ and þe supynge day: he wente forþ wiþ barnabas into  
derben/ and whanne þei hadde euangelizide to þe ilke cytee &  
tauzte manye: þei turnyde azen to listris & yconye & antioche ·  
confermyng þe souldis of disciplis: and monestynge/ þat þei  
schulden dwelle in feiþ & seyinge/ for by manye tribulacoñs it  
bihouep vs for to entre into þe kyngdome of heuenes/ and  
whanne þei hadden ordeynede pristis to hem by alle cytees ·  
& hadden preyede wiþ fastyngis: þei bitoken hem to þe lorde ·  
into whom þei bileueden/ and þei passynge persidie: camen  
to pamphile/ and þei spekyng þe worde of þe lorde in pergen:  
camen into ytalie/ and fro þens þei wenten bi boot to anti-  
oche fro when þei weren taken to þe grace of god: into þe  
werke þat þei fulfilden/ soþely whanne þei camen & gederiden  
þe chirche: þei tolden how many þingis god dide wiþ hem:  
for he had openyde to heþen men þe dore of feiþ/ forsoþe þei  
dwelliden a tyme not litil: wiþ þe disciplis//

And

## Dedís

C<sup>m</sup> 15<sup>m</sup>



And summe comynge doune fro Judee • tauzte bre-  
 heren • for but zee ben circumcidide aftir þe lawe  
 of moyſes; zee mowne not be made ſaaf/ þerfore  
 ſedicioune (or diſcencion) made • not leſte to poul  
 & barnabas azenes hem; þei ordeyneden þat poul & barnabas  
 & ſumme oþer of hem ſchulden go vp to þe apoſtliſ & priſtis in  
 ierlſm on þis queſtion/ þerfore þei ledde forþ of þe chirche; paſſ-  
 iden by ſenpce & Samarie • tellynge þe lypunge of heþen men;  
 and þei maden greet ioye to alle breþeren/ ſoþely whanne þei  
 camen to ierlſm; þei weren receyuede of þe chirche & of þe apoſ-  
 tliſ & eldre men; tellynge how many þingis god dide wih  
 hem/ forſoþe ſum of þe heresie of phariſees þat bileueden; ri-  
 ſen ſeyinge/ for it bihoueh hem for to be circumcidide; and for  
 to comaunde • for to kepe þe lawe of moyſes/ and þe apoſtliſ  
 & eldre men camen to gedir; for to ſeen of þis worde/ forſoþe  
 whanne greet ſeekynge to gedir was made; petre riſynge  
 ſeyde to hem/ men breþeren zee witen for of olde dayes in  
 zou; god chees by my moup heþen men for to here þe worde  
 of þe goſpel & for to bileue/ and god þat knewe hertis bare  
 witneſſynge; zypynge to hem þe holy goſt as & to vs/ and no  
 þing dyuerſide bitwixe vs & hem; by ſeiþ clenſynge þe hertis  
 of hem/ now þerfore what tempten zee god • for to putte a yok  
 on þe nolle (or necke) of diſciplis • þe whiche neþer we neþer  
 oure faderis myzten bere; but by þe grace of oure lorde Ihu  
 c̄ſt • we bileuen for to be ſauede; as & þei/ forſoþe al þe mul-  
 titude hilde pees; and herde barnabas & poul tellynge how  
 many ſignes & wondris god dide by hem in heþen men/ and  
 aftir þat þei hilden pees; James anſweride ſeyinge/ men bre-  
 heren here zee me/ Symount tolde how firſte god viſitide for  
 to take of heþen men a puple to his name; & to hym þe wordis  
 of prophetis acorden; as it is writen/ aftir þis I ſchal turne  
 azen • & bilde þe tabernacle of dayud þat fel doune; & I ſchal  
 bilde azen þe caſte doune þingis of it • & I ſchal reyle it þat  
 oþer

## ye aplis

ofer of men azen seeke þe lorde/ & alle folkis on whiche my name is clepide · þe lorde doinge þis þing seiþ/ fro þe worlde: to þe lorde his werke is knowen/ for whiche I deme hem of heþen men ben conuertide to god for to be not vnquytide (or diseefide): but for to write to hem · þat þei abstene hem fro defoulyngis of symulacris · fornycacon & straungelide þingis & blood/ moyses soþely of olde tymes haþ in alle cytees hem þat prechen hym in synagogis: wheþer by eche saboth he is red/ þanne it pleside to þe apostlis & eldre men & al þe chirche · for to chese men of hem & sende to antioche wiþ poul & barnabas/ Judas þat was nampde barnabas · & silam þe firste in breþeren: writynge by hondis of hem/ Apostlis & eldre breþeren to hem þat ben at antioche · & cirie · & cilicie · breþeren of heþen men: gretynge (or helpe)/ for we herden þat summe of vs goinge oute turbliden zou wiþ wordis · turnynge vpsodoune zoure soulis · to whiche men we comaundiden not: it pleside to vs gederide into one · for to chese men & sende to zou · wiþ our most derworþe barnabas & poul · men þat bitoken (or gauen) here soulis (or lyues): for þe name of oure lorde Ihu cñ · þerfore we senten Judas & Silas þe whiche & þei schulen telle þe same þingis to zou by wordis/ forsoþe it is seen to þe holy gost & vs · for to putte to zou no þing more of charge · þan þes nedeful þingis · þat zee abstene zou fro þe offride þingis of Symulacris · & blood stranglide · & fornycacon · fro whiche zee kepynge zou: schulen do wel/ fare zee wel/ þerfore þei dismyttide camen doune to antioche/ and þe multitude gederide: þei bitoken þe epistel/ þe whiche whanne þei hadden redde: þei ioyzeden on þe comforte/ forsoþe Judas & Silas · & þei whanne þei weren prophetis wiþ ful myche worde comfortiden breþeren & confermeden (hem)/ Soþely summe litiltyme made here: þei weren dismyttide (or lefte wiþ pees) of breþeren: to hem þat hadden sente hem/ forsoþe it is seen to Sylas: for to dwelle here/ Judas soþely wente alone to Irlm/ forsoþe poul & Barnabas dwelliden at antioche techynge & euangelizynge þe worde



## Dedīs

of þe lorde · wiþ manye oþer/ forsoþe aftir summe dayes:  
 poul seyde to barnabas/ we turnynge azen viſite we oure bre-  
 þeren by alle cytees in whiche we haue prechede þe worde of  
 þe lorde: how þei haue hem/ barnabas forsoþe wolde take  
 wiþ hym & Ioon: þat was nampde marchus/ poul soþely prey-  
 ede hym · þat he þat departide fro hem fro pamphilie · & wente  
 not wiþ hem into werke: schulde not be receyuede/ soþely dis-  
 cencoñis made: so þat þei departiden atwynne/ and barnabas  
 soþely marke taken to: by lotte came to cipre/ forsoþe poul si-  
 las chosen wente forþ: taken to þe grace of god fro breþeren/  
 forsoþe he wente by cirie & cilicie confermyng þe chirche · co-  
 maundyng for to kepe þe preceptis of apostlis & eldre men/  
 soþely he came into derben & listram//

C<sup>m</sup> 16<sup>m</sup>



**A**ND so sum disciple was þere · by name tymothe · þe  
 sone of a womman widowe feiþful (or cñten): þe fa-  
 dir heþen/ þe breþeren þat weren in lystris & pco-  
 nye: zildiden gode witnesþynge to hym/ poul wolde  
 hym for to go forþ wiþ hym self: & he takynge to circumcidide  
 hym for iewes þat weren in þe ilke places/ soþely alle wisten  
 for his fadir was heþen/ forsoþe whanne þei passiden by cytees:  
 þei bitoken hem for to kepe þe techyngis þat weren demyde  
 of apostlis & eldre men þat weren at irlm/ and soþely þe chir-  
 ches weren confermyde in feiþ: & aboundiden in nowmbre eche  
 daye/ forsoþe þei passynge frigie · & þe cuntre of galathie: we-  
 ren forbeden of þe holy gost · for to speke þe worde of god in  
 asia/ Soþely whanne þei camen into mysie: þei temptiden for  
 to go into bethenya · & the spirit of Jhū suffride hem not/ soþe-  
 ly whanne þei hadden passide by mysie: þei came doune to tro-  
 ade · & a visioun by nyzt was schewide to poul/ summan of  
 macedonye was stondynge & preyinge hym & seyinge/ þou go-  
 inge into macedonye: helpe vs/ soþely as he siþe þe visioun:  
 anone þei souzten for to go forþ into macedonye · made cer-  
 teyn · þat god had clepide vs for to euangelize to hem/ soþely  
 we

## ye aplis

we goinge by boot (or saylynge) wif streypte course camen to samatrachia · in þe day supnge to neapolis · & fro þens to philippis · þat is þe firste parte of macedonge · þe cytee colonge/ soþely we weren in þis cytee summe dayes · spekyng to gedir/ soþely in þe day of sabothis · we wenten oute wif outen þe zate bisidis þe flood · where preyer was seen for to be · and we sittynge spaken to wymmen þat camen to gedir/ and summe womman lidda by name purpurrelle of þe cytee of tiatirence · worschippyng god herde · whos herte þe lorde ordeynede for to ȝyue tente to þes þingis · þat weren seyde of poul/ forsoþe whanne sche was baptiside & hire hous · sche preyede seyinge/ ȝif zee haue demyde me for to be feiþful to þe lorde · entre zee into myn hous & dwelle/ and sche constreynede vs/ forsoþe it is done vs goinge to preyer · sum wenche haupnge a spirit of dyuynacon · for to mete vs/ þe whiche ȝaue greet wyngyng to hire lordis in dyuynynge · (þat is telleinge hid þing by þe deuplis crafte)/ þis supnge poul & vs · crieden seyinge/ þes men ben seruauntis of hize god · þat tellen to ȝou þe weye of helpe/ forsoþe þis þing sche dide · in many dayes/ soþely poul sorowynge & conuertide · seyde to þe spirit/ I comaunde to þee in þe name of Ihu crist for to go oute of hire/ and he wente oute in þe same houre/ soþely þe lordis of hire seyinge for þe hope of here wyngyng wente away · cacchyng poul & Sylas · þei ledden hem into þe chepyng (or doom place) to þe prynces/ & þei offryng hem to þe magistratis · seyden/ þes men distourblen oure cytee · whanne þei ben ietwis · & schewen a custom þe whiche it is not leueful to vs for to receyue neþer do · siþen we ben romayns/ and þe puple ran azenes hem & magistratis · & þe cootis of hem kitte · þei comaundiden hem for to be beten wif ȝerdis/ and whanne þei hadden ȝouen to hem manye woundis · þei senten hem into prisoune · comaundyng to þe keper · þat he diligently schulde kepe hym/ þe whiche whanne he had taken suche precepte · sente hem into þe inner prisoune · & streynede þe feet of hem in a tree/ soþely at mydnyȝt · poul & sylas

## Dedīs

& sylas worschippynghe herieden god; and þei þat weren in ke-  
pyng herden hem/ soþely sodeynly a greet erþe mouynge is  
made; so þat þe foundementis of þe prisoune weren mouede/  
and anone alle þe dores ben openyde; and þe bondis of alle  
ben vnbunden/ soþely þe keper of þe prisoune made waken ·  
& seinge þe zatis of þe prisoune openyde; þe swerde drawen  
oute · wolde flee hym self · wenynghe þe bounden men for to be  
fled/ forsoþe poul criede wiþ greet voyce; seyinge/ do þou no  
þing of euyl to þi self; forsoþe alle we ben here/ and lizte aride  
he entride in; and tremblyng he fel doune to poul & sylas at þe  
feet/ and he bryngynghe hem wiþ oute forþ; seih/ lordis what  
bihoueh me for to do; þat I be made saaf/ and þei seyden bi-  
leue þou into þe lorde ihū; and þou schalt be saaf & þin hous/  
and þei spaken to hym þe worde of þe lorde; wiþ alle þat  
weren in his hous/ and hetakyng hem in þe ilke houre of þenyt  
waschide here woundis/ and he is baptyside & al his hous an-  
one/ and whanne he had ledde hem into his hous; he sette to  
hem a borde/ and he gladide wiþ alle his hous; bileuynghe to  
god/ and whanne day was made; þe magistratis senten lic-  
tours (þat ben mynystris of punyschynghe) · seyinge dismytte  
zee (or delyuer) þo men/ forsoþe þe keper of prisoune tolde þes  
wordis to poul · for þe magistratis haue sente þat zee ben de-  
lyueryde/ nowe þerfore zee goinge oute · go in pees/ forsoþe  
poul seyde to hym/ þei senten into prisoune vs beten opynly  
vndampnyde men romayns; and now pryuely þei casten vs  
oute not so/ but come þei; and hem self caste vs oute/ Soþely  
þe mynystres of peyne tolden þes wordis to þe magistrates/  
and þei dredden; herde þat þei weren romayns/ and þei  
comen bisecheden hem & þei leedynghe forþ preyeden þat þei  
schulden go oute of þe cytee/ soþely þei goinge oute of þe pri-  
soune; entreden in to lidie/ and þe breþeren seen; þei confor-  
tiden hem · & wenten forþ//

## ye aplis



**S**ohely whanne þei hadden passide by amphibolym & appolonye: þei camen to tessalonyk · whare was a synagoge of iewes/ soþely astir custom poul entride into hem: & þre sabotis he declaride to hem of scriptures openyng & schewyng · for it bihofte crist for to suffre: & rise azen fro deade (men): and for þis is Jh̄c̄ c̄st̄ whom I telle (or schewe) to zou/ & summe of hem bileueden & ben ioykede to poul & silas · & of heþen men a greet multitude & noble wymmnen not fewe/ soþely Jewes haupnge enuye · & takyng of þe comounte summe euyl men · & a cumpanye made: þei moueden þe cytee/ & þei stondyng nyze to iasons hous: souz- ten hem for to bryng forþ into þe puple/ and whanne þei founden hem not: þei drowen Jason & summe breþeren to þe prynces of þe cytee cryng for þes it ben þat mouen þe worlde: and hidir þei camen · whom iason receyuyde/ and alle þes done azenes þe maundementis of cesar seyng: anoper ih̄u for to be kyng/ forsoþe þei moueden þe puple & prynces of þe cytee: heryng þes þingis/ and satisfaccoñ taken of Jason & of oþer: þei leften hem/ forsoþe anone by nyzt · breþeren dismyttiden poul & sylas into beroan/ þe whiche whanne þei camen: entri- den into þe synagoge of iewes/ soþely þes weren þe nobler of hem þat ben of tessalonyk/ whiche receyueden þe worde wiþ al desyre: eche day seekyng scriptures · zif þes þingis so hadden hem/ and soþely many of hem bileueden · & of honest heþen wymmnen & men not fewe/ forsoþe whanne iewes in tessalonyk hadden knowen · for & at beroan · þe worde of god is prechide of poul: þei camen & hidir mouyng · & distourblyng þe mul- titude/ and anone breþeren dismyttiden poul þan þat he schulde go vnto þe see/ forsoþe silas & tymothe dwelten þere/ forsoþe þei þat ledden forþ poul: ledden hym into athenys/ and maundement taken of hym to Silas & tymothe þat ful byzyng- ly þei schulden come to hym: þei wenten forþ/ forsoþe whan poul abode hem at athenys: his spirit mouede in hym feinge þe

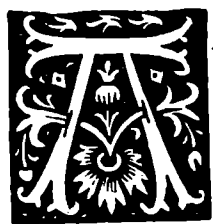
C<sup>m</sup> 17<sup>m</sup>

## Dedís

þe cytee zouen to ydolatrie/ þerfore he disputide in þe syna-  
gogue wip iewes & men worschippynge in þe cheppynge (or doom  
place): by alle dayes to hem þat herden/ forsoþe summe epi-  
cureis & stoysees & philosophers disputiden (or tretiden) wip  
hym: & summe seyden what wole þis sower of wordis seye/  
soþely oþer seyden/ he is seen for to be a teller of newe deuplis:  
for he tolde to hem Jhū & azen risynge/ and þei ledde hym  
taken to aryopage (þat is comyn stole): seyinge mowe we wite  
what is þis newe doctryne þat is seyde of þee/ soþely þou brin-  
gist in summe newe þingis to oure eris/ þerfore we wolen wite  
what þes newe þingis wolen be/ soþely alle men of athenys &  
comelyngis & herboride men · zauen tente to none oþer þing  
no but for to seye or for to here any þing of newe: soþely poul  
stondynge in þe mydil of aryopage (or comyn stole): seip/ men  
of athenes/ by alle þingis I se zou as veyne worschippers/ soþe-  
ly I passynge & feinge zoure symulacris: fonde & an auter in  
whiche it was writen to vnknown god/ þerfore whiche þing  
zee vnknowynge worschipen: þis þing I schewe to zou/ god  
þat made þe worlde & alle þingis þat ben in it: þis whanne he  
is lorde of heuene & erþe dwellip not in templis made by han-  
dis · neþer is worschipide by mannes handis haupnge nede of  
any þing · whanne he zyueþ lijf to alle men · & inbreþinge &  
alle þingis/ and made of one alle þe kynde of men · for to en-  
habite on al þe face of erþe · Determyynyng tymes ordeyn-  
yde · & termes of habitacoñ (or dwellynge) of hem · for to seek  
god · zif parauenture þei feelen hym oþer fynden: þouz he  
be not fer fro eche of zou/ soþely in hym we lyuen & ben mou-  
ede & ben: as & summe of zoure poetis seyden/ soþely we ben  
& þe kynde of hym/ þerfore siþ we ben þe kynde of god: we  
schulen not deme (or gesse) godly þing for to be of golde & sil-  
uer or stoon: to graupnge of crafte & þouzte of man/ and soþe-  
ly god dispisynge þe times of þis unkunynyng · nowe schewip  
to men · þat alle euery where do penaunce for þat he ordeynyde  
a day · in whiche he is to demynge þe worlde in equitye · in a  
man

## ye aplis

man in whiche he ordeynede feiþ ʒyupnge to alle: reysynge hym fro deade men/ soþely whanne þei hadden herde þe azen ryfynge of deade men: soþely summe scorneden · summe forsoþe seyden/ we schulen heere þee este of þis þing/ so poul wente oute of þe mydel of hem/ forsoþe summe cleuyng to hym bileueden/ in þe whiche & dionysse ariopagite (or greet man of comoune stole ·) & a womman by name damaris: and oþer wiþ hem//



After þes þingis he gone oute of athenys: came to- C<sup>m</sup> 18<sup>m</sup>  
corrynthe/ and fyndynge a man iewe · by name a-  
quyla · of ponte by kynde · þat late came fro ytalie ·  
& priscille his wife · for þat claudius comaundide  
alle iewes for to be partide fro rome: came to hem/ and for he  
was of þe same crafter: he dwellide at hem & wrouzte/ soþely  
þei weren of senefestorie crafter (þat is to make hilyngis to tra-  
ueyllynge men) and he disputide in þe synagoge by eche saboth  
puttyng bitwixe þe name of þe lorde Ihu/ and he softely coun-  
seylide to iewes & grekis/ soþely whanne silas & timothe camen  
fro macedonye: poul ʒaue bisynesse to þe worde witnesynge  
to þe iewes Ihu for to be crist/ forsoþe hem azen seyinge & blas-  
femyng: he chakynge of his clothes seyde to hem/ ʒoure blood  
on ʒoure heed: I clene fro hens forþ schal go to heþen men/  
and he passynge þens: entride into þe hous of sum iuste man  
by name tyste · worschypynge god/ whos hous was ioynede  
to þe synagoge/ crispe soþely prynce of þe synagoge: bileupde  
to þe lorde wiþ al his hous/ and manye of þe corryntheis he-  
rynge: bileueden & weren cristenyde/ forsoþe þe lorde seyde by  
nyzt to poul a visioun/ nyl þou drede · but speke & be not stille:  
for whiche þing I am wiþ þee/ and no man schal be putte to  
þee þat he noye þee: for myche puple is to me in þis cytee/  
forsoþe he satte þere a ʒeer & sixe monethes techynge at hem  
þe worde of þe lorde/ forsoþe gallion proconsul of acaye: þe  
iewes risen vp wiþ one intwit (or wille) into poul: & ledde hym  
to doom seyinge/ for azenes þe lawe he counseylþ men: for to  
worschip

## Dedis

worschip god/ soþely poul bygynnyng for to open þe mounþ:  
gallion seyde to iewis/ zif þere were any wickide þing or werste  
trespas zee men iewes: ríztly I schulde susteyne zou/ forsoþe  
zit questiouns ben of þe worde & names of zoure lawe: zee self  
se/ I wole not be domesman of þes wordis: and he droue þem  
fro þe domesplace/ forsoþe alle takynge sostones prynce of þe  
synagoge: smyten hym bifore þe doom place/ and no þing of  
þes was to charge to gallion/ poul forsoþe whan zit he had sus-  
teynede many dayes · seyinge farewel to breþeren: by boot  
came to cirie · & wíþ hym prissille & aquyla: þe whiche hadden  
clepide to hem þe heed in cencris toun/ soþely þei hadde a  
vowe/ and he came to ephecie: & þere he lefte hem/ soþely he  
goinge into þe synagoge: disputide wíþ iewis/ soþely hem  
preyinge þat he schulde dwelle more tyme: he consentyd not ·  
but he makynge farewel & seyinge · it bihoueh me for to make  
þe solempne day comynge to at irlm/ and este I schal turne  
azen to zou god wíllynge · he wente forþ fro ephesie/ and he  
comynge doune to cesarie: slepyede vp & grette þe chirche · and  
came doune to antioche/ and þere sumwhat of tyme made: he  
wente forþ walkynge by ordre þourgh þe cuntree of galathie &  
frigie confermyng alle disciplis/ soþely summe iewe appollo by  
name · a man of alisaundre of kynde · a man eloquent came to  
ephesie · myzty in scriptures/ þis man was tauzte þe weye of  
þe lorde · & feruent in spirit spac/ and tauzte diligently þo þin-  
gis þat weren of Ihsu: knowynge onely þe baptysm of Ioon/  
soþely þis man bigan for to do tristily in þe synagoge/ whom  
whan prissille & aquyla herden: þei token hym to · & more dili-  
gently expoundeden to hym þe weye of þe lorde/ forsoþe whanne  
he wolde go to acaye: breþeren monestydde (or counseylide) ·  
writen to þe disciplis · þat þei schulden receyue hym/ whiche  
whanne he came: zaue myche to hem þat bileueden/ forsoþe  
he gretely ouercame iewes · schewynge oppnly by scriptures ·  
Ihsu for to be crist//

Forsoþe

## ye aplis



**F**orsope it is done whanne appollo was at corrynþe · C<sup>m</sup> 19<sup>m</sup>  
 þat poul þe heyzer parties gone · came to ephesie ·  
 & fonde summe of disciplis · and he seyde to hem/  
 zif zee haue recepuede þe holy goſt bileuynge · and  
 þei ſeyden to hym/ but neþer we haue herde · zif þe holy goſt  
 is/ ſohely he ſeiþ/ þerfore in what þing ben zee baptiſide ·  
 whiche ſeyden/ in baptym of Ion/ forſoþe poul ſeyde/ Ion  
 baptizide in baptym of penaunce · þe puple · ſeyinge þat þei  
 ſchulden bileue into hym þat was to comynge aſtir hym · þat  
 is into Ihu · þes þingis herde · þei ben baptiſide in þe name of  
 oure lorde Ihu · and whanne poul had putte to hem þe handis ·  
 þe holy goſt came on hem · & þei ſpaken wiþ langagis & pro-  
 phecieden/ forſoþe alle weren almoſt twelue men/ ſohely he  
 gon into þe ſynagoge · wiþ triſt ſpac · by þre monethes diſpu-  
 tyng & ſoftely mouynge of þe kyngdom of god/ Sohely whan-  
 ne ſumme weren enduride (or made harde) & bileueden not ·  
 curſynge þe weye of þe lorde biſore þe multitude · he goinge a-  
 wey fro hem departide þe disciplis · eche day diſputynge in ſcole  
 of ſum tyraunt (or ſtrongeman)/ þis is done by two zeeris · ſo  
 þat alle þat dwelliden in aſie herden þe worde of þe lorde ·  
 Jewes & heþen men/ and vertues whiche euer god dide by þe  
 honde of poul · ſo þat on ſijk men þe ſudaries (or ſwetyng clo-  
 þes or nyzt cloþes or girdels) weren borne fro his bodie · and  
 ſeekenefſis departiden fro hem · and whiche ſpiritis wente  
 oute/ forſoþe & ſumme of Jewes exorciftis (or coniurers) co-  
 mynge aboute · temptiden for to inclepe þe name of þe lorde  
 Ihu cſt · on hem þat hadden euyl ſpiritis · ſeyinge/ I coniure  
 zou by Ihu whom poul prechiþ/ ſohely þere weren ſumme  
 ſeuene ſones of a iewe ſceue prynce of priſtis · þat dide þis  
 þing/ ſohely þe euyl ſpirit anſwerynge · ſeyde to hem/ I haue  
 knowen Ihu · & I woot poul · forſoþe who ben zee · and þe  
 man in whom was þe wiſte deuyl lepyng into hem & hau-  
 yng lordſchip of boþe was ſtronger azenes hem · ſo þat nakide



## · Dedis

& woundide hei fledden away fro þat hous/ forsoþe þis þing was made known to alle þe ietwis & heþen men þat dwelliden at ephesie/ and drede fel doune on hem alle and hei magnifieden þe name of þe lorde Jhū and many men bileupnge; camen knowelechynge & tellynge here dedis/ Soþely many of hem þat sueden curious þingis; brouzten to gedir bokis & brente bifore alle men/ & þe prices of hem acountide; þei founden money of fifty þousand pens/ so strongely þe worde of god weride; & was confermyde/ soþely þes þingis fulfildes; poul purposide in spirit macedonpe passide & acaye; for to go to irlm · seyinge for aftir þat I schal be here; it bihouep me for to se rome/ forsoþe he sendyng into macedonpe two of men mynystryng to hym tymothe & eraste; he dwelte at a tyme in asia/ þerfore þer was made in þat day a trublyng not lesse; of þe weye of þe lorde/ forsoþe demetrie by name argentarie · makynge silueren housis to dyan þat is false goddesses; zaue to crafty men not litil wyunnyng/ whom he clepyng to gedir · & hem þat weren suche maner werkemen; seyde/ men zee witen for of þis crafte is to zou wyunnyng & zee seen & herpyng for not onely of ephesys; but almost of al asie · þis poul counseylpyng turnep away myche cumpanye · seyinge/ for þei ben not goddis · þat ben made by handis/ forsoþe not only þis parte schal be in perel to vs for to come into reproue; but þe temple of greet dian schal be acountide into nouzte · but & þe majeste of hire schal be distrupede · whom al asie worschipip & þe worlde/ þes þingis herde · þei ben fulfilde wip ire · & crieden seyinge/ greet dian of ephesians/ & þe cytee is fulfilde wip confusion/ and þei made asaute wip one inwit (or wille) into þe teatre (or comoune biholdyng place) · gapus raupschide & aristarke men of macedonpe; felowis of poul/ Soþely poul wilyng for to entre into þe puple; þe disciplis suffreden not/ forsoþe summe & of þe prynces of asie þat weren his frendis · senten to hym · preyinge þat he schulde not zpyue hym self in to þe teatre/ Soþely oþer men crieden oþer þing/ Soþely þe chirche was

was

## ye aplis

was confuside · & many wisten not of what cause þei camen to gedre/ soþely of þe cumpange þei wiþdrowen summan alisaundre · iewes puttynge hym (or fer schouynge)/ fforsoþe alexandre scilence axide wiþ hande: wolde zilde resoune to þe puple/ whom as þei knewen for to be a iewe: one voyce of alle men was made crynge as bi two houres/ greet dian of ephesiens/ and whanne þe scribe had ceeside þe cumpanges: he seyde/ men of ephesy · who soþely is of men þat knowen not þe cytee of ephesiens: for to be worschiper of greet dyan · & of þe sone Iubiter: þerfore whanne it may not be azenseyde to þes þingis: it bihouen þou for to be ceeside (or swagide) · & for to do no þing folily/ soþely zee haue brouzte þes men · neþer sacrilegers neþer blasfemyng zoure goddesse/ þat zif demetrie & þe werkemen þat ben wiþ him · haue cause azenes any man: comynge togedir of domes be done · & proconsules (or iustices) ben: accuse þei hem togedir/ zif zee seeken ouzte of any oþer þing: it may be assyplide in þe laweful chirche/ for whi & we ben in perel for to be reprouede for þis dayes sedicon (or discencion) · siþ no man is gilti of whom we may zilde resoune of þis rennyng togedir/ and whanne he had seyde þis þing: he lefte (or delyueride) þe chirche//



Arsoþe aftir þat noyce ceeside þe disciplis clepide: poul monestynge hem · seyde farewell/ and he wente forþ: for to go into macedonye/ Soþely whanne he had walkide by þe parties · & had monestide hem by myche worde: he came to grece/ where whan he hadde ben þre monethes: aspies in pyl of þe iewes weren made to hym schippynge into cirie/ and he had counseyl of turnynge azen into macedonye/ soþely sofipater pirry beroence folowide hym/ of tessalonycensis forsoþe aristarke · & secounde · & gayus · derbens · tymothe/ soþely asiam · titicus · & trophimus · þes whanne þei wenten bifore: susteyneden (or abiden) vs at troade/ forsoþe we schippiden aftir dayes of þerfe looues fro philippis: & camen

C<sup>m</sup> 2C<sup>m</sup>

## dedis

& camen to hem at troade in fyue dayes · where we dwelten  
seuene dayes/ soþely one day of saboth whan we camen for to  
breke brede: poul disputynge wiþ hem · he to goinge in þe mo-  
rowe/ and he drowe alonge þe worde til into þe mydnyzt/  
soþely plenteuous laumpis weren in þe soupyng place: where  
we weren gederide togedir/ soþely sum zonge man eutichus  
by name · sittynge on þe wyndowe · whan he was dreynte wiþ  
a greuouse sleep · poul disputynge longe · he ledde by sleep · fel  
doun fro þe þridde stage (or soupyng place): & he taken vp ·  
is offride deade/ to whom whanne poul came doun he lape on  
hym · & biclippynge seyde/ nyl zee he turblide: forsoþe þe soule  
of hym is in hym/ and he goinge vp · & brekynge breed & tast-  
ynge: spac I nowz til into þe lizte · & so he wente forþ/ soþely  
þei brouzten to þe childe lyuynge: & þei ben comfortide not  
leest/ soþely we steyzinge vp into a schippe: schippide into  
ason · fro þens we ben into receyuyng poul/ soþely so he had  
disposide · to makynge iournepe by lande/ forsoþe whanne he  
founde vs in ason: hym taken to · we camen to mytelene/  
and fro þens schippynge in þe day supynge · we camen azenes  
chytom · & anoper day we hauenyden at samun: and in þe  
day supynge we camen to mylite/ soþely poul purposide for  
to schippe ouer to ephes: lestte any dwellynge were made to  
hym in asie/ soþely he bizede zif it were possible to hym þat he  
schulde make þe day of pentecost at irlm/ fro mylite soþely he  
sendynge to ephes: clepide þe more þourgh birþe of þe chirche/  
whiche whanne þei camen to hym & weren togedir: he seyde to  
hem/ zee witen fro þe firste day in whiche I came into asie ·  
how wiþ zou by eche tyme I was seruyng to þe lorde wiþ al  
mekenesse & myldenesse & temptacoñs þat fallen to me of as-  
piingis of iewes how I wiþdrowe not þe profitable þingis to  
zou · þat I tolde not to zou & tauzte zou oppnly · & by housis  
witnesynge to iewes & heþen men into god/ penaunce & feiþ  
into oure lorde Ihu cñ/ And lo I þe bounden in spirit go into  
Irlm · what þingis in it ben to comynge to me unknowynge ·

no

## ye aplis

no but þat þe holy gost by alle cytees witnesseþ to me seyinge ·  
for bondis & tribulacoñs: dwellen to me at irlm/ but I schame  
(or drede) no þing of þes · neþer I make my soule (þat is lijf):  
preciouser þanne myself · þe while I ende (or fulfille) my course ·  
& þe mynysterie of þe worde · whiche I receyuede of þe lorde I hū  
for to witnesse þe gospel of þe grace of God/ and nowe lo I  
woot · for zee schulen no more se my face · alle zee by whom I  
passide · prechynge þe kyngdom of god/ wherfore I witnesse to  
zou þis day · for I am clene of þe blood (or synne) of alle men/  
forsoþe I fleye not aweye · þat I tauze (or tolde) not to zou  
al þe counseyl of god/ takih tente to zou & to al þe floc in þe  
whiche þe holy gost sette bischopis for to rewele þe chirche of  
god: whiche he purchaside wih his blood/ I woot for aftir my  
departynge rauyschynge wolfes schulen entre into zou: not  
sparynge þe floc/ and of zou self men spekyng weywarde þin-  
gis schulen rise: þat þei leede disciplis aftir hem/ for whiche  
þing make zee holdynge in mynde · þat by þre zeer nyzt & day  
I ceefide not wih teeris monestynge eche of zou/ and nowe I  
bitake zou to god · & to þe worde of his grace · þat is myzty for  
to edifie & zye heretage in alle made holy/ forsoþe of no man  
I coueptide siluer or golde or cloþe: as zee zou self witen/ but  
to þo þingis þat weren nede to me & to þes þat ben wih me: þes  
handis mynystreden/ alle þes þingis I schewide · to zou for so  
it bihoueþ me traueplynge for to receyue þe sijk · & for to haue  
mynde of þe lorde I hū/ for he seyde/ it is more bleffide for to  
zyue more: þan for to receyue/ and whanne he had seyde þes  
þingis · his knees putte · he preyede wih alle hem: Sopely  
greet wepyng of alle men was made/ and þei fallynge on þe  
necke of poul · kissiden hym sorowynge moſte in þe worde þat  
he seyde · for þei weren no more to seinge his face/ and þei led-  
den hym to þe schippe//

## Dedis

C<sup>m</sup> 21<sup>m</sup>



**S**ophely whan it was done þat we schulden schippe •  
drawen away fro hem streypte course we camen to  
choum • & þe day supinge to rodum & fro þens to  
patiram; fro þens into gram/ and whan we foun-  
den a schippe passynge ouer into fencye • we steyzinge vp schip-  
piden (or sayliden)/ sophely whanne we apperiden to cypre; we  
leeuyng it at þe lifte halfe schippiden into sirie • & camen to  
tyre/ sophely þere þe schippe was to puttyng oute þe charge/  
sophely disciplis founden; we dwelten þere seuene dages/ þe  
whiche seyden by spirit to poul; þat he schulde not steyze to  
Irlm/ and þe dages fulfilde • we goinge forþ wenten • alle men  
wif wifes & fre children leedyng forþ vs til wifouten þe cytee •  
& þe knees putte to in þe see brynke; we prepeden/ and whanne  
we hadden made farewel togedir; we wenten vp in þe schippe/  
sophely þei turnyde azen into þere owne þingis/ sophely þe schip-  
pe saylunge fulfilde fro tyre; we descendiden to ptholomayda/  
and þe breþeren grette well; we dwelten one day at hem/ for-  
soþe anoper day we gon forþ camen to cesarie/ and entrynge  
into þe hous of philip euuangelist þat was one of þe seuene •  
dwelten at him/ sophely to þis weren foure douztris virgynes  
prophecyinge/ and whanne we dwelten þere by summe dages;  
summan prophete agabus by name came ouer fro Iudee/ þis  
whanne he came to vs • took þe girdel of poul • & byndynge to-  
geder to hym þe feet & handis; seyde/ þe holy gost seyde þes  
þingis/ þus iewes schulen bynde in irlm þe man whos is þis  
girdel; and þei schulen bitake hym into heþen mennes handis/  
whiche þing whanne we herden; we prepeden • & þei þat weren  
of þat place • þat he schulde not steyze to irlm/ þanne poul an-  
sweryde & seyde/ what done zee wepyng & turmentynge myn  
herte; sophely I am reedy not onely for to be bounden; but &  
to die in irlm • for þe name of þe lorde Ihu/ and whanne we  
myzten not counseylhym; we weren stille (or residen) seyng/  
þe wille of þe lorde be done/ sophely aftir þes dages we made  
. reedy

## ye aplis

reedy: steyzeden to ierlm/ soþely summe of disciplis camen wiþ  
vs fro cesarie: leedyngge wiþ hem summan: Jason of cypre: an  
olde disciple: at whom we schulden be herboride/ and whanne  
we camen to Ierlm: breþeren receyueden vs wilfully/ soþely  
in þe day supinge: poul entride wiþ vs to James: & alle þe eldre  
men ben gederide/ whom whanne he had grette: he told bi alle  
þingis: what þingis god had done in heþen men: by þe myn-  
ysterie of hym/ & þei whanne þei herden: magnyfieden god: &  
seyden to hym/ þou broþer seest how many housandis ben in  
ietwes þat haue bileuede to god: & alle ben suers (or louers) of  
þe lawe/ soþely þei herden of þee: for þou techist departyngge  
fro moyses: of þe ilke ietwes þat ben by heþen men: seyngge/  
þat þei owen not for to circumcide here sones: neþer owen for  
to entre vp custum/ þerfore what is: soþely it bihoueþ a multi-  
tude come to gedir/ soþely þei schulen here þee for to haue  
come ouer/ þerfore do þou þis þing: þat we seyn to þee/ þer ben  
to vs foure men haupngge a vowe on hem/ þes taken to: ha-  
lowe þee wiþ hem: & caste in hem þat þei schaue here hedis: &  
alle men wite þat þe þingis þat þei herden of þee ben false:  
but þou walkist & þi self kepyngge þe lawe/ of þes soþely þat bi-  
leueden of heþen men: we writen demyngge þat þei abstene  
hem fro þing offride to ydolis: & blood & stranglide þing &  
fornycacoñ/ þanne þe men taken to: poul in þe day supngge  
purposide wiþ hem entride into þe temple: schetwngge þe ful-  
fyllngge of dayes of purifyngge: til offryngge was offride for eche  
of hem/ soþely whanne seuene dayes weren endide: þe ietwes  
þat weren of asie: whanne þei sizen hym in þe temple: streden  
al þe puple: & leyden handis on hym cryngge/ men of isrl helpe  
zee vs/ þis is þe man þat azene þe puple & lawe & þis place:  
techyngge euery where alle men/ more ouer & haþ ledde in he-  
þen men into þe temple: & haþ defoulide þis holy place/ forsoþe  
þei sizen trophymus of ephesý in þe cytee wiþ hym: whom þei  
geffide for poul had brouzt into þe temple/ and al þe cytee is  
mouede: and arennyngge to gedir of puple is made/ and þei  
cacchyngge

## dedis

cacchynge poul · drowen hym oute of þe temple; and anone þe zatis bencloude/ soþely hemseekynge for to flee hym · it is tolde to þe tribune of þe cumpange of knyztis; for al Jrlm̄ is confoundide/ þe whiche anone knyztis taken to · & centurions; ran to hem/ whiche whanne þei hadden seen þe tribune & knyztis; ceesiden for to smyte poul/ þanne þe tribune comynge to cauhte hym · & comaundide for to be bounden wip two cheynes/ and axide who it was; & what he had done; soþely oþer crieden oþer þing in þe cumpange/ And whanne he myzte not knowe þe certeyn þing for noyse; he comaundide hym for to be led into þe castels/ and whanne poul came to grees; it bifel þat he was borne of knyztis · for strengþe of þe puple/ forsoþe þe multitude of puple suede hym crynge · take hym aweye/ and whan poul bigan for to be led into þe castels; he seip to þe tribune/ zif it is leueful to me · for to speek any þing to þee; whiche seyde/ þou greek hast þou knowen; wher þou art not þe egipcian þe whiche bifore þes dayes mouedist a noyse · & leddis & oute into deserte foure þousande of men · mansleers; and poul seyde to hym/ soþely I am a man Jewe of tharse of cilicie · a cyteseyn (or burgeys) of a cytee not vknownen/ forsoþe I preye þee suffre me for to speek to þe puple/ and whanne he suffride · poul stondynge in þe grees; bekenyde wip þe hande to þe puple/ and a greet scilence made; he spac to hem in ebreu tunge seyinge//

C<sup>m</sup> 22<sup>m</sup>



Men breþeren & faderis; here zee what resoun I zilde now to zou/ forsoþe whanne summe herden for in ebrue tunge he spac to hem; þei zauen more scilence/ and he seyde I am a iewe borne of tarse of cilicie · norischide forsoþe in þis cytee bifidis þe feet of gamaliel · lernyde after þe treuþe of faderis lawe · folower (or louver) of þe lawe; as & zee alle ben to day/ þe whiche I pursuede þis weye til to þe deþ · byndynge to gedir & drawynge into holdis men & wymmen · as þe pryncce of pristis zildis witnessynge to me

## ye aplis

me · & alle þe more in birþe · of whiche I takynge piſtills to  
breþeren wente to damaske · þat I ſchulde brynge fro þens  
bounden into Irlm · þat þei ſchulden be peynede/ forſoþe it  
is done me goinge & neyzinge to damaske in þe midday ſo-  
deynly fro heuene a copious lizte ſchone aboute me/ and I fall-  
ynge into þe erþe/ herde a voyce fro heuene ſeyinge to me/  
Saul Saul what purſueſt þou me? it is harde to þee for to  
kike azenes þe pricke/ forſoþe I anſweride/ who art þou lorde?  
and he ſeyde to me/ I am Ihu of nazereth whom þou purſueſt/  
and þei þat weren wiþ me · ſizen ſohely þe lizte/ forſoþe þei  
herden not þe voyce of hym þat ſpac wiþ me/ and I ſeyde/  
lord what ſchal I do? ſohely þe lorde ſeyde to me/ þou riſynge  
go to damask/ & þere it ſchal be ſeyde to þee of alle þingis  
which it bihoueþ þee for to do/ and whanne I ſize not for þe  
cleerte of þat lizt/ I ledde to handis of felowis · came to da-  
mask/ forſoþe ſumman ananye vp or aftir þe lawe haupnge  
witneſſynge of alle iewes dwellynge in damask compnge to  
me & ſtondynge nyz/ ſeyde/ Saul broþer biholde/ & I in þe  
ſame houre bihilde into hym/ and he ſeyde/ god of oure faderis  
ordeynede þee · þat þou ſchuldiſt knowe þe wille of hym &  
ſchuldiſt ſe iuſte þing/ & here þe voyce of his mouþe/ for þou  
ſchalt be his witneſſe to alle men · of þo þingis þat þou haſt  
ſeen & herde/ and now what dwelleſt þou? riſe vp · & be bap-  
tiſide · & waſche aweye þi ſynnes/ inclepe þe name of hym/ for-  
ſoþe it is done to me turnynge azen into Irlm · & preyinge in  
þe temple · me for to be made in rauyſchynge of ſoule/ and to  
ſe hym ſeyinge/ hiſe þou & go oute faſte of irlm/ for þei ſchulen  
not receyue þi witneſſynge of me/ and I ſeyde/ lorde þei wi-  
ten for I was cloſynge to gedir into priſoun · & betynge by  
ſynagogis · hem þat bileueden into þee/ and whanne þe blood  
of ſteuene þi witneſſe was ſched/ I ſtoode nyz & conſentide &  
kepte þe cloþes of men ſleinge hym/ and he ſeyde to me/ go  
þou for I ſchal ſende þee fer to naciounes/ forſoþe þei herden  
hym til to þis worde/ & þei reſyden here voyce ſeyinge/ take



## Dedys

fro þe erþe ſuche a maner man/ forſoþe it is not leueful hym  
for to lyue/ ſoþely hem crynge in voyce & caſtyng away here  
cloþes & þrowyng duſte into þe eire: þe tribune comaundide  
hym for to be led into þe caſtels · & for to be beten wip ſcour-  
gis · & for to be turmentide: þat he ſchulde wite for what cauſe  
þei crieden ſo to hym/ and whanne þei hadden ſtreyngde hym  
wip bondis (or roopis:) poul ſeyde to a centurioñ ſtondyng nyz  
to hym · zif it were leueful to zou for to ſcourge a man ro-  
mayne & vndampnyde/ whiche þing herde: þe centurioñ wente  
to þe tribune: and tolde to hym ſeyinge/ what art þou to do-  
inge/ forſoþe þis man is a cyteſeyn romayne/ forſoþe þe tri-  
bune comynge to ſeyde to hym/ ſeye þou zif þou art a ro-  
mayne/ and he ſeyde · zhe/ and þe tribune anſweride/ how  
lyztely (or boldely) ſeyſt þou þee a romayne cyteſeyn: ¶ wip  
myche ſoume gate þis cyuplite/ and poul ſeiþ/ ¶ ſoþely & am-  
borne/ þerfore anone & þei þat weren to turmentyng hym:  
departiden away fro hym/ and þe tribune dredde aſtir þat he  
wiſte azen for he was a cyteſeyn of rome: & for he had boun-  
den hym/ forſoþe in þe day ſuyng · he willynge for to wite  
more diligently of what cauſe he were accuſide of Jewes · vn-  
bounde hym · & comaundide priſtis for to come to gedir · & al  
þe counſeyl/ and he bryngyng forþ poul: ordeynede hym  
amonge hem//

C<sup>m</sup> 23<sup>m</sup>



**D**aul forſoþe biholdyng into þe counſeyl: ſeiþ/ men  
breþeren · ¶ wip al good conſcience haue lyuede  
bifore god: til into þis day/ ſoþely ananye prynce  
of priſtis · comaundide to men ſtondyng nyz: for  
to ſmyte his mouþ/ þanne poul ſeyde to hym/ walle made  
white: god ſchal ſmyte þee/ and þou ſittyng demeiſt me vp  
(or aſtir) þe lawe · & azenes þe lawe comaundiſt me for to be  
ſmyten/ and þei þat ſtoden nyz: ſeyden/ curſiſt þou þe hiſeſt  
priſt of God/ ſoþely paul ſeyde/ breþeren ¶ wiſte not for he is  
prynce of priſtis/ ſoþely it is writen/ þou ſchalt not curſe to þe  
prynce

## ye aplis

prynce of hi puple/ forsoþe poul witynge for one partie was of saduceis · & þe toþer of pharisees: he criede in þe counseyl/ men breþeren I am a pharisee · þe sone of pharisees: of þe hope & azen risyng of deade men I am demede/ and whanne he hadde seyde þis þing: discencōn is made betwene pharisees & saduceis & þe multitude is departide/ forsoþe saduceis seyn for to be no rysyng azen of deade men: neþer aungel neþer spirit/ forsoþe pharisees knowelechen boþe/ soþely a greet crie is made · & summe of pharisees risyng vp: fouzten seyinge/ we fynde no þing of euyl in þis man/ what ȝif a spirit spac to hym or an aungel/ & whan greet discencōn was made: þe tribune dredyng leste poul schulde be drawen of hem: comaundide knyztis for to go doune & to rauysche hym of þe mydel of hem · & for to leede hym into castels/ soþely in þe nyzt supnge · þe lorde stondyng nyȝt to seiþ/ be þou stidfast/ soþely as þou hast witneside of me in irlm: so it bihoueh þee for to witnesse & at rome/ forsoþe þe day made: summe of þe iewes gederiden hem & made a vowe seyinge · hem neþer to etyng neþer drynkyng: til þei slewen poul/ forsoþe þere weren more þan fourty men: þat maden þis coniuracōn (or sweryng to gedir)/ þe whiche wenten to þe prynces of pristis & eldre men: and seyden/ wiþ deuociōn we haue voweide vs to no þing tasyng: til we sleen poul/ nowe þerfore make ȝee knownen to þe tribune wiþ þe counseyl · þat he leede forþ hym to ȝou: as ȝee to knowyng more certeynly of hym/ soþely we ben reedy for to flee hym: bifore þat he come nyȝt/ whiche þing whanne þe sone of poulis suster had herde þe aspies (or tresoun): he came & entride into þe castels & tolde poul/ soþely he clepyng to hym one of þe centuriouns: seiþ/ leede þis ȝong man to þe tribune: for he haþ sum þing for to schewe to hym/ and he forsoþe takyng hym to: & leede to þe tribune & seiþ/ bounden poul preyede me leede to þee þis ȝonge man · haupyng some þing for to speke to þee/ soþely þe tribune takyng his hande: wente wiþ hym bisidis halfe · & axide hym what þing is it þat þou hast  
for

## Dedis

for to schewe to me/ forsoþe he seyde/ it bifalleþ to þe iewes  
for to prepe þee þat to morowe day þou brynge forþ poul into  
þe counseyl/ as þei ben to seekynge sum þing certeyner/ so-  
þely bileue þou not to hem/ forsoþe more þan fourty men of  
hem · aspien hym · þe whiche haue abowide hem not for to ete  
ne drynke · til þei fleen hym/ and now þei ben reedy · abid-  
ynge þe bihest · þerfore þe tribune lefte þe zonge man com-  
aundynge þat he schulde speke to no man · for he had made  
þes þingis knowen to hym/ and two centuriouns clepide to-  
gedir/ he seyde to hem/ make zee reedy two hundride knyztis ·  
þat þei go til cesarie · & horsemen seuenty · & speremen two  
hundride · fro þe þridde houre of nyzt · & make zee reedy iu-  
mentis (or horsis) · þat þei puttynge poul vpon · schulden leede  
hym saaf to felix president/ soþely he dredde lest parauenture  
Jewes schulden raupsche hym & flee · & he aftirwarde schulde  
suffre chalenge · as he were to takynge money · writynge to  
hym a pistel conteynynge þes þingis// ¶ Claudius lesias · to  
þe beste felix president/ helpe/ þis man taken of Jewes · & by-  
gynnyng for to be slayne of hem/ ¶ I aboue comynge wiþ cum-  
panye delyueride · knowen for he is a romayne/ and ¶ I wil-  
lynge for to wite þe cause · þe whiche þei puttiden azenes hym/ ·  
ledde hym into þe counseyl of hem/ whom ¶ I fonde to be accu-  
side of questiouns of þe lawe of hem/ forsoþe haunge no  
cryme worþi of bondis/ and whanne it was tolde to me of þe  
aspies (or trefouns) þat þei maden reedy/ ¶ I sente hym to  
þee · denounsynge & to þe accusatours · þat þei seyn at þee/  
fare wel/ soþely knyztis vp þing comaundide to hem · takynge  
to poul · ledde hym by nyzt into antipatridem/ and in þe day  
suyng · þe horsemen lefte þat þei schulden go wiþ hym/ þei  
turneden azen to þe castels/ þe whiche whanne þei camen to  
cesarie · & token þe pistel to þe president/ þei setten bifore hym  
& poul/ forsoþe whanne he had redde & aride of what pro-  
uynce he was · & knowynge for he was of cilicie/ ¶ I schal here  
þee he seip · whanne þin accusatours schulen come/ and he  
comaundide

## ye aplis

comaundide hym for to be kepte in þe pretorie (or moot halle)  
of heroude//



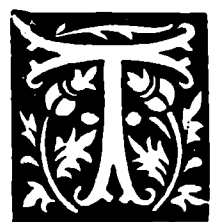
**F**orsoþe astir fyue dayes · ananye prynce of pristin  
came doune wiþ summe eldre men · & tertulle sum  
oratour (or sayre speker or aboker): whiche wenten  
to þe president azenes poul/ and poule sumnyde:  
tertulle bigan for to accuse seyinge/ whanne in myche pees we  
done by þee · & manye þingis ben amendide by þi prouydence  
(or wisdom): euermore & euery where þou beste felix · we haue  
receyuyde wiþ al doinge of þankyngis/ forsoþe lest I tarie  
þee lenger: I preye þee shortely · here vs for þi mekenesse/ we  
haue founden þis man berynge venym or pestilence · & stiryng  
sedicon (or discencon) · to alle iewis in al þe worlde · & autour of  
sedicioune of þe secte of nazarenes · þe whiche also enforside  
for to defoule þe temple · whom & taken to: we wolden deme  
astir oure lawe/ soþely listas þe tribune aboue comynge: wiþ  
greet strengþe delyueride hym fro oure handis/ comaundyng  
his accusers for to come to þee · of whom þou demynge mayste  
knowe of alle þes þingis · of whiche we accusen hym/ forsoþe  
& iewes castiden to seyinge þes þingis for to haue hem so/ for-  
soþe poul answeride grauntynge to hym þe president for to  
seye/ of many zeeris I knowynge þee for to be domesman to þis  
folc: schal do ynowz for me wiþ good intwite (or resoune)/  
soþely þou mayste knowe · for to me ben not more þan twelue  
dayes · siþ I steyzede vp for to worship in Jrlm/ and neþer in  
þe temple þei founden me disputynge wiþ any man or makynge  
concur (or rennyng to gedir) of þe cumpanye of puple · neþer  
in synagogis neþer in cytee · neþer þei motwone proue to þee: of  
þe whiche þingis þei nowe accusen me/ soþely I knoweleche  
to þee þis þing · þat vp þe secte whiche þei seyn heresie · so I  
serue to god þe fadir · bileuyng to alle þingis þat ben writen  
in þe lawe & prophetis · haupnge hope into god · þe whiche &  
þei hem self abiden þe azen risynge to comynge of iuste men &  
wickide/

C<sup>m</sup> 24<sup>m</sup>

## Dedis

wickide/ In þis þing & I studie wiþ outen hurtynge: for to haue conscience to god & to men euermore/ forsoþe astir mozeeris · I came to doinge almes dedis into my folc · & offryngis & bowis in whiche þei founden me purifiede in þe temple · not wiþ cumpange neþer wiþ noyse · & þei cauzten me crynge & seyinge take aweye oure enemye · soþely summe Jewes of asie whom it bihofte for to be nowe present (or reedy) at þee · & accuse zif þei hadden any þing azenes me · or þes hem self seye · zif þei founden in me any þing of wickidnesse · siþ I stood in þe counseyl: no but onely of þis one voyce · by whiche I criede stondynge amonge hem · for of þe azen risynge of deade men: I am demede þis day of zou/ Soþely felix differride hem · moſte certeynly he witynge of þe weye · seyinge/ whanne liſias þe tribune schal come: I schal here zou/ and he comaundide to a centurioun for to kepe hym & for to haue reste: neþer for to forbede any man for to mynyſtre of his owne þingis to hym// ¶ Soþely astir summe dayes felix comynge wiþ drusiſil his wife þat was a iewes: clepide poul & herde of hym þe seiþ þat is into c̄st Jhū/ soþely hym disputynge of rixtwelnesse & chaſtite & of doom to comynge: felix made tremblynge · answeride · þat parteyneþ nowe go: soþely in tyme couenable I schal clepe þee to/ also & hopynge: þat money schulde be zouen to hym of poul/ for whiche þing & ofte he clepyng hym to: spac wiþ hym/ soþely two zeeris fulfildes: felix tooc a ſuccesſour: festus of ponte/ forsoþe felix willynge for to gyue grace to Jewes: leſte poul bounden//

C<sup>m</sup> 25<sup>m</sup>



Therefore whanne festus came into þe prouynce astir þe þridde day: he assendide to Jrlm fro cesarie/ and þe prynces of pristis & þe firste of Jewes wenten to hym azenes poul: and preyede hym aringe azenes hym þat he schulde comaunde hym for to be ledde to irlm · settynge aspies for to ſlee hym in þe weye/ soþely festus answeride · poul for to be kepte in cesarie · hym soþely to goinge forþ

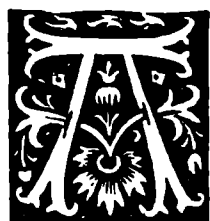
## ye aplis

forþ more ripely (or hastely)/ þerfore he seiþ · þei þat in zou  
ben myzty compnge doune to gedir · zif any cryme is in þe man ·  
accuse hym/ soþely he dwellynge amonge hem · no more þan  
ten or eyzte dayes · came doune to cesarie/ and þe toþer day  
he satte for domesman · & comaundide poul for to be ledde to/  
whiche whanne he was ledde · Jewes stoden aboute hym þe  
whiche camen doune fro Irlm · puttyng azenes manye & gre-  
uous causis · whiche þei myzten not proue/ Soþely poul zild-  
ynge resoune · for neþer into þe lawe of Jewes · neþer into þe  
temple · neþer into cesar I synnede any þing/ forsoþe festus  
wilynge for to gyue grace to þe iewes · answerynge to poul  
seyde/ wolte assende to Irlm · & þere be demyde of þes þingis  
at me/ Soþely poul seyde/ at þe doom place of cesar I stonde  
wher it bihoueþ me for to be demyde/ I haue not noyzed to  
þe Jewes · as þou hast better knowen/ soþely zif I haue noy-  
zed or done any þing worþi deeh · I forsake not for to die/  
soþely zif no þing of þes is · þat þei accusen me · no man may  
zyue me to hem/ cesar I apeel/ þanne festus spekyng wip þe  
counseyl · answeride/ cesar þou hast appelide · to cesar þou  
schalt go/ and whanne summe dayes weren passide · agrippa  
kyng & bernyce camen doune to cesarie · for to greet wel fes-  
tus/ and whanne þei dwelten þere many dayes · festus sche-  
wide to þe kyng of poul seyng/ Summan is leste bounden of  
felix · of whiche whanne I was at irlm · prynces of pristis &  
eldre men of Jewes camen to me · aringe dampnacōn azenes  
hym/ of whom I answeride/ it is not custum to romayns for  
to dampne any man · bifore þat he þat is accuside · haue his  
accusers present · & take place of defendynge · for to wasche  
awepe crymes (or grete trespassis) · þat ben putte azenes hym/  
þerfore whanne þei camen to gedir hidir · wip outhen anye de-  
laye in þe day suyng I sittynge for domesman · comaundide  
þe man for to be led to/ of whom whanne accusers stoden · þei  
seyden no cause of whiche þingis I hadde suspeciō of euyl/ so-  
þely þei hadden azenes hym summe questiouns of þere veyne  
worschippyng

## Dedīs

worschippyng (or religioun): and of Jhū deade whom poul affermyde for to lyue/ soþely I doutynge of suche maner questiou seide · zif he wolde go to Irlm · & þere for to be demyde of þes þingis/ poul forsoþe appelynge þat he schulde be kepte to þe knowynge of þe emperoure/ I comaundide hym for to be kepte · til I schal sende hym to cesar/ Soþely agrippa seide to festus/ and I myself wolde here þe man/ to morne he seiþ þou schalt here hym/ soþely on þe toþer day whan agrippa & bernyce camen wiþ myche ambuſioun (or pride of staat)/ and entride into þe auditorie wiþ tribunes & pryncipal men of þe cytee/ festus biddynge poul is led to/ and festus seide/ kyng agrippa & alle men þat ben wiþ vs/ zee seen þis (man) of whiche al þe multitude of Jewes preyeden me at irīm · aringe & crynge · hym for to not bihoue lyue more/ forsoþe I sonde hym for to haue done no þing worþi of deþ/ soþely hym appelynge þis þing/ to þe emperoure I deme for to sende · of whiche man I haue not what þing certayne I schal write to þe lorde/ for whiche þing I brouzt hym to zou · & moſte to þee o kyng agrippa/ þat aringe made I haue what I schal write/ forsoþe it is seen to me wiþ outhen resoun for to send a bounden man/ & not to signyfie þe cause of hym//

C<sup>m</sup> 26<sup>m</sup>



Agrippa soþely seiþ to poul/ It is suffride to þee for to speke for þi self/ þanne poul þe hande holden forþ/ bigan for to zilde resoun/ of alle þingis in whiche I am accuside þou kyng agrippa/ I gesse me bleside at þee · whanne I am to defendynge me þis day · moſte þee wityng alle þingis þat be at iewes customs & questyouns/ for whiche þing I biſeche/ here me patiently/ and soþely alle iewes bifore witynge me fro þe bygynnyng · haue knowen my liif fro zouþe · þat fro þe bigynnyng was in my folc in irīm · zif þei wolen here witneſſe · for vp þe moſte certeyn ſecte of oure religioun · I lyuede a phariſee/ and nowe in þe hope of repromyſſiō þat is made to oure faderis of god/

· I ſtonde

## ye aplis

I stonde sujet in doom · in whiche our twelue lynagis seruyng  
nyzt & day · hopen for to bycome/ of whiche hope · þou kyng  
I am accuside of Jewes/ what unbileueful þing is demyde at  
zou · zif god reysih deade men/ and soþely I gesside me azenes  
þe name of Ihus nazarene · for to owe do many contrarie þingis ·  
whiche þing & I dide in Irlm/ and I encloside manye of seyntis  
in prisouns power taken of prynces of pristis/ and whanne  
þei weren slayne/ I gaue þe sentence/ and by alle þe synago-  
gis ofte I punyschyng hem/ constreynede for to blasfeme/  
and more I waringe wood azenes hem/ pursuede to alien  
cytees wih power & suffryng þe prynces of pristis · in þe myd-  
day in þe weye I sūze þou kyng from heuene lizte haue schy-  
nyde aboute me ouer þe schynnyng of sunne/ and hem þat  
weren to gedir wih me/ and whanne we alle hadden fallen  
doun in to þe erþe/ I herde a voyce seyinge to me in ebrue  
tunge/ Saul Saul what pursuest þou me/ it is harde to þee to  
kike azenes þe pricke/ forsoþe I seyde/ who art þou lorde/ so-  
þely þe lorde seyde/ I am Ihusc whom þou pursuest/ but rise vp  
& stonde on þi feet/ soþely to þis þing I apperide to þee · þat  
I ordeyne þee mynystre & witnesse of þo þingis þat þou hast  
seen/ & of þo in whiche I schal appere to þee · delyueryng þee  
fro puplis & folkis into whiche now I sende þee for to open þe  
yzen of hem · þat þei be conuertide fro dirkenessis to lizte/ and  
fro power of sathanas to god/ þat þei take remyscioun of synnes ·  
& soorte (or parte) amonge seyntis by seih þat is in me/ wher-  
fore þou kyng agrippa/ I was not unbileueful to heuenely  
wisdom · but to hem þat ben at damask firste & Irlm & bi al þe  
cuntre of Jude & to heþen men · I schewide (or tolde) þat þei  
schulden do penaunce & be conuertide to god · doinge worþi  
werkis of penaunce/ of þis cause iewes temptiden me taken to ·  
whanne I was in þe temple/ willyng for to flee me/ soþely I  
holpen by þe helpe of god into þis day · stonde witnessyng to  
lesse & more · no þing wih outhen seyinge · þanne whiche þingis  
þe prophetis & moyses spaken for to be comyng/ zif crist pas-



## Dedīs

sible (or able to suffre) · zif þe firste of þe azen rysynge of deade men · is to schewynge lizte to þe puple & heben men / hym spekyng þes þingis · & zildynge resounes festus wip greet voyce seyde / poul þou maddist (or warist wood) / many lettres turnen þee into wodenesse / and poul seiþ / I madde not þou beste festus · but I speek oute þe wordis of treuþe in sobrenes / sobely & þe kyng to whom I speke stydefastly · woot of þes þingis / sobely I deme no þing of þes · for to dare hym (or vnknowe) / neþer in a corner is ouzte of þes þingis done / bileuest þou kyng agrippa to prophetis / I woot for þou bileuest / Sobely agrippa seyde to poul / in litil þing þou counseylist me for to be made a cristen man / and poul / I desire anentis god · & in litil & in greet · not onely þee · but & alle þes þat heren to day · for to be made suche what maner & I am · out taken þes bondis / and þe kyng roos vp & þe precident & bernyce · and þei þat saten nyz to hem / þe whiche whanne þei wenten awey · spaken to gedir seyinge / for þis man haþ not done any þing worþi deþ or bondis / forsoþe agrippa seyde to festus / þis man myzte be dysmyttide (or delyueride) · zif he had not appelide to cesar //

C<sup>m</sup> 27<sup>m</sup>



**S**obely as it demyde hym for to schippe into ytalie · and þei bitoken poul wip oþer kepte to a centurione by name Julius · of þe cumpange of knyztis of þe emperoure / Sobely we stepzinge into þe schippe of adrymetis & bygynnyng for to sayle · baren vp aboute þe placis of asie · lastynge stille wip vs aristarke of macedonye tessalonycense / forsoþe þe day sunge · we camen to sydon / sobely Julius tretynge manly (or curteysely) poul · suffride for to go to frendis · & to do þe cure (or nede) of hym / and whanne we hadden taken vp fro þens · we vndresayliden to cypre · for þat wyndis weren contrarie · & þe see of cilicie & pamphilie · we saylunge camen to listris þat is licye / and here centurioune fyndynge a schip of alisaundre saylunge into ytalie ·

## ye aplis

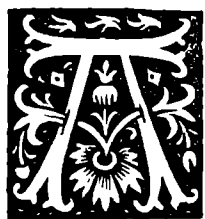
lie: puttide vs ouer into it/ and whanne manye dayes we say:  
liden slowely · & vnnephe camen azene gnydun · he wynde for:  
bedyngge vs: we sayliden to crete bisidis salomona/ and vnnephe  
we bisidys saylyngge camen into sum place þat is clepide of  
good hauen · to whom he cytee tessala was nyz/ forsoþe myche  
tyme passide · & whanne nowe was no siker saylyngge · for þat  
fastyngge passide: poul confortide hem · seyinge to hem/ men I  
se for wronge & harme · not onely of charge & schippe · but also  
of oure soulis (or lyues): bygynneþ saylyngge for to be/ soþely  
centurioune bileuede more to he gouernoure & to he lorde of  
he schippe: þanne to hes þingis þat weren seyde of poul/ and  
whanne he hauen was not able for to dwelle in wynter: ful  
mange ordeynyn den counseyl · for to sayle þens: zif in any  
maner þei myzten come to fenyce · for to wynter in he hauen  
of creete biholdyngge to affrike & to chorum/ soþely he souþ  
blowyngge · þei gessyngge hem for to holde purpose · whanne  
þei hadden taken vp fro asson · sayliden to creete/ soþely not  
astir myche (tyme) · he wynde tyfonyk þat is clepide north or  
este (or wynde of tempest): sente hym azenes it/ and whan he  
schip was rauyschide · & myzte not enforce into he wynde · he  
schippe zouen to blowynges: we weren borne/ soþely we ren-  
nyngge into sum yle þat is clepide cauda: vnnephe myzten gete  
a litil boot/ he whiche taken vp wiþ helpis · þei vsiden gird-  
yng to gedir he schippe · dredyngge lest þei schulen falle into  
sondy places · he vessel undirsente · so þei weren borne/ soþely  
vs þrowen wiþ greet tempest: in he day suyngge þei maden  
castyngge oute · & he þridde day wiþ here hondis castiden away  
he instrumentis of he schippe/ soþely neþer sunne neþer sterres  
apperyngge by mo dayes · & tempest not litil schewyngge nyz:  
nowe al he hope of oure helpe was done awaye/ and whanne  
myche fastyng had be: þanne poul stondyngge in he mydel of  
hem seyde/ o men it bihofte me herde · for to not take awaye  
fro creete · & make to wyne þis wronge & castyngge oute/ and  
nowe I counseyl you for to be of gode inwitte (or herte)/ soþely  
þer

## Dedix

her schal be losse of no soule of zou: outaken of þe schippe/ for-  
soþe an aungel of god of whom I am & to whom I serue: stode  
nyze to me þis nyzt seyinge/ poul drede þou not: it bihoueþ  
þee for to stonde nyz to cesar/ and lo god haþ zouen to þee:  
alle þat ben in schippe wiþ þee/ for whiche þing zee men · be  
of good inwitte (or herte) forsoþe I bileue to my god: for  
so it schal be · as it is seyde to me/ Soþely it bihoueþ vs for  
to come into sum Iile/ but aftirwarde in þe fourtenþe day þe  
nyzt came aboue to vs saylyng in þe stonpe see: aboute myd-  
nyzt þe schippemen supposiden sum region (or cuntre) for to  
appere to hem/ þe whiche sendynge doune a plomet founden  
twenty paasis of depnesse/ and aftir a litil þei partide þens:  
founden fiftene paasis/ soþely þei dredynge leste we schulden  
falle into scharpe places · fro þe laste parte of þe schippe send-  
ynge foure ankeris · Desireden day for to be made/ soþely þe  
schipmen seekynge for to fle of þe schippe · whanne þei had-  
den sente a litil boot into þe see vndir colours as þei schulden  
bigynne fro þe former parte of þe schippe for to strecche forþ  
þe ankers: poul seyde to þe centurioune & knyztis/ no but þes  
schulen dwelle in þe schippe: zee moun not be made saaf/  
þanne knyztis kuttiden away þe coordis of þe litil boot: and  
suffreden it for to falle fro/ and whanne lizte bigan for to be  
made: poul preyede alle men for to take mete · seyinge/ þe four-  
tenþ day þis day zee abidyngge dwellen fastynge: no þing tast-  
ynge/ for whiche þing I prepe zou for to take mete for zoure  
helpe: for of none of zou þe heer of þe heede schal perische/ and  
whanne he had seyde þes þingis: he takynge breede dide þank-  
yngis to god in þe sizte of alle men/ and whanne he hadde  
broken: he bigan for to ete/ forsoþe alle men more pacient  
(or herty): and þei token to mete/ soþely we weren alle þe  
soulis in þe schippe: two hundride seuenty & fire/ and þei ful-  
fillide wiþ mete: dischargiden þe schippe · castynge wheet into  
þe see/ soþely whanne day was made: þei knewen not lande/  
forsoþe þei bihilden sum hauen haupnge a waterbanke into  
whiche

## ye aplis

whiche þei þouzten zif þei myzten: for to caste þe schippe/ and whanne þei hadden taken vp þe ankeris: þei bitoken hem to þe see · to gedir slakynge þe ioyntures & gouernaylis/ and a litil sayle · lifte vp · vp blowynge of þe wynde: þei wenten to þe banke/ and whanne we fellen into a place of grauel gon al aboute wif þe see: þei hurtlyden þe schippe/ and þe former parte ficchide dwelte vnmouable: soþely þe laste parte was broken of strenghe of þe see/ soþely counseyl of þe knyztis was for to flee men in þe keepynge: lest any schulde scape · whanne he had swimmyde oute/ forsoþe centurioun willynge for to kepe poul: forbed to be done/ and he comaundide hem þat myzten swimme: for to sende hem firste into þe see & scape · & go oute to þe lande/ and summe oþer þei baren in bordis · summe on þo þingis þat weren of þe schippe/ and it is made þat alle þe soulis (or lyuyng men) scapien to þe lande//



**A**ND whanne we hadden scapide: þanne we knewen C<sup>m</sup> 28<sup>m</sup> þat þe isle was clepide mytilyne/ soþely barbars (or heþen men) · zauen to vs not a litil humanyte (or curteysie)/ forsoþe a fir kyndelide: þei refetiden (or refreschiden) vs alle · for þe rayne þat came nyz & colde/ soþely whan poul had gederide sum multitude of kittynge of bynes · & inputte on þe fir: an eddre whanne sche came forþ fro þe heet: assaylide his hande/ þerfore as barbars sizen þe beest hangynge in his hande: þei seyden togedir/ soþely þis man is a manqueller/ whiche whanne he scapide fro þe see: goddis vengeaunce suffriþ hym not for to lyue/ and he soþely schakynge of þe beest into þe fir: suffride no þing of euyl/ and þei gesiden hym for to be turnyde into swellynge · & soþeynly to fallynge · & for to die/ forsoþe hem longe abydynge · & seinge no þing of euyl for to be done in hym: þei turnynge to gedir · seyden hym for to be god/ forsoþe in þo places weren maners (or feeldis) of þe prynce of þe isle · puplius by name: þe whiche recepyng vs þre dayes benygngely (or of good wille) ·

## Dedís

wille) · fonde vs/ soþely it bifel þe fadir of puplius for to ligge  
 traueplide wiþ feueris & discenterie (or fluxe) to whom poul  
 entride/ and whanne he had preyede · & puttide þe handis to  
 hym: he sauede hym/ whiche þing done alle þat in þe ple had-  
 den sekenessis: camen to · & weren curide (or heelide)/ whiche  
 also honoureden vs in manye worschipis · & to vs schippynge:  
 in puttiden what þingis weren necessarie/ forsoþe aftir þre  
 monethes we schippiden in a schippe of alisaundre · þat had  
 wyntride in þe isle · to þe whiche was a noble þing of castels/  
 and whanne we camen to syracusan: we dwelten þere þre  
 dayes/ fro þens we schippynge aboute: bicamen to þe regioun/  
 and aftir one day þe south blowynge: in þe secounde day we  
 camen to puteolos/ where breþeren founden: we ben preyede  
 for to dwelle þere anentis hem · seuene dayes · & so we camen  
 to rome/ and fro þens whan breþeren hadden herde: þei run-  
 nen to vs til to þe chepyng of appyus · & to a place þat is cle-  
 pide þre tauernes/ whom whan poul had\*: doinge þankyngis  
 to god · toke triste/ soþely whan we camen to rome: it is suf-  
 fride to poul for to dwelle to hym self wiþ one knyzt keepyng  
 hym/ forsoþe aftir þe þridde day: he clepide to gedit þe firste  
 of Jewes/ and whanne þei camen: he seyde to hem/ men bre-  
 þeren I doinge no þing azenes þe puple or custom of faderis ·  
 I bounden at Irlm · am bitaken into þe handis of romayns/  
 whiche þei hadden akinge of me: wolden dismytte me · for þat  
 no cause of deþ was in me/ but Jewes azen seyinge: I am  
 constreynede for to appeel cesar · not as haupnge any þing for  
 to accuse my folc/ þerfore for þis cause I preyede for to se zou:  
 and I spac to/ forsoþe for þe hope of isrl: I am girde aboute  
 wiþ þis cheyne/ and þei seyden to hym/ neþer we haue recey-  
 ude lettris of þee fro Jude · neþer any of breþeren comynge  
 to: schewide or spac any euyl þing of þee/ soþely we prepen  
 for to here of þee: what þingis þou feelist/ for whi of þis sette  
 it is knownen to vs: for euery where it is azenseyde/ soþely  
 whanne þei hadden ordeynede a day to hym: mo camen to  
 hym

\* Thus in  
 the MS. but  
 the word  
 [seen] is evi-  
 dently want-  
 ing.

## ye aplis

hym in þe ooste (or herbore) · to whom he expounyde witnes-  
 ynge þe kyngdom of god · & counseyliden hem of Ihu & of þe  
 lawe of moyses & prophetis: fro þe morn til to þe euentide/  
 and summe bileueden to þes þingis þat weren seyde of poul:  
 and summe bileueden not/ whan þei weren not consentynge  
 to gedir: þei departiden · poul seyinge one worde/ for þe holy  
 goſt ſpac wel by yſaye þe prophete to oure faderis: seyinge go  
 þou to þis puple · & seye to hem/ wiþ ere zee schulen here: and  
 zee schulen not vnderſtonde/ and zee seinge schulen ſe: and zee  
 schulen not biholde/ þe herte of þis puple is infattide: and wiþ  
 eris þei herden greuouſly/ and þei preſſiden here yzen to gedir:  
 leſte parauenture þei ſeen wiþ yzen · & wiþ eris heren · & bi  
 herte vnderſtonde · & be conuertide · & I heele hem/ þerfore be  
 it knowen to zou · for to heþen men þis helpe of god is ſente:  
 and þei schulen here/ and whanne he hadde ſeyde þes þingis ·  
 Jewes wenten oute fro hym: haupnge myche queſtioune (or  
 ſeekynge) amonge hem ſelf/ ſohely he dwelide al two zeer in  
 his hijride place · & he receyuyde alle þat entriden to hym  
 prechynge þe kyngdom of god · & techynge what þingis ben  
 of þe lorde Ihu cſt wiþ al triſte wiþ outen forbedynge//

## ye piſtel of James.



James þe ſeruaunt of god · & of oure lorde  
 Ihu cſt: to þe twelue kynredis þat ben  
 in þe ſcaterynge abroad: helpe/ my bre-  
 þerengelle (or deeme) zee al ioye: whan  
 zee schulen falle in dyuerſe temptacoñs  
 or tribulacoñs wytyng þat þe prouynge  
 of zoure ſeiþ: wirchþ patience/ ſohely  
 patience haþ parfite werke · þat zee be  
 parfite & hool · in no þing ſaylynge/ þerfore zif any of zou  
 nedith

C<sup>m</sup> I<sup>m</sup>

## ye pistel

nediþ wiſdom: are he of god • þe whiche ȝyueþ to alle men  
largely • & vþbraydiþ not: and it ſchal be ȝouen to hym/ ſo-  
þely are he in feiþ: no þing doutynge/ forſoþe he þat doutiþ:  
is lijk to a wawe of þe ſee • þe whiche of wynde is mouede &  
borne aboute/ þerfore geſſe not þe ilke man þat he ſchal take  
any þing of þe lorde/ a man double of intwitte: is vnſtable in  
alle hiſ weyes/ forſoþe a meke broþer glorie in hiſ enhaunf-  
ynge/ ſoþely a riche man in hiſ mekenefſe/ for as þe floure of  
hay (or graſſe): he ſchal paſſe/ ſoþely þe ſunne is ſprungen vþ  
wiþ brennyng (or heet): and driede þe hay/ and þe floure of  
it fel doune • & þe fayrenefſe of hiſ chere periſchide: ſo a riche  
man welowiþ in hiſ weyes/ bleſſide is þe man þat ſuffreþ  
temptacon/ for whanne he ſchal be prouede: he ſchal receyue  
þe crowne of liſt • þe whiche aȝen bihiȝte to men louynge  
hym/ no man whan he is temptide ſeye: for he is temptide of  
god/ ſoþely god is vntempter of euyl þingis/ forſoþe he temp-  
tiþ no man/ ſoþely eche man is temptide of hiſ coueytynge:  
drawen (fro reſoun) & ſnaride (or deſceyuyde)/ þanne couey-  
tynge whanne it haþ conſequede: bryngiþ forþ ſynne/ ſoþely  
ſynne whan it is fulfild: gendriþ deþ/ and ſo my moſte der-  
worþe breþeren: nyl ȝee erre/ eche beſt þing ȝouen • & al par-  
fiȝte ȝiſte it is fro aboue comynge doune of þe fadir of liȝtis/  
anentis whom is not ouerchaunge: neþer ſchadowynge of  
whilenes (or tyme)/ forſoþe wilfully he gendride wiþ vs þe  
worde of treuþe: þat we be ſum bygynnyng of þe creature of  
hym/ wite ȝee my breþeren moſte louede/ be eche man ſwifte  
for to here • forſoþe ſlowe for to ſpeke • & ſlowe to wraþe/ ſo-  
þely þe wraþ of man worchiþ not þe riȝtwelneſſe of god/ for  
whiche þing ȝee caſtynge aweye al vncleneneſſe & plente of  
malice in myldenefſe (or homelyneſſe) • receyue ȝee þe worde  
inſente (or ioynnyde): þat may ſaue ȝoure ſoulis/ forſoþe be  
ȝee doers of þe worde • & not herers onely: deſceyuyng ȝou ſelf/  
for ȝif any man is herer of þe worde & not doer: þiſ ſchal be  
compariſounde (or likenyde) to a man biholdynge þe cheer  
of

## of James

of his birþe in a myrour/ ſoþely he bihilde hym ſelf & wente/ and anone he forzate what maner he was/ forſoþe he þat ſchal parſitely biholde in þe lawe of parſite freedom · & ſchal dwelle in it not made a forzetel herer · but doer of werke/ þis ſchal be bleſſide in his dede/ forſoþe zif any man geſſe hym ſelf for to be religious · not refreyninge his tunge · but deceyving his herte/ þe religioun of hym is veyne/ þis is a clene religi- oun & vnwemmyde · anentis god & þe fadir · for to viſite pu- pilles (þat is fadirles or modirles or boþe) & wydowis in here tribulacō · & for to kepe hym ſelf vndefoulide fro þis worlde//



**M** breþeren nyl zee in accepcon (or takynge) of per- ſones/ haue þe ſeiþ of oure lorde Ihu criſt of glorie/ forſoþe zif þere ſchal entre into zoure couent (or gedirynge to gedir) · a man haupnge a golden ryng · in white (or ſayre) cloþe · forſoþe & a pore man ſchal entre in foule habite (or cloþe) · & zee biholde into hym þat is cloþide wiþ a ful cleer cloþe · & zit zee ſchulen ſeye to hym · þou fitte heere wel/ ſoþely to þe pore man zee ſeye/ ſtonde þou here · or fitte vnder þe ſtool of my feet/ wher zee demen not anentis zou ſelf · & ben made domeſmen of wickide þouztis/ here zee my moſte derworþe breþeren/ wher chees not pore men in þis worlde riche in ſeiþ · & eþres of þe kyngdom · þat god behizte azen to men louynge hym/ forſoþe zee hane diſ- piſide þe pore man/ wher riche men oppreſſen zou not by power · & drawen zou to domeſ/ wher þei blaſfeme not þe good name · þat is inclepide on zou/ neþeles zif zee parfou- men þe kyngis lawe vp ſcriptures þou ſchalt loue þi neyzebo- re as þi ſelf/ zee done wel/ ſoþely zif zee taken perſones/ zee wir- chen ſynne · zee be reprouede of þe lawe as treſpaſours/ for- ſoþe whoeuer ſchal kepe al þe lawe · ſoþely offende in one · he is made guilty of alle/ for he þat ſeyde þou ſchalt not do lecche- rie/ ſeyde & þou ſchalt not ſlee/ þat zif þou ſchalt not do lecche- rie · but þou ſleeſt þou art made treſpaſoure of þe lawe/ þus

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>



## ye pistel

speke zee & þus do zee: as bygynnyng for to be demyde by  
lawe of parfite fredom/ soþely dome wiþ outen mercy to hym  
þat doih not mercy/ soþely mercy aboue reysih doom// ¶ **A**ny  
breþeren what schal it profite zif any man seye hym for to  
haue feih · werkis forsoþe we haue not · wher feih schal mowe  
saue hym/ forsoþe zif a broþer or sister be nakide & haue nede  
of eche day lyuelode · forsoþe any of zou seye to hem go zee in  
pees · be zee made hoot · & be zee fulfillide/ soþely zif zee  
schulen not ȝpue to hem what þingis ben necessarie of body:  
what schal it profite to zou/ so & feih zif it haue not werkis:  
is deade in it self/ but summan schal seye/ þou hast feih: and  
I haue werkis/ schewe þou to me þe feih wiþ outen werkis:  
and I schal schewe to þee my feih of werkis/ þou bileuest for  
one god is: þou doist wel/ and deuelis bileuen & to gedir trem-  
blen/ forsoþe wolte þou wite þou veyne man: for feih wiþ  
outen werkis is ydil/ abraham oure fadir · wher he was not  
iustifiede of werkis offerpunge ysaac his sone on þe auter/ þer-  
fore þou seest: for feih wrouzte wiþ his werkis · & his feih ful-  
filde of werkis/ and þe scripture is fulfild: seyinge/ abraham  
bileuede to god · & it is rettide to hym to riztwesnesse: and he  
is clepide þe frende of god/ zee seen for a man is iustifiede of  
werkis: and not of feih onely/ also forsoþe & raab hoore · wher  
sche was not iustifiede of werkis · recepyng þe messagers · &  
by anoper weye doinge oute (or sendyng) oute/ forsoþe as a  
body wiþ outen spirit is deade: so & feih wiþ outen werkis is  
deade//

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



**M** breþeren nyl zee be made manye maystris · wit-  
punge for zee taken þe more dome/ soþely alle we  
offenden in many þingis/ zif any man offendih not  
in worde: þis is a parfite man/ forsoþe he may wiþ  
a bridil: leede aboute al þe body/ forsoþe zif we putten horsis  
bridels into mouþes for to consente to vs & we beren þer wiþ  
aboute al þe body of hem/ and lo schippis whanne þei ben  
grete ·

## of James

grete · & ben dryuen of stronge wyndis: soþely þei ben borne  
aboute of litil gouernayle · wher þe birre of a man dressynge  
schal wole/ so & þe tunge soþely is a litil membre: and repliþ  
grete þingis/ lo how myche fir kyndeliþ how greet a wode/  
and oure tunge is fir: þe vnquersite of wickidnesse/ þe tunge  
is ordeynede in oure membris: þe whiche defouliþ al þe body/  
and it enflaumpyde (or sette a fir) of helle: enflaumeþ þe queel  
of oure birþe/ soþely al þe kynde of beestis or foulis & serpentis  
& of oþer: be ouercomen (or vndrezokide) · & ben made tame  
of mannes kynde · forsoþe none of men may daunte (or chas-  
tise) þe tunge/ soþely it is vnquyete (or vnpeesible) euyl þing:  
and ful of deadely venym/ in it we blessen god þe fadir: and  
in it we cursen men · þat ben made of þe lickenesse of god/ of  
þe same mouþ cometh forþ blessinge & cursynge/ my breþeren  
it bihoueth not þes þingis for to be made so/ wher a welle of  
þe same hool brynge forþ swete & salte water: my breþeren ·  
wher a fyge tree may make grapis: [eiþer a vyne fygis:]  
so neþer salte water: may make swete water/ who is wise  
& disciplynede (or chastifide) amonge zou: schewe he of good  
lyuynge his werke in myldenesse of wisdom/ but zif zee haue  
bittir zeale (or enuie) & stryuynges ben in zoure hertis: nyl  
zee glorie & be liers azenes þe treuþe/ forsoþe þis wisdom is  
not fro aboue comynge doune: but erþely bestly fendely/ for  
where is enuie & strife: þere vnstidfastnesse & al schrewide  
werke/ forsoþe wisdom þat is fro aboue · firste soþely it is  
chaste · aftirwarde peesible · mylde · swadible (þat is esy for  
to trete & to be tretide) · consentynge to good þingis · ful of  
mercy & gode fruytis · demynge wiþ outen feynynge/ soþely  
þe fruytis of ryztwesnesse ben sown in pees: to men making  
pees//

## ye pistel

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>



Her of bataylis & chestis (or chydynge) amonge zou/ wher not of zoure coueytis. þat fizen in zoure membres: zee coueyten: and zee hane not/ zee fleen & hane enue: and zee mowne not gete/ zee chiden & maken batayle: and zee hane not for whiche þing zee hane not aride/ zee aren & zee receyuen not. for þat zee aren euyl: as in zoure coueytise zee schewen/ auoutrers witen not zee. for þe frenschip of þis worlde is enue to god/ þerfore who euer schal wole. for to be frende of þis worlde: is ordeynede þe enemy of god/ wher wenen zee þat veynly þe scripture seih þe spirit þat dwellih in zou coueytis to enue/ forsoþe he ȝyueþ more grace/ for whiche þing he seih/ god wiþstondih proude men: forsoþe to meke men he ȝyueþ grace/ þerfore be zee suget to god/ forsoþe wiþstonde zee þe deuil: & he schal fle fro zou/ neȝze zee to god: & he schal neȝze to zou/ zee synners clense þe handis: & zee double of inwit (or wille). purge þe hertis/ be zee wrecches (in zoure owne ȝzen): & weple zee & wepe zee/ zoure leyzyng be it turnyde into wepyng: & zoure ioye into sorowe of herte/ be zee mekide in þe sizte of þe lordes: & he schal enhaunce zou/ my breþeren nyl zee bacbite eche oþer/ he þat bacbitih his broþer. or þat demeh his broþer: bacbitih þe lawe & demeh þe lawe/ forsoþe zif þou demest þe lawe: þou art not doer of þe lawe. but domesman/ soþely one is speker (or maker) of þe lawe & Juge: þat may leese & delyuer/ forsoþe who art þou þat demest þi neȝzebore/ lo nowe zee þat seyn. to day or tomorowe we schulen go into þe ilke cytee. & þere soþely we schulen make a zeer. & we schulen make marchaundise & we schulen make wyynynges: þe whiche witen not what is to zou in þe morowe/ forsoþe what is zoure lijf/ a vapour (or smoke) to a litil semyng: and aftirwarde it schal bewastide: þerfore þat zee sepe/ zif þe lorde schal wole. & zif we schulen lyue: we schulen do þis þing/ now forsoþe zee gladen in zoure pridis/ euery suche ioyinge  
is

## of James

is wickide/ þerfore to a man kunnyng for to do good · & not  
doinge: synne it is to hym//



**O**n nowē zee riche men wepe zee · zoulpyngē in zoure C<sup>m</sup> 5<sup>m</sup>  
wrecchidnessis þat schulen come to zou/ zoure rich-  
essis ben made roten: & zoure cloþes ben eten of  
mouztis/ zoure golde & siluer haþ rustide: & ruste  
of hem schal be to zou into witnessyng & schal ete zoure fleyschis  
as fyr/ zee haue trespouride to zou wraþe in þe laste dayes/ lo  
þe hysre of zoure werkemen þat repeden zoure cuntrees · þat  
is fraudide of zou crieþ · & þe crie of hem: entride into þe eris  
of þe lorde of oostis/ zee haue eten on þe erþe: & in zoure lec-  
cheries zee haue norischide zoure hertis/ in þe day of fleeinge  
zee ledden to & slouen þe iuste man: & he azenstode not zou//  
**¶** þerfore breþeren be zee pacient: til to þe comyngē of þe  
lorde/ lo an erþe tilier abidyþ precious fruyte of þe erþe: pa-  
tiently suffryngē til he receyue tymeþul & lateþul/ and be zee  
pacient & conferme zee zoure hertis: for þe comyngē of þe  
lorde schal neyþ/ breþeren nyl zee be sorowful eche into oþer ·  
þat zee be not demyde/ lo þe iustise stondiþ nyȝ: bifore þe zate//  
Breþeren take zee ensaumpel of euyl goinge oute & of longe  
abidyngē of traueyl · & paciēce · þe prophetis þat spaken to  
zou in name of þe lorde/ lo we blessen hem þat suffreden/ zee  
herden þe suffryngē (or paciēce) of Job · & zee sizen þe ende  
of þe lorde: for þe lorde is mercyþul & doing mercy bifore  
alle þingis/ my breþeren nyl zee swere: neþer by heuene ne by  
erþe: neþer by what euer oþer oþe/ forsoþe be zoure wordis  
nay nay: þat zee falle not vndre doom/ Sohely zif any of  
zou is sorowful (or heuþe): prepe he wiþ euen intwitte · & sepe  
þe psalme/ any of zou is siȝk: leede he in priȝis of þe chirche ·  
& prepe þei on hym · anoyntyngē wiþ oyle in name of þe  
lorde: & þe preper of seiþ schal saue þe siȝk/ and þe lorde schal  
discharge (or make hym lizt)/ and zif he be in synnes: þei  
schulen be forzouen to hym/ þerfore knoweleche zee one to  
anoþer

## petre .i.

anoþer zoure synnes; and prepe zee for eche oþer · þat zee be  
sauede/ forsoþe þe continuel preper of a iuste man; is myche  
worþe/ helie was a man lijk to vs passible (or able for to suf-  
fre · & in preper he prepede þat it schulde not rayne on þe  
erþe; & it raynyde not þre zeeris & fire moneþes/ and este-  
sone he prepede; & heuene zaue rayne · & þe erþe zaue his  
frupte/ breþeren forsoþe zif any of zou schal erre fro þe treuþe ·  
& any schal conuerte hym; he oþer for to wite · & he þat schal  
make a synner for to turne fro þe errour of his weye · schal  
saue þe soule of hym fro deþ; and couerþ þe multitude of  
synnes//

## þe firsste pißtel of petre

C<sup>m</sup> 1<sup>m</sup>



Þetre apostle of Ihus crist to þe chosen  
gestis (or comelyngis) of dispersion (or  
scaterynge abroad) · of ponte & gala-  
thie of capadosie of asie & of bithynne  
vp þe prescience (or bifore knowynge)  
of god þe fadir into halowynge of þe  
spirit · into obedience & spryngynge of  
þe blood of Ihus crist; grace & pees to  
zou be multipliede/ bleßide (be) god & þe fadir of oure lorde  
Ihus crist · þe whiche vp his grete mercy azen gendride vs into  
quyk hope · by þe azen rysynge of Ihus crist fro deade men ·  
into heretage vncorruptible · & vndefoulide & vnwelowable  
þat schal not fade · kepte in heuenes · in zou þat in þe vertues  
of god ben kepte by þe feiþ into helpe made redy · for to be  
schewide in þe laste tyme in whiche zee schulen ioye; zif it  
bihoueþ now a litil for to be soory in dyuerse temptaconis þat  
þe prouynge of zoure feiþ be myche preciouser/ þan golde þat  
is prouede by fyr/ be it founden in to herpyng & glorie & ho-  
noure

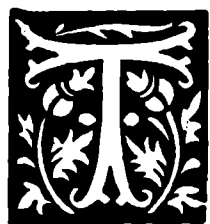
## petre .i.

noure into þe reuelacōn of Ihū c̄st; whom whanne zee haue not seen zee louen into whom also nowē zee not seinge; bi-  
leuen/ forsoþe zee bileupnge schulen haue ioþe wiþ oute forþ  
in gladenesse vnenerable (þat may not be tolde oute) · & glo-  
rifiede bryngynge azen þe ende of zoure feiþ · þe helpe of zoure  
soulis/ of whiche helpe prophetis souzten oute & enserchiden ·  
þat prophecieden of þe grace to comynge in zou · sechynge  
whiche or what maner tyme þe spirit of c̄st signyfiede in hem ·  
bifore tellynge þe passiouns þat ben in c̄rist · & later glories/  
to whom it is schewide for not to hem self soþely to zou þei  
mynystreden þo þingis · þat nowē ben tolde to zou bi hem  
þat euangelizeden to zou þe holy goſt ſente fro heuene; into  
whom aungels deſiren for to biholde/ for whiche þingis zee  
girde þe lendis of zoure soule · ſobre · parfite hope into þe ilke  
grace þat is offride to zou into reuelacōn or ſchewynge of Ihū  
c̄st · as ſones of obedience · not to gedir lickenyde to þe for-  
mer deſires of zoure ignoraunce; but vp hym þat clepide zou  
holy · þat & zoure ſelf be holy in al lyupnge/ for it is writen/  
zee ſchulen be holy; for I am holy/ and zif zee inclepen hym  
fadir · þe whiche wiþ outen accepciōn of perſones demey vp  
þe werke of eche man; lyue zee in drede in tyme of zoure pil-  
grymage (or litil dwellynge in erþe)/ wityng þat not bi cor-  
ruptible golde or ſiluer zee ben bouzte azen of zoure veyne  
lyupnge of faderis tradicoñs; but by þe precious blood of þe  
lombe · vndefoulide & vnſpottide c̄st Ihū/ bifore knownen ſo-  
þely bifore þe makynge of þe worlde; forsoþe ſchewide in þe  
laſte tymes · for zou þat by hym ben feiþful in god þat reſide  
hym fro deade men · & zaue to hym euerlaſtynge glorie · þat  
zoure feiþ & hope were in god/ zee makynge chaſte zoure soulis  
in obedience of charite · in loue of brotherhede of ſymple herte  
loue zee to gedir biſiloker borne azen · not of corruptible ſeed;  
but of vncorruptible by þe worde of quykke god & dwellynge  
into wiþ outen ende/ for eche fleysche hay; and al þe glorie of  
it as floure of hay/ þe hay drieþ vp; and his floure ſel doune/  
forsoþe

## petre .i.

forsoþe þe worde dwelliþ into wiþ outhen ende/ soþely þis is þe worde þat is euangelizide to zou//

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>



Therefore puttyng away al malice · & al gile & symulacris or feynnyngis · & enuyes & al detraccon as newe gendride zonge children · wiþ outhen gile · coueyte zee mylke þat in it zee ware into helpe · zif neþeles zee tastiden for þe lorde is swete/ to whom zee goinge nyȝ a quycke stoon · reproude soþely of men · forsoþe chosen of god & honouride · & zoure self as quycke stones be aboue bildide spiritual housis · holy prischode for to offere spiritual oostis (or offryngis) · acceptable to god by Ihu crist/ for whiche þing þe scripture holdiþ lo I schal putte in syon þe heyzest stoon · corner stoon · chosen · precious/ and he þat schal bileue into hym · schal not be confoundide/ þerfore honoure to zou bileuyng/ forsoþe to men not bileuynges · þe stoon whom þei bildynges reproueden · þis is made into þe hede of þe corner · & þe stoon of offencion (or hurtynge) · & stoon of sclaudre · to hem þat offenden by worde · neþer bileuen in whiche & þei ben putte/ forsoþe zee ben a kynde chosen · kyngely prischode · holy folc · puple of purchasynges · þat zee telle þe vertues of hym þat clepide zou fro dirkenessis · into his wondreful lizte/ þe whiche sum tyme not þe puple of god · now soþely þe puple of god/ þe whiche not haupng mercy · now forsoþe haupng mercy// ¶ Goste dere I biseche zou as comelyngis (or gestis) for to abstene zou fro fleyschely desiris · þat sizten azenes þe soule/ haupng zoure conuersacon (or lijf) good amonge heþen men/ þat in þat þing þat þei bacbiten (or euyl treten) of zou as of mysdoers · þei biholdynges zou of good werkis · glorifie god in þe day of visitacon/ be zee suget to eche creature of man for god/ oþer to þe kyng · as excellent (or worþi in staat) · oþer to dukis · as sente of hym/ to þe vengeaunce of mysdedis (or mysdoers) · forsoþe to þe prepsyng of good dedis (or good men) · for so is þe wille of god · þat zee doinge wel make þe unkun-  
nyngnesse

## petre .i.

nyngnesse of vnprudent men for to be doumbe/ as fre men/  
 & not as haupng fredom þe couerynge of malice; but as þe  
 seruauntis of god/ honoure zee al men · loue zee breþerhede ·  
 drede zee god · make zee þe kyng honourable/ seruantis be zee  
 fuget in al drede to lordis/ not onely to good & mylde; but also  
 to tyrauntis/ forsoþe þis is þe grace · zif for conscience of god ·  
 any man suffriþ sorowis (or heuynessis) suffrynge vniustly/  
 soþely what grace is it · zif zee synnyng & buffatide suffren/  
 but zif zee wel doinge suffren; þis is grace anentis god/ forsoþe  
 in þis þing zee ben clepide/ for cōt suffride for vs · leuyng to  
 zou ensauple; þat zee folowe þe steppis of hym · þe whiche  
 dide not synne · neþer gile is founden in his mouþ/ whiche  
 whanne he was curside; curside not/ whanne he suffride he  
 manasside not/ soþely he bitoke hym to a man demynge hym  
 vniustly · whiche he hym self suffride (or bare) oure synnes  
 in his bodye on þe tree · þat we be deade to synnes lyue to  
 ryztwesnesse · by whos wounde zee ben helide/ forsoþe zee we-  
 ren as scheep errynges; but zee ben conuertide now to þe  
 scheperde & bischop of zoure soulis//



Also & wymmen be fuget to here housbondis/ þat zif  
 any bileue not to þe worde; by þe conuersacon of  
 wymmen · be þei wonnen wiþ outhen worde · bi-  
 holdyng in drede zoure holy conuersacon/ of þe  
 whiche be not wiþ outhen forþ curious ournyng of heer · or  
 doinge aboute of golde or ournyng of cloþinge of vestymētis;  
 but þe ilke þat is þe hid man of herte & uncorruptible of  
 quyetē (or peesible) & mylde spirit · þe whiche is riche in þe  
 sizte of god/ soþely so & holy wymmen hoppyng in god · (not  
 in ournement of cloþinges;) ournyden (or maden clene) hem  
 self · fuget to here owne housbondis/ as saare obeyede to abra-  
 ham; clepyng hym lorde/ of whom zee ben douztris wel  
 doinges; & not dredyng any perturbacoñ/ also men togedir  
 dwellyng vpon science (or kunnyng) zpyng honoure to þe

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>

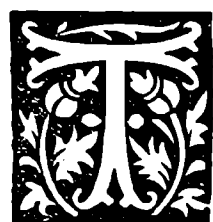


## petre .i.

wommans vessel (or body) as to þe more sijk: as & to þe euen  
eyris of grace of lijf · þat zoure preyers be not lettide/ forsoþe  
in feiþ al of one vnderstondynge (or wille) · in preyer be zee  
compacient (or eche suffryng wiþ oþer) · louers of fraternyte ·  
merciful · mylde · meke · not zildynge euyl for euyl · neþer  
curfynge for curfynge: but azen blessinge/ for in þis þing zee  
ben clepide: þat zee welde blessinge by heretage/ forsoþe he  
þat wole loue lijf & se good dayes: consireyne his tunge fro  
euyl · & his lippis þat þei speke not gile/ soþely howe he fro  
euyl & do good · seek he pees & parfitely sue it/ for þe yzen of  
þe lorde on iuste men: & þe eris of hym into þe preyers of hem/  
forsoþe þe chere of þe lorde on men doinge euyl þingis/ and  
who is it þat schal noye to zou: zif zee schulen be good suers:/  
but zif zee suffren any þing for ríztwefnesse: zee (ben) blessinge/  
soþely drede zee not þe drede of hem: þat zee be not distour-  
blide/ forsoþe halowe zee þe lorde crist in zoure hertis · euer-  
more reedy to do satisfaccoñ to eche man aringe zou (resoune)  
of þat feiþ/ and hope þat is in zou: but wiþ mylidenesse & drede  
haupnge gode conscience/ þat in þat þing þat þei bacbiten of  
zou: þei ben confoundide · þe whiche chalengen falsely zoure  
gode conuersacioñ in cō/ soþely it is better zif þe wille of god  
wole · zee wel doinge for to suffre: þan euyl doinge/ for & crist  
ones diede for oure synnes · he iuste · for vniust: þat he schulde  
offre vs to god made deade soþely in fleysche: forsoþe made  
quycke in spirit/ þe whiche þing & to hem þat weren closide to  
gedir in prisoune: he comynge in spirit prechide/ In whiche  
weren sumtyme vnbileueful whanne þei abiden þe pacience  
of god in þe dayes of noe · whanne þe arke (or schippe) was  
made in whiche a fewe þat is to seye eyzte soulis · ben made  
saaf by water/ þe whiche þing & baptysm of lijk fourme: ma-  
kiþ vs saaf/ not þe puttyng away of fleysche of filþes · but  
þe aringe of good conscience into god/ by þe azenryfynge of  
oure lorde Ihū cō þat is in þe ríztþalfe of god · he swolowynge  
deþ (or distrupinge): þat we schulen be made eyres of euer  
lastynge

## petre .i.

lastynge lijf he gon into heuene: aungels & powers & vertues  
made sugettis to hym//



Therefore cōst suffrynge in fleysche: & be zee armyde by  
þe same þenkyngē/ for he þat suffride in fleysche  
ceesih fro synnes: þat he lyue not nowē to þe de-  
sires of men: but to þe wille of god · þat is more  
of tyme in fleysche/ soþely þe tyme passide is ynowē to þe wille  
of heþen men to ben endide: þe whiche walkiden in lecche-  
ries · in desires · in myche drynkyng of wyn · ofte etynges ·  
& unleueful worschippyngis of ydolis · in whiche now þei ben  
aferde (on eche side) in which þing þei wondren · zou togedir  
not rennyngē into þe same confusioñ of leccherie blasfe-  
myngē · þe whiche schulen not ȝyue resoune to hym þat is  
reedy to deme þe quycke & deade/ soþely for þis þing & to deade  
men it is euangelizide: þat þei be demyde/ soþely vp men in  
fleysche: soþely þat þei lyue vp god in spirit/ forsoþe þe ende  
of alle þingis schal neyze/ and so be zee prudent · & walke zee  
in preyers/ bifore alle þingis forsoþe haupng charite eche to  
oþer in zou self algatis lastynge: for charite couerih þe mul-  
titude of synnes: holdynge hospitalite to gedir wiþ outen  
grucchyngē/ eche man as he receyuyde grace · mynystryngē it  
into eche oþer: as good dispenders of þe manyfolde grace of  
god/ ȝif any man spekih: speke he as þe wordis of god/ ȝif  
any man mynystrih: as of þe vertue whiche god mynystrih ·  
þat god be honouride in alle þingis: by Ihu crist oure lorde/  
to whom is glorie & lordeschip: into worldis of worldis  
amen// ¶ Hoſte dere nyl zee go in pilgrymage in feruour þat  
is made to zou in temptacoñ: as any of newe bifalle to zou/  
but zee comunyngē to þe passiouns of cōst haue ioie · þat & zee  
gladyngē wiþ oute forþ: haue ioie in þe reuelacoñ of his glo-  
rie/ ȝif zee ben dispiside in þe name of crist: zee schulen be bles-  
side/ for þat þat is of þe glorie & vertue of god: & þe spirit þat is  
his · restih on zou/ forsoþe no man of zou suffre as a mansleer

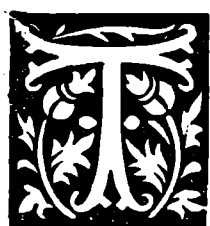
C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>

or

## petre .i.

or heef or curser; or desirer of oþer mennes þingis/ forsoþe zif  
as a c̃sten man; schame he not/ soþely glorifie he god in his  
name/ for tyme is þat doom byggyne of goddis hous/ soþely  
zif firste of vs; what ende of hem þat bileuen not to þe gospel/  
and soþely zif a iuste man vnnephe schal be sauede; where schal  
þe vnþitous man & synner appeer; & so & þei þat suffren vp þe  
wille of god · bitaken here soulis in good dedis; to þe feiþful  
maker of nouzt//

C<sup>m</sup> 5<sup>m</sup>



þerfore I euen elder biseche þe elder men þat ben  
in zou · & I witnesse of cristis passioun · whiche &  
compyner of þat glorie þat is to be schewide in tyme  
to compnge; feede zee þe floc of god þat is in zou/  
purueyinge not constreynnyngly; but wilfully vp god/ not for  
grace (or loue) of foul wyynyng; but wilfully/ neþer as hau-  
yng lordeschip in þe clergie; but made fourme (or ensaum-  
ple) of þe floc · & of intwite/ & whanne þe pryncce of scheperdes  
schal appere; zee schulen receyue þe vnwelowable crowne of  
glorie/ (or þat schal neuer fade)/ also zee zonge men; be zee  
suget to eldre men/ forsoþe schewe zee al to gedir mekenesse/  
for þe lorde wiþstondeþ proude men; forsoþe he ȝyueþ grace  
to meke men/ þerfore be zee mekide vnder þe myȝty honde of  
god; þat he reyse zou in þe day of visitacōn/ zee castyng into  
hym al zoure bisynesse; for to hym is cure of zou/ be zee sobre  
& wake zee · for zoure aduersarie þe deuyl · as a rorynge li-  
oune goiþ aboute; sekynge whom he schal deuoure/ to whom  
azenstonde zee strongely in feiþ; wytyng þe same passoun for  
to be to þe ilke zoure breþerhede · þat is in þe worlde/ forsoþe  
god of al glorie þat clepide into his euerlastyng glorie zou suf-  
fryng a litil; he schal no more parfourme · conferme & make  
sadde/ to hym glorie & lordeschip into worldis of worldis  
amen/ by siluan a feiþful broþer to zou as I deme · I wrote  
schortely; bisechyng & witnessyng þis for to be verrey grace of  
god · in whiche zee stonden/ þe chirche þat is gederide in ba-  
biloynne

## petre .2.

bilopne gretih zou wel: and markus my sone/ grete zee wel in  
holy cosse/ grace to zou alle þat ben in crist amen//

## ye secounde pistel of petre



**S**mount petre seruaunt & apostle of Ihu crist: to hem þat haue taken wiþ vs euen myche feiþ in riztwelnesse of oure god & saueour Ihu crist grace to zou & pees be fulfild in þe knowynge of oure lorde Ihu crist/ howe alle þingis of his godeliche vertue þat ben to lijf & pitee: ben zouen to vs by þe knowynge of hym þat clepide vs for his owne glorie & vertu • by whom he zaue to vs moste & precious bihestis • þat by þes þingis zee schulen be made felowis of goddis kynde: fleinge þe corrupcion of þat coueytise þat is in þe worlde/ forsoþe zee vndirberynge (or zyuyng) al cure • mynysterie in zoure feiþ • vertue soþely in vertue: science (or kunnyng) in science • soþely abstinence in abstinence/ forsoþe pacience in pacience soþely • pitee in pitee soþely: loue of broþerhede • forsoþe in loue of broþerhede: charite/ forsoþe zif þes ben wiþ zou & ouercomen (or ben plenteuouse): þei schulen not ordeyne zee voyde • ne wiþ ouden fruyte in þe knowyng of oure lorde Ihu crist/ forsoþe to whom þes ben not reedy: he is blynde • & by honde temptynge (or assaying) recepyng forzetynnesse • of þe purgynge of his olde trespassis/ wherfore breþeren more bisie zee • þat by good werkis zee make zoure clepyng & chesynge certayne/ soþely zee doinge þes þingis: schulen not synne any tyme • forsoþe þus þe entrynge into euerlastynge kyngdome of oure lorde crist Ihu & saueour: schal be mynystride to zou plenteuouly for whiche þing I schal bigynne for to moneste

## petre . 2 .

neste zou euermore of þes þingis · & soþely I wole zou wy-  
 tynge & confermyde in presente trueþe/ forsoþe I deme iust how  
 longe I am in þis tabernacle for to reyle zou in monestynge I  
 certeyn for þe puttynge of · of my tabernacle is swyfte: vp þat  
 oure lorde Ihu crist haþ signyfiede to me/ forsoþe I schal ȝyue  
 werke (or bisynesse) & ofte for to haue zou aftir my deþ: þat  
 zee do þe mynde of hem/ soþely we not suyng vnwise talis  
 haue made knowen to zou þe vertue & prescience (or bifore  
 knowynge) of oure lorde Ihu crist: but made biholders of his  
 greteneſſe/ soþely he takynge of god þe fadir honoure & glorie  
 suche maner voyce fliden doune to hym fro þe greet glorie ·  
 þis is my louede sone in whom I haue pleside to me: here zee  
 hym/ and we herden þis voyce brouzte to fro heuene: whanne  
 we weren wiþ hym in þe holy hil/ and we haue a sadder worde  
 of þe prophete to whiche zee ȝyuyng tente done wel · as to a  
 lanterne ȝyuyng lizte in a dirke (or myſty) place til þe day  
 bygynne for to ȝyue lizt: & þe day sterre sprynge in zoure her-  
 tis/ firſte vnderſtondynge þis þing · þat eche prophecie of scrip-  
 ture is not made by propre (or owne) interpretacon/ forsoþe  
 prophecie is not brouzte to by mannes wille: but þe holy men  
 of god in spirit wiþ þe holy goſt ſpaken//

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>



Drsoþe þer weren & false prophetis of þe puple · as  
 & in zou schulen be mayſtris liers · þat schulen  
 bryng in sectis of perdicon · & þei denyen þe ilke  
 lorde þat bouzt hem: aboue ledynge to hem self  
 haſty perdicon (or dampnacōn) · & mange schulen sue here lec-  
 cheries · by whiche þe wey of treuþe schal be blaſfemyde/ and  
 þei schulen marchaundise of zou in coueptiſe by feynede wor-  
 dis/ to whom doom nowe sumtyme ceſſiþ not: & þe perdicon  
 of hem nappiþ not/ forsoþe ȝif god ſparide not to aungels ·  
 but bitoke hem to be turmentide · drawen wiþ hondis of helle  
 into helle: for to be kepte into doom/ and ſparide not to þe  
 firſte worlde · but kepte noe þe eyȝthe · bifore goer of riȝtwel-  
 neſſe ·

## petre . 2 .

nesse · bryngynge in þe delyue · (or greet flood) · to þe worlde  
of vnpitous men/ and he dryuynge into poudre þe cytees of  
men of sodom & of men of gomor dampnyde by turnynge vp=  
sodoune · puttynge ensauple of hem þat weren to doinge euyl  
(or vnpitously)/ and delyueride iuste loth oppreside: fro þe  
wronge of curside men & leccherouse conuersacōn/ soþely in  
syt & herynge he was iuste: dwellyng anentis hem/ þat fro  
day into day turmentiden wiþ wickide werkis · a iuste soule/  
þe lorde knewe for to delyuer pitouse men of temptacōn: so=  
þely for to kepe wickide men into þe day of doom · for to be  
turmentide/ forsoþe more hem þat walken astir fleysche in  
coueytynge of vnclenesse · & dispisen lordeschippynge bolde ·  
dreden not to brynge in festis plesynge to hem · blasfemyng/  
wher aungels whanne þei ben more in strengþe & vertue: be=  
ren not azenes hem þe execrable (or curside) doom: þes soþely  
as vnresonable beestis kyndely into capcōn (or takynge) · &  
into deþ blasfemyng in þes þingis þat þei knowen not: schu=  
len perishe in here corrupcōn receyuyng þe hire of vnryt=  
wesnesse/ gessynge þe voluptees of þe day: delices of defou=  
lynge & of wemme/ wiþ delices flowynge in here feestis do=  
inge lecherie wiþ zou: haupnge eyzen ful of auoutrie & vncees=  
ynge trespas deceyuyng vnstidfast soulis · haupnge þe herte  
exercyside in coueytise · þe sones of cursynge · forsakynge þe  
ryt weye erreden synge þe weye of baalam of bosor · þe  
whiche louede hire of wickidnesse/ soþely he had correccōn (or  
reproynge) of his wodenesse a dourbe beest vnder ȝok spek=  
ynge wiþ voyce of man: forþed þe vnwisdom of þe prophete/  
þes ben wellis wiþ outen water · & cloudis (or mystis) dryuen  
wiþ whirlynge wyndis · to whom þe picke myste of dirkenessis  
is reserupde/ soþely þei spekyng in pryde of vanyte: deceyuen  
in desiris of fleysche of lecherie: hem þat a litil scapen/ þe  
whiche luyng in errour · byhotynge liberte (or fredom) to  
hem · whanne þei ben seruauntis of corrupcōn soþely of whom  
any man is ouercomen: of hym & he is seruaunt/ forsoþe ȝif  
men

## petre . 2.

men forsakynghe þe defoulyngis (or vncleanness) of þe worlde in þe knowynge of oure lorde & saueour Ihu crist · estesone in-  
 wlappide in þes ben ouercomen: þe later þingis ben made to  
 hem worse þan þe former/ soþely it was better to hem for to  
 not knowe þe wey of ríztwessnesse: þan for to turne azen aftir  
 þe knowynge · fro þat holy maundement þat was bitaken to  
 hem/ soþely þe ilke þing of verrey prouerbe bifel to hem · an  
 hounde turnyde azen to his doom (or castyng vp) · & a sowe  
 waschen in þe walowynge or stowe of cleye (or fen)//

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



**D** I write to zou þis secounde pistle · in whiche I  
 stíre zoure cleer soul in monestynge to gedir · þat  
 zee be myndeful of þe wordis þat I bifore seyde of  
 holy prophetis · & of þe maundementis of holy apos-  
 tles of þe lorde saueour/ fírst witynghe þis þing · þat in þe laste  
 dayes illusours (or scorners or deceyuours) · schulen come in  
 decept · goinge aftir here owne coueyntyngis seyinge: where  
 is bihest: or þe comynge of hym: forsoþe siþ þe faderis slep-  
 ten · so alle þingis lasten fro þe bygynnyng of creature/  
 soþely it dareþ hem willynge þis þing · þat heuenes weren bi-  
 fore · & þe erþe of water · & by water beinge (or stondynge to  
 geder) by goddis worde: by whiche þingis þat ilke worlde  
 clenstide · þanne perischide/ forsoþe þe heuenes þat nowe ben ·  
 & þe erþe · by þe same worde putte azen · ben kepte to sijn ·  
 into þe day of doom & perdicoñ of vnpytous men/ forsoþe zee  
 mošte dere · one þing dare zou nouzt (or be not vnknewen) ·  
 for one day anentis god · as a þousande zeeris: & a þousande  
 zeer as one day/ þe lorde tarieþ not his bihest as summen ges-  
 sen: but he doih paciently for zou · not willynge any for to  
 perische: but alle for to turne azen to penaunce/ forsoþe þe  
 day of oure lorde schal come as a þeef: in whiche heuenes wih  
 greet birre (or feersnes) schulen passe/ soþely elementis schu-  
 len be dissoluyde by heete/ forsoþe þe erþe & alle werkis þat ben  
 in it · schulen be brente/ þerfore whanne alle þingis schulen  
 be

## petre .2.

be to ben dissoluyde: what maner men bihouep it zou for to  
ben in holy luynges pytees: abidyng & hizzynge into þe com-  
yng of þe day of oure lorde Jhū c̄st: by whom heuenes bren-  
nyng schulen be dissoluyde: & elementis by brennyng (or  
heet of fyre) schulen fayle/ soþely we abiden vp his bihestis  
newe heuenes & newe erþe: in whiche ryztwesnesse dwelliþ/ for  
whiche þing zee moſte dere abidyng þes þingis: biſie for to  
be founden to hym in pees: vnſpottide & vndefoulide/ and  
deme zee þe longe abidyng of oure lorde: zoure helpe: as &  
oure moſte dere broþer poul wroot to zou: vp wiſdom zouen  
to hym/ as & in alle epiſtels ſpekynge in hem of þes þingis:  
in whiche ben ſumme harde þingis in vnderſtondyng: þe  
whiche vnwiſe (or vntauzte) & vnſtable men: deprauen: as  
& oþer ſcriptures to here owne perdicōn/ þerfore zee breþeren  
bifore wityng: kepe zou ſelf: leſte zee ouerled (or deceyuede)  
by errour of vnwiſe men: falle away fro zoure owne ſadneſſe/  
forſoþe ware zee in þe grace & knowyng of oure lorde Jhū  
c̄st: & oure ſaueour/ to hym glorie & nowe & into þe day of  
euerlaſtyngneſſe// Amen

## þe firſte piſtel of Ioon



Whiche þing was fro þe bigynnyng: C<sup>m</sup> I<sup>m</sup>  
whiche we herden: whiche we ſizen  
wiþ oure yzen: whiche we bihilden: &  
oure handiſtretiden to gedir (or touch-  
iden) of þe worde of liſt: & þe liſt is  
ſchewide/ and we ſizen & we witneſſen:  
& tellen to zou euerlaſtyng liſt þat was  
anentis þe fadir: and apperide to vs/

þerfore þat þing þat we ſizen & herden we tellen to zou: þat  
& zee haue felowſchip wiþ vs: & oure felowſchip be wiþ þe  
fadir



## Boon .i.

fadir & his sone Ihu crist/ and his þing we writen to zou:  
 þat zee haue ioie · & zoure ioie be ful/ and his is þe tellynge  
 þat we herden of hym & tellen to zou/ for god is lizt: & any  
 dirkenessis ben not in hym/ zif we schulen seye · for we haue  
 feloweschip wiþ hym · & we wanderen in dirkenessis · we lizen  
 & we done not treuþe/ soþely zif we walken in lizt · as & he is  
 in lizte: we haue feloweschip to gedir/ and þe blood of Ihu his  
 sone: clenþ vs fro al synne/ zif we schulen seye for we hane  
 not synne: we oure self deceyuen vs · & treuþe is not in vs/ zif  
 we knowelechen oure synnes: he is feiþful & iust · þat he for-  
 zyeue to vs oure synnes · & clense vs fro al wickidnesse/ zif we  
 schulen seye for we haue not synnede: we maken hym a lier:  
 & his worde is not in vs//

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>



**M** litil sones I write to zou þes þingis þat zee synne  
 not/ but & zif any man schal synne: we haue abo-  
 ket anentis þe fadir Ihu crist iust · & he is helpynge  
 for oure synnes/soþely not onely: but also for of al  
 þe worlde/ and his þing we witen for we haue knownen hym:  
 zif we kepen his comaundementis/ he þat seiþ hym for to haue  
 knownen god · & kepiþ not his comaundementis: is a lier &  
 treuþe is not in hym/ forsoþe who kepiþ his worde: verreyly  
 in hym is parfite charite/ in his þing we witen for we ben in  
 hym: zif we schulen be parfite in hym/ he þat seiþ hym for to  
 dwelle in hym: & he owiþ for to walke as he walkide/ moſte  
 dere I write to zou not a newe maundement · but þe olde  
 maundement · þat zee hadden fro þe bygyngynge/ þe olde  
 maundement is þe worde þat zee herden/ eftesone I write to  
 zou a newe maundement þat is trewe · & in hym & in zou:  
 for dirkenessis passen · & verrey lizt nowe schineþ/ he þat seiþ  
 hym · for to ben in lizt & hatip his broþer: is in dirkenessis til  
 to zit/ he þat loueþ his broþer dwellip in lizt: & sclaundre is  
 not in hym/ soþely he þat hatip his broþer: is in dirkenessis ·  
 & in dirkenessis wandriþ: & woot not whidir he goiþ · for  
 dirkenessis

## Boon .i .

dirkenessis hane blyndide his yzen/ litil sones I write to zou .  
for youre synnes ben forzouen to zou . for his name/ faderis  
I write to zou . for zee haue knowen hym þat is fro þe bigyn-  
nyng/ zonge men I write to zou . for zee hane ouercomen þe  
wickide/ I write to zou infauntis (or zonge children): for zee  
hane knowen þe fadir/ I write to zou zonge men (or of mydil  
age): for zee ben stronge . & þe worde of god dwellih in zou .  
& ouercamen þe wickide/ ¶ Myl zee loue þe worlde: neþer þo  
þingis þat ben in þe worlde/ zif any man loueþ þe worlde:  
þe charite of þe fadir is not in hym/ for whi alle þing þat is  
in þe worlde is coueytise of fleysche & coueytise of yzen . &  
pride of lijf: whiche is not of þe fadir . but it is of þe worlde/  
and þe worlde schal passe: & þe coueytise of it/ soþely he þat  
doih þe wille of god: dwellih into wiþ ouden ende/ my litil  
sones þe laste is/ and as zee haue herde for antecrist comeþ:  
now many antecristis ben made/ wher of we witen: for it is  
þe laste houre/ þei wenten forþ fro vs: but þei weren not of  
vs/ for whi zif þei hadden ben of vs: soþely þei hadden dwelte  
wiþ vs/ but þei þat ben knowen for þei ben not of vs/ but zee  
haue unccioñ of þe holy (gosse): & haue knowen alle þingis/  
I wrote not to zou . as to men unknowynge treuþe: but as  
to knowynge it . & for eche leesynge is of treuþe/ who is a lier:  
no but þis þat dengeþ for Jh̄c is not crist . þis is antecrist: þat  
dengeþ þe fadir & þe sone/ soþely eche þat dengeþ þe sone ne-  
þer haþ þe fadir/ forsoþe he þat knowelechiþ þe sone haþ & þe  
fadir/ þat þing þat zee herden fro þe bygynnyng: dwelle in  
zou/ for zif it schal dwelle in zou þe whiche zee herden at þe bi-  
gynnyng: & ze schulen dwelle in þe sone & þe fadir/ and þis  
is þe azenbihest þat he bihihte to vs euerlastyng lijf/ I wrote  
þes þingis to zou: of hem þat deceyuen zou/ and þe anoynt-  
ynge þe whiche zee receyueden of hym: dwelle in zou/ and  
zee hane not nede þat any man teche zou: but as his anoynt-  
ynge techiþ zou alle þingis/ and it is trewe: & it is not les-  
ynge/ and as he tauzhte zou: dwelle zee in hym/ and now zee  
litil

## Boon .i.

litil sones dwelle zee in hym; þat whan he schal appeer · we haue triste · & be not confoundide of hym in his compnge/ zif zee witen for he is iuste · wite zee for & eche þat doih ríztwefnes · is borne of hym//

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



**S**e zee what maner charite þe fadir zawe to us þat we be nampde þe sones of god · & be/ for þis þing þe worlde knewe not us; for it knewe not hym/ moſte dere nowe we ben þe sones of god; & zit it apperide not what we schulen be/ we witen for whanne he schal appere; we schulen be liche to hym · for we schulen ſe hym as he is/ and eche man þat haþ þis hope in hym; makih hym ſelf holy · as & he is holy/ eche man þat doih ſynne; doþ & wickidneſſe · & ſynne is wickidneſſe/ and zee witen/ for he apperide þat he ſchulde do awey ſynnes; & ſynne is not in hym/ eche man þat dwellih in hym; ſynneþ not/ and eche þat ſynneþ ſeeþ not hym; ne knewe hym/ litil sones no man deceyue zou/ he þat doih ríztwefneſſe; is iuſte · as & he is iuſte/ he þat doih ſynne; is of þe deuyl · for þe deuyl ſynneþ at þe bigynnyngē/ in þis þing þe ſone of god apperide þat he vndo þe werkis of þe deuyl/ eche man þat is borne of god; doih not ſynne · for þe ſeed of god dwellih in hym · & he may not ſynne for he is borne of god/ in þis þing þe sones of god ben knownen/ and þe sones of þe fende/ eche man þat is not iuſte; is not of god · & he þat loueþ not his brother/ for þis is þe tellynge þat zee herden at þe bygynnyngē; þat zee loue eche oþer/ not as caym þat was of euyl; & ſlowz his brother/ and for what þing ſlowe he hym/ for his werkis weren euyl/ ſoþely his brotheris iuſte/ ¶ Breþeren nyl zee wondren; zif þe worlde hatih zou/ we witen for we ben tranſlatide fro deþ to liſ; for we louen breþeren/ he þat loueþ not dwellih in deþ/ eche man þat hatih his brother; is a manqueller & zee witen for eche manqueller haþ not euerlaſtyngē liſ dwelliſg in hym/ in þis þing we haue knownen þe charite of god; for he puttide his ſoule (or liſ) for us;

## Joon .i.

vs: & we owen for to putte (our) soulis for bretheren/ he þat schal haue þe substaunce of þis worlde · & schal se his broþer for to haue nede · & schal close his entraylis fro hym: how dwelliþ þe charite of god in hym: my litil sones loue we not in worde neþer in tunge: but in treuþe & werke/ in þis þing we knowen for we ben of treuþe: & in his sizte we monestten oure hertis/ for zif oure hertis schal reprove vs (or vnder- nymme: god is more þan oure herte · & knewe alle þingis/ moſte dere zif oure herte schal not reprove vs: we haue triſte in god/ and what euer we schulen are · we schulen receyue of hym: for we kepen his comaundementis · & we done þo þin- gis þat ben plesaunt bifore hym/ and þis is þe comaunde- ment of hym: þat we bileue in þe name of his sone Jhū c̄st · & loue eche oþer · as he zawe heste to vs/ and he þat kepith his maundementis: dwelliþ in hym & he in hym/ and in þis þing we witen for he dwelliþ in vs of þe spirit of whom he zawe to vs//



**M**oste dere nyl zee bileue to eche spirit: but proue zee spiritis zif þei ben of god/ for many false prophetis wenten oute into þe worlde/ in þis þing þe spirit of god is knowen/ eche spirit þat knowelechiþ crist for to haue comen in fleysche: is of god/ & eche spirit þat dis- soluyþ (or fordoith) Jhū: is not of god/ and þis antecrist of whom zee herden: for he cometh/ and rīzt now he is in þe worlde/ zee litil sones ben of god/ and zee haue ouercomen hym · for he þat is in zou is more: þan he þat in þe worlde/ þei ben of þe worlde: þerfore þei speken of þe worlde · & worlde heriþ hem/ we ben of god/ he þat knewe god heriþ vs/ he þat is not of god: heriþ not vs/ in þis þing we knowen þe spirit of treuþe: & þe spirit of erreure/ moſte dere loue we to- gedir: for charite is of god/ and eche man þat loueth his bro- þer is borne of god & knowiþ god/ he þat loueth not hath not charite · neþer knewe god · for god is charite/ In þis þing þe  
charite

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>

## Joon .i.

charite of god apperide in vs · for god sente his one bigoten sone into þe worlde: þat we lye by hym/ in þis þing is charite · not as we hadden louede god: but for he firste louyde us · & sente his sone helpynge for oure synnes/ ¶ See moſte dere zif god louede vs: & we owen for to loue eche oþer/ no man ſize euer god/ zif we louen to gedir: god dwelliþ in us · & þe charite of hym is parfite in vs/ in þis þing we knowen for we dwellen in hym & he in vs: for of his ſpirit he ſaue to vs · & we ſizen & witneſſen: for þe fadir sente his sone ſaueour of þe worlde/ who euer ſchal knoweleche for ih̄c is þe sone of god · & we hane knowen & bileuen to þe charite þat god haþ in vs/ god is charite/ & he þat dwelliþ in charite: dwelliþ in god · & god in hym/ in þis þing is þe parfite charite of god wiþ vs · þat we haue triſte in þe day of doom/ for as he is: & we ben in þis worlde/ drede is not in charite · but parfite charite · ſendiþ oute drede · for drede haþ peyne/ forſoþe he þat drediþ: is not parfite in charite/ þerfore loue we god: for he former louede vs/ zif any man ſchal ſeye for I loue god · & ſchal hate his broþer: he is a lier/ ſoþely he þat loueþ not his broþer whiche he ſeeþ: howe may he loue god whom he ſeeþ not? & we haue þis precepte of god · þat he þat loueþ god: loue & his broþer//

C<sup>m</sup> 5<sup>m</sup>



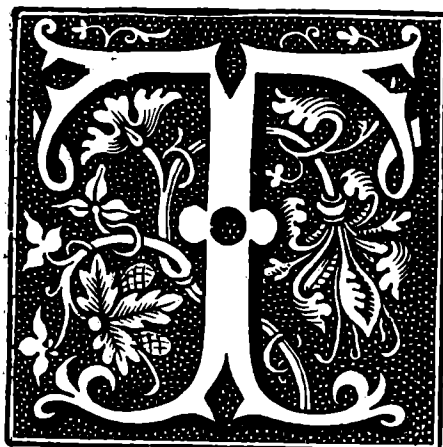
The man þat bileueþ for Ih̄c is c̄st: is borne of god/ and eche man þat loueþ hym þat gendriþ: loueþ hym þat is borne of hym/ in þis þing we knowen for we louen þe children of god: whanne we louen god & done his maundementis/ ſoþely þis is charite of god: þat we kepe þe maundementis · & his maundementis ben not greuous/ for alle þing þat is borne of god: ouercomeþ þe worlde/ and þis is þe victorie þat ouercomeþ þe worlde: oure ſeiþ/ forſoþe who is it þat ouercomeþ þe worlde · no but he þat bileueþ for Ih̄c is þe sone of god/ þis is Ih̄c criſt þat came by water & bloode/ not in water onely: but in water & blood/ and þe ſpirit is he þat witneſſeþ/ for criſt is treuþe/ for

## Boon .i.

for þre ben þat ȝyuen witnesſynge in heuene · þe fadir þe worde (or ſone) & þe holy goſte: & þes þre ben one/ and þre ben þat ȝyuen witnesſynge in erþe: þe ſpirit water & blood · & þes þre ben one/ ȝif we receyuen witnesſynge of men: þe witnesſynge of god is more/ for þis is þe witnesſynge of god þat is more: for he witneſſide of his ſone/ he þat bileueþ into þe ſone of god: haþ witnesſynge of god in hym/ he þat bileueþ not to þe ſone · makith hym a lier · for he bileueþ not in þe witnesſynge þat god witneſſide of his ſone · þis is þe witnesſyng · for god ȝaue to vs euerlaſtyng liſt: & þis liſt is in his ſone/ he þat haþ þe ſone: haþ & liſt/ he þat haþ not þe ſone of god: haþ not liſt// ¶ I write to ȝou þes þingis: þat ȝee wite for ȝee haue euerlaſtyng liſt: þe whiche bileuen in þe name of god: diſ ſone/ and þis is þe triſte þat we haue to god · for what euer þing we ſchulen are vp his wille: he ſchal here vs/ and we witen for he herith vs: what euer þing we ſchulen are/ we witen for we haue þe achingis: whiche we aren of hym/ he þat woot his broþer for to ſynne a ſynne not to þe deþ: are he · & liſt ſchal be ȝouen to hym · ſynnyng not to þe deþ/ þer is a ſynne to deþ/ not for it I ſeye þat any preye/ eche wickidneſſe is ſynne: & þer is ſynne to deþ/ we witen for eche man þat is borne of god: ſynneþ not/ but þe generacoñ of god kepith hym: & þe wickide touchith hym not/ we witen for we ben of god: & al þe worlde is putte in wickide/ and we witen for þe ſone of god came & cloþide fleſche for cauſe of vs · & ſuffride & roos azen fro deade men · & took vs to: & ȝaue to vs witte þat we knowe verrey god · & be in þe verrey ſone of hym · þis is verrey god: & euerlaſtyng liſt/ litil ſones kepe ȝou fro ſimulacris (or co-ueptiſe)//

## ye secounde pistel of Ioon

C<sup>m</sup> I<sup>m</sup>



The eldre (man) to þe chosen lady & to hire children: þe whiche I loue in treuþe/ and not I al one: but & alle men þat knewen treuþe/ for þe treuþe þat dwelliþ in zou: & wiþ zou schal be into wiþ outen ende/ grace be wiþ zou: mercy & pees of god þe fadir: & of Ihu crist þe sone of þe fadir: in treuþe & charite/ I ioyzede ful myche: for I sonde of þi sones goinge in treuþe: as we receyueden maundement of þe fadir/ and nowe I preye þee lady: not as wrytynge a newe maundement to þee: but þat þat we hadden at þe bygynnyng: þat we loue eche oþer/ and þis is charite: þat we walke vp his maundementis/ soþely þis is þe comaundement þat as zee herden at þe bygynnyng: in hym walke zee/ for many deceyuours wenten oute into þe worlde: whiche knowelechen not Ihu crist for to haue come in fleysche/ þis is deceyuour & antecrist/ se zee zoure self: lest zee leesen þe þingis þat zee haue wrouzte: but þat zee receyue ful mede/ witynge þat eche man þat goiþ aweye & dwelliþ not in þe techynge of cñ: haþ not god/ he þat dwelliþ in þe techynge: haþ & þe sone & þe fadir/ zif any man cometh to zou: & bryngiþ not þis techynge: nyl zee receyue hym into hous: neþer zee schulen seye to hym heyl/ soþely he þat seiþ to hym haile: comuneþ wiþ his euyl werkis/ lo I bi-fore seyde to zou: þat zee be not confoundide in þe day of oure lorde Ihu crist/ I haupng mo þingis for to write to zou: wolde not by parchemyn & yncke/ soþely I hope me to comynge to zou: & speke mouþe to mouþe: þat zoure ioye be ful/ þe sones (or douztris) of þi sister chosen greten þee wel/ þe grace of god wiþ þee amen//

þe

## ye priddy pistel of Ioon



He eldre man to gayus moste dere: whom  
I loue in treuþe/ moste dere of alle þin-  
gis I make preyer · þee for to entre &  
fare welsumly: as þi soule doih wel-  
sumly/ I ioyzede ful gretely · breþeren  
comynge & witnesþynge berynge to þi  
treuþe: as þou walkist in treuþe/ I  
haue not more grace of þes þingis:

C<sup>m</sup> I<sup>m</sup>

þan þat I here my sones for to walke in treuþe/ moste dere  
þou doist feiþfully: what euer þou wirchist into breþeren/ &  
þis þing into pilgrymes: whiche zilden witnesþynge to þi  
charite in sizte of þe chirche: whom þou wel doinge ledist forþ  
worþily to god/ soþely for his name þei wenten forþ: no þing  
takynge of heþen men/ þerfore we owen for to receyue suche  
maner (men): þat we be euen wirchers of treuþe/ I schulde  
haue write parauenture to þe chirche: but þis diotrepes þat  
loueþ for to bere primacie in hem · receyueþ not vs/ for þis  
þing zif I schal come: I schal monest his werkis whiche he  
doih garrynge (or chydyng) into vs/ wiþ euyl wordis/ and  
as þes þingis sufficien not to hym · neþer he receyueþ bre-  
þeren · & forbediþ hem þat receyuen: & castiþ oute of þe  
chirche/ moste dere nyl þou sue euyl þing: but þat þat is gode  
þing/ he þat doih wel · is of god/ he þat doih euyl seþ hym  
not/ witnesþynge is zolden to demetrie of alle men: & of treuþe  
it self/ but & we beren witnesþynge/ and þou hast knowen: for  
our witnesþyng is trewe/ I had many þingis for to write to  
þee: but I wolde not write to þee by incke & penne/ forsoþe I  
hope anone for to se þee: & we schulen speke mouþe to mouþe/  
pees to þee/ frendes greten þee wel/ grete þou frendis by  
name//

RR

þe



## ye piſtīl of Jude.

C<sup>m</sup> I<sup>m</sup>



Udas þe ſeruaunt of Jhū cā broþer  
forſoþe of James · to þes louede þat  
ben in god þe fadir & of Jhū criſt kepte  
& clepide: mercy to zou & pees & charite  
be fulfīlde/ moſte dere J makynge al  
byſynes of writynge to zou of zoure  
comoun helpe · had nede for to write  
to zou · preyinge for to ſtriue vpon þe  
ſeiþ ones bitaken of ſeyntis/ ſoþely ſummen pryueli entre-  
den · þat ſum tyme weren biſore writen into þis doom/ vn-  
pitous men ouerturnynge þe grace of oure god into lecche-  
rie · & denynginge þe al one lordſchip: & oure lorde Jhū criſt/  
ſoþely J wole to gedir monette zou: witynge ones alle þingis/  
for ihc ſauynge his puple of þe lande of egipte: þe ſecounde  
tyme loſte hem þat bileueden not/ ſoþely aungels þat kepten  
not his pryncchode · but forſoken his hous: he reſeruyde into  
doom of greet god · in euerlaſtyng bondis vnder dirkenefſe/  
as ſodom & gomor · & nyȝ cooſtide cytees on liche maner  
doinge fornycacon · & goinge aweye aftir oþer fleſche: ben  
made enſauple · ſuſteynynge peyne of euerlaſtyng ſir/ alſo  
& þes þat defoulen ſoþely þe fleſche · forſoþe diſpiſen lorde-  
ſchypynge: forſoþe blaſfemen mageſte/ whanne mychael þe  
archaungel diſputynge wiþ þe deuyll · ſtrofe of moyſes body:  
he was not hardy for to ȝyue doom of blaſfemye: but ſeyde ·  
þe lorde comaundide to þee/ forſoþe þes blaſfemen what euer  
þingis þei ſoþely vnknoſen/ ſoþely what euer þingis þei hane  
knowen · kyndely as dumble beaſtis: in þes þei ben corrupte//

## Jude



**W** to þem þat wenten þe weye of cayme · & by er-  
rour of balaam for mede ben sched oute; & per-  
ischiden in þe azenseyinge of chore/ þes ben in here  
metis; filþes (or defoulynges) feestynge to gedir/  
wiþ ouden drede feedynge hem self/ cloudis wiþ ouden water  
borne aboute of wyndes · heruest trees wiþ ouden fruyte ·  
twyes deade drawen vp by þe roote · wawes of þe wilde (or  
wood) see · froþinge oute here confusiouns · errynge sterres (or  
fallynge doune) to whom þe tempest of dirkeness is kepte  
into wiþ ouden ende/ forsoþe enos þe seueneþ fro adam pro-  
peciede of þes; seyinge/ lo þe lorde comeþ in his holy þou-  
sande · for to deme azenes alle men · & for to reproue alle vn-  
pitouse men · & alle þe werkis of þe unpitoe of hem · by whiche  
þei diden unpitously; & of alle harde þingis þat unpitous syn-  
ners hane spoken azenes god/ þes ben grucchers pleyng (or  
ful of pleyntis) wandrynge vp here desires/ and þe mouþ of  
hem spekiþ pride; wondrynge (or worschippynge) persones by  
cause of wyngynge/ forsoþe zee moste dere · be zee myndeful  
of þe wordis · whiche ben bifore seyde of apostlis of oure lorde  
Jhū crist/ þe whiche seyde to zou · for in þe laste tymes þere  
schulen come scorers · wandrynge vp here desiris · not in  
pitoe/ þes ben þe whiche departen hem self beestly · not hau-  
ynge spirit/ forsoþe zee moste dere aboue bildynge zoure self  
to zoure moste holy feiþ · in þe holy gost preyng · kepe zoure  
self in þe loue of god · abidyng þe mercy of oure lorde Jhū  
crist · into lijf euerlastynge/ and soþely reproue zee þes men  
demyde · forsoþe saue zee hem; raupschynge of þe fīr/ soþely do  
zee mercy to oþer in drede of god; hatynge & þe ilke defoulde  
coot · þe whiche is fleyschely/ forsoþe to hym þat is myzty for  
to kepe to gedir zou wiþ ouden synne · & for to ordeyne bifore  
þe fīzt of his glorie zou untwemmyde · in gladynge (or ioying)  
wiþ ouden forþ · in þe comynge of oure lorde Jhū crist · to god  
al one oure saueour · by ihū oure lorde · glorie & magnify-  
inge

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>

## Jude

inge · empire (or grete lordeschip) · & power bifore alle worldis · & now into worldis of worldis amen

### ye pistil to romayns.

C<sup>m</sup> 1<sup>m</sup>



Dul seruaunt of Ihsū crist · clepide apostle · departide into þe euuangelie of god · þe whiche he bihizte bifore by his prophetis in þe holy scriptures of his sone · þe whiche is made to hym of þe seed of dauid aftir flesche · þe whiche is predestynate or before ordeynede by grace · þe sone of god in vertue · aftir þe spirit of halowynge of þe azen risynge of deade men · of Ihsū crist oure lorde · by whom we haue receyuyde grace & apostilhedde (or state of apostle) · to obesche to þe feiþ in alle folkis for his name · in whiche & zee ben clepide of Ihsū crist/ to alle þat ben at rome · þe louede of god clepide holy · grace to zou & pees of god oure fadir · & of þe lorde Ihsū crist// ¶ firste soþely I do þankyngis to my god by Ihsū crist for zou alle/ for oure feiþ is schewide in al þe worlde/ forsoþe god is a witnesse to me · to whom I serue in my spirit · in þe gospel of his sone · for wiþ outen ceefynge I make mynde of zou euermore in my preyers · zif by any maner aftirwarde · sumtyme I haue esy (or spedy) weye in þe wille of god · of comynge to zou/ forsoþe I desire for to se zou · þat I zyeue to zou sum þing of spiritual grace to zou to be confermyde · þat is to seye for to be confortide to gedir in zou · be þat feiþ þat is to gedir zoure & myn (or of eche to oþer)/ soþely breþeren I nyl zou for to vnknowe · þat ofte I purpose for to come to zow · & I am forbeden to zit þat I haue sum fruyte in zou · as & in oþer folkis/ to grekis & barbaryns (or heþen men) to wisemen & to vnwisemen I am dettour · so þat

## to romayns

þat is in me is reedy for to euangelize & to zou þat ben at rome/ forsoþe I schame not þe gospel/ for it is of þe vertue of god into helpe to eche man byleuynges to þe iewe firste & to þe greek/ soþely þe ryztwesnesse of God is schewide in it of feiþ into feiþ: as it is writen/ forsoþe a iuste man liueþ of feiþ/ forsoþe þe wrappe of god is schewide fro heuene vpon al vn- pitee & vnryztwesnesse of þo men þat wiþholden (or holden abak) þe treuþe of god in vnryztwesnesse/ for þat þat is known of god: is schewide (or made open) to hem/ forsoþe god schew- ide to hem · for þe vnuyfible þingis of hym · of þe creature of þe worlde · by þo þingis þat ben made · vnderstonen ben bi- holden · & þe euerlastyng vertue of hym & þe godhede: so þat þei ben vnercusable/ for whanne þei hadden god: þei glorifie- den not as god · or diden þankyngis/ but þei vanyschiden in here þouztis: & þe vnwise herte of hem is dirkide (or made dirke)/ soþely þei sepyng hem self for to be wisemen: ben made foolis/ and þei chaungiden þe glorie of god vncorruptible · (þat may not die ne be pepride): into þe lickenesse of an ymage or corruptible man · & of briddis & of foure footide beestis · & of serpentis/ for whiche þing god bitoke hem into þe desires of here herte into vncleennesse: þat þei punysche wiþ wrongis (or dispitis) · here bodies in hem self/ þe whiche men chaungi- den þe treuþe of god into leesyng · & herieden & serueden to a creature: raper þan to þe creatoure (þat is maker of nouzt) þat is bleffide into worldis (or wiþ outen ende) amen (or so be it)/ þerfore god bitoke hem into passiouns of euyl fame (or schen- schip)/ for whi þe wpmmen of hem chaungiden þe kyndely vse: into þat vse þat is azenes kynde/ also forsoþe & þe malis (or men) · þe kyndely vse of wpmmen forsaken: brenned in here desiris togedir · malis into malis wirchyng filþehede · & re- ceuyng in hem self þe mede (or hire) þat bihouede of here er- rour/ and as þei proueden not for to haue god in knowynges: god bitoke hem into areprouable wit · þat þei do þo þingis þat accorden not (or bisemen not) · hem fulfild wiþ al wickidnesse · malice ·

## to romayns

malice · fornycatōn · coueytise · waywarneſſe · ful of enuye ·  
man ſleingis · ſtryfe · gyle · euyl wille · pryuey bachiters (or  
ſowers of diſcorde) · detractours (or open bachiters) · hateful to  
god · wrongeful diſpiſers · proude hyze (ouermeſure) ſynders  
of euyl þingis · not obſchynge to ſadir & modir · vnwiſe · vn-  
couenable in berynge wiþ oute forþ · wiþ outen affeccion (or  
loue) · wiþ outen bonde of pees · wiþ outen mercy/ þe whiche  
whanne þei hadden knowe þe rihtweſneſſe of god vnderſtoden ·  
for þei þat done ſuche þingis · ben worþi of deþ/ not onely þei  
þat done þo þingis · but alſo þei þat consenten to men doinge//

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>



Or whiche þing þou art vnexcusable · þou eche man  
þat demest/ ſohely in what þing þou demest anoþer  
man · þou condempnest þi ſelf/ forſoþe þou doſt þe  
ſame þingis · whiche þou demest/ ſohely we witen  
for þe doom of god is vp treuþe into hem þat done ſuche þingis/  
geſſiſt þou man forſoþe þat demest hem þat done ſuche þingis ·  
& þou doſte hem · for þou ſchal aſcape þe doom of god/ wher  
þou diſpiſeſt þe richeſſis of his godeneſſe · & patience & longe  
abidyng · vnknoweſt þou for þe benygnyte (or good wille)  
of god leediþ þee to penaunce/ forſoþe aftir þin hardeneſſe &  
vnpentaunte herte · þou treſouriſt to þee wrapþe into þe day  
of wrapþe & ſchewyng of þe rihtful doom of god · þat ſchal  
zilde to eche man aftir his werkis/ ſohely to hem þat vp pa-  
cience of goode werke · glorie & honoure & vncorruptiō · to hem  
ſeekyng euerlaſtyng liſt/ forſoþe to hem þat ben of ſtriſe & þat  
aſſenten not treuþe · but bileuen to wickidneſſe · wrapþe & in-  
dignaciō · tribulaciō & angwiſche into eche ſoule of man wirch-  
yng euyl · of Jewe firſte & of greke/ ſohely glorie & honoure  
& pees to eche man wirchyng good þing · to Jewe firſte & to  
greke/ for accepconi of perſones (þat is to putte one bifoꝛe ano-  
þer wiþ outen deſerte) · it is anentis god/ forſoþe who euer ſyn-  
nen wiþ outen lawe · ſchulen periſche wiþ oute lawe/ and who  
euer in þe lawe ſynnen · ſchulen be demyde by þe lawe/ forſoþe  
þe

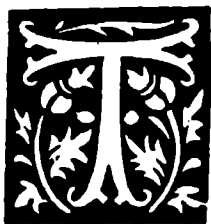
## to romayns

þe herers of lawe ben not iuste anentis god; but þe doers of lawe schulen be made iuste/ forsoþe whanne heþen men þat haue not lawe done kyndely (or by strengþe of kynde) þo þingis þat ben of þe lawe · þei not haupnge suche maner lawe · ben lawe to hem self; þat schewen þe werke of lawe writen in here hertis/ þe conscience of hem zildyng to hem a witnessyng · & bitwixe hem self of þouztis accusyng · or also defendyng · in þe day whan god schal deme þe pryuey þingis of men; bp my gospel by Ihu crist/ forsoþe zif þou art namyde a iewe & residist in þe lawe · & hast glorie in god · & hast knowe his wille · & þou lernyde by þe lawe · prouest more profitable þingis · tristenyt þi self for to be a leder of blynde men · þe lizte of hem þat ben in dirkenessis · a techer of vnwise men · a mayster of zonge children · haupnge þe fourme of science (or kunnyng) · & of treuþe in þe lawe/ þerfore þou þat techist anoper · techist not þi self; þou þat prechist to not stele; stelest/ þou þat seyst to not do leccherie; doste leccherie/ þou þat wlatist ydolis (or mau-metis); doste sacrilegie (þat is þeste of holy þingis)/ þou þat gloriest in þe lawe · by brekyng of þe lawe · unworschipist (or dispisist) god/ forsoþe þe name of god by zou is blasfemyde amonge heþen men; as it is writen/ soþely circumcision profitiþ; zif þou kepe þe lawe/ soþely zif þou be a trespassour of þe lawe; þi circumcision is made prepucie (or custom of heþen men)/ þerfore zif prepucie (or custom of heþen men) kepe ryzt-wesnesse of þe lawe; wher his prepucie schal not be rettide into circumcision; and þe prepucie þat is of kynde fulfillyng þe lawe · schal deme þee þat by lettre & circumcision art trespassour of þe lawe/ forsoþe not he þat is a iewe in opyn · ne þe circumcision þat is in þe fleysche in opyn; but he þat is a iewe in hidde · & þe circumcision of herte in spirit · not in lettre; whos prepsyng is not of men; but of god//

Therefore

## to romayns

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



Therefore what is more to a iewe: or what profite of  
circumcision: myche: by al maner/ firste soþely for  
þe spekyngis of god: ben bitaken to hem/ what  
soþely zif summe of hem bileueden not: wher þe  
vnbileue of hem haþ avoydide þe seiþ of god: fer be it/ forsoþe  
god is trewe (or soþfast): soþely eche man a lier (or vnstable)  
as it is writen/ þat þou be iustified (or founden trewe) in þi  
wordis: & ouercome whanne þou art demyde/ forsoþe zif oure  
wickidnesse comende þe ríztwesnes of god: what schulen we  
seye: wher god is wickide þat bryngiþ in wraþ: vp man I  
seye/ fer be it/ ellis howe schal god deme þis worlde: forsoþe  
zif treuþe of god haþ aboundide (or ben plentyuous) in my leef-  
punge into þe glorie of hym: what & zit am I demede as a syn-  
ner: and not as we be blasfemyde: & as summe seyn vs for to  
seye/ do we euyl þingis þat gode þingis come: whos dampna-  
con is iuste/ wheþer þerfore passen we hem: nay: soþely we  
hane schewide by skyle: Jewes & grekis alle for to be vndir  
synne: as it is writen/ for þere is not any man iuste: þer is not  
a man vndirstandynge: neþer seekynge god/ alle bowiden  
aweye: to gedir þei: ben made vnprofitable: þer is not þat doiþ  
good þing: þer is not til to one/ a sepulcre openynge is þe  
þrote of hem: wiþ here tungis þei diden gylþngely (or treche-  
roufly): þe venym of eddris (þat is clepide) aspis: vndre here  
lippis/ þe mouþ of whom is ful of cursynge (or wariynge) &  
bittirnesse: þe feet of hem (ben) swifte to scheed oute blood/  
contricon (or defoulyngge to gedir) & infelicite (or cursidnesse)  
in þe weyes of hem: & þei knewen not þe weye of pees: þe drede  
of god is not bífóre here pzen/ forsoþe we witen for what euer  
þingis þe lawe spekiþ it spekiþ to hem þat ben in þe lawe/ þat  
eche mouþ be stoppide & eche worlde be made sujet to god: for  
of þe werkis of lawe: eche fleytsche (þat is mankynde) schal not  
be iustificide bífóre hym/ forsoþe by þe lawe is knowynge of  
synne/ forsoþe nowe wiþouten þe lawe: þe ríztwesnesse of god  
is

## to romayns

is schewide witnesside of þe lawe & prophetis/ soþely þe rīzt-  
wesnesse of god is by feiþ of Ihū crist · on alle þat bileuen into  
hym/ forsoþe þer is not diffynycon (or departyng)/ for alle  
men synned · & hane nede to þe glorie of god · þei iustificide  
frely by his grace/ by þe redempcon (or azenbyng) þat is  
in Ihū crist · whom god purposide (or ordeynede) an helper  
by feiþ in his blood to þe schewyng of his rīztwesnes · for re-  
myssion of bifore going synnes · in þe sustentacon (or beryng  
vp) of god · to þe schewyng of his rīztwesnesse in þis tyme ·  
þat he be iuste & iustifyng hym · þat is of þe feiþ of Ihū crist/  
where is þerfore þi glorpyng/ it is excludide (or putte oute)  
by what lawe · of dedis doynge/ nay/ but by þe lawe of feiþ/  
forsoþe we demen a man for to be iustificide bi feiþ · wip outh  
werkis of þe lawe/ wheþer of iewes is god onely/ wheþer he is  
not of heþen/ & his & of heþen/ for soþely one is god · þat ius-  
tifyþ circumcisiōn of feiþ/ and prepucie (or heþen men) by  
feiþ/ þerfore distrupe we þe lawe by feiþ/ fer be it/ but we  
staben þe lawe by feiþ//



What þerfore schulen we sepe oure fadir abraham vp  
þe fleysche for to haue founden/ forsoþe zif abra-  
ham be iustificide of þe werkis of lawe/ he haþ glo-  
rie but not anentis god/ what soþely feiþ þe scrip-  
ture/ abraham bileuede and it is rettide to hym to rīztwes-  
nesse/ forsoþe to hym þat wirchþ · mede is not zouen to vp  
grace/ but vp dette/ but to hym þat worchþ not · forsoþe  
bileupge into hym þat iustificþ þe wickide man (or vnpī-  
tous/) his feiþ is rettide to rīztwesnesse · vp þe purposyng  
of goddis grace/ as & dauid seþ · þe blessidenesse of a man to  
whom god acceptiþ rīztwesnesse/ wip outh werkis (of þe  
lawe)/ blesside þei whos wickidnesse ben forzouen/ & whos  
synnes ben coueride (or hid)/ blesside þat man to whom god  
rettide not synne/ þerfore þis blessidenesse · dwelliþ it not onely  
in circumcisiōn/ or also in prepucie (or state of heþen men)/

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>n</sup>

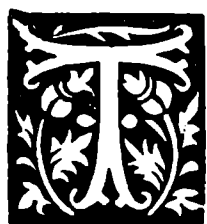


## to romayns

forsoþe we seyn • for þe feiþ is rettide to abraham to ríztwef-  
nessē/ how þerfore is it rettide/ in circumcisiōn or in prepu-  
cie/ not in circumcisiōn; but in prepucye/ and he took a signe  
of circumcisiōn; • a markynge (or tokenynge) of ríztwefnessē  
of feiþ þat is in prepucye • þat he be fadir of alle men bileu-  
ynge by prepucye • þat it be rettide & to hem to ríztwefnessē;  
& þat he be fadir of circumcisiōn/ not onely to hem þat ben of  
circumcisiōn; but & to hem þat suen his steppis • of þe feiþ of  
our fadir abraham þat is in prepucie/ forsoþe not by þe lawe  
is bihestē to abraham or to his seede • þat he be þe eyre of þe  
worlde; but by þe ríztwefnessē of feiþ/ soþely zif þei þat ben  
of þe lawe ben epres; feiþ is anentiside (or distruede) • bihest  
is done away/ forsoþe þe lawe worchip wraþ/ soþely where þe  
lawe is not; neþer preuaricaciōn (or trespassynge)/ þerfore of  
þe feiþ; þat vp grace bihestē be stable (or stidfast) to eche  
seed • not to þat seed onely þat is of þe lawe; but þat is of þe  
feiþ of abraham • þe whiche is fadir of vs alle; as it is writen/  
for I haue sette þee fadir of many folkis • bifore god to whom  
þou hast bileuede • þe whiche god quykeneþ deade men • &  
clepiþ þo þingis þat ben not; as þo þat ben/ þe whiche (abra-  
ham) azenes hope • bileuede into hope; þat he schulde be made  
fadir of many folkis • vp þat it is seyde to hym/ þus schal þi  
seede be as sterres of heuene; & as grauel (or sonde) • þat is  
in þe bryncke of þe see/ and he is not made vnstidfast in þe  
bileue • neþer he bihilde his body how nyȝ deade • whanne he  
was almost of an hundride ȝeer; & þe wombe of sare nyȝ  
deade/ also in þe bihestē of god • he doutide not wiþ vntriȝt;  
but he is confortide in bileue • ȝyuyngē glorie to god • wit-  
ynge moȝte fully • for what euer þingis god haþ bihiȝt; he is  
al mizty & for to do/ þerfore it is rettide to hym to ríztwef-  
nessē/ forsoþe it is not writen onely for hym • for it is rettide  
to hym to ríztwefnessē; but & for vs • to whiche it schal be ret-  
tide • bileuynge into hym þat reȝside oure lorde Ihu crist fro  
deade (spiritis) þe whiche is bitaken for oure synnes; & roos  
azen for oure iustifynge//

Therefore

## to romayns

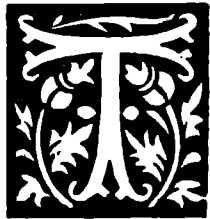


Therefore we iustificiede of feiþ: haue pees at god by  
oure lorde Ihu crist/ by whom we haue acceſſe (or  
nyz goinge to) · by feiþ into þis grace · in whiche we  
ſtonden & haue glorie · in þe hope of glorie of goddis  
ſones/ forſoþe not onely: but & we glorien in tribulacon̄s · wit-  
ynge þat tribulacon̄ worchþ paciencie: ſoþely paciencie prou-  
ynge/ forſoþe prouynge hope/ forſoþe hope confoundiþ not · for  
þe charite of god is ſpred abroad in oure hertis by þe holy goſt  
þat is zouen to vs/ wherto ſoþely diede crist for wickide men ·  
whanne we weren zit ſijk (or vnſtable vptyme) ⁊ ſoþely vnnepiſ  
dieþ any man for þe iuſte/ for whi for þe good: ſumman parauen-  
ture dar die ⁊ forſoþe god comendiþ his charite in vs/ for zit  
whanne we weren zit ſynners vp tyme · crist is deade for vs:  
myche more now we iustificiede in his blood · ſchulen be ſaaf fro  
wraþ bi hym/ ſoþely zit whanne we weren enemyes · we ben re-  
counſeylide to god by deþ of his ſone: myche more we re-  
counſeylide ſchulen be ſaaf in þe liſt of hym/ forſoþe not onely  
but & we glorien in god by oure lorde Ihu crist: by whom we  
haue receyuyde now we counſeylynge (or acordynge)/ þerfore  
as by one man ſynne entride into þis worlde · & by ſynne  
deþ: ſo deþ paſſide forþ into alle men · in whiche man alle  
men ſynned/ ſoþely til to þe lawe: ſynne was in þe worlde/  
forſoþe ſynne was not wiȝtide (or rettide): whan lawe was  
not/ but deþ regnyde fro adam · til to moyſes · alſo into hem  
þat ſynned not in licneſſe of treſpaſſynge of adam · þe whiche  
is fourme (or lickneſſe) of one to comynge/ but not as gilte  
(or treſpaſſe): ſo & þe gifte/ ſoþely zit þourgh þe gilte of one  
manne ben deade: myche more þe grace of god & zifte in þe  
grace of one man Ihu crist · haþ aboundide into many men/  
and not as by one ſynne: ſo & by zifte/ for whi ſoþely dome of  
one into condemnacoñ: grace forſoþe of manne giltis (or  
treſpaſſyngis) into iuſtificacon̄/ forſoþe zit in þe gilte of one  
deþ regnyde þoruz one: myche more men takynge plente of  
grace

## to romayns

grace & ʒyuynghe & rīʒtwesneſſe in liſf: ſchulen regne by one  
Jhū criſt/ þerfore as by þe gilte of one into alle men into con-  
dempnacoñ: ſo & bi þe rīʒtwesneſſe of one into alle men into  
iuſtifyinge of liſf/ ſoþely as bi obedience of one man · many  
ben ordeynede ſynners: ſo & by obedience of one · manye  
ſchulen be ordeynede iuſte/ forſoþe þe lawe entride þat gilte  
ſchulde be plentyuouſe/ ſoþely where gilte was plentyuouſe: &  
grace aboundide (or was plentyuouſe)/ þat as ſynne regnyde  
into deþ: ſo & grace regnyde by rīʒtwesneſſe into euer laſtynghe  
liſf · by Jhū c̄ſt oure lorde//

C<sup>m</sup> 6<sup>m</sup>



Therefore what ſchulen we ſeþe · ſchulen we dwelle  
in ſynne · þat grace be plenteuous/ fer be it/ ſoþely  
we þat ben deade bi ſynne · how ſchulen we lyue  
ʒit þerinne/ wher breþeren ʒee vnknoʒen · for  
whiche euer we ben baptiſide or criſtenyde in ihū c̄ſt · in his  
deþ we ben baptiſide/ ſoþely we ben to gedir biriede wiþ hym  
by criſtendome into deþ · þat as c̄ſt roos fro deade (ſpiritis) by  
glorie of þe fadir: ſo & we walke in þe neweneſſe of liſf/ forſoþe  
ʒif we to gedir plauntide · ben made to þe lickneſſe of his deþ:  
alſo & we ſchul be of riſynghe aʒen/ witynghe þat oure olde man  
is to gedir crucifiēde · þat þe body of ſynne be diſtruyede: þat  
we ſerue no more to ſynne/ ſoþely þe þat is deade to ſynne: is  
iuſtifiēde fro ſynne/ forſoþe ʒif we ben deade wiþ c̄ſt: we bi-  
leuen þat alſo we ſchulen lyue to gedir wiþ hym/ witynghe for  
c̄ſt riſynghe aʒen fro deade (ſpiritis): now dieþ not · deþ ſchal no  
more lordſchip to hym/ forſoþe þat he is deade to ſynne: he is  
deade ones/ ſoþely þat he lyueþ: he lyueþ to god/ ſo & ʒou  
deme ʒou for to be deade ſoþely to ſynne: forſoþe lyuynghe to  
god in Jhū criſt oure lorde/ þerfore regne not ſynne in ʒou  
deadely bodye: þat ʒee obeſche to his coueytyngis/ for neþer  
ʒyue ʒee ʒoure membres armours of wickidneſſe to ſynne:  
but ʒif ʒee ʒoure ſelf to god · as of deade men lyuynghe · & ʒoure  
membriſ armours of rīʒtwesneſſe to god/ forſoþe ſynne ſchal  
not

## to romayns

not lordeschip to zou/ soþely zee ben not vndre þe lawe:  
but vndre grace/ what þerfore/ schulen we synne for we ben  
not vndre þe lawe: but vndre grace/ fer be it/ witen zee not  
for to whom zee zyuen zou seruauntis fer to obesche: zee ben  
seruauntis to þat þing to whom zee haue obeschide · oþer of  
synne to deþ · oþer of obedience to ríztwefnesse/ soþely I do  
þankyngis to god · þat zee weren seruauntis of synne · forsoþe  
zee hane obeschide of herte into þe fourme of techynges: in  
whiche zee ben bitaken/ forsoþe zee delyueride fro synne · ben  
made seruauntis of ríztwefnesse// ¶ I seye mannes þing · for þe  
infirmytee (or vnstabilenes) of oure fleytsche/ soþely as zee hane  
zouen zoure membris for to serue to vncleennesse & wickidnesse:  
so nowe zyue zee zoure membris for to serue to ríztwefnes  
into holynes/ forsoþe whanne zee were seruauntis of synne:  
zee weren fre of ríztwefnesse/ þerfore what fruyte hadden zee  
þanne in þo þingis · in whiche zee schamen nowe/ nowe þer-  
fore þe ende of hem is deþ/ forsoþe nowe zee delyueride fro  
synne · made soþely seruauntis to god: haue zoure fruyte into  
holynesse · þe ende forsoþe euerlastynghe lijf/ treuely þe hijres  
of synne: deþ/ þe grace of god: euerlastynghe lijf · in crist Ihu  
oure lorde//



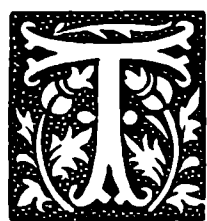
Beþeren wher zee vnknewen · forsoþe I speek to  
men wytynghe þe lawe/ for þe lawe haþ lordeschip  
in a man: how longe tyme it lyueþ/ for whi þat  
womman þat is vndir an housbonde is bounden to  
þe lawe · lyuynghe þe housbonde/ soþely zif hire housbonde be  
deade: sche is delyueride (or vnbunden) fro þe lawe of þe  
man/ þerfore lyuynghe þe man · sche schal be clepide auoutresse:  
zif sche schal be wiþ an oþer man/ forsoþe zif hire housbonde  
be deade: sche is delyueride fro lawe of þe man · þat sche  
be not auoutresse: zif sche schal be wiþ an oþer man/ treuely  
beþeren & zee made deade to þe lawe þoruþ þe bodye of crist:  
þat zee be an oþeris · þat roos azen fro deade (spiritis) · þat  
we

## to romayns

we bere fruyte to god/ forsoþe whanne we weren in fleysche ·  
passiouns of synnes þat weren by þe lawe wrouzten in oure  
membris: þat þei schulden bere fruyte to deþ/ now forsoþe we  
ben vnbounden fro þe lawe of deþ in whiche we weren/ so þat  
we serue in newenesse of spirit · & not in oldenesse of lettre/  
what þerfore schule we sepe/ þe lawe is synne/ fer be it/ but  
I knewe not synne: no but by þe lawe/ for whi I wiste not co-  
ueptynge for to be synne: no but þe lawe seyde: þou schalt not  
couepte/ forsoþe occasiõ: synne by þe maundement haþ  
wrouzte in me al coueptynge (or coueptise)/ soþely wiþ outen  
þe lawe: synne was deade/ forsoþe I lyuede wiþ outen þe  
lawe sum tyme/ but whanne þe comaundement had comen:  
synne lyuede azen/ soþely I am deade · & þe comaundement  
is founden to me þat was to liif: þis þing for to be to deþ/ for  
why synne · occasiõ taken by þe comaundement deceyude  
me: & bi it slowe me/ and so þe lawe soþely is holy · & þe com-  
aundement holy: & iuste & good/ þerfore þat þat is good to me  
is made deþ/ fer be it/ but þat synne apperide (or be knowen):  
synne þourz gode þing wrouzte deþ to me · þat þere be made  
synne synnyngge ouer maner (or mesure) by comaundement/  
soþely we witen for þe lawe is spiritual (or gostly) forsoþe I  
am fleyschely · solde vndir synne/ soþely I vnderstonde not þat:  
þat I wirche/ soþely I do not þe good þing þat I wole: but I  
do þe ilke euyl þing þat I hate/ forsoþe zif I do þat þing þat  
I wole not: I consente to þe lawe · for it is good/ now soþely  
I worche not þat þing nowe: but þat synne þat dwelliþ in me/  
soþely I woot for in me · þat is in my fleysche dwelliþ no good/  
for wille liþ to · to me: treuely for to parfourme good þing  
I synde not/ forsoþe I do not þe ilke good þing þat I wole/  
but I do þe ilke þing þat I wole not/ soþely zif I do þat þing  
þat I wole not · I wirche not it: but þe synne þat dwelliþ in  
me/ þerfore þe lawe is good to me · willynge for to do good  
þing: for euyl þing liþ to me/ þerfore þe lawe is good to me  
willynge/ forsoþe I delite togedir þe lawe of god: vp þe inner  
man/

## to romayns

man/ soþely I see anoper lawe in my membris· azenfytynge  
to þe lawe of my soule · & makynge me captife in þe lawe of  
synne: þat is in my membris/ I a woful man: who schal de-  
lyuer me · fro þe body of þis synne/ forsoþe þe grace of god:  
by Ihu crist oure lorde/ þerfore I myself by resoun of þe soule ·  
serue to þe lawe of god: soþely by my fleysche: to þe lawe of  
synne//



þerfore nowe no þing of dampnacoñ · is to hem þat  
ben in Ihu crist: þe whiche wandren not aftir þe  
fleysche/ forsoþe spirit of lijf in crist Ihu: haþ dely-  
ueride me fro lawe of synne & deþ/ for whi þat þat  
was vnpossible to þe lawe · in what þing it was seek (or freel  
by fleysche) · god sendynge his sone into þe likenesse of fleysche  
of synne: of synne he dampnyde synne in fleysche/ þat þe iust-  
pynge of lawe were fulfild in vs · þat not aftir þe fleysche  
wandren: but aftir þe spirit/ forsoþe þei þat ben aftir þe  
fleysche: saueren þo þingis þat ben aftir þe fleysche/ but þei  
þat ben aftir þe spirit: feelen þo þingis þat ben of þe spirit/  
forwhi þe prudence of fleysche: is deþ/ forsoþe þe prudence of  
spirit: lijf & pees/ for þe wisdom of fleysche: is enemye to  
god/ forsoþe it is not sujet to þe lawe of god: soþely neþer it  
may/ forsoþe þei þat ben in fleysche: mowne not plese to god/  
soþely zee ben not in fleysche · but in spirit: neþeles zif þe  
spirit of god dwelliþ in zou/ forsoþe zif any haþ not þe spirit  
of crist: þis is not his/ forsoþe zif crist is in zou: soþely þe body  
is deade for synne · but þe spirit lyueþ for iustpynge/ for zif  
þe spirit of hym þat reyside Ihu crist fro deade (spiritis) dwell-  
iþ in zou: he þat reyside Ihu crist fro deade spiritis: schal  
quyken & zoure deadely bodies · for þe spirit of hym dwellynge  
in zou/ þerfore breþeren we ben dettours · not to þe fleysche:  
þat we lyue aftir þe fleysche/ forsoþe zif zee schulen lyue aftir  
þe fleysche: zee schulen dye/ forsoþe zif zee by spirit schulen  
flee þe dedis of fleysche: zee schulen lyue/ soþely who euer ben  
ledde

C<sup>m</sup> 8<sup>m</sup>

## to romayns

ledde by þe spirit of god: þes ben þe sones of god: forsoþe zee hane not taken eftesone þe spirit of seruage in drede: but zee haue taken þe spirit of adopcion of sones · (þat is to be sones of god by grace) · in whiche spirit we crien abba fadir/ forsoþe þe ilke spirit zildih witnessynge to oure spirit: þat we ben þe sones of god/ forsoþe zif sones: & epres/ soþely zif epris of god: treuely euen epris of c̄st/ zif neþeles we to gedir suffren: þat & we ben glorifiede to gedir/ treuely I deme þat passiouns of þis tyme ben not euen worþ: to þe glorie to comynge þat schal be schewide in vs/ for whi þe abydyng of creature · (þat is man) · abidiþ þe schewynge of þe sones of god/ soþely þe creature is sujet to vanyte · not willynge: but for hym þat suggettide it (or made it sujet) in hope/ for & þe ilke creature schal be delyueride fro seruage of corrupcion: into liberte of glorie of þe sones of god/ soþely we witen · þat eche creature insorowih & chidiþ: (or worchih wiþ angwische) til zit/ forsoþe not onely it: but & we oure self haupnge þe firste fruptis of þe spirit · & we oure self sorowen wiþinne vs þe adopcion of goddis sones · (þat is wiþ greet mournynge desiren þe staat of goddis sones by grace) · abydyng þe azen bynge of oure body/ soþely by hope: we ben made saaf/ forsoþe þe hope þat is seyn: is not hope/ for whi · what hopih a man þat þing þat he seep/ forsoþe zif we hopen þat þing þat we seen not: we abiden by patience/ also & þe spirit helpih oure infirmyte (or vnstidfastnes)/ forwhi what we schulen preye as it bihouep · we witen not: but þe ilke spirit ariþ for vs wiþ sorowyngis þat motwe not be tolde oute/ forsoþe he þat seekih þe hertis · woot what þe spirit desirih · for astir god · (þat is at goddis wille) he ariþ for holy men/ forsoþe we witen for to men louynge god · alle þingis worchen to gedir into good þing to hem · þat astir purpos ben clepide seyntis/ for whi & whom he wiste bifore: & he bifore ordeynede by grace · for to be made liche of þe ymage of his sone · þat he be þe firste bygoten in manye breheren/ soþely whom he bifore ordeynede to blis: & hem he clepide: & whom

## to romayns

whom he clepide & hem he iustifyede/ soþely whom he iustifyede/ & hem he glorifiede/ what þerfore schulen we seye to þes þingis/ zif god for vs who azenes vs/ þe whiche also sparide not to his owne sone/ but for vs alle bitoke hym/ how also zaue he not to vs alle þing wip hym/ who schal accuse azenes þe chosen sones of god/ god þat iustifieth/ who is þat condempneth/ Jh̄c crist þat is deade/ zhe þe whiche & roos azen/ þe whiche is on þe rize halfe of god/ & þe whiche prepeþ for vs/ who þerfore schal departe vs fro þe charite of god/ tribulacōn or angwische or hungre/ or nakidnesse/ or persecucōn/ or perel/ or swerde/ as it is writen/ for we ben slayne al day for þee/ we ben gesside as scheep of slauzter/ but in alle þes þingis we ouercomen/ for hym þat louede vs/ soþely I am certayne/ for neþer deþ/ neþer lijf/ neþer angels/ neþer principatis/ neþer vertues/ neþer potestatis/ neþer present þingis/ neþer þingis to comynge/ neþer strengþe/ neþer heyzþe/ neþer depnesse/ neþer oþer creature/ schal mowe departe vs fro þe charite of god/ þat is in ċst Jhū oure lorde//



Seye treuþe in crist Jhū/ I lize not/ my conscience berynge witnessynge to me in þe holy gost/ for grete heupnesse is to me/ & contynuel sorowe to myn herte/ forsoþe I my self desiride for to be curside (or departide) fro crist for my breþeren/ þat ben cosyns aftir þe fleysche/ þat ben israelitis (or of isrl) whos adopcion is of sones & glorie & testament & zpyunge of lawe/ & scrupse & bihestis/ whos ben þe faderis/ & of whom crist aftir þe fleysche/ þat is god aboue alle þingis/ blesside into worldis/ amen/ soþely not þat þe worde of god haþ fallen doune/ (or saylide vnfulfild)/ soþely not alle þat ben of isrl/ þes ben isrlitis (or sones of iacob)/ neþer þei þat ben þe seede of abraham alle ben sones/ but in ysaac/ seed schal be clepide to þee/ þat is to seye/ not þei þat ben sones of þe fleysche/ ben sones

C<sup>m</sup> 9<sup>m</sup>



## to romayns

of god: but þei þat ben sones of biheste · ben dempde in seed  
of bihest/ soþely þis is þe worde of bihest/ vp þis tyme I schal  
come: & a sone schal be to sare/ forsoþe onely sche: but & re-  
becca of one liggyng by haupng two sones of ysaac oure fa-  
dir/ soþely whanne þei weren not zit borne · oþer hadden done  
any of good or euyl: þat þe purpos of god schulde dwelle vp  
þe eleccioun/ not of werkis: but of god cleppng þat is seyde  
to hym · for þe more schal serue to þe lesse: as it is writen: I  
louede Jacob/ forsoþe esau I had in hate/ what þerfore schu-  
len we seye/ wher wickidnesse be anentis god/ fer be it/ for-  
soþe he seip to moyses/ I schal haue mercy to whom I schal  
haue mercy: & I schal ȝyue mercy to whom I schal haue  
mercy/ þerfor it is not neþer of man willyng neþer rennyng:  
but of god haupng mercy/ forsoþe þe scripture seip to pha-  
rao/ for into þis þing I haue stired þee · þat I schewe in þee  
my vertue · & þat my name be tolde in al erþe/ þerfore of  
whom god wole he haþ mercy: & of whom god wole he endu-  
riþ (or hardenþ)/ and so þou seist to me/ what þing is zit  
souzt · soþely who wiþstondþ his wille/ ¶ A man who art þou ·  
þe whiche answerist to god/ wher a potte or made þing · seip  
to hym þat made it · what hast þou made me so/ wher a potter  
of clepe haþ not power of þe same gobet · for to make soþely  
one vessel into honoure: an oþer forsoþe into dispite (or lowe of-  
fice): þat zif god willynge for to schewe wrapþe & for to make  
power knowen: sustenyde in grete paciẽce þe vessels of wra-  
þe able into perdicoñ (or dāpnacoñ) · þat he schulde schewe  
þe richessis of his glorie · into vessels of mercy · þe whiche he  
made redy into glorie/ and whiche he clepide not onely of  
iewes · but also of heþen men as he seip in osee/ I schal clepe  
not my puple: my puple · & not my louede · my louede · & not  
haupng mercy: haupng mercy/ and it schal be in place ·  
where it is seyde not zee my puple · þere þei schulen be clepide  
þe sones of lyuynng god/ forsoþe ysaie crieth for isrl/ zif þe  
nowmbre of isrl schal be as þe grauel of þe see: þe relyues  
schulen

## to romayns

schulen be made saaf/ forsoþe a worde endynge & abreggynge in equyte/ for þe lorde schal make a worde breggide (or made schorte) vpon al erþe/ and as ysaie bifore seyde/ no but god had leste to vs seede/ we hadden ben made as sodom · & we hadden ben lijk as gomor/ þerfore what schulen we seye/ þat heþen men þat sieden not ríztwesnesse/ haue cauhte ríztwesnesse þat is of seip/ forsoþe isrl supnge þe lawe of ríztwesnesse/ came not parfítely into þe lawe of ríztwesnesse/ why/ for not of seip/ but as of werkis/ soþely þei offendiden into þe stoon of offencoñ (or spurnynge) · as it is writen/ lo I putte a stoon of offencoñ in syon/ & a stoon of sclaundre/ þat eche þat schal bileue into it/ schal not be confoundide (or schente)//



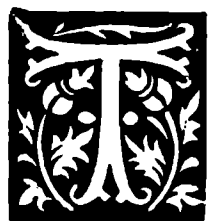
Beþeren soþely þe wille of myn herte & my bisechynge is made to god for hem into helpe/ forsoþe I here witnessynge to hem for þei haue loue of god/ but not of kunnyng/ soþely þei vnknowyng goddis ríztwesnesse/ & seekyng for to make stidfast here owne/ ben not suget to þe ríztwesnesse of god/ forsoþe þe ende of þe lawe cōst/ to ríztwesnesse to eche man bileuyng/ soþely moyse/ for þe man þat schal do ríztwesnesse þat is of þe lawe/ schal lyue in it/ forsoþe þe ríztwesnesse þat is of þe bileue/ seip þus/ seye þou not in þin herte · who schal steyze into heuene · þat is to seye for to leede doune crist/ or who schal go doune into depnesse (of helle) · þat is for to azen clepe crist fro deade (spiritis)/ but what seip þe scripture/ þe worde is nyz in þi mouþ/ & in þin herte/ þat is þe worde of bileue/ þe whiche we prechen/ þat zif þou knoweleche in þi mouþ þe lorde Ihsū cōst · & bileuest in þin herte þat god reyside hym fro deade (spiritis)/ þou schalt be saaf/ forsoþe by herte we bileuen to ríztwesnesse/ by mouþ soþely knowelechyng is made to helpe/ soþely þe scripture seip/ eche þat bileueþ into hym/ schal not be confoundide/ soþely þer is no distynccoñ of Jewe & greek/ forwhi þe same lorde of alle/ riche into alle þat inclepen hym/ forsoþe  
eche

C<sup>m</sup> 10<sup>m</sup>

## to romayns

eche man who euer schal inclepe þe name of þe lordes: schal be  
 saaf/ how þerfore schulen þei inclepe hym: into whom þei  
 haue not bileuyde: or how schulen þei bileue to hym: whom  
 þei herden not: how forsoþe schulen þei here wiþ outen pre-  
 chynge: or howe schulen þei preche: no but zif þei ben sente:  
 (þei ben sente of god þat in werke & worde suen crist) as it is  
 writen/ how sayre þe feet of men euangelizynge pees · of pre-  
 chynge good þingis: but not alle men obescen to þe gospel/  
 forsoþe ysaie seiþ/ lorde who bileuede to oure herynge: þer-  
 fore seiþ of herynge: herynge forsoþe by þe worde of crist/ but  
 I seye wher þei herden not: and soþely þe worde of hem wente  
 oute into al erþe: & into þe endis of þe roundenesse of þe erþe  
 here wordis/ but I seye/ wher Isrl knewe not: firste moyses  
 seiþ/ I schal leede zou to eneupe to not a folc · into an vnwise  
 folc · I schal sende zou into wrapþe/ forsoþe ysaie dar & seiþ/  
 I am founden of men not sekynge me/ oppnly I apperide to  
 hem: þat ariden not me/ forsoþe to isrl he seiþ/ al day I streypte  
 oute myn handis to a puple not bileuynge to me: but azensey-  
 inge//

C<sup>m</sup> II<sup>m</sup>



Therefore I seye wher god haþ putte awey his puple:  
 fer be it/ for whi & I am of israelite of þe seede of  
 abraham of þe lynage of beniamyn/ þe lorde putte  
 not awey his puple: þe whiche he bifore wiste/ wher  
 zee witen not in helie what þe scripture seiþ: how he preyed  
 god azenes isrl/ lorde þei haue slayne þi prophetis · þei haue  
 vndirdoluen þin auters: & I am leste al one · & þei seken my  
 lijf/ but what seiþ goddis answere to hym/ I haue leste to me  
 seuene þousande of men · þat haue not bowide here knees bi-  
 fore baal/ so þerfore & in þis tyme · þe relifes ben made saaf:  
 vp þe chesynge of þe grace of god/ for zif by þe grace of god:  
 nowe not of werkis/ ellis grace is not nowe grace/ what þer-  
 fore: isrl haþ not geten þat þat he souzte/ forsoþe eliccon haþ  
 geten/ soþely þe oþer ben blyndide: as it is writen/ he zaue to  
 hem

## to romayns

hem a spirit of compunccon · yzen þat þei seen not · & eris þat  
þei here not · til into þis day/ and daupd seiþ/ be þe borde of hem  
made bifore hem into a gnare & into cacchyngge & into sclau-  
dre · & into zildyngge azen to hem/ be þe yzen of hem made dirke ·  
þat þei se not · and incroke algatis þe bac of hem/ þerfore I  
seye wher þei offendiden so · þat þei schulen falle doune · fer be  
it/ but by gylte of hem helpe is made to heþen men · þat þei sue  
hem/ þat zif þe gylte of hem ben richeffis of þe worlde · & þe mun-  
yschyngge (or makynge lesse) of hem · ben richeffis of heþen men ·  
how myche more þe plente of hem · sobely I seye to zou heþen  
men/ how longe sobely I am apostle of heþen men · I schal ho-  
noure my mynysterie (or seruyce) zif on any maner I styre my  
fleysche for to folowe · & I make summe of hem saaf/ forsoþe zif  
þe loos of hem is recounseyllyngge of þe worlde · what þe takynge  
vp of hem · no but lijf of deade men · for zif þe sacrifice (or litil  
parte of tassyngge) be holy · & hool gobet/ and zif þe root be holy ·  
& þe braunchis/ þat zif any of þe braunchis ben broken · þou  
sobely whanne þou were a wilde olyue tree · art sette amonge  
hem · & art made felowe of þe root & of fatnesse & of þe olyue tree ·  
nyl þou glorie azenes þe braunchis/ for zif þou gloriest · þou  
berest not þe root · but þe root þee/ þerfore þou seist/ þe braun-  
chis ben broken þat I be insette/ wel/ for vnbeleue þe braun-  
chis hen broken · forsoþe þou stondist by seiþ/ nil þou sauer  
hize þing but drede þou/ forsoþe zif god sparide not kyndely  
braunchis · lesse parauenture he spare not þee/ þerfore se þe  
godenesse & þe feersenesse of god/ sobely þe feersenesse into hem  
þat fellen doune · sobely þe godenes of god in þee · zif þou  
schalt dwelle in godenesse/ ellis & þou schalt be kitte doune/  
but & þei schulen be insette · schulen not dwelle in vnbeleue/  
forsoþe god is myzty · eftesone for to insette hem/ for whi zif  
þou art kitte doune of þe kyndely wilde olyue tree · forsoþe  
breþeren I nil zou vnknowe þis mysterie · þat zee be not wise  
to zoure self/ for blyndenesse haþ fallen of party in isrl · til þe  
plente of heþen men entride · & so al isrl schulde be made saaf  
as

## to romayns

as it is writen/ he schal come of spon þat schal delyuer & turne  
 away: vnpyte of iacob/ and þis testament to hem of me:  
 whanne I schal do away here synnes/ soþely vp þe gospel •  
 enemyes for zou: forsoþe mooste derworþ vp þe eleccō • for fa-  
 deris/ soþely þe ziftis & clepyng of god: ben wiþ outen for-  
 þinkyng (or reuokynge)/ soþely as sumtyme & zee bileueden  
 not to god • nowē forsoþe zee haue gete mercy for þe vnbileue  
 of hem: so & þes nowē bileueden not into zoure mercy • þat &  
 þei gete mercy/ forsoþe god closide to gedir alle þingis in vnbil-  
 leue: þat he haue mercy on alle/ ¶ O þe hizenesse (or depnesse)  
 of þe richessis of wisdom & kunnyng of god/ how incompre-  
 hensibile ben his domes: & his weyes vnsercheable/ forsoþe  
 who knewe þe witte of god/ or who was his counseyler or who  
 former 3aue to hym: & it schal be quytte azen to hym/ for of  
 hym & by hym & in hym ben alle þingis: to hym honoure &  
 glorie into worldis amen//

C<sup>m</sup> 12<sup>m</sup>



And so breþeren I biseche zou by þe mercy of god •  
 þat zee 3pue zoure bodys a lyuyng oost (or sacri-  
 fice) holy plesynge to god • zoure seruyce reson-  
 able/ and nyl zee be confourmyde (or made lyk) to  
 þis worlde: but be zee refourmyde in newenesse of zoure witte •  
 þat zee proue whiche is þe wille of god • good & wel plesynge  
 & parfite/ forsoþe I seye by þe grace þat is zouen to me • to alle  
 þat ben amonge zou • for to not sauer (or kunne) more þanne  
 it bihoueh for to kunne • but for to kunne to sobrenesse/ and  
 to eche man as god haþ departide þe mesure of feiþ/ forsoþe as  
 in one body we haue many membris • soþely alle þe membris  
 hane not þe same acte (or dede) so we ben manye: one body in  
 crist/ eche forsoþe membris: þe toþer of anoþer/ þerfore hau-  
 ynge ziftis dyuersynge vp þe grace þat is zouen to vs • oþer  
 prophecye vp resoune of feiþ • oþer mynysterie or seruyce in  
 mynysterynge/ oþer he þat techiþ in techynge: he þat stireþ  
 softely in exhortacon (or monestryng)/ he þat 3pueþ in sym-  
 pleness •

## to romayns

pleness · he þat is bifore (or souereyn) in bisynes · he þat haþ  
 mercy in gladenesse · loue wiþ outen feynynge · hatynge euyl ·  
 cleuyng (or faste drawynge) to good þing · louynge to gedir  
 þe charite of breþerhede · comynge to gedir in honoure · not  
 slowe in bisynesse · feruent (or brennyng) in spirit · seruyng  
 to þe lorde · ioyinge in hope · pacient in tribulacōn · bispe in  
 preyer · comunyng to þe nedis of seyntis · suyng (or kepyng)  
 hospitalite · (þat is herborynge of pore men) blesse zee men pur=  
 suyng zou · blesse zee & nyl zee curse (or warie) / for to ioye wiþ  
 men ioyinge · for to wepe wiþ men wepyng / felyng þe same  
 þing to gedir notsaueryng (or kunnyng) hize þingis · but con=  
 sentynge to meke þingis / nyl zee be prudent anentis zoure self ·  
 to no man zildynge euyl for euyl / purueyinge good þingis ·  
 not onely bifore god · but also bifore alle men / zif it may be  
 done · þat is of zou · haupng pees wiþ alle men / zee most dere  
 breþeren not defendynge (or vengynge) zoure self · but ȝue  
 zee place to ire (or wraþþe) / forsoþe it is writen / þe lorde seip /  
 to me vengeaunce · & I schal zilde azen / but zif þin enemye  
 schal hungre · fede þou hym / zif he þristiþ · ȝue þou drynke to  
 hym / forsoþe þou doinge þes þingis · schalt gedir to gedir colis  
 on his hede / nyl þou be ouercomen of euyl þing · but ouercome  
 þou euyl in gode þing //



**G**tery soule (or lyuyng man) · be sujet to hizer pow=  
 ers / forsoþe þer is not power · no but of god / soþely  
 þo þingis þat ben of god · ben ordeynede / and so he  
 þat azenstondiþ þe ordynaunce of god / forsoþe þei  
 þat azenstonden · geten to hem self dampnacoñ / for whi pryn=  
 ces ben not to þe drede of gode werke · but of euyl / soþely  
 wolte þou not drede power · do þou gode þing · & þou schalt  
 haue preysyng of it / forsoþe he is þe mynystre of god · to þee  
 into good / soþely zif þou doste euyl þing · drede þou / for not  
 wiþ outen cause he beriþ þe sward / for he is þe mynystre of  
 god · venger into wraþþe · to hym þat doiþ euyl þing / and  
 þerfore

## to romayns

þerfore by nede be zee sujet: not onely for wrappe: but & for  
conscience/soþely þerfore & zee ȝyuen tributis/þei ben þe myn-  
ystris of god: for þis same þing feruyngē/ þerfore zilde zee to  
alle men: Dettis/ to whom tribute: tribute/ to whom tol (or  
custom for þingis borne aboute): tol (or suche custom)/ to whom  
drede: drede/ to whom honoure: honoure/ to no man owe zee  
any þing: no but þat zee loue to gedir/ soþely he þat loueþ his  
neyȝebore: haþ fulfildē þe lawe/ for whi þou schalt do no lec-  
cherie · þou schalt not flee · þou schalt not stele · þou schalt not  
seye false witnesynge · þou schalt not coueyte þe þing of þi  
neyȝebore/ and ȝif þer be any oþer maundement: it is in-  
storide (or encloside) in þis worde/ þou schalt loue þi neyȝe-  
bore as þi self/ þe loue of neyȝebore: worchih not euyl/ þer-  
fore loue is plente (or fulfillynge) of lawe// ¶ And we wit-  
ynge þis tyme · for houre is now: vs to rise of sleep/ soþely  
nowe oure helþe is neer · þan whanne we bileueden/ þe nyȝte  
wente bifore: forsoþe þe day schal neyȝe/ þerfore caste we  
awepe þe werkis of dirkenessis · & be we cloþide þe armes of  
lizte: as in day wandre we honestly/ not in ofte etyngis &  
drunkennesse · not in couchis & vnchastitees not in instruges  
& in enuie: but be zee cloþide þe lorde Ihu c̄st/ and do zee not  
þe cure (or bisynesse) of sleysche in desiris//

C<sup>m</sup> 14<sup>m</sup>



Dorsoþe take zee a sijk man in bileue · not in decep-  
tacon̄s (or dispitesouns) of þouȝtis/ soþely an oþer  
bileueþ hym for to ete alle þingis/ forsoþe he þat is  
sijk (or vnstidefast): ete he wortis (or potage)/ he  
þat etih dispise not þe man not etynge/ and he þat etih not:  
deme not þe man etynge/ soþely god haþ taken hym/ who art  
þou þat demest an oþer seruaunt: to his lorde he stondih or  
fallih doune/ forsoþe he schal stonde/ forsoþe þe lorde is myȝty  
for to ordeyne hym · (or make stidefast) for whi an oþer demeth  
a day bitwixe þe day: an oþer demeth eche day/ eche man a-  
bounde (or be plenteuous) · in his witte/ he þat sauerih (or vn-  
dirstondih

## to romayns

dirſtondiþ) þe day: vnderſtondiþ to þe lorde/ and he þat etiþ · etiþ to þe lorde: for he doiþ þankyngis to þe lorde/ and he þat etiþ not: etiþ not to þe lorde · & doiþ þankyngis to god/ forſoþe no man of vs lyueþ to hym ſelf: & no man dieþ to hym ſelf/ ſoþely wher we lyuen: we lyuen to þe lorde/ wher we dien: we dien to þe lorde/ þerfore wher we lyuen or dien we ben of þe lorde/ in þis þing ſoþely c̃iſt is deade & roos azen: þat he be lorde of quycke & of deade/ forſoþe what demeiſt þou þi broþer/ or whi diſpiſiſt þou þi broþer/ forſoþe alle we ſchulen ſtonde bifore þe trone of criſt/ I lyue ſeiþ þe lorde · for to me eche knee ſchal be bowide: & eche tunge ſchal knoweleche to god/ and ſo eche of vs · ſchal zilde reſoun to god for hym ſelf/ þerfore no more deme we to gedir (or eche oþer) but more deme zee þis þing · þat zee putte not hurtynge (or ſclaundre) to a broþer/ I woot & triſte in þe lorde I hū · for no þing is comoun (or vnclene) by hym: no but to hym þat demeiþ any þing to be vnclene/ ſoþely zif þi broþer be made ſory in conſcience for mete: now we þou walkiſt not aftir charite/ nyl þou þourgh þi mete leeſe hym: for whom criſt diede/ þerfore be not oure gode þing blaſfemyde (or diſpiſide)/ ſoþely þe rewme of god is not mete & drynke: but riȝtwelneſſe & pees & ioþe in þe holy goſt/ forſoþe he þat in þis þing ſerueþ criſt: pleaþ to god · & is prouyde to men/ and ſo ſue we þo þingis þat ben of pees: & kepe we togedir þo þingis þat ben of edificacōn · (þat is to bilde ſoulis to heuene) nyl þou for mete diſtruye þe werke of god/ ſoþely alle þingis ben clene: but it is euyl to þe man þat etiþ by offendynge (or ſclaundre): or is made ſiȝk (or vnſidefaſt)/ þou þat haſt ſeiþ anentis þi ſelf: haue þou bifore/ bleſſide is he þat demeiþ not (or dampnyþ not) hym ſelf · in þat þing þat he proueþ/ forſoþe he þat demeiþ zif he ete: is dampnyde/ for it is not of ſeiþ/ forſoþe alle þing þat is not of ſeiþ: is ſynne//



## to romayns

C<sup>m</sup> 15<sup>m</sup>



**F**orsope we sadder owen for to susteyne (or bere vp) þe febleness of sijk men or vnsad in feiþ: & not plese to oure self/ eche of vs plese to his neyzebore into good to edificacōn/ and forsope crist pleside not to hym self: but as it is writen/ þe reprobues (or schenschipis) of men dispisyng þee: fellen on me/ forsope what euer þingis ben writen: þe ben writen to oure techyng/ þat bi pacience & comforte of scripturis: we haue hope/ forsope god of pacience & solace (or comforte) ȝyue to zou for to vnderstonde þe same þing eche into oþer after Ihū crist: þat zee of one wille (or wit) · wiþ one mouþ worschip god & þe fadir of oure lorde Ihū crist/ for whiche þing take zee to gedir: as & cō took zou into honoure of god/ soþely I seye Ihū crist for to haue be a mynystre of circumcisiōn for þe treuþe of god: for to conferme þe bihestis of faderis/ soþely heþen men for to honoure god vpon mercy: as it is writen/ þerfore lorde I schal knoweleche to þee in heþen men: & I schal synge to þi name/ and estefone he seiþ/ glade (or ioye) zee heþen men wiþ his puple/ and estefone/ alle heþen men preyse zee þe lorde: & alle puples magnyfie zee hym/ and estefone ysaie seiþ/ þer schal be a root of Jesse: & heþen men schulen hope into hym · þat schal rise for to gouerne heþen men/ forsope god of hope · fulfil zou in al ioye & pees in bileuyng: þat zee abounde in hope & vertue of þe holy gost// ¶ Soþely breþeren & I my self am certeyn of zou: for & zee zoure self ben ful of loue · zee fulfild wiþ al science (or kunnyng): so þat zee motone moneste eche oþer/ soþely breþeren more hardily I write to zou of partye · as azen bryngyng zou into mynde · for þe grace þat is zouen to me of god: þat I be þe mynystre of crist Ihū in heþen men/ I halowyng þe gospel of god þat þe offeryng of heþen men be made accepte & halowide in þe holy gost/ þerfore I haue glorie in crist Ihū to god/ forsope I dar not speke any þing of þo þingis · þe whiche cō make not by me: into obedience of heþen men in worde & dedis · in vertue of tokens

## to romayns

kenes & grete wondris · in vertue of þe holy gost: so þat from  
irlm̄ by cumpas til to hillirik: I haue fulfild þe gospel of crist/  
forsoþe so I haue prechide þis gospel · not where c̄st was na=  
myde · lest I bilde vpon oþeris grounde: but as it is writen/  
for to whom it is not tolde of hym: þei schulen se/ and þei þat  
herden not schulen vnderstonde/for whiche þing I was lettide  
ful myche for to come to zou: & I am forbeden til into zit/for=  
soþe now I not haupnge forþer place in þes cuntrees: soþely  
haupnge coueptise of comynge to zou · of many zeeris now  
goinge bifore · whan I schal bygynne for to passe into spayne:  
I hope þat I passynge forþe schal se zou/ and of zou schal be  
ledde þidir: zif I schal vse zou firste in partye/ þerfore now  
I schal passe forþ to irlm̄: for to mynystre to seyntis/ forsoþe  
macedonpe & acaye prouede for to make sum collacon (or ge=  
derynge) of money into pore men of seyntis · þat ben in irlm̄/  
soþely it pleside to hem: & þei ben dettours of hem/ for whi zif  
heþen men ben made parteners of here gostly þingis: þei owen  
& in fleysehely þingis for to mynystre to hem/ þerfore whanne  
I schal ende þis þing & assigne hem þis fruyte: by zou I schal  
passe into spayne/forsoþe I woot þat I comynge to zou schal  
come: in þe abundaunce (or plente) of þe blessinge of crist/ þer=  
fore breþeren I biseche zou by oure lorde Ihu crist · & by cha=  
rite of þe holy gost: þat zee helpe me in zoure preyers · for me  
to þe lorde · þat I be delyueride fro þe vntrewe men þat ben  
in Iudee: & þat þe offerynge of my seruyce be acceptide in  
Irlm̄ to seyntis/ þat I come to zou in ioyze by þe wille of god:  
& þat I be refreschide wip zou/ soþely god of pees be wip zou  
alle amen//



Ersoþe breþeren I comende to zou feben oure suster  
þat is in þe seruyce of þe chirche · þat is cencris · þat  
zeereceyue hire in þe lorde worþily to seyntis: & þat  
zee stonde nyz (or helpe) hire · in what euer nede (or  
þing) sche schal nede of zou/ forsoþe & sche stode nyz (or helpide)  
to

## to romayns

to manye: & to myself/ salute (or grete) zee prisca & aquyla myn  
helpers in Ihu crist: he whiche vndir puttiden here neckis for  
my soule (or lijf)/ to whom not I al one do þankyngis: but &  
alle chirchis of heven men/ and grete zee wel þere homely  
chirche/ gretih wel ephenete louede to me: þat is he firste of asie  
in crist Ihu/ gretih wel mary: he whiche haþ traueylide myche  
in vs/ gretih wel adronyk & Julian my cosyns & myn euen cap-  
tifes (or prisouners): he whiche ben noble amonge he apostlis:  
& he whiche weren bifore me in crist/ gretih wel ampliete: moſte  
derworþ to me in he lorde/ gretih wel vrbān oure helper in  
crist Ihu: & ſtacchen my louede/ gretih wel appellem he noble  
in crist/ gretih wel hem þat ben aristoblis hous/ gretih wel he-  
rodien my cosyn/ gretih wel hem þat ben at narcisies hous:  
þat ben in he lorde/ gretih wel tryphenam & tryphonam: he  
whiche wymmē traueylen in he lorde/ gretih wel perfida  
moſte derworþe womman: þat haþ myche traueylide in he  
lorde/ gretih wel ruphus chosen in he lorde: & his modir & myn/  
gretih wel ansicrete: flegoncia: hermen: patroban: herman:  
and breþeren þat ben wiþ hem/ gretih wel fylologus & Julian  
& venerum & his suster: & lympiades: and alle he ſeyntis þat ben  
wiþ hem/ gretih wel to gedir in holy coffe/ alle he chirchis of  
crist grete zou wel// ¶ forsoþe breþeren I preye zou þat zee as-  
pie hem þat maken discenconis & hurtyngis (or ſclaunderis):  
biſidis he doctryne: þat zee haue lernyde: & bowe he away fro  
hem/ soþely ſuche men ſeruen not to he lorde crist: but to here  
wombe/ and by ſwete wordis & bleſſyngs deceyuen he hertis of  
innocent men/ soþely zoure obedience is pupliſchide into euery  
place/ þerfore I ioye in zou: but I wole zou for to be wiſe in  
good þing: & ſymple in euyl þing/ forsoþe god of pees defoule  
ſathanas vndir zoure feet ſwiftely/ he grace of oure lorde ihu  
crist wiþ zou/ tymothe myn helper gretih zou wel: & alſo lu-  
cyns & Iason & ſoſipater my cosyns/ I þe þridde grete zou wel:  
þat haue write þis epiſtle in he lorde/ gāyus myn herberger  
gretih zou wel: and quartus broþer/ he grace of oure lorde  
Ihu

## to romayns

Ihū crist: wiþ zou alle amen/ forsoþe to hym þat is myȝty to conferme zou by my gospel & prechynge of Ihū crist vp þe reuelacōn of mysterie holden stille þat is not schewide in tymes euerlastynge · þe whiche mysterie is now made oppn by scriptures of prophetis · vp þe comaundement of god wiþ outen bygynnyng & endynge · to þe obedience of seiþ in alle heþen men · þe mysterie knownen to god al one wise by Ihū c̄st · to whom honoure & glorie into worldis of worldes amen//

## þe fīrste piſtel to corrintheis



Dul clepide apostle of Ihū crist by þe wille of god · & sostynes broþer: to þe chirche of god þat is at corrynthe · to þe halowide in crist Ihū · clepide seyntis · wiþ alle þat inclepen þe name of oure lorde Ihū crist in eche place of hem & oure: grace to zou & pees of god oure fadir · & of þe lorde Ihū crist/ I do þankyngis to

C<sup>m</sup> I<sup>m</sup>

my god euermore for zou: in þe grace of god þat is zouen to zou in Ihū crist: for in alle þingis zee ben riche in hym · in eche worde & in eche kunnyng (or science) · as þe witnesynge of c̄st is confermyde in zou: so þat noþing fayle to zou in any grace · abydyng þe reuelacōn (or schewynge) of oure lorde Ihū crist/ þe whiche & schal conferme zou til into þe ende wiþ outen cryme (or greet synne): in þe day of þe comynge of oure lorde Ihū c̄st//

¶ Forsoþe god (is) trewe · by whom zee ben clepide into felowschship of his sone Ihū crist oure lorde/ soþely breþeren I biseche zou by þe name of oure lorde Ihū crist: þat zee alle seye þe same þing · & þat scismes (or dyuyſiouns) diffenciouns (or discordis) be not amonge zou/ soþely be zee parfite in þe same witte: & in þe same

## to ye corrintheis .i.

same kunnynge/ forsoþe breþeren it is signyfiede (or tolde) to me · of hem þat ben at cloes; for stryues ben amonge zou/ forsoþe I seye þis þing; þat eche of zou seiþ/ forsoþe I am of poul · forsoþe I of appollo · treuely I of cephas (þat is petre); forsoþe I of c̃st/ wher crist is departide; wher poul is crucifiede for zou · oþer ben zee baptiside in þe name of poul; I do þankynge to god · þat I baptiside no man of zou · no but crispus & gayus · lest any man seye þat zee ben baptiside in my name/ soþely & I baptiside þe hous of steuene (a womman)/ but I woot not zif I baptiside any oþer/ for crist sente me not for to baptise; but for to euuangelize (or preche þe gospel)/ not in wisdom of worde; þat þe crosse of c̃st be not voydide away/ for þe worde of þe crosse; is folý soþely to men perischynge/ forsoþe to hem þat ben made saaf · þat is to seye to vs · it is þe vertue of god/ soþely it is writen/ I schal leese þe wisdom of wisemen; & I schal reproue þe prudence of prudent men/ wher is þe wiseman; wher is þe writer (or man of lawe); where is þe purchasour of þis worlde; wher god haþ not made þe wisdom of þis worlde; foltische (or fool)/ for why for in þe wisdom of god; þe worlde knewe not god by wisdom/ it pleside to god for to make men saaf bileupnge; by þe folý of prechynge/ for & iewes seeken signes; & grekis seeken wisdom/ forsoþe we prechen crist crucifiede/ to iewes soþely sclaundre; to heþen men soþely folý/ forsoþe to hem clepide iewes & grekis crist þe vertue of god & þe wisdom of god/ for þat þat is folý þing of god; is wiser þan men/ & þat is sijk þing (or freel) of god; is stronger þan men/ forsoþe se zee zoure cleppnge breþeren · for not manye wisemen astir þe fleysche · not many myzty · not many noble; but god chees þo þingis þat ben foltis of þe worlde; þat he confounde wise men/ and god chees þe sijke þingis (or freel) of þe worlde; þat he confounde þe stronge þingis/ and god chees þe vnnoble þingis · & dispisable þingis of þe worlde · & þo þingis þat ben not; þat he schulde distruye þo þingis þat ben/ þat eche fleysche (or man) glorie not in his sizte/ forsoþe  
of

## to ye corrintheis .I.

of hym zee ben in crist Jhū · he whiche is made to vs wisdom & ryztwesnesse & holynesse & azen bynge/ þat as it is writen · he þat glorieþ: glorie in þe lorde//



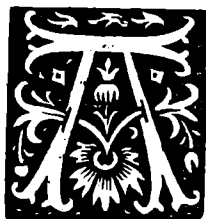
**A**nd I breþeren whan I came to zou: came not in hizenesse of worde (or wisdom) tellynge (or schewynge) to zou þe witnesynge of cñ/ soþely I schewede (or demyde) me not · me for to wite (or kunne) any þing amonge zou: no but crist Jhū · & hym crucifiede/ and I in sekenesse & drede & myche tremblyng was anentis zou: & my worde & my prechynge not in persuable (or sutel glosynge) wordes of mannes wisdom: but in schewynge of spirit & vertue · þat zoure feiþ be not in wisdom of men: but in vertue of god/ forsoþe we speken wisdom amonge parfite men/ forsoþe not wisdom of þis worlde · neþer of prynces of þis worlde þat be distrupede: but we speken þe wisdom of god þe whiche is hid in mysterie (or pryuate) · þe whiche (wisdom) god bifore ordeynede bifore worldis into oure glorie · þe whiche no man of þe prynces of þis worlde knewe/ for zif þei hadden knowe: þei schulen neuer haue crucifiede þe lorde of glorie/ but as it is writen/ þe yze siþe not · ne þe ere herde · neþer it steþede into þe herte of man · what þingis god made reedy bifore: to hem þat louen hym/ forsoþe god schewide to vs by his spirit/ forsoþe þe spirit sekþ alle þingis: zhe þe depe þingis of god/ soþely who of men woot what þingis ben of man: no but þe spirit of man þat is in hym/ so & what þingis ben of god · no man knoweþ: no but þe spirit of god/ forsoþe we haue not receyuede þe spirit of þis worlde: but þe spirit þat is of god · þat we wite what þingis ben zouen to vs of god/ þe whiche þingis we speken · not in tauzte wordis of mannes wisdom: but in doctryne of þe spirit comparissonynge spiritual þingis to gostly men/ forsoþe a bestly man perceyueþ not þo þingis þat ben of þe spirit of god/ soþely it is folý to hym · & he may not vnderstone · for he is examynede (or assayed) gostly/ forsoþe

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>

## to ye corrintheis .i.

soþe a spiritual man demey alle þingis: & he is demyde (or dampnyde) of no man as it is writen/ who soþely knewe þe witte or þe lorde: or who tauzte hym/ for why we haue þe witte of crist//

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



And breþeren I myzt not speke to zou as to spiritual men: but as to fleyschely/ as to litil children in c̄st . I zaue to zou mylke drynke: not mete/ soþely zee myzte not zit vnderstonde: but neþer nowe soþely zee moþne . for zit zee ben fleyschely/ whanne enuye & strife is amonge zou: wher zee ben not fleyschely . & aftir man zee gon/ for whanne summe seiþ/ I soþely am of poul . anoder forsoþe I am of appollo: wher zee ben not men/ what þerfore is appollo: what forsoþe poul/ þei ben mynystris (or seruauntis) of hym to whom zee haue bileuede: & to eche man as god haþ zouen/ I plauntide . appollo watride: but god gafe encresynge/ and so neþer he þat plauntip is any þing . neþer he þat moystip . but god þat ȝyueþ encresynge/ forsoþe he þat plauntip & he þat moystip: ben any þing/ eche schal take his propre hijre: aftir his traueyl/ for we ben þe helpers of god . zee ben þe erþe tilyinge of god: zee ben þe bildynge of god/ aftir þe grace of god þat is zouen to me as a wise carpenter I sette þe foundement/ forsoþe anoder bildip aboue/ soþely eche man se how . & what þingis he bildip vpon/ soþely no man may sette any oþer foundement biſidis þat is sette: þe whiche is c̄st I h̄c/ forsoþe zif any man bilde ouer vpon þis foundement . golde siluer . precious stone . stickis . hay . stoble: euery mannes werke schal be schewide in fir/ what maner it is: þe fir schal proue/ zif þe werke of any man schal dwelle . þe whiche he bildip vpon: he schal receyue mede/ zif any mannes werke schal brenne: it schal suffre payrynge/ forsoþe he schal be saaf: so neþeles as by fir// ¶ Write not zee for zee ben þe temple of god: & þe spirit of god dwellip in zou/ forsoþe zif any schal defoule þe temple of god: god schal disparple (or distrupe) hym/ forsoþe þe temple

## to ye corrintheis . I .

ple of god is holp: þe whiche zee ben/ no man deceyue hym-  
self/ zif any man amonge zou is seen to be wise in þis worlde:  
be he made a fool · þat he be wise/ forsoþe þe wisdom of þis  
worlde: is folp anentis god/ forsoþe it is writen/ I schal cacche  
wise men in here wisdom (or futel gile)/ and este/ þe lorde haþ  
knownen þe þouztis of wisemen: for þei ben veyne/ and so no  
man glorie in men/ forsoþe alle þingis ben zoure · oþer poul ·  
oþer appollo · oþer cephas (þat is petre) oþer þe worlde · oþer lijf  
oþer deþ · oþer þingis present · oþer þingis to comynge/ forsoþe  
alle þingis ben zoure: zee forsoþe of crist · crist soþely of god//



**S**o a man gesse (or deme) vs as mynystris of crist & dis-  
penders of þe mynysteries of god/ nowe it is souzte  
here amonge þe dispenders: þat a man be founden  
trewe/ forsoþe to me it is for þe leste þing · þat I be  
demyde of zou or of mannes day/ but neþer I deme myself/  
soþely I am noþing guilty to my self: but not in þis þing I am  
iustificede/ forsoþe he þat demeth me is þe lorde/ & nyl zee deme  
bifore þe tyme · til þat þe lorde come: þe whiche & schal lizten  
þe hidde þingis of dirkenessis: & schal schewe þe counseylis of  
hertis · & þanne prepsynges schal be to eche man of god//  
¶ Soþely breþeren þis þing I haue transfiguride into me & in  
appollo: þat in vs zee lerne · leste þat ouer þat it is writen · one  
azenes anoder be inblowen (wih pride) for anoder man/ who  
forsoþe demeth þee? what soþely hast þou: þat þou hast not  
receyuyde: what gloriest þou as þou haddist not receyuede:  
nowe zee ben fulfildes: nowe zee ben made riche/ zee reg-  
nen wihouten vs · & I wolde zou regne: þat & we regnyde  
wih zou/ soþely I wene þat god schewide vs þe laste apostlis ·  
& made redy to þe deþ · for we ben made a spectacle to þe worlde  
& to aungels & to men/ we foolis for crist: zee forsoþe prudent  
in crist/ we sijk: zee forsoþe stronge/ zee noble: we forsoþe vn-  
noble/ til into þis houre & we hungren & þristen · & ben nakide ·  
& ben smyten wih buffetis: & we ben unstable & we traueplen

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>

¶ ¶

worchyng



## to ye corrintheis .i.

worchynge wiþ oure handis/ we ben curside & we blessen/ we  
suffren persecucoñ: & we susteynen (or abiden) longe/ we ben  
blasfemyde: & we bisechen/ as clensyngis of þis worlde we ben  
made: þe paryngis (or oute castyngis) of alle þingis til zit/ I  
wryte not þes þingis þat I confounde zou: but I amoneste (or  
warne) as my moſte derworþ sones// ¶ For whi zif zee haue ten  
þouſande of litil mayſtris in c̄ſt Jhū: but not many faderis/ for  
why in c̄ſt Jhū I haue gendride zou: by þe goſpel/ þerfore I  
preye zou be zee folowers of me: as & I of c̄ſt/ þerfore I ſente  
to zou tymothe · þat is my moſte derworþ ſone & feiþful in þe  
lorde · þe whiche ſchal moneste zou (or teche) my weyes þat  
ben in c̄ſt Jhū: as I teche euery where in eche chirche/ as I  
be not to come to zou: ſo ſumme ben inblowen (wiþ pride) I  
ſchal come to zou ſoone zif god ſchal wole/ and I ſchal knowe  
not þe worde of hem þat ben inblowen (wiþ pride): but þe  
vertue: ſoþely þe rewme of god is not in worde: but in vertue/  
what wole zee? ſhal I come to zou in a zerde: or in charite &  
in ſpirit of debonerneſſe (or myldeneneſſe)//

C<sup>m</sup> 5<sup>m</sup>



¶ Oute (or al maner) fornycacon is herde amonge  
zou: & ſuche fornycacon what maner neþer amonge  
heþen men ſo þat ſumman haue þe wife of his fa-  
dir/ and zee ben bolne wiþ pride · & not more had-  
den weplynge · þat he þat dide þis werke: be taken aweye fro  
þe mydle of zou/ ſoþely I aſſent in body but preſent in ſpirit:  
nowe haþ demyde as preſent in þe name of oure lorde Jhū c̄ſt:  
hym þat þus haþ wrouzte/ zou & my ſpirit gederide to gedir  
wiþ þe vertue of þe lorde Jhū · for to bitake ſuche a man to  
ſathanas · into þe perſchynge of flepyche · þat þe ſpirit be ſaaf  
in þe day of oure lorde Jhū criſt/ zoure glorpyng is not good/  
witen zee not for a litil ſourdowz corrupiþ al þe gobet/ clenſe  
zee oute olde ſourdowz: þat zee be newe ſpryngyng to gedir  
as zee ben þerfe (or wiþ outhen ſour þing)/ forſoþe c̄ſt is offride  
oure paſke/ and ſo ete we/ not in olde ſourdowz: neþer in  
ſourdowz

## to ye corrintheis .i.

fourdowz of malice & waywardeneste/ but in þerfe þingis of clenness & treuþe// I wrote to zou in a pistel þat zee ben not mengide wih lecchours/ soþely not wih lecchours of þis worlde· or coueytouse men· or rauenours or wih men seruyng to ydolis: ellis zee schulden haue gon oute of þis worlde/ nowe soþely I wrote to zou for to not be mengide (or comoune not)/ zif he þat is namyde a broþer amonge zou is a lecchoure· or coueytouse· or seruyng to ydolis· or curser· or ful of drunkenness· or rauenour: wih suche neþer take mete/ forsoþe what to me· for to deme of hem þat ben wih outen forþ/ wher zee deme not of hem þat ben wihinne/ for why god schal deme hem þat ben wih outen forþ/ do zee away euyl þing of zoure self//



Ar any of zou hauyng a cause azenes anoper· be demyde at wickide men: & not at seyntis (or holy men)/ wher zee witen not for seyntis schulen deme of þis worlde/ and zif þe worlde be demyde in zou: ben zee vnworþi þat demen of leste þingis/ witen zee not for we schulen deme aungelis· how myche more worldely þingis/ þerfore zif zee schulen haue worldely nedis: ordeyne zee þe contemptible men· (or of litil reputaçon) þat ben in þe chirche for to deme/ I seye to zoure schame/ so þer is not any wise man þat maye deme bitwixe a broþer & his broþer: but a broþer wih broþer stryueþ in doom· & þat anentis vnfeifful men/ nowe forsoþe trespass is algatis in zou: for zee haue domes amonge zou/ whi more taken zee not wronge/ whi not more suffre zee fraude/ but & zee done wronge· & frauden (or bigilen): & þat to breþeren/ wher zee witen not for wickide men schulen not welde þe kyngdom of god/ nyl zee erre/ neþer lecchours· neþer men seruyng to ydolis· neþer auoutrers· neþer nescþe· neþer lecchouris (or men þat done synne of sodom)· neþer þeefes· neþer coueytouse men (or nygardis)· neþer men ful of drunkennesse· neþer cursers· neþer rauenours: schulen welde

C<sup>m</sup> 6<sup>m</sup>

## to ye corrintheis .I.

welde þe kyngdom of god/ and soþely þes þingis zee weren  
 sum tyme/ but zee ben waschen · but zee ben halowide · but  
 zee ben iustificede in þe name of oure lorde Ihu crist/ and in þe  
 spirit of oure god// ¶ alle þingis ben leueful to me/ but I vn-  
 dre no mans power schal be brouzte doune/ mete to þe wombe ·  
 & þe wombe to metis/ forsoþe god schal destruye & þis & þat/  
 soþely þe body not to fornycacon/ but to þe lorde · & þe lorde  
 to þe body/ forsoþe & god reyside þe lorde/ & schal reyse vs in  
 his vertue// ¶ witen zee not for zoure bodyes ben membris  
 of cōst/ þerfore takynge þe membris of cōst · schal I make hem þe  
 membris of an hoore/ fer be it/ wher zee witen not · for þe þat  
 cleueþ to an hoore · is made one body/ soþely he seiþ/ þer schu-  
 len be two in one fleysche/ forsoþe he þat cleueþ to god/ is one  
 spirit/ flee zee fornycacon/ al synne what euer synne a man  
 schal do/ is wiþ outen þe body/ forsoþe he þat doiþ fornycacon/  
 synnes into his bodye/ wher zee witen not · for zoure membris  
 ben þe temple of þe holy gost · þat is in zou · whom zee haue  
 of god/ and zee ben not zoure owne/ forsoþe zee ben bouzte  
 wiþ greet prise/ glorie zee & bere zee god in zoure body//

C<sup>m</sup> 7<sup>m</sup>



Forsoþe of whiche þingis zee haue writen to me/ it is  
 good to a man to touche not a womman/ soþely for  
 fornycacon · eche man haue his owne wiif/ and eche  
 womman haue hire housbonde/ þe housbonde zilde  
 dette to þe wiif/ also soþely & þe wife to þe housbonde/ þe wom-  
 man haþ not power of hire body/ but þe housbonde/ also for-  
 soþe & þe housbonde haþ not power of his body/ but þe wom-  
 man/ nyl zee defraude to gedir · no but parauenture of con-  
 sent to a tyme/ þat zee ȝyue tente to preper/ and este turne zee  
 azen into þe same þing/ lest sathanas tempte zou for zoure  
 incontynence/ forsoþe I seye þis þing vp indulgence (or for-  
 ȝyuenesse)/ not vp þe comaundement/ soþely I wole alle men  
 to be as myself/ but eche man haþ his propre zifte of god/  
 soþely anoder þus/ but anoder þus/ forsoþe to not weddide &  
 widowis

## to ye corrintheis .i.

widowis it is good to hem: zif þei dwellen so · & as I/ for zif þei conteynen not hem self · (or ben not chaste): be þei weddide/ forsoþe it is better for to be weddide: þan for to be brente/ forsoþe to hem þat ben ioynede in matrymonye · I comaunde not I but þe lorde: þe wife for to not departe fro þe housbonde/ þat zif sche schal departe: for to dwelle unweddide · or for to be recounseylide to hire housbonde/ and þe housbonde forsake not þe wiif/ for whi to oþer I seye: not þe lorde/ zif any broþer haue an vnfeifful wiif · & sche consentiþ for to dwelle wiþ hym/ leue he (or forsake he) hir not/ and zif þe womman haþ an housbonde vnfeifful · & þis consentiþ for to dwelle wiþ hir: leue sche not þe housbonde/ forsoþe þe vnfeifful housbonde is halowide by þe feifful womman: & þe vnfeifful womman is halowide by þe feifful housbonde/ elles zoure chyl dren weren unclene: nowe forsoþe þei ben holy/ þat zif þe vnfeifful departiþ: departe he/ forsoþe þe broþer (or sister) is not suget to seruage/ in suche forsoþe god clepide vs in pees/ soþely wher of woste þou womman · zif þou schalt make þe man saaf: or wher of woste þou man · zif þou schalt make þe womman saaf: not but as þe lorde haþ departide to eche/ as god haþ clepide eche man: & so go he/ and as I teche in alle chirchis/ summan circumcidide is clepide: brynge he not to prepucie/ summan is clepide in prepucie: be he not circumcidide/ circumcisioun is nouzt · & prepucie is nouzt: but þe keepynge of þe comaundementis of god/ eche man in what clepyng he is clepide: in þat dwelle he/ þou seruaunt art clepide: be it not to charge to þee/ but zif þou mayste be free: more vse þou/ he þat in þe lorde is clepide seruaunt: is fre man of þe lorde/ also & he þat fre man is clepide · is þe seruaunt of crist/ wiþ prise zee ben bouzt: nyl zee be made seruauntis of men/ eche man þerfore in what clepyng he is clepide: in þat dwelle he anentis god// ¶ Forsoþe of virgyns I haue not precept of god/ soþely I gyue counseyl as haupnge mercy of þe lorde þat I be trewe/ þerfore I gesse (or deme) þis þing for to be good for  
present

## to ye corrintheis .i.

present nede: for it is gode to a man for to be so/ þou art bounden to wiif: nyl þou seek vnbjndynge/ þou art vnbunden fro a wiif: nyl þou seek a wiif/ forsoþe zif þou hast taken a wife: þou hast not synnede/ and zif a mayden be weddide: sche synnyde not/ neþeles suche schulen haue tribulacon of fleysche/ forsoþe I spare you/ and so breþeren I seye þis þing: þe tyme is schorte/ þe toþer is þat & þei þat haue wifes: be as not haupnge/ and þei þat wepen: as not wepyng/ and þei þat ioyen: as not ioyinge/ and þei þat bien: as not haupnge/ and þei þat vsen þis worlde: as þei þat vsen it not/ forsoþe þe fygure of þis worlde passyþ/ forsoþe I wole you for to be wif outhen bisynesse/ soþely he þat is wif outhen wiif: is bisie what þingis ben of þe lorde: how he schal plese to god/ forsoþe he þat is wif a wiif is bisie what þingis ben of þe worlde: how he schal plese þe wife: & he is departide/ and a womman vntwedde & a mayden: þenkiþ what þingis ben of þe lorde: þat sche be holy in body & spirit/ forsoþe sche þat is weddide: þenkiþ what þingis ben of þe worlde: how sche may plese hire housbonde// Soþely I seye þes þingis to youre profite: not þat I caste to you a snare: but to þat þat is honest & zyueth facultee (or besynesse) wif outhen lettynge: for to biseche to þe lorde/ soþely zif any deme hym self for to be seyn foul on his virgyn: þat sche is wel olde: & so it bihoueth þat it be done: do sche what sche wole: he synneth not: zif sche be weddide/ for whi he hath ordeynede stable (or stidfast) in herte: not haupnge nede: but haupnge power of his wille: & hath demyde in his herte þis þing: for to kepe þe virgyne: doih wel/ þerfore he þat ioyneþ his virgyne in matrymonye: doih wel/ and he þat ioyneþ not doih better/ þe womman is bounden to þe lawe: how myche tyme hire housbonde lyueþ/ þat zif hire housbonde schal slepe (þat is die): sche is delyueride fro þe lawe: be sche weddide to whom sche wole onely in þe lorde/ forsoþe sche schal be more blesside: zif sche schal dwelle þus after my counseyl/ forsoþe I wene þat I haue þe spirit of god//

Forsoþe

## to ye corrintheis .i.



Forsoþe of þes þingis þat ben offride to ydolis (þat ben symulacris made to mannes likenesse:) we witen for alle we haue kunnyng/soþely science (or kunnyng) inblowip (wip pride): charite edifieþ/ forsoþe zif any man gesse (or deme) hym for to wite any þing: he haþ not knowen how it bihouep hym for to kunne/ forsoþe zif any man louep god: þis is knowen of hym/ forsoþe of metis þat ben offride to ydolis: we witen for an ydol is no þing in þe worlde · & þat þere is no god no but one/ for whi & zif þer ben þat ben seyde goddis · oþer in heuene · oþer in erþe · forsoþe þer ben many goddis & many lordis: neþeles to vs is one god þe fadir · of whom alle þingis · & we in hym · & one lorde ihū c̄st · by whom alle þingis · & we bi hym: but not in alle men is kunnyng/soþely summe wip conscience of ydol · til nowe eten as þing offride to ydolis · & here conscience is vnclene: whanne it is sijk/ mete comendiþ vs not to god/ neþer forsoþe we schulen not ete: neþer zif we eten · we schulen abounde/ se zee forsoþe lest þe parauenture þis zoure licence (or leue) be made hurtynge (or sclaundre) to sijk men (or freel)/ soþely zif any man schal se hym þat haþ kunnyng · restyng in a place where ydolis ben worschipide: wher his conscience siþ it is sijk schal not be edifiede for to ete þingis offride to ydolis: & þe sijk broþer for whom crist diede: schal perische in þi kunnyng/ forsoþe þus zee synnyng into breþeren · & smytynge here sijk conscience: synnen in c̄st/ wherfore zif mete sclaundre my broþer: I schal not ete fleysche · into wip outhen ende · lest I sclaundre my broþer//

C<sup>m</sup> 8<sup>m</sup>



Wher I am not free · am I not apostle? wher I siþe not crist ihū oure lorde? wher zee ben not my werke in þe lorde? and þouz to oþer I am not apostle: but neþeles to zou I am/ for whi zee ben þe signacle (or lital signe) of myn apostlehed in þe lorde/ my defense to hem þat aren

C<sup>m</sup> 9<sup>m</sup>

## to ye corrintheis . i .

aren me: is þis/ wher we hane not power for to leede aboute a womman sister · as & oþer apostlis & breþeren of þe lorde · & cephas (þat is petre) ⁊ or I alone & barnabas · hane not power for to worche þes þingis/ who firtis (or holdiþ knyztþode) any tyme wiþ his owne soudis/ who plauntiþ a vynezerde · & etiþ not of his fructe/ who feediþ (or lesowiþ) a floce: & etiþ not of þe mylke of þe floce/ wher aftir man I seye þes þingis/ forsoþe it is writen in þe lawe of moyses/ þou schalt not bynde þe mouþ of þe ore þrescheynge (or traueþlynge) wheþer of oren is charge to god/ wheþer for vs soþely he seiþ þes þingis/ for why for vs þei ben writen · for he þat eriþ: oweþ to eren in hope/ and he þat þreschiþ (or traueþliþ): in hope for to perseque fructis/ forsoþe zif we sowen spiritual þingis to zou: is it grete zif we repen zoure fleyschely þingis/ zif oþer ben parteners of oure power: whi not raper we/ but we vsen not þis power · but we susteynen (or suffren) alle þingis · þat we ȝue not lettynge (or sclaundre) to þe euuangelie of c̃st/ witen zee not for þei þat worchen in þe sacrarie (þat is place where holy þingis ben kepte) ⁊ eten þo þingis þat ben of þe sacrarie: & þo þat seruen to þe auter: taken parte wiþ þe auter/ so & þe lorde ordeynede to hem þat tellen þe gospel: for to lyue on þe gospel/ forsoþe I vside noon of þes þingis/ soþely I wrote not þes þingis: þat þei be done so in me/ forsoþe it is gode to me more for to dye: þan any man auoyde my glorie/ for whi zif I schal preche þe gospel: glorie is not to me/ forsoþe nede liþ to me/ forsoþe woo to me: zif I schal not euuangelise/ forsoþe zif I willynge do þis þing: I haue mede/ soþely zif azenes my wille: dispensacon is bitaken to me/ what þerfore is myn hire (or mede) ⁊ þat I prechynge þe gospel: putte þe gospel wiþ outen spense takynge (or sustenaunce)/ þerfore þat I mysuse not my power in þe gospel/ for whi when I was fre of alle men: I made me seruaunt of alle men · þat I schulde wyne mo men/ and to iewes I am made as a iewe: þat I schulde wyne iewes/ to hem þat ben vndre þe lawe: as I were vndre þe  
þe

## to ye corrintheis .i.

þe lawe · whan I was not vndre þe lawe · þat I schulde wynne  
 hem þat weren vndir þe lawe · to hem þat weren wiþ outen  
 lawe · as I were wiþ outen lawe · whanne I was not wiþ ou-  
 ten lawe of god · but I was in þe lawe of c̃st · þat I schulde  
 wynne hem þat weren wiþ outen þe lawe/ I am made s̃jk to  
 s̃jk men · þat I schulde wynne s̃jk men/ to alle men I am  
 made alle þingis · þat I schulde make alle men saaf/ forsoþe I  
 do alle þingis for þe gospel · þat I be made partener of it//  
**¶** Witen zee not þat þei þat rennen in a furlonge · alle forsoþe  
 rennen · but one takih þe prise/ so renne zee · þat zee take/ eche  
 man þat strifeth in s̃zte · absteneth hym fro alle þingis/ and þei  
 forsoþe þat þei take a corruptible crowne · we forsoþe vncor-  
 rupte/ þerfore I renne so · not as into vncerteyn þing · þus I  
 s̃zt not as betynge þe eyre · but I chastise my bodye & brynge  
 it into seruage · lest þe parauenture whanne I haue prechide to  
 oþer · I my self be made reprouable//



**S**hely breþeren I nyl zou for to vnknowe · for alle  
 oure faderis weren vndre a cloude/ and alle passiden  
 þe see · & alle ben baptiside in moyses · in þe cloude  
 & in þe see/ and alle eten þe same spiritual breed · &  
 alle drunken þe same spiritual drynke/ forsoþe þei drunken of  
 þe spiritual · a stoon folowynge hem/ forsoþe þe stoon was c̃st ·  
 but not in ful mange of hem · it was wel plesaunt to god/ for  
 whi þei ben caste doun in þe deserte/ forsoþe þes þingis ben done  
 in fygure of vs · þat we be not coueyters of euylis · as & þei  
 coueytiden/ neþer be zee made ydolatrers (þat is worschipers  
 of false matometis) · as summe of hem · as it is writen/ þe pu-  
 ple satte for to ete & drynke · & þei haue risen vp for to plepe/  
 neþer do we fornycacon · as summe of hem diden fornycacon ·  
 & þre & twenty housandis fellen · (or dieden) in one day/ neþer  
 tempte we crist as summe of hem temptiden · and perischiden  
 of serpentis/ neþer grucche zee as summe of hem grucchiden ·  
 and þei perischiden of þe waster (or distruper)/ forsoþe alle þes  
 þingis

C<sup>m</sup> 10<sup>m</sup>



## to ye corrintheis .i.

þingis fellen to hem in figure/ soþely þei ben writen to oure correccōn (or amendynge): into whom þe endis of þe worlde hane come// ¶ And so he þat gesliþ hym for to stonde: se he þat he falle not/ temptacōn take not zou: no but mannes/ forsoþe god is trewe þe whiche schal not suffre zou for to be temptide: ouer þat þat zee motwone/ but he schal make wiþ þe temptacōn also purueaunte: þat zee motwone susteyne// ¶ Therefore zee moſte derworþe to me: flee zee fro þe worschippynge of ydolis/ as to prudente men I speec: zee zou self deme þat þing þat I seye/ þe cuppe of blessinge þe whiche we blessen: wher it is not þe comunynge of c̄stis blode: and þe breed þe whiche we breken: wher it is not þe delynge (or partetakyng) of þe body of þe lorde: for one breed & one body we manye ben/ alle we þat taken part of one breed & of one cuppe// ¶ Se zee isrl astir þe flesche/ wher þei þat eten of̄tis (or sacrifices): ben not parteners of þe auter: what þerfore seye I: þat þing offride to ydolis is any þing: or þat þe ydol is any þing: but þo þingis þat heþen men offren: þei offren to deuplis & not to god// ¶ Forsoþe I nyl zou for to be made felowis of fendis/ for zee motwone not drynke þe cuppe of þe lorde: & þe cuppe of fendis/ zee motwone not be parteners of þe borde of þe lorde: & of þe borde of fendis/ wher we suen by enuye þe lorde/ wher we ben strengier þan he/ alle þingis ben leueful to me: but not alle þingis speden/ alle þingis ben leueful to me: but not alle þingis edifiē/ no man seek þat þing þat is his owne: but þat þing þat is of anoper/ alle þing þat cometh in þe bocherie (or in þe plater) ete zee: no þing aringe for conscience/ þe erþe & þe plente of it: is of þe lorde/ forsoþe zif any of vnfeihful (or heþen men) clepiþ zou to soper: & zee wolen go: alle þing þat is sette to zou ete zee: no þing aringe for conscience/ zif any man soþely schal seye: þis þing is offride to ydolis: nyl zee ete for hym þat schewide & for conscience/ forsoþe I seye not þi conscience: but of anoper/ soþely wherto is my liberte (or fredom) demyde of anoper mannes conscience: þerfore zif I take parte wiþ grace: what am I blasfemyde.

## to ye corrintheis .i.

blasfemyde · for þat I do graces (or þankyngis) ⁊ herfore wher zee eten or drynken or done any oþer þing · do zee alle þingis into þe glorie of god/ be zee wiþ outen offencon̄ (or sclaundre) to iewes & heþen men · & to þe chirche of god · as & I by alle þingis plese to alle men/ not seekynge what is profitable to me · but þat þat to many men · þat þei ben made saaf//

**B**E zee folowers of me · as & I of c̄st/ forsoþe breþeren C<sup>m</sup> II<sup>m</sup>  
 [I preise] zou · þat by alle þingis zee ben myndeful of me · & as I bitoke to zou my comaundementis zee kepen/ forsoþe I wole zou for to wite · þat c̄st is þe heed of eche man/ forsoþe þe heede of þe womman · is þe man/ forsoþe þe heed of c̄st · god/ eche man preynginge or prophecyinge · þe heed hilide · defouliþ his heed/ forsoþe eche womman preynginge or prophecyinge · þe heede not hilide · defouliþ hire heed/ forsoþe it is one · as zif sche be made ballide/ for zif a womman be not beplide (or coueride) · be sche pollide/ for zif it is foule þing to a womman to be pollide or made ballide · beple (or hijde) sche hire heede/ soþely a man schal not beple (or hijde) his hede · for he is þe ymage & glorie of god/ soþely a womman is þe glorie of man/ soþely a man is not of þe womman · but þe womman of þe man/ and forsoþe þe man is not made for þe womman · but þe womman for þe man/ herefore þe womman schal haue a beple on hire hede · & for aungels/ neþeles neþer þe man wiþ outen womman · neþer þe womman wiþ outen man in þe lorde/ for whi as þe womman of man · so & þe man by womman/ forsoþe alle þingis of god/ zee zoure self deme/ bicometh (or bisemeth) a womman not beplide (or coueride) prey god ⁊ neþer þe kynde it self · techiþ vs/ forsoþe þat zif a man norische longe heer · it is euyl fame (or sclaundre) to hym/ but zif a womman norische longe heer · it is glorie to hire for heris ben zouen to hire for beple (or couerynge)/ forsoþe zif any man is seen for to be ful of strife amonge zou · we haue not suche custom · neþer þe chirche of god/ soþely þis þing

## to ye corrintheis .I.

þing I comaunde · not preysynge þat zee come to gedir not into better þing; but into worse/ firste forsoþe zou comynge to gedir into chirche; I here departyngis (or dissencōns) for to be · & of partie I bileue/ for whi it bihouep heresies for to be; þat þei whiche be prouede · be made knowen to zou/ þerfore zou comynge to gedir into one; nowe it is not for to ete to lordis soper/ forsoþe eche man bifore takip his soper for to ete/ and soperly anoper is hungry; anoper forsoþe is drunken/ wher zee hane not housis for to ete & drynke · or zee dispisen þe chirche of god · & confounden hem þat hane not; what schal I seye to zou; I preyse zou; in þis þing I preyse zou not// ¶ forsoþe I haue taken of þe lorde þat þing þe whiche & I haue bitaken to zou/ for þe lorde Ihu · in what nyzt he was bitrayede; tooke breed & doinge graces (or þankis); he brake & seyde take zee & ete zee; þis is my body · þe whiche schal be bitrayede for zou/ do zee þis þing into my mynde/ also he took þe cuppe aftir he hadde soupyde; seyinge/ þis cuppe is þe newe testament in my blood/ do zee þis þing · how ofte euer zee schulen drynke into my mynde/ soperly how ofte euer zee schulen ete þis breede & drynke þe cuppe; zee schulen schewe þe deep of þe lorde · til he come/ and so who euer schal ete þe breed or drynke þe cuppe of þe lorde vnworþily he schal be gilty of þe body & blood of þe lorde/ forsoþe proue a man hym self; & so ete he of þe ilke breed & drynke of þe cuppe/ forsoþe he þat etip & drynkip vnworþily; etip & drynkip doom (or dampnacoñ) to hym; not wisely demynge þe body of þe lorde/ þerfore amonge zou many sick & vnstronge or feble; and many slepen (or dien)/ for zif we demyden wisely oure self; forsoþe we schulen not be demyde/ soperly þe while we ben demyde of þe lorde; we ben chastifide · þat we be not dampnyde wip þis worlde/ and so my breþeren whan zee comen to gedir for to ete; abide zee to gedir/ zif any man hungry; ete he at home; þat he come not to gedir into doom/ soperly I schal dispose oþer þingis; whanne I schal come//

¶ Forsoþe

## to ye corrintheis .i.



C<sup>m</sup> 12<sup>m</sup>

**F**orsoke þe spiritual þingis · breþeren I nyl zou for  
to vnknoꝝe/ soþely zee witen for whanne zee weren  
heþen men: as zee weren ledde goinge to doumbe  
symulacris/ þerfore I make knowen to zou þat no  
man spekyng in þe spirit of god: seiþ departynge fro Ihu/ and  
no man maye seye þe lorde ihu is: no but in þe holy gost/ soþe-  
ly departynge of graces ben: forsoke þe same spirit/ and de-  
partynge of serupnge: forsoke þe same lorde/ and depart-  
ynge of worschippynge ben: forsoke þe same god þat worchþ  
alle þingis in alle þingis/ forsoke to eche man þe schewynge  
of spirit is zouen to profite/ to anoþer forsoke bi spirit: þe worde  
of wisdom is zouen/ to anoþer soþely: þe worde of kunnyng  
aftir þe same spirit/ seiþ to anoþer: grace & helþes in one spi-  
rit to anoþer: þe worchynge of vertues/ to anoþer prophecie/  
to anoþer discrecon (or verrey knowynge) of spiritis/ to ano-  
þer kyndis of tungis (or langagis)/ to anoþer interpretyng  
(or expounyng) of wordis/ forsoke alle þes þingis one in þe  
same spirit worchþ: departynge to eche by hem self as he wole//

**I** Soþely as þer is one body & haþ many membris · forsoke  
alle þe membris of þe body whanne þei ben manye: ben one  
body: so & c̄st/ and soþely in one spirit alle we ben baptiside in-  
to one body: oþir iewes · oþer heþen men · oþer seruauntis ·  
oþir fre: and alle we hane drunken in one spirit/ for whi & þe  
body is not one membre: but manye/ zif þe foot schal seye: for  
I am not þe hande · I am not of þe body: not þerfore is it not  
of þe body/ and zif þe ere schal seye: for I am not þe yze · I am  
not of þe body/ not þerfore it is not of þe body/ zif al þe body be  
þe yze: where is herynge/ and zif al þe body be herynge: where  
is smellynge/ now forsoke god has putte membris: & eche of hem  
in þe body as he wolde/ þat zif alle weren one membre: where þe  
body/ but now soþely many membris: soþely one body/ forsoke  
þe yze schal not now seye to þe hande: I haue no nede of þi  
werke/ or este þe hed to þe feet: zee ben not necessariē to me/ but  
myche

## to ye corrintheis .i.

myche more þo þat ben seen for to be more lyk (or lower) membris of þe body: ben more nedeful/ and to hem þat we gessen for to be vnnobler membris of þe body: we ȝyuen more honoure in cumpas/ and þo membris þat ben vnhonest: haue more honeste/ forsoþe oure honest membris · of none haue nede: but god tempide þe body ȝyuyng more worschip to it to whom it saylide: þat debate be not in þe body: but þat þe membris be bisie into þe same þing for eche oþer/ and ȝif one membre suffriþ any þing: alle membris suffren þer wiþ/ oþer ȝif one membre glorieþ: alle membris ioyen togedir/ forsoþe zee ben þe body of crist: and membris of membre/ and soþely god putte summe in þe chirche/ firste apostlis · þe secounde tyme prophetis/ þe þridde techers aftirwarde vertues · aftirwarde graces of helyngis · gouernaylis (or gouernynge) kyndis of langagis: interpretacons of wordis/ wher alle ben apostlis/ wher alle prophetis/ wher alle techers/ wher alle vertues/ wher alle men haue grace of helyngis/ wher alle speken wiþ langagis/ wher alle interprete (or expounen)/ forsoþe sue zee þe better gostly ȝiftis/ and ȝit I schewe to ȝow a more excellent (or worþi) weye//

C<sup>m</sup> 13<sup>m</sup>



If I speke wiþ tungis of men & aungelis · soþely I haue no charite: I am made as brasle sounyng · or a tymbal tynkyng/ and ȝif I haue prophecie & haue knowen alle mysteries & al kunnyng or science · & ȝif I haue al feiþ · so þat I ouerbere hillis (fro o place into an oþer) · forsoþe ȝif I schal not haue charite: I am nouzt/ and ȝif I schal departe alle my goodis into metis of pore men · & ȝif I schal bitake my body · so þat I brenne · forsoþe ȝif I schal not haue charite: it profiteþ to me no þing/ charite is pacient/ it is benyngne (or of good wille)/ charite enuyeth not/ it doith not gile · it is not inblowen (wiþ pride) · it is not ambicius (or coueytouse) of worschipis · it sekith not þo þingis þat ben here owne/ it is not stiride to wrapþe · it þenkiþ not euyl · it ioyeth not on wickidnesse · forsoþe it ioyeth to gedir to treuþe/ it

## to ye corrintheis .i.

it suffriþ alle þingis · it bileueþ alle þingis/ it hopiþ alle þingis · it susteyneþ alle þingis/ charite falliþ not doune/ wheþer prophecies schulen be voydide · oþer langagis schulen ceese · oþer science schulen be distrupede/ forsoþe of partie wee hane knowen; and of partie we prophecien/ forsoþe whanne þat schal come þat is parfite; þat þing þat is of partie schal be avoydide/ whanne I was a litil childe; I spac as a litil childe · I vnderstode as a litil childe/ forsoþe whanne I was made a man; I avoydide þo þingis þat weren of a litil childe/ forsoþe we seen now by a myrour in dirkenesse; þanne forsoþe face to face/ now I knowe of partie; þanne forsoþe I schal knowe · as & I am knowen/ nowe forsoþe dwellen seiþ · hope · charite/ þes þre; forsoþe þe more of hem is charite//



See zee charite · loue zee spiritual þingis; nowe forsoþe þat zee prophecie/ forsoþe he þat spekiþ in tunge; spekiþ not to men but to god/ forsoþe no man heriþ/ soþely þe spirit spekiþ mysteries/ forwhi he þat prophecieþ; spekiþ to men to edificaciō · & to monestynge & confortynge/ he þat spekiþ in tunge; edificieþ hym self/ forsoþe he þat prophecieþ; edificieþ þe chirche of god/ forsoþe I wole zou alle for to speke in tungis; but more for to prophecie/ for whi he þat prophecieþ; is more þan he þat spekiþ in tungis (or langagis); no but parauenture he interprete (or declare) · þat þe chirche take edificaciōn/ nowe forsoþe breþeren zif I schal come to zou spekyng in tungis; what schal I profite · no but zif I schal speke to zou · oþer in reuelaciōs oþer in science · oþer in prophecie · oþer in techynge; neþeles þo þingis þat ben wiþ outen soule (or lijf) ȝpuyng voyses · oþer pipe · oþer harpe · no but zif þei schulen ȝpue distyncciō of sounyngis; how schal it be conde þat is songen · oþer þat is harpide; and soþely zif þe trumpe zife vncerteyn voyses; who schal make hym self redy to þe batayle; so & no but zee schulen ȝpue an open worde by tunge; how schal þat þat is seyde be knowen; soþely zee schulen be

C<sup>m</sup> 14<sup>m</sup>

## to ye corrintheis .i.

be spekyng in þe eyre · so many as ben tungis (or langagis) in þis worlde · & no þing is wip outhen voyce/ þerfore zif I schal not knowe þe vertue of voyce · I schal be to hym to whom I schal speke a barbar (or not vnderstonde) · & he þat spekiþ to me a barbar/ so & zee for zee ben louers of spiritis · to þe edificaciō of þe chirche: seeke þat zee be plenteouse/ & þerfore he þat spekiþ in tunge · preye he þat he interprete (or expoune)/ for whi zif I preye in tunge my spirit preyeþ/ forsoþe my mynde or reson: is wip outhen fruyte/ þerfore what þing is? I schal preye in spirit: I schal preye in mynde (or resoun)/ I schal seye psalme in spirit: I schal seye psalme in mynde (or resoun)/ for whi zif þou schalt blesse in spirit: who fulfilliþ þe place of an ydiot (or vnderide) man: how schal he seye amen vpon þe blessinge · for he woot not what þou seyst/ for whi þou soþely dost wel graces (or þankyngis) but an oþer man is not edifiede// ¶ I do graces to my god: for I speke in þe langagis of alle zou/ but in þe chirche I wole speke fyue wordis in my witte þat I teche oþer men: þan ten þousande of wordis in tunge// ¶ Breþeren nyl zee be made chyldren in wittis: but in malice be zee litil/ forsoþe in wittis be zee parfite/ soþely in þe lawe it is writen/ for in oþer tungis & in oþer lippis I schal speke to þis puple · & neþer so it schal here me seiþ þe lorde/ and so langagis ben into token · not to feiþful men: but to men outhen of þe feiþ/ forsoþe prophecies not to men outhen of þe feiþ: but to feiþful men/ þerfore zif al þe chirche come togedir into one · & alle men speken in tungis · soþely zif ydiotis entren (or men outhen of þe feiþ): wher þei seyn not · what ben zee wode? forsoþe zif alle men prophecien · forsoþe zif any vnfeiþful man or ydiot entre: he is conuyt of alle · he is wisely demyde of alle/ forsoþe þe hidde þingis of his herte ben knownen/ and so he fallynge doune into þe face: schal worschip god · schewinge verreyly þat god is in zou/ þerfore breþeren what is [ ] whanne zee comen togedir · eche of zou haþ a psalme · he haþ techynge · he haþ apocalips (or reuelaciō) · he haþ tunge · he haþ interpretynge (or expounynge): be  
alle

## to ye corrintheis .i.

alle þingis done to edificacōn/ wheþer a man spekiþ in tunge  
aftir two or as myche þre & by parties: þat one interprete/ for-  
soþe zif þer be not an interpretour: be he stille (or speke not)  
in þe chirche/ soþely speke he to hym self & to god/ soþely pro-  
phetis two or þre seye: & oþer wisely deme/ þat zif any þing  
schal be schewide to one sittynge: be þe former stille/ forsoþe  
zee mōwne prophece alle by eche by hym self · þat alle men  
lerne · & alle monest/ and þe spiritis of prophetis: ben sugettis  
to prophetis/ soþely god is not of dissencioun: but of pees/ as &  
in alle chirchis of holy men I preche/ wymmē in chirchis be  
stille/ soþely it is not suffride to hem for to speke: but for to be  
suget as þe lawe seiþ/ forsoþe zif þei wolen any þing lerne: at  
home are þei here housbondis/ forsoþe it is foul þing to a wom-  
man · for to speke in þe chirche/ wheþer of zou þe worde of god  
came forþ/ or to zou al one it came/ zif any man is seen for  
to be a prophete or spiritual: knowe he þo þingis þat I write  
to zou · for þei ben comaundementis of þe lorde/ forsoþe zif any  
man unknowiþ: he schal be unknowen/ and so breþeren loue  
zee for to prophece · & nyl zee forbede for to speke in tungis/  
forsoþe be alle þingis done honestly & vp ordre in zou//



Soþely breþeren I make known þe gospel to zou ·  
þe whiche I haue prechide to zou · þe whiche & zee  
haue taken in whiche & zee stonden · by whiche & zee  
ben sauede/ by whiche resounē I haue prechide to  
zou zif zee holden: zif zee hane not bileuede ydilly/ forsoþe I  
bitoke to zou in þe firste · þat þing þat & I took · for crist was  
deade for oure synnes aftir þe scriptures · & for he was biriede ·  
& for he roos azen in þe þridde day aftir scripturis · & for he was  
seen to cephas (þat is petre) · & aftir þis þing to elleuene · aftir-  
warde he was seen to mo þan fyue hundride breþeren to gedir ·  
of þe whiche many dwellen til to zit/ forsoþe summe haue slepte  
(or diede)/ aftirwarde he was seen to James: aftirwarde to  
alle þe apostlis/ forsoþe at þe laste of alle: he was seene to me ·

C<sup>m</sup> 15<sup>m</sup>



## to ye corrintheis .i.

as to a myfborne childe/ forfope I am þe leste of apostlis · þat  
am not worþi for to be clepide apostle: for I pursuede þe chirche  
of god: forfope by þe grace of god · I am þat þing þat I am/  
and his grace was not boyde (or hidil) in me: but I traueylide  
more plenteuouſly þan alle þei/ forfope not I: but þe grace of  
god wiþ me/ ſoþely wheþer I wheþer þei: ſo we hane prechide:  
& ſo þei hane bileuede/ forfope zif c̄ſt is prechide · þat he roos  
azen fro deade (ſpiritis)/ how ſeyn ſumme in zou for þe azen-  
ryſynge of deade men is not: forfope zif þe azen ryſynge of  
deade men is not: neþer c̄ſt roos/ ſoþely zif c̄ſt roos not: oure  
prechynge is veyn oure ſeiþ is veyne/ forfope & we ben founden  
faſte witneſſis of god · for we hane ſeyde witneſſynge azenes  
god · þat he reſyde criſt whom he reſyde not: zif deade men  
riſen not azen/ for whi zif deade men riſen not azen: neþer c̄ſt  
roos azen/ þat zif c̄ſt roos not azen: oure ſeiþ is veyne/ forfope  
zit zee ben in zoure ſynnes/ þerfore þei þat ſlepten (or dieden)  
in criſt: haue periſchide/ zif in þis liſt onely we ben hopynge in  
criſt: we ben more wrecchis þan alle men/ now forfope c̄ſt roos  
azen fro deade (men): þe firſte fruytis of ſlepyng (men or di-  
ynge)/ for ſoþely by a man deþ: and by a man azen riſynge of  
deade men/ and as in adam alle men dien: ſo in criſt alle men  
ſchulen be quykentyde/ eche man forfope in his ordre/ firſte fruy-  
tis c̄ſt · aftirwarde þei þat ben of c̄ſt · þat byleuen in þe comyng  
of criſt/ aftirwarde an ende/ whanne he ſchal bitake þe kyngdom  
of god & to þe fadir · whanne he ſchal abyde al pryncchode · &  
power & vertue/ ſoþely it bihoueþ hym for to regne: til he putte  
alle his enemyes vnder his feet/ forfope at þe laſte þe enemye  
deþ ſchal be diſtrypede/ forfope he haþ made ſujet alle þingis  
vnder his feet/ forfope whanne he ſeiþ · alle þingis be ſugettis to  
hym: wiþ outen doute outaken hym þat ſugettide alle þingis  
to hym/ ſoþely whanne alle þingis ſchulen be ſuget to hym:  
þanne he þe ſone ſchal be ſuget to hym þat ſugettide alle þingis  
to hym · þat god be alle þingis in alle þingis/ elles what ſchulen  
þei done þat ben baptiſide for deade men · zif in alle maner ·  
deade

## to ye corrintheis . i .

deade men risen not azen. wherto & we ben in perel euery houre. eche day I dye. for zoure glorie breperen. þe whiche glorie I haue in cr̃st I hūoure lorde. zif vp man I haue fouzten to beestis at ephes. what profitiþ it to me. zif deade men risen not azen. ete we & drynke we. to morn forsoþe we schulen dye. nyl zee be deceyuede. forsoþe euyl spechis corruppen (or distruyen) gode þewis (or vertues). awake zee iuste men. and nyl zee synne. forsoþe summe haue ignoraunce of god. to reuerence I speke to zou but summan seiþ. how schulen deade men rise azen. or in what manner body schulen þei come. vnwiseman. þat þing þat þou sowest. is not quykenyde. no but it die firste. and þat þing þat þou sowest. not þe body þat is to come þou sowest. but a nakide corne. as of whete or of summe of þe oþer. forsoþe god zyueþ to it a body as he wole. and to eche of seedis þe propre body. ¶ not eche fleytsche þe same fleytsche. but forsoþe an oþer of men. an oþer soþely of beestis. & oþer forsoþe of briddis. an oþer forsoþe of fischis. & heuenely bodies & erþely bodies. but forsoþe an oþer glorie of heuenely bodies. an oþer forsoþe of erþely. an oþer clerenesse of þe sunne. an oþer clerenesse of þe mone. an oþer clerenesse of sternes. forsoþe a sterne dyuersiþ fro a sterne in clerenesse. so & þe azen risynge of deade men. it is sownen in corrupcon. it schal rise in vncorruptcon. it is sownen in vnnobley. it schal rise in glorie. it is sownen in infirmyte. it schal rise in vertue. it is sownen a beestly body. it schal rise a spiritual body. zif þer is a beestly body. þer is & a spiritual body as it is writen. þe firste man adam is made into a soule lyuyng. and þe laste adam into a spirit quykenyng. but not firste þat þat is spiritual. but þat þat is beestly. aftirwarde þat þat is spiritual. þe firste man of erþe. erþely. þe secounde man of heuene. heuenely. what maner þe erþely man. suche þe erþely men. and what maner þe heuenely man. suche þe heuenely men. þerfore as we hane borne þe ymage of þe erþely man. here we & þe ymage of þe heuenely. breperen I seye þis þing. for fleytsche & blood mowne not welde þe kyngdom

## to ye corrintheis .i.

dom of god · neþer corrupcon ſchal welde incorrupcon/ lo I ſeþe to zou myſterie (or pryuate) of holy þingis/ forſoþe alle we ſchulen riſe azen/ but not alle we ſchulen be inchaungide/ in a moment · in þe ſmytynge of an yze/ in þe laſte trumpe/ forſoþe þe trumpe ſchal ſynge/ & deade men þat ben in c̃ſt ſchulen riſe azen/ þe firſte incorrupte/ & we ſchulen be inchaungide/ forſoþe it bihoueþ þis corruptible þing cloþe incorrupcon/ and þis deadely þing/ for to cloþe vndeadeþneſſe/ forſoþe whan þis deadely þing ſchal cloþe vndeadeþneſſe/ þanne ſchal be made þe worde þat is writen/ deþ is ſouþide vp in victorie/ deþ/ where is þi victorie/ deþ/ where is þi pricke/ forſoþe þe pricke of deþ/ is ſynne/ forſoþe þe vertue of ſynne is lawe/ forſoþe þankyngis to god þat ȝaue to vs victorie/ by oure lorde Ihu c̃ſt þat was deade for vs/ and ſo my derworþe breþeren · be ȝee ſtedefaſte & vnmouable/ beingeplenteuouſe in werke of þe lorde/ euermore wytynge þat oure traueyl is not ydil in þe lorde//

C<sup>m</sup> 16<sup>m</sup>



**F**orſoþe of þe coledtis (or gederynge of money) · þat ben made into ſeyntis · as I ordeynede in þe chirchis of galathie/ ſo & do ȝee by one of þe wike/ eche of zou kepe (or laye vp) at hym ſelf · keepynge þat ſchal plece to hym · þat not whanne I ſchal come/ þanne be made coledtis/ forſoþe whanne I ſchal be preſent · whom ȝee ſchulen proue by epiſtliſ · hem I ſchal ſende for to paſſitely bere ȝoure grace into irlm̄/ for ȝif it ſchal be worþi þat & I go/ þei ſchulen go wiþ me/ ſoþely I ſchal come to zou/ whanne I ſchal paſſe by macedonye/ ſoþely parauenture I ſchal dwelle at zou · or alſo dwelle by wynter/ þat & ȝee leede me whidir euer I ſchal go/ ſoþely I wille not now ſe zou in paſſynge/ forſoþe I hope ſumwhat of tyme for to dwelle at zou/ ȝif god ſchal ſuffre/ forſoþe I ſchal dwelle at ephes/ til to witsuntede/ ſoþely a greet dore & euydent (or open) is openyde to me/ & many aduerſaries/ ſoþely ȝif tymothe ſchal come/ ſe ȝee þat he be wiþ outen drede at zou/ for þe worchip þe werke of þe lorde/

as

## to ye corrintheis .i.

as & I/ herfore no man dispise hym/ forsoþe leede zee hym in  
pees: þat he come to me/ forsoþe I abide him wiþ breþeren//  
**¶** forsoþe I make knowen to zou of appollo · for I preyde hym  
myche · þat he schulde come to zou wiþ breþeren/ and soþely it  
was not his wille þat he schulde come now/ forsoþe he schal  
come whan it schal be able to hym/ wake zee & stonde zee in  
feih: do zee manly · & be zee confortide in þe lorde: and be alle  
zoure þingis done in charite/ forsoþe breþeren I biseche zou ·  
zee haue knowen þe hous of steuene (þe womman) · & of fortu-  
naty · & acaye · for þei ben þe firste fruytis of acaye · & into  
mynysterie of seyntis · þei hane ordeynede hem self: þat & zee  
ben sugettis to suche · and to eche wirchyng to gedir & trauey-  
lynge/ forsoþe I enioye in þe presence of steuene & of fortunate  
& acaye · for þei fulfilden þat þing þat saylide to zou/ forsoþe  
þei haue fulfilde & my spirit & zoure/ herfore knowe zee hem  
þat ben suche maner (men)/ alle þe chirches of aspe: greten zou  
wel/ aquyla & prisca greten zou myche in þe lorde at whom I  
am herboride · with here homely chirche/ alle breþeren greten  
zou wel/ grete zee wel to gedir in holy cosse: my gretynge/ by  
poulis hande: zif any man loue not oure lorde I hū crist: be he  
curside maranatha/ þe grace of oure lorde I hū crist: be wiþ zou/  
my charite be wiþ zou alle in I hū c̄st oure lorde amen//

## ye secoūde piſtle to corrintheis

C<sup>m</sup> 1<sup>m</sup>



Dule apostle of Ihu crist · by þe wille of  
god & tymothe broþer · to þe chirche of  
god þat is at corrynthe · wiþ alle seyntis  
þat ben in alle achaye · grace to zou of  
god oure fadir · & of þe lorde Ihu crist/  
blesside (be) god & fadir of oure lorde  
Ihu crist · fadir of mercyes & god of al  
comfort (or solace) · þat comfortiþ vs in  
al oure tribulacōn · þat & we motwne comforte hem · þat ben  
in al pressure (or ouerleyinge) · by þe exortacōn (or monest-  
ynge) · by whiche & we ben monestide of god/ for as passiouns  
of crist ben plenteous in vs · so & by crist oure comfort is plente-  
uous/ forsoþe wher we ben turblide (or pursuede) for zoure  
techynge & helpe · oþer ben comfortide for zoure comfort · oþer  
we ben monestyde for zoure monestyng & helpe · þe whiche  
wirchis in zou þe suffrynge of þe same passiouns · þe whiche &  
we suffren · þat oure hope be sadde for zou/ wityng for as zee  
ben felowis of þe passiouns · so zee schulen be & of comforte//  
¶ Forsoþe breþeren we wole not zou for to vnwite · of oure  
tribulacōn þat is done in asie/ for ouer maner we ben greupde  
aboue vertue · so þat it anoyede vs · zhe for to lyue/ but we self  
in oure self hadden of deþ þat we be not trystynge in oure self ·  
but in god þat reysih deade men/ þe whiche delyueride vs · &  
delyuerih fro so grete perels into whom we hopen · for & zit he  
schal delyuer helpynge & zou in preyer for vs · þat of þe persons  
of many faces · of þat zpyng þat is in zou · by many parte-  
ners · graces (or þankis) ben done to god for vs/ for why oure  
glorie is his · þe witnessynge of oure conscience þat in symple-  
nesse

## to ye corrintheis . 2 .

nessē & clennessē of god · & not in fleyschely wisdom; but in þe grace of god · we lyuen in þis worlde/ forsoþe more plenteuouſly to zou/ soþely we writen not oþer þingis; þan þo þat zee hane redde & knowen/ forsoþe I hope þat til to þe ende zee schulen knowe as & zee hane knowen vs of partie/ for we ben zoure glorie; and zee oure · in þe day of oure lorde Ihū c̄st/ and in þis tristynge · I wolde firste come to zou · þat zee hadden þe secounde grace; and þat I schulde by zou passe into macedonpe/ and este fro macedonpe I schulde come to zou; & of zou be ledde into Judee/ forsoþe whanne I wolde þis þing; wher I vside liztnesse; or þo þingis þat I þenke; I þenke aftir þe fleysche · þat at me be zhe & nay · forsoþe god is trewe · for oure worde þe whiche was at zou · þer is not in it zhe & nay; but in it is is (þat is treuþe)/ soþely Ihū crist þe sone of god · þe whiche is prechide in zou by vs · by me & siluan & tymothe · þer was not in hym zhe & nay; but in hym is was · (þat is stidfast treuþe)/ forsoþe how many euer ben bihestis of god; in hym is · (þat is ben fulfildē)/ þerfore & by hym we seyn amen to god; to oure ioþe/ þe whiche soþely confermēþ vs wiþ zou in c̄st · & þe whiche god anoyntide vs · & þat markide vs · & zaue a wedde (or ernes) of þe spirit of oure hertes/ forsoþe I inclepe god witnesse into my soule; þat I sparynge zou came not ouer corrinthe/ not for we ben lordis of zoure feiþ; but we ben helpers of zoure ioþe/ for whi þourgh bileue zee stonden//



**F**orsoþe I ordeynede þis ilke þing at me; þat I schulde not come estesone into sorowe to zou/ soþely zif I make zou sorþ (or heuþ); and who is he þat gladiþ me · no but he þat is sorowful of me; and þis same þing I wrote to zou · þat whanne I schal come I haue not sorowe vpon sorowe of hem of whom it bihouede me for to ioþe/ tristynge in zou alle; for my ioþe is of zou alle/ forwhi of myche tribulacon & angwische of herte I wrote to zou by many teeris · þat zee be not sorþ; but þat zee wite what charite I haue more plenteuouſly

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>

## to ye corrintheis .2.

plenteuouſly in zou/forſoþe zif any man haþ made me ſorow-  
ful: he haþ not made me ſorowful but of partie . þat I charge  
(or deſeſe) not zou alle/ þis blamyng þat is made of manye  
ſufficiþ to hym þat is ſuche maner man . ſo þat azenwarde zee  
zyue me more & comforte to hym/ leſte parauenture he þat is  
ſuche maner (man) be ſoupen vp (or diſpeyre): by more greet  
heuyneſſe/ for whiche þing I biſeche zou . þat zee conferme  
charite into hym/ forſoþe þerfore I wrote þat I knowe zoure  
aſſaying . wher in alle þingis zee ben obedient/ forſoþe to  
whom zee haue any þing zouen: & I/ for whi & I þat I haue  
zif any þing zaue I haue zouen for zou in þe perſone of criſt .  
þat we be not deceyuyde of ſathanas/ ſoþely we vnknown  
not his houztis// ¶ Forſoþe whanne I hadde comen to troade  
for þe goſpel of c̄ſt . & a dore was openyde to me . I hadde not  
reſte to my ſpirit . for þat I ſonde not my broþer tyte: but I  
ſeyinge to hem farewel: paſſide into macedonye/ þerfore þank-  
yngis to god þat euermore makyþ vs to haue victorpe in c̄ſt I hū .  
& ſchewyþ by vs þe odoure of hys knowyng in eche place/ for  
we ben þe gode odoure (or ſauour) of c̄ſt to god . in þes þat ben  
made ſaaf & in þes þat perifchen/ to oþer ſoþely odoure of deþ  
into deþ . to oþer forſoþe odoure of liyf into liyf/ and to þes þin-  
gis: who ſo able: ſoþely we ben not as ful many . auoutrynge  
þe worde of god: but of clenneſſe/ but as of god . bifore god in  
c̄ſt we ſpeken//

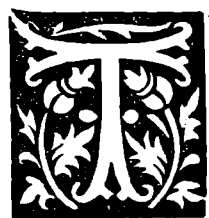
C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



Bygynne we eſteſone for to comende (or prepye) oure  
ſelf . or wher we neden as ſummen prepyng lettris  
to zou or of zou: zee ben oure piſtel . writen in zoure  
hertis . ye whiche is conde & redde of alle men/ zee  
made open for zee ben þe piſtel of c̄ſt mynyſtride of vs & writen  
not of ynke: but by þe ſpirit of quykke god/ not in ſtony tablis:  
but in flepyſchely tablis of herte// ¶ Forſoþe we hane not ſuche  
triſt by c̄ſt to god . not þat we ben ſufficient . for to þenke any  
þing of vs ſelf as of vs: but oure ſufficiencie is of god/ þe whiche  
& made

## to ye corrintheis .2.

& made vs able mynystris of þe testament; not by lettre · but by spirit/ for þe lettre slepþ; forsoþe þe spirit quykeneþ/ for zif þe mynystracon of deþ defourmyde by lettris in stoness in glorie · so þat þe children of isrl myzten not biholde into þe face of moyses · for þe glorie of his chere · þe whiche (glorie) is auoydide; how not more þe mynystracon of spirit schal be in glorie; forwhi zif þe mynystracon of dampnacion is in glorie; myche more þe mynysterie (or seruice) of ryztwesnesse is plenteuous in glorie/ forwhi neþer þat þat was cleer in þis partie was glorifiede · for excellent glorie/ soþely zif þat þat is auoydide is by glorie; myche more þat þat dwelliþ is in glorie/ þerfore we haupnge suche hope; vsen myche triste/ and not as moyses putte a veyle on his face · þat þe children of isrl schulden not biholde into his face; þe whiche veyle is auoydide/ but þe wittis of hem ben astonpede/ soþely til into þis day þe same veyle in redynge of þe olde testament dwelliþ · not schewide; for in c̃st it is auoydide/ but til into þis day whan moyses is redde; þe veyle is putte vpon here hertis/ forsoþe whanne isrl schal be conuertide to god; þe veyle schal be done away/ forsoþe þe lorde is a spirit/ forsoþe where is þe spirit of god; þere is liberte/ forsoþe alle we wiþ schewide face · biholdynge þe glorie of þe lorde ben transfourmyde into þe same ymage · fro clerenesse into clerenesse; as of þe spirit of þe lorde//



Therefore we haupnge þis admynystracon (or office) vp whiche we haue goten mercede; saylen not · but done aweye þe pryueþ þingis of schame · not walkynge in sutel gile · neþer auoutrynge þe worde of god · but in schewynge of þe treuþe comendynge oure self to eche conscience of men bifore god/ for zif also oure gospel be coueride (or hidde); in þes þat perischen it is coueride · in whiche þe god of þis worlde haþ blyndide þe soulis of men oute of bileue; þat þe liztnynge of þe gospel of þe glorie of crist · þat is þe ymage of god invisible schyne not ¶ forsoþe we

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>



## to ye corrintheis .2.

prechen [not] oure self: but Ihu crist oure lorde/ forsoþe vs  
zoure seruauntis by Ihu/ for god þat seyde þe lizte for to  
schyne of dirkeness: he haþ inliztide in oure hertis to þe il-  
lumpnyng of þe science of þe clerenesse of god: into þe face  
of Ihu crist/ forsoþe we haue þis tresoure in britel vessels: þat  
þe liztnesse be of goddis vertue · & not of vs/ in alle þingis we  
suffren tribulacōn: but we ben not made strepte/ we ben made  
pore: but we ben not distrupede/ we suffren persecucōn: but  
we ben not forsaken/ we ben made lowe: but we ben not con-  
foundide/ we ben caste doune: but we perischen not/ euermore  
berynge aboute þe mortifyng of Ihu crist in our body: þat  
& þe lijf of Ihu be schewide in oure bodies/ soþely euermore  
we þat lyuen · ben taken into deþ for Ihu: þat & þe lijf of Ihu  
be schewide in oure deadely fleysche/ þerfore deþ worchis in  
vs: lijf soþely in zou/ forsoþe haupnge spirit of seih · as it is  
writen/ I haue bileuede for whiche þing I spake: and we bi-  
leuen: for whiche þing & we speken/ witynge for he þat reyside  
Ihu · schal reyse & vs wiþ Ihu: and schal ordeyne vs wiþ zou/  
soþely alle þingis for zou: þat grace beinge plenteuouse by  
many in doinge of þankes: beinge plenteuous into glorie of  
god/ for whiche þing: we saylen not/ but þouȝ þe ilke þat is  
wiþ outhen forþ oure man be corrupted: neþeles þat man þat  
is wiþiñe forþ is renewide fro day into day/ forsoþe þat þat  
is inpresent (or now) · a litil moment lastyng · & lizte (or  
esy) þing of oure tribulacōn: worchib ouer maner (or mesure)  
into hizenesse · þe euerlastyng weyȝte of glorie in vs · vs not  
biholdyng þo þingis þat ben seen: but þo þat ben not seen/  
soþely þo þingis þat ben sene: ben temperal (or duryng but  
schorte tyme/ forsoþe þo þingis þat ben not seen: ben euer-  
lastyng (or wiþouten ende//

## to ye corrintheis .2.



**S**ohely we witen for zif oure erhely hous of his dwell-  
 yng be dissoluyde: þat we haue a bilydng of god ·  
 an hous not made by handis · euerlastyng in he-  
 uenes/ for whi & in his þing we mournen · coueyt-  
 yng for to be cloþide aboue oure dwellynge in heuene: zif  
 neþeles we ben founden cloþide & not nakide/ forwhi & we þat  
 ben in his tabernacle · sorowen wiþiñe forþ greuyde for þat  
 we wolen be dispoylde · but be cloþide aboue: þat þe ilke þing  
 þat is deadely · be soupen vp of lijf/ forsoþe he makith vs into  
 his þing is god · þat ȝaue to vs a wedde (or ernes) of spirit/  
 þerfore we beinge hardy algatis & witynge · for þe while we  
 ben in his body: we gon in pilgrymage fro þe lorde/ forsoþe  
 we walken by feiþ: and not by cleer siȝt/ forsoþe we ben hardy  
 & hane gode wille · more for to bee in pilgrymage fro þe body:  
 and for to be present to god/ and þerfore we stryuen · wheþer  
 absent wheþer present: for to plese hym/ forsoþe it bihoueh vs  
 alle for to be schewide bifore þe trone of crist: þat euery man  
 receyue (or telle aȝen) þe propre þingis of þe body as he haþ  
 done: oþer good oþer euyl/ þerfore we wityng þe drede of þe  
 lorde · softely mouē (or counseplen) to men/ soþely to god  
 we ben open/ soþely I hope & in ȝoure consciences: vs for to be  
 knowen/ we comenden not oure self estesone to ȝou: but we  
 ȝyue to ȝou occacoñ for to glorie for vs · þat ȝee haue to hem  
 þat glorien in þe face & not in þe herte/ soþely wheþer we by  
 mynde (or resoun) passen to god · wher we ben sobre to ȝou:  
 soþely þe charite of c̄st dryueþ vs gessyng þis þing · for zif  
 one is deade for alle: þerfore alle ben deade/ and crist diede  
 for alle: þat & þei þat lyuen · lyue not nowe of hem self · but to  
 hym þ<sup>t</sup> diede for hem & roos aȝen/ and so we fro þis tyme hane  
 knowen no man astir þe fleysche/ and zif we knewen crist astir  
 þe fleysche: but rizt nowe we hane not knowen/ þerfore zif any  
 newe creature is in crist: olde þingis haue passide · and lo alle  
 þingis ben newe made/ forsoþe alle þingis of god · þe whiche  
 recounseplide

C<sup>m</sup> 5<sup>m</sup>

## to ye corrintheis .2.

recounseylide vs to hym by crīst · & zaue to vs þe mynysterie (or seruyce) of recounseylunge to hem þe worlde not rettyng to hem here giltis: & puttide in vs þe worde of recounseylunge/ þerfore we ben sette in legatie (or message): as god monestunge by vs/ we bisechen zou for crīst: be zee recounseylide to god/ god þe fadir made hym þe synne for us · þat is redempcoñ (or sacrifice for synne): þe whiche knewe not synne · þat we schulden be made rīztwefnesse of god in hym//

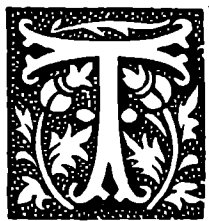
C<sup>m</sup> 6<sup>m</sup>



**F**orsoþe we helpynge monestē: þat zee receyue not þe grace of god in veyne/ soþely he seih/ in tyme accepte (or wel plesynge) I haue herde þee: & in day of helpe I haue helpide þee/ lo nowē a tyme acceptable: lo nowē a daye of helpe/ to no man zpyunge any offencioñ (or hurtynge): þat our mynysterie (or seruyce) benot reproude/ but in alle þingis zpyue we oure self as mynystis of god · in myche paciēce · in tribulacoñs · & in nedis · in angwischis · in betyngis (or scourgyngis) · in prisouns · in discenciouns wipīne forþ · in traueylis · in wakynge · in fastynge · in chastite · in science (or kunnyng) · in longe abidyng · in swetnesse in þe holy goſt · in charite not feynede · in worde of treuþe: in þe vertue of god/ by armours of rīztwefnesse on þe rīzthalf & liftehalf · by glorie & vnnobleþ · by euel fame & gode fame · as deceyuours: and trewe men/ as þei þ<sup>t</sup> ben vñknown: and knowen/ as men dyinge: and lo we lyuen/ as chastifide: and not made deade/ as sorowful: forsoþe euermore ioyinge/ as haupnge nede (or as nedye men): forsoþe makynge ryche/ as no þing haupnge: and weldyng alle þingis: ¶ **W** zee corryntheis oure mouþ is open to zou · oure herte is alargide/ be zee not made strepte in vs: but be zee made strepte in zoure entraylis/ forsoþe we haupnge þe same rewarde · I seye as to sones · & be zee alargide// ¶ **W**yl zee leede zok wip vñfeipful men/ soþely what partynge (or comunynge) of rīztwefnesse wip wickidnesse/ or what felowschip of līzt to dirkenessis/

## to ye corrintheis .2.

nessis/ soþely what acordynge of crist to belial/ or what part of a feiþful (or cōsten man): wiþ an vnfeiþful (or heþen)/ but what consent to þe puple of god wiþ ydolis/ forsoþe zee ben þe temple of quykke god: as þe lorde seiþ/ for I schal dwelle in hem · & I schal walke & I schal be þe god of hem · & þei schulen be to me a puple/ for whiche þing go zee oute of þe mydle of hem · & be zee departide seiþ þe lorde · & touche zee not vnclene þing: and I schal receyue zou & I schal be to zou into a fadir: and zee schulen be to me into sones & douztris · seiþ þe lorde almyȝty//



Therefore moſte derworþ (breþeren) we hauynge þes  
 ziftis · clense we vs fro al filþe of fleysche & spirit:  
 parfitely makynge halowynge in þe drede of þe  
 lorde/ take zee vs · we hane hirte no man · we hane  
 corrupte no man · we hane bigilide no man/ I seye not to zoure  
 condempnyng/ forsoþe I seyde bifore · þat zee ben in oure  
 hertis: for to die to gedir & lyue to gedir/ myche triste is to me  
 anentis zou: myche glorrynge is to me for zou/ I am fulfilde  
 wiþ comfort I abounde (or am plenteuous) in ioye: in al oure  
 tribulacōn/ for why & whanne we hadden come to macedo-  
 nye: oure fleysche had no reste · but we suffirden al tribula-  
 cōn forsoþe wiþouten forþ · fīztyngis: wiþiñe forþ dredis/  
 but he þat comfortiþ meke men: god comfortide & vs in þe  
 compynge of tȝte/ forsoþe not onely in þe compynge of hym: but  
 also in þe comforte bi whiche he comfortide me in zou · tell-  
 ynge to vs zoure desire · zoure wepyng · zoure loue for me:  
 so þat I ioyede more/ for zif I made zou soory in a pistle: now  
 it rewip not me/ and zif it rewide · I seinge þat þouz I made  
 zou soory in þat pistle at an houre: now I haue ioye/ not for  
 zee weren made soroweful: but for zee weren made soroweful  
 to penaunce/ soþely zee ben made sory aftir god: þat in no  
 þing payrement zee suffre of vs/ forsoþe þat sorowe þat is  
 aftir god: worchip penaunce into stidfast helþe/ forsoþe so-  
 rowe

C<sup>m</sup> 7<sup>m</sup>

## to ye corrintheis .2.

rowe of þe worlde: worchþ deþ/ lo soþely þis same þing zou  
for to be sorowful aftir god: how myche bisynesse it worchþ  
in zou/ but defendynge· but indignacon· but drede· but desire·  
but loue· but vengeaunce/ in alle þingis zee haue zouen zoure  
self for to be vndefoulide: in cause (or nede)/ þerfore & zif I  
wrote to zou· not for hym þat dide iniurie· neþer for hym þat  
suffride: but for to schewe oure bisynesse þe whiche we haue to  
zou bifore god/ þerfore we ben comfortide/ forsoþe in oure  
comforte more plenteuouſly· we ioyeden more on þe ioye of  
tyte· for his spirit is fulfild of alle zou/ and zif I gloriiede any  
þing anentis hym of zou I am not confoundide (or schampde)/  
but as we hane spoken to zou alle þingis in treuþe: so & oure  
glorie þat was at tyte· is made treuþe/ and þe entraplis of  
hym ben more plenteuouſly in zou· haupnge in mynde þe obe-  
dience of zou alle· how wiþ drede & tremblþge zee receyueden  
hym/ I haue ioye: þat in alle þingis I triste in zou//

C<sup>m</sup> 8<sup>m</sup>



Beheren forsoþe we maken knowen to zou þe grace  
of god þat is zouen in þe chirche of macedonpe·  
& þat in myche assayinge of tribulacōn: þe aboun-  
daunce (or plente) of þe ioye of hem was/ and þe  
hizeſt pouert of hem: was plenteuous into þe richesſes of þe  
ſymplenefſe of hem/ I bere witneſſynge to hem vp vertue (or  
power) & aboue vertue þei weren wilful wiþ myche monest-  
yng biſechynge vs þe grace & comunynge of mynſterie: þat  
is made into holy men/ and not as we hopiden: but þei zauen  
þem ſelf firſte to þe lorde· aftirwarde to vs by þe wille of  
god/ ſo þat we preyede tyte þat as he bigan: ſo & he parfourme  
in zou al þis grace/ but as zee abunden in alle þingis· in  
ſeiþ worde & ſcience (or kunnyng)· & al biſynefſe· more ouer  
& in zoure charite into vs: þat & to þis grace zee abounde/ I  
ſeye not as comaundynges: but by þe biſynefſe of oþer mē·  
also prouynge to gedir þe gode witte of zoure charite/ ſoþely  
zee witen þe grace of oure lorde Iþū criſt· forwhi he was made  
nedý

## to ye corrintheis .2.

nedy for vs · whanne he was riche: þat he schulde be made  
riche by his myseyste (or nedynesse)/ and I ȝyue counseyl in  
his þing/ soþely þis is profitable to zou · þat not onely bigun=  
nen for to do: but & for to wolne fro þe former zeer/ nowe for=  
soþe & in dede parfourme zee · þat as þe inwitte (or wille) is  
redy: so be it & of parfourmyng of þat þing þat zee haue/ so=  
þely ȝif þe wille be reedy: it is acceptide aftir þat þat it haþ:  
not aftir þat þat it haþ not/ forsoþe I wil not it by remyscioun  
(or flouþe) to oþer · forsoþe to zou tribulaciō/ but euenesse in  
present tyme · zoure aboundaunce fulfille þe myseyste of hem ·  
þat & þe aboundaunce of hem: be supplement (or fulfillynge)  
of myseyste þat euenesse be made as it is writen/ he þat haþ  
myche aboundide not: and he þat litil had not lesse/ forsoþe I  
do þankyngis to god þat ȝaue þe same bisynesse for zou in þe  
herte of tyte · for soþely he receyuyde exortaciō (or mones=  
tynges)/ but whanne he was bisier: wiþ his wille he wente forþ to  
zou/ forsoþe we senten wiþ hym oure broþer: whos preysynge  
is in þe gospel/ by alle chirchis · forsoþe not onely but & he is  
ordeynyde of chirches · þe felowe of oure pilgrymage · into þis  
grace þat is mynystride of vs to þe glorie of þe lorde: and to  
oure ordeynyde wille/ eschewynge þis þing þat no man blame  
(or dispise) vs · in þis plente þat is mynystride of vs to þe glorie  
of þe lorde/ soþely we purueyn gode þingis · not onely bifore  
god: but also bifore alle men/ forsoþe we senten wiþ hem &  
ouer broþer whom we hane prouede in manye þingis ofte for  
to be bisie/ nowe forsoþe myche bisier in myche triste in zou ·  
oþer for tyte þat is my felowe & in zou helper · oþer oure bre=  
þeren apostlis of chirchis · of þe glorie of c̄st/ þerfore schewe  
into þe facis of chirchis þe schewynge þat is of zoure charite ·  
& of oure glorie for zou into hem/ forwhy of þe mynysterie þat  
is made into holy men: it is to me of aboundaunce (or plente) ·  
for to write to zou//

Forsoþe

## to ye corrintheis .2.

C<sup>m</sup> 9<sup>m</sup>



Forsoþe I woot zoure in wit reedy for þe whiche I haue glorie of zou anentis macedonpes · for & acaye is reedy fro a zee passide · and zoure loue haþ sirede ful many/ forsoþe we haue sente breþeren · þat þat þing þat we glorien in zou · be not aboydide in þis partie/ þat as I seyde zee ben redy · lest þe whanne macedonpes schulen come wiþ me · & schulen fynde zou vnreedy · we schamen þat I sise zou not in þis substaunce/ þerfore I geside necessarie for to prepe breþeren þat þei come bifore to zou · & make reedy þis bihizte blessinge · for to be reedy · so as blessinge & not as auarice/ þis þing forsoþe I seye · for he þat sowiþ scarsely · schal [repe] & scarsely/ and he þat in blessinges · schal repe & of blessingis/ eche man as he castide in his herte/ not in heuy- nesse or of nede/ forsoþe god loueþ a glad ȝpuer/ god forsoþe is myȝty for to make al grace abounde in zou · þat zee in al þingis euermore haunþe al sufficiency · abounde into al good werke · as it is writen/ he delide abroad · he ȝaue to pore men · his riȝtwesnes dwelliþ into wiþouten ende into worlde of worlde/ forsoþe he þat mynystriþ seede to þe (man) sowynge & schal ȝpue breede for to ete · and he schal multiplie zoure feed & make myche þe encresynge of fructis of zoure riȝtwes- nesse/ þat zee in alle þingis made riche abounde into al sym- plenesse · þe whiche worchiþ by vs doing of þankis to god/ for þe mynysterie of þis office · not onely filliþ þo þingis þat fay- le to holy men · but also aboundiþ by manye in doinge of þankyngis to þe lorde · by prouynge of þe mynysterie · glori- fyinge god in þe obedience of zoure knowelechyng in þe gos- pel of c̄st · & in symplenesse of comunycaciō into hem & into alle · & in bisechyng of hem for zou · desirynge zou for þe cleer grace in zou · I do þankyngis to god vpon þe vnenarrable (or þat may not be tolde) ȝifte of hym/ forsoþe I poule biseche zou by þe homelynesse (or myldenesse) & softenesse (or pacience) of c̄st · þe whiche soþely in þe face am meke amonge zou · for- soþe I absent triste in zou//

Forsoþe

## to ye corrintheis .2.



Forsoke bretheren I prepe you · þat I present be not  
hardy by þe ilke triste in whiche I am gesside for to  
be hardy into summe · þe whiche demen vs as we  
wandre aftir þe fleysche/ forsoke we walkynge in  
fleysche fizen not (or holden not knyztchode) aftir þe fleysche/  
forwhy þe armours of our knyztchode ben not fleyschely; but  
myzty by god · to þe distruccon of wardyngis (or strengþes)  
we distrupinge counseylis & al hizenesse reysynge hym azenes  
þe science of god · dryupnge into captifte al vnderstondynge  
into þe serupce of crist also haupnge in redynesse for to venge al  
vnobedience; whanne youre obedience schal be fulfild/ se zee  
þo þingis þat ben aftir þe face/ zif any man tristeth to hym  
self · hym for to be of crist; þenke he þis þing este anentis hym  
self · for as he is of crist; so & we/ for why & zif I schal glorie  
any þing more of oure power · þe whiche þe lorde zawe to vs  
into edifynge · & not into youre distruccon; I schal not schame/  
forsoke þat I be not gesside · as for to feere you by epistels ·  
forwhi þei seyn þe epistels ben heuy (or greuous) · & stronge ·  
but þe presence of body lijk · & þe worde contemptible (or wor-  
þi for to be dispiside)/ he þat is suche maner man; þenke þis ·  
for what maner men we ben absent by epistels; suche maner  
of men vs present in dede/ soþely we doren not putte vs  
amonge (or comparisoun) vs to summe þat comenden hem  
self/ but we metynge (or mesurynge) vs in oure self · & com-  
parisounynge oure self to vs/ soþely we schulen not glorie into  
ful myche · but aftir þe mesure of reule · by whiche god mesu-  
ride to vs þe mesure of strechynge til to you/ forsoke not as  
we not strechynge to you · ouer holden vs/ forsoke vnto you  
we camen in þe gospel of crist · not glorpyng into ful myche  
in oþer mennes traueylis/ soþely we haupnge hope of youre  
feih waxinge in you · for to be magnyfiede vp oure reule in  
aboundaunce · also for to preche into þo þingis þat ben bizende  
you · not for to glorie in oþer mennes reule in þes þingis þat

C<sup>m</sup> 10<sup>m</sup>



## to ye corrintheis .2.

ben made redy/ forsoþe he þat glorieþ: glorie in þe lorde/ forsoþe not he þat comendiþ hym self is prouede: but whom god comendiþ or preysþ//

C<sup>m</sup> 11<sup>m</sup>



Wolde zee schulden susteyne a litil þing of myn unwisdom · but & supporte me (or bere me vp) soþely I loue zou by þe loue of god/ soþely I haue bihizte (or bicomme boinz) for to take zou as a chaste virgyn to a man crist/ forsoþe I drede lest as þe serpente deceyuyde eue wiþ his sutel fraude: so zoure wittis be corrupte & falle doune fro þe symplenesse þat is in crist/ forwhi zif he þat cometh prechiþ anoper crist whom we prechen not · or zif zee taken anoper spirit · whom zee receyueden not · or anoper gospel whiche zee receyueden not: ríztly zee schulden suffre/ soþely I wene forto haue done no þing lesse for þe grete apostlis/ forwhi þouz I be not lernyde in sermoune (or worde) · but not in science (or kunnyng) forsoþe in alle þingis I am schetwíde (or made knowen) to zou/ or wheþer I haue done synne · mekyng (or makynge lowe) my self þat zee be enhauncyde · for frely I euangelízide to zou þe euangelie of god/ I spuylyde (or made nakide or took ziftis) of oþer chirchis · takynge soude for zoure seruyce/ and whanne I was anentis zou & nedide: I was chargous to no man/ forwhi breþeren þat camen fro macedonye: fulfilden þat þat saylide to me/ and in alle þingis I haue kepte & schal kepe me wiþ outen charge to zou/ þe treuþe of c̄st is in me · for þis glorie schal not be broken in me: in þe regiouns of acaye/ whi/ for I loue not zou/ god woot/ forsoþe þat þat I do: & I schal do þat I kitte away þe occacōn · of hem þat wolen occacōn (or plente or power) · þat in þe þing þe whiche þei glorien: þei ben founden suche & as we/ forwhi suche false apostlis ben treccherous (or gilous werkemen: transfiguryng hem into apostlis of c̄st/ and not wondre/ soþely he sathanas transfiguriþ hym: into an aungel of lizt/ þerfore it is not greet ·

zif

## to ye corrintheis .2.

zif his mynyſtris ben transfiguride as þe mynyſtris of ryzt-  
 weſneſſe: whos ende ſchal be aftir here werkis// ¶ eſte I  
 ſeye leſſe any man deme me vnwiſe/ ellis take zee me as  
 vnwiſe: þat & I haue glorie a litil what/ þat þat I ſpeke I  
 ſpeke not aftir god · but as into vnwiſdom in þis ſubſtaunce  
 of glorie/ forwhy many men glorien aftir þe fleysche: and I  
 ſchal glorie/ forſoþe zee ſuffren gladly vnwiſe men: whan zee  
 zoure ſelf ben wiſe/ ſoþely zee ſuſteynen zif any man dryue zou  
 into ſeruage · zif any man deuoureþ · zif any man takeþ · zif  
 any man is enhauncide by pride · zif any man ſmytiþ zou into  
 þe face/ aftirs vnnobley I ſeye: as we weren ſijk in þis partie/  
 in what þing any man dar · in vnwiſdom I ſeye: & I dar/ þei  
 ben ebreues: & I/ þei ben iſraelitis: & I/ þei ben þe ſeed of  
 abraham: & I/ þei ben þe mynyſtris of c̄ſt: & I/ as leſſe wiſe I  
 ſeye: more I/ in ful many traueplis · in pryſouns more plen-  
 teuouſly · in woundis aboue maner (or ouer meſure) in deþes  
 ofte tymes/ I receyuede of þe iewes: fyue ſibes fourty ſtokis  
 one leſſe/ þries I was beten wiþ zerdis · ones I was ſtonede/  
 þries I made perſchynge in ſchip: nyzt & day I was in dep-  
 neſſe of þe ſee/ in weyes ofte · in perels of flodis · in perels of  
 þeues · in perels of kyn · in perels of heþen men · in perels in  
 cyte · in perels in deſert · in perels in ſee · in perels in falſe  
 breþeren/ in trauel in myſeyſte/ in many wakynge in hungre  
 in þirſte: in many faſtynge in colde in nakidneſſe/ wiþ outen  
 þingis þat ben wiþ outen forþ/ myn eche day wakynge (or  
 ſtudyng: þe biſynes of alle chirchis/ who is ſijk & I am not  
 ſijk/ who is ſclaunderide: & I am not brent//



**Z**if it bihoueþ for to glorie: I ſchal glorie in þoþingis  
 þat ben of myn infirmyte (or freelte) god & þe fadir  
 of oure lorde Ihu criſt · þat is bleſſide into þe  
 worldis: woot þat I lize not/ þe prouoſt (or keper)  
 of damask of þe kyng of þe folke arethe: kepte þe cyte of da-  
 maſcenes · for to take me/ and by a windowe in a leep I was  
 leten

## to ye corrintheis . 2 .

leten doune by þe walle: & so I scapide his handis/ zif it biho-  
ueþ for to glorie: soþely it spedih not/ forsoþe I schal come to  
þe visiouns & reuelacons of þe lorde/ I woot a man in c̃st bifore  
fourtene zeer · wher in body wher oute of body · I woot not ·  
god woot · suche a man raupschide to þe þridde heuene/ and I  
woot suche a man · wher in body wher oute I noot · god woot ·  
for he was raupschide into paradise · & herde priuey wordis ·  
þe whiche it is not leueful: to a man for to speak/ for suche  
maner þing I schal glorie: forsoþe for me no þing · no but in  
myn infirmytes/ forwhi & zif I schal wolne for to glorie: I  
schal not be vnwise/ soþely I schal seye treuþe/ forsoþe I spare:  
lestē any man gesse me ouer þat þing þat he seiþ in me: or  
heriþ any þing of me/ and lestē þe gretenesse of reuelacons en-  
haunce in pride: þe pricke of fleysche an aungel of sathanas is  
zouen to me · þe whiche buffatiþ me/ for whiche þing þries I  
preyede þe lorde: þat it schulde go away fro me/ and he seyde  
to me/ my grace sufficiþ to þee/ forwhi vertue is parfiteþly  
made in enfirmyte/ þerfore gladely I schal glorie in myn en-  
firmytes: þat þe vertue of c̃st dwelle in me/ for whiche þing  
I plese to me infirmytes · in wronge dispisyngis in nedis · in  
persecucons · in angwischis for crist/ soþely whanne I am sijk:  
þan I am myzty/ I am made vnwitty: zee constreyneden me/  
forsoþe I schulde (or auzte) for to be comendide of zou/ soþely  
I dide noþing lesse fro hem þat ben apostlis: aboue maner/  
forwhi þou3 I be not: neþeles þe signes of my possilhede ben  
made on zou in al pacience: and signes (or myracles) & greet  
wondris & vertues/ soþely what is it þat zee hadde lesse bifore  
oþer chirchis: no but þat I my self greuyde zou not · forzþue  
zee to me þis wronge// ¶ I lo þis þridde tyme I am redy for to  
come to zou: and I schal not be greuous to zou/ forsoþe I  
seek not þo þingis þat ben zoure: but zou/ forsoþe neþer sones  
owen for to tresoure to fadir & modir [but fadir & modir]  
to þe sones/ forsoþe I moſte wilfully schal zþue: and my self  
schal be ouer zouen for zoure soutilis · þou3 I more louynge:  
be

## to ye corrintheis .2.

be lesse loupde/ but be it/ I greuede not zou: but whanne I was sutel wise: I toke zou wih gile/ wher I decepuede zou by any of hem · whom I sente to zou/ I preyede tyte: & I sente wih hym a broþer/ wheþer tyte bigilide zou/ wheþer we gon not in þe same spirit/ wher not & þe same steppis/ sumtyme zee wenen þat we schulen excuse vs anentis zou/ bifore god in c̃st we speken/ forsoþe moſte dere breþeren: alle þingis for zoure edifyinge/ soþely I drede lestē paraventure whanne I schal come: I schal not fynde zou whiche maner I wole: & I schal be founden of zou: whiche maner zee wolen not/ lestē paraventure stryuynges · enuyes · sturdynessis · discenciouns · & detracciouns · pryuey spechis of discorde · boluyngis (by pride): debatis ben amonge zou/ lestē estesone whanne I schal come · god make me lowe anentis zou · & I weyle manye of hem þat bifore synned · & diden not penauce of þe vnclennesse & fornycacōn & vnchastite: þat þei hane done//



**D**his þridde tyme I come to zou: and in þe mowþ of two or þre witnessis · euery worde schal stonde/ I seyde bifore & I seye bifore as presente twayes · & now absent to hem þat bifore haue synnede/ and to alle oþer: for zif I schal I come estesone I schal not spare/ wher zee seeken an experyment (or assayinge) of hym þat spekiþ in me crist: þe whiche is not sijk in zou · but myzty in vs/ forwhi þou z he was crucifiede of infirmyte: but he lyueþ of þe vertue of god/ forwhi & we ben sijk in hym: but we schulen lyue by hym of þe vertue of god in vs/ assaye zoure self · zif zee ben in þe feiþ: zee zoure self proue/ wher zee knowen not zoure self · for crist Ihu is in zou: no but zee ben reprouable/ forsoþe I hope for zee knowen for zee ben not reprouable/ soþely we prepen þe lord: þat zee do no þing of euyl/ not þat we seme prouede: but þat zee do þat þat is gode forsoþe þat we ben reprouable/ forsoþe we motone no þing azenes treuþe: but for  
þe

C<sup>m</sup> 13<sup>m</sup>

## to ye corrintheis .2.

þe treuþe/ forsoþe we ioyen for we ben sijk · forsoþe zee ben myzty/ and we prepen þis þing · zoure endynge/ soþely þerfore I absent write þis þing þat I present do not harder aftir þe power þe whiche þe lorde zafe to me into edificacioune: & not into distruccon/ breþeren hens forþwarde ioyze zee · be zee parfite & teche zee vnderstonde zee þe same þing/ haue zee pees: and god of pees & loue · schal be wiþ zou/ grete zee wel to gedir in holy cosse/ þe grace of oure lorde Ihus crist · & þe charite of god · & þe comunynge of þe holy gost be wiþ zou alle amen//

## ye pistel to galatheis

C<sup>m</sup> 1<sup>m</sup>



Dule apostle not of men neþer by man: but bi ihu crist · & god þe fadir · þat reyside hym fro deade (men) & alle þe breþeren þat ben wiþ me: to þe chirchis of galahie/ grace to zou & pees of god þe fadir & oure lorde Ihus crist · þe whiche zaue hym self for oure synnes · þat he schulde delyuer vs fro þis present weywarde worlde · aftir þe wille of god & oure fadir: to whom is honoure & glorie: into worldis of worldis amen// ¶ I wondre þat þus so sone zee ben borne ouer fro hym þat clepide zou into þe grace of crist · into anoþer gospel · þe whiche is not oþer: no but þer ben summe þat distourblen zou & wolen mynyste þe euangelie of crist/ but þou3 or an aungel of heuene · euuangelize to zou bisidis þat þat we hane euuangelizide to zou: curside be he/ as I bifore seyde · & nowe estesone I sepe: zif any schal euuangelize · out taken þat þat zee hane taken: curside be he/ now counseyl I to men or to god: or seek I to

## ye piſtel to galatheis

I to pleſe to men/ zif I zit pleſide to men/ I were not þe ſer-  
uaunt of c̄ſt// ¶ Soþely breþeren I make þe goſpel knowen  
to zou · þe whiche is euuangelizide of me/ for it is not aftir  
man/ ſoþely neþer I took it of man · neþer lernyde/ but by  
reuelacioun of Ihū criſt/ forſoþe zee herden my lyuyng ſum-  
tyme in iewerie · for ouer maner I purſuede þe chirche of god/  
and fauzte azenes it/ and I profitide in iewerie · aboue many  
myn eueneldis in my kyn beinge more aboundauntly loue-  
(or folowe) of my faderis tradiciouns/ forſoþe whanne I ple-  
ſide to hym þat departide me fro þe wombe of my modir · &  
clepide by his grace þat he ſchulde ſchewe in me his ſone · þat  
I ſchulde preche hym in heþen men/ anone I acordide not to  
fleſche & blood/ neþer I came to irlm̄ to my bifore goers  
apoſtliſ · but I wente forþ into arabie/ and eſteſone I turnyde  
azentodamaſk/ aftirwarde aftir þre zeer I came to irlm̄ for to  
ſe petre/ and I dwelte anentis hym ſyftene dayes/ forſoþe I  
ſize none oþer man of þe apoſtliſ/ no but iames þe broþer of  
þe lorde/ forſoþe what þingis I write to zou/ lo bifore god for  
I lize not/ aftirwarde I came into þe parties of cyrie & cilicie/  
forſoþe I was vnknown by face to þe churchis of Judee þat  
weren in c̄ſt/ onely forſoþe þei hadden herynge · for he þat  
purſuede vs ſumtyme/ now euangeliziþ þe ſeiþ azenes whiche  
he fauzte ſumtyme/ and in me þei clarifieden god//



Aftirwarde aftir fourtene zeer eſteſone I ſteyzede to  
irlm̄ wiþ barnabas & tyte taken to/ forſoþe I ſtey-  
zede vp reuelacioun & to gedir ſeyde (or diſputide)  
wiþ hem þe goſpel/ þe whiche I preche amonge  
heþen men/ forſoþe aſidis honde (or by hem ſelf) · to hem þat  
weren ſeen for to be ſumwhat · leſte parauenture I ſchulde  
renne in veyne (or had runnen)/ but neþer tyte þat was wiþ  
me whanne he was heþen was compellide for to be circum-  
cidide · but for falſe breþeren vndre brouzten/ þe whiche pry-  
uely entreden for to aſpie oure liberte þat we hane in c̄ſt Ihū/  
þat

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>

## ye pistel

þat þei schulen dryue vs into seruage · to whom neþer at an  
houre we zauen styde of subieccioun: þat þe treuþe of þe gos-  
pel dwelle at zou/ forsoþe of hem þat weren seen for to be  
sumwhat · what maner (men) þei weren sumtyme: it par-  
teyneþ noþing to me/ forsoþe god takih not þe persone of man/  
forsoþe þei þat weren seen for to be sumwhat: no þing to me  
zauen to gedir/ but azenwarde whanne þei hadden seen þat  
þe gospel of prepucie (or heþen men) is bitaken to me · as of  
circumcisioun to petre/ for he þat wrouzte to petre apostilhede  
of circumcisioun: wrouzte & to me amonge heþen men/ and  
whanne þei hadden knowen þe grace of god þat is zouen to me ·  
James & cephas & ioon þe whiche weren seen for to be pilers:  
zauen to me & barnabas þe rizthandis of felowschip · þat we  
amonge heþen men: þei soþely into circumcisioun · onely þat  
we schulden be myndeful of pore men þat also I was bisie for  
to do þe same þing/ forsoþe whan cephas (or petre) came to  
antioche: I stode azenes hym into his face · for he was reprob-  
able/ forsoþe bifore þat summe camen fro iames: he ete wiþ  
heþen men/ forsoþe whanne þei came: he wiþdrowe & depar-  
tide hym · dredynge hem þat weren of circumcisioun/ and oþer  
consentiden to his feynynge: so þat barnabas was ledde of  
hem into þat feynynge/ but whan I had seen þat þei walkiden  
not riztly to þe treuþe of þe gospel: I seyde to petre bifore alle  
men/ zif þou siþ þou art a iewe · lyuest heþenly & not iewely:  
how constreynest þou heþen men for to bicomme iewes? we ben  
iewes of kynde: and not synners of heþen men/ soþely witynge ·  
for a man is not made riztwise of þe werkis of þe lawe: no  
but by þe feiþ of ihū crist · & we in ihū crist bileuen · þat we be  
iustificiede of þe feiþ of crist · and not of þe werkis of lawe/ wher-  
fore of þe werkis of lawe eche fleysche (or man) schal not be  
made riztwise/ þat zif we seekynge for to be iustificiede in crist ·  
& we oure self be founden synners: wher crist is not mynystre of  
synne? fer be it/ soþely zif I bilde azen þo þingis þat I dis-  
truyede: I make me for to be a trespassour/ forsoþe by þe lawe ·  
I am

## to galatheis

I am deade to þe lawe: þat I lyue to god/ wip c̃st I am fic-  
chide to þe croſſe/ forſoþe I lyue nowe not I: but c̃st lyueþ in  
me/ forſoþe þat I lyue now in fleysche: I lyue in þe feiþ of  
goddis ſone þe whiche louede me • & bitoke hym ſelf for me/ I  
caſte not away þe grace of god/ forſoþe zif riȝtweſneſſe is by  
þe lawe: criſt diede wip oute cauſe//



**D**zee witles men of galathie • who deceyuede zou for  
to not bileue to þe treuþe/ bifore whos yzen ihū c̃st  
is dampnyde (or erilide): and in zou crucifiede/ þis  
þing onely wole I lerne of zou/ hane zee take þe  
ſpirit of þe werkis of lawe: wher of herynge of bileue/ ſo zee  
ben foolis • þat whanne zee bigunnen by ſpirit: nowe zee ben  
endide by fleysche/ zee hane ſuffride ſo many þingis wip outen  
cauſe: neþeles zif wip outen cauſe/ þerfore he þat ȝyueþ to zou  
þe ſpirit & worchþ vertues in zou: wheþer of þe werkis of  
lawe • or of herynge of feiþ/ as it is writen/ abraham bileuede  
to god: and it is rettide to hym to riȝtweſneſſe/ þerfore knowe  
zee • þat þei þat ben of þe feiþ: þei ben ſones of abraham/ for-  
ſoþe þe ſcripture purueþinge • for god iuſtifieþ of feiþ heþen  
men tolde bifore to abraham: for in þee alle folkis ſchulen be  
bleſſide/ þerfore þei þat ben of þe feiþ: ſchulen be bleſſide wip  
feiþful abraham/ forſoþe who euer ben of þe werkis of lawe:  
ben vnder curſe/ for it is writen/ curſide eche man þat ſchal  
not dwelle in alle þingis þat ben writen in þe book of lawe:  
þat he do hem/ forſoþe for no man is made riȝtwiſe in þe lawe  
anentis god: it is known • for a riȝtful man • lyueþ of feiþ/  
forſoþe þe lawe is not of bileue • but he þat ſchal do þo þingis:  
ſchal lyue in hem/ criſt delyueride vs fro þe curſe of þe lawe •  
made for us curs (þat is ſacrifice for curs)/ for it is writen/  
curſide is eche þat hangiþ in þi tree/ þat þe bleſſyng of abra-  
ham in heþen men ſchulde be made in c̃st Ihū þat we take þe  
biheſt of ſpirit: by feiþ// ¶ breþeren I ſeþe aftir man • neþe-  
les no man diſpiſiþ þe confermyde teſtament of a man: or

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



## ye pistel

aboue ordeyneþ/ bihestis ben seide to abraham & to his seede/  
he seiþ not in seedis as in manye: but as in one · & in þi seed  
þat is c̄st/ forsoþe I seye þis a testament confermyde of god/  
þe whiche astir foure hundride zeeris & þritty is made lawe:  
makip not voyde þe biheste/ for whi zif of lawe is þe heretage:  
now not of bihest/ forsoþe god ȝaue to abraham by azen bihest/  
what þerfore lawe/ for trespassyng it is putte · til þe seed came ·  
to whom god byhizte þingis ordeynede by aungels in þe hande  
of a mediatour/ forsoþe a mediatour is not of one þing/ for-  
soþe god is one/ þerfore þe lawe azenes (or contrarie) to þe  
hestis of god/ fer be it/ forsoþe zif þere were a lawe ȝouen þe  
whiche myȝte quyken verrey riztwesnesse of a lawe/ but þe  
scripture enclosyde alle þingis vndir synne · þat byheste schul  
be ȝouen of þe seiþ of Ihū crist to men bileuyng/ forsoþe bi-  
fore þat þe seiþ came we weren kepte vndir þe lawe · schitte  
to gedir into þat seiþ: þat was to be schewide/ and so þe lawe  
was oure litil mayster in crist: þat we be made riztwise of þe  
seiþ/ but where þe seiþ came: nowe we ben not vndir þe litil  
mayster/ forsoþe alle we ben þe litil sones of god by seiþ in c̄st  
ihū/ forsoþe whoeuer ȝee ben baptiside in crist: ȝee hane clo-  
þide crist/ þer is not iewe neþer greek · þer is not seruaunt  
neþer fre man: þer is not male neþer female/ soþely alle ȝee  
ben one in c̄st Ihū/ forsoþe zif ȝee ben of crist: þerfore ȝee ben  
seed of abraham · astir þe biheste eyres//

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>



Seye forsoþe how myche tyme þe eyre is litil: he  
dyuersip not fro a seruaunt/ whanne he is lorde of  
al · but he is vndir tutours & autours vnto þe tyme  
determynde of þe fadir/ so & we whanne we weren  
litil: weren seruyng vndir þe elementis of þe worlde/ but  
where þe plente of tyme came · god sente his sone made of a  
womman · made vndir þe lawe · þat he schulde azen bie hem  
þat weren vndir þe lawe · þat we schulde receyue þe adop-  
cioun of sones/ forsoþe for ȝee ben þe sones of god · god sente  
þe

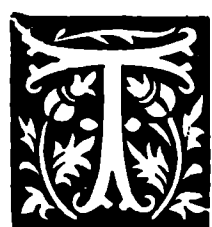
## to galatheis

þe spirit of his sone into zoure hertis: crynge abba (þat is fa-  
dir)/ and so now þer is not seruaunt: but sone/ þat zif sone:  
þanne & epre by god/ but þanne soþely we vnkowpung god ·  
serueden to hem þat weren not goddis (in kynde)/ now for-  
soþe whanne zee hane knowen god: zhe raþer zee ben knowen  
of god: howe ben zee turnyde to gedir estesone · to seek (or  
freel) & nedý elementis · to whiche zee wolen serue estesone/ &  
zee kepen dayes & moneþes & tymes & zeeris/ forsoþe I drede  
zou: lest þe parauenture I haue traueplide in zou wip outen  
cause/ be zee as I: for & I as zee/ breþeren I biseche zou: zee  
haue noþing hirte me/ soþely zee witen for by enfirmpte of  
fleysche I haue euangelizide to zou now bifore: and zoure  
temptacioun in my fleysche zee dispisiden not neþer forsoken  
but zee receyueden me as an aungel of god · as c̄st Ihu/ where  
is þerfore zoure blessyng/ soþely I bere witnessyng to zou ·  
for zif it myzte be done · zee schulden haue putte oute zoure  
yzen: and hane zouen to me/ þerfore am I made enemyes to  
zou · seyinge trewe þing to zou/ soþely þei louen zou not  
wel · but þei wolen exclude zou þat zee sue hem/ forsoþe sue  
zee good euermore in goode: & not onely whanne I am pre-  
sent anentis zou/ my litil sones · whom I childe (or bryng  
forþ) by trauel estesone · til crist be fourmyde in zou/ forsoþe I  
wolde now be at zou · & chaunge my voyce · for I am con-  
foundide (or schamyde) in zou// ¶ Seþe zee to me þat wolen  
be vnder þe lawe: haue zee not red þe lawe/ soþely it is writen/  
for abraham had two sones · one of þe hande mayden · & one  
of þe fre wife/ forsoþe he þat of þe hande mayden: was borne  
aftir þe fleysche/ but he þat of þe fre wiif · by azen byhest/ þe  
whiche þingis ben seyde by allegorie/ forsoþe þes þingis ben  
two testamentis/ soþely one in þe moute syna · gendrynge in  
seruage: þat is agar/ forsoþe syna is an hil in arabie · þe whiche  
is ioynede to it þat now is in irlm · & serueþ wip hire sones/  
forsoþe þat irlm þat is aboue is fre: þe whiche is oure modir/  
forsoþe it is writen/ be glad þou bareyn þat childist not (or þat  
bryngist

## ye pistel

bryngist not forþ children)/ breke out & crie: þou þat childist not: for many sones of þe leste womman: more þat of hire þat haþ an housbonde/ forsoþe breþeren we ben astir ysaac: þe sones of bihest/ but how þanne he þat was borne astir þe fleysche pursuede hym þat astir þe spirit: so & now/ but what seip þe scripture/ caste oute þe hande mayden & hire sone/ forsoþe þe sone of þe hande mayden schal not be eyre: wiþ þe sone of þe fre (wife)/ and so breþeren we ben not sones of þe hande mayden: but of þe fre wife/ by whiche liberte: crist haþ made us fre//

C<sup>m</sup> 5<sup>m</sup>



Therefore stonde zee: and este sone nyl zee be to gedir holden in zok of seruage/ lo I poul seye to zou • for zif zee ben circumcidide: crist schal profite to zou noþing/ soþely I bere witnessynge este sone to euery man • circumcidynge hym self: for he is dettour of al þe lawe for to be done/ zee ben avoydide fro crist: zee þat ben iustifyede in þe lawe: hane fallen aweye fro grace/ forsoþe we bi spirit of seip: abiden þe hope of ryztwesnesse/ forwhi in c<sup>st</sup> Ihu • neþer circumcisioun is any þing worþ • neþer prepucie (þat is maner) of heþen men: but seip þat worchip by charite: who lettide zou for to not obesche þe treuþe • to no man consente/ zee • forsoþe þis persuacoñ (or softe mouynge): is not of hym þat clepide zou// ¶ A litil sourdowz corruppiþ al þe gobet/ I triste of zou in þe lorde: þat zee schulen vnderstonde noon oþer þing/ forsoþe he þat distourbliþ zou • schal bere doom: who euer he is/ forsoþe breþeren zif I preche zit circumcisioun: what zit suffer I persecucōn/ þerfore sclaundre of þe crosse is avoydide/ I wolde & þei þat distourblen zou be kitte of/ forsoþe breþeren zee ben clepide into liberte • onely ȝpue zee not liberte into occasioun of fleysche: but by charite of spirit serue zee to gedir/ forsoþe al þe lawe is fulfilde in one worde/ þou schalt loue þi neyze bore as þi self/ for zif zee biten to gedir & eten: se zee leste zee be wastide fro atwynne (or eche from oþer)/

## to galatheis

oþer)/ forsoþe I seye in crist/ wander zee in spirit; & zee schu-  
 len not parfourme þe desiris of fleysche/ for þe fleysche coueptiþ  
 azenes þe spirit; soþely þe spirit azenes þe fleysche/ forsoþe  
 þes ben aduersaries to hem self to gedir/ þat zee done not þes  
 þingis what euer þingis zee wolen/ for zif zee ben ledde by þe  
 spirit; zee ben not vnder þe lawe/ forsoþe þe werkis of þe  
 fleysche ben open/ þe whiche ben fornicaciō · vncleanness ·  
 vncastite · lecherie · seruyng to ydolis · (or false goddis) ·  
 doingis of benym/ enemytees · stryues · enuyes (or folowynge  
 in euyl)/ wrappes · chydynge · discenciouns · sectis (or here-  
 lies) · enuyes · mansteingis · drunkennes · glotonyes; and  
 liche þingis to þes/ þe whiche I preche to zou as I bifore  
 seyde · for þei þat done suche þingis; schulen not haue þe  
 kyngdom of god// ¶ Forsoþe þe fruyte of þe spirit; is charite ·  
 ioye · pees · pacience · benygnyte (or of gode wille) · gode-  
 nesse · longe abidynge · mylkenesse · feiþ · temperaunce · con-  
 tynence · chastite · azenes suche þingis þe lawe is not/ forsoþe  
 þei þat ben of crist; haue crucifiede here fleysche wih visis &  
 concupiscencis (or coueptis)/ zif we lyuen by spirit; by spirit  
 walke we/ be we not made coueptouse of veyne glorie to gedir  
 stryng to wiin; [ ] haupng enuye to  
 gedir//



Beperen and zif a man be bifore ocupiede (or  
 ouercomen) in any gilte or trespas; zee þat ben  
 spiritual · techiþ suche a maner man in spirit of  
 softnesse · biholdynge þi self; þat & þou be not  
 temptide/ bere zee chargis þe toþer of þe toþer; and so zee  
 schulen fulfille þe lawe of crist/ forwhi zif any man gessþ hym  
 self for to be ouzte whanne he is nouzte; he deceyueþ hym self/  
 forsoþe eche man proue his owne werke; and so he schal haue  
 glorie onely in hym self · & not in anoþer/ forsoþe eche man  
 schal bere his owne charge// ¶ Forsoþe þe þat is tauzte by  
 worde; compe to hym þat techiþ hym in alle gode þingis/  
 nyl

C<sup>m</sup> 6<sup>m</sup>

## ye pistel to galatheis

npl zee erre: god is not scornede/ forsoþe what þingis a man  
schal sowe: and þes þingis he schal reþe/ for he þat soweth in  
his fleysche: and of þe fleysche schal reþe corrupcioun/ forsoþe  
he þat soweth in spirit: of þe spirit schal reþe euerlastyngþe lijf/  
forsoþe we doinge good: fayle not/ soþely in his tyme we  
schulen reþe: not faylyngþe/ þerfore þe while we haue tyme:  
wirche we good to alle men • forsoþe moþte to þe housholde  
meyne of þe feiþ// ¶ See zee wiþ what maner lettris I haue  
written to zou by myn hande/ soþely who euer wole plese in  
fleysche: þes constreynen zou for to be circumcidide • onely  
þat þei suffre not persecuciōn of cristis crosse/ forsoþe neþer þei  
þat ben circumcidide kepen þe lawe: but þei wolen zou for to  
be circumcidide • þat þei glorie in zoure fleysche/ forsoþe be it  
fer to me for to glorie: no but in þe crosse of oure lorde Ihu  
crist • by whom þe worlde is crucifiede to me: and I to þe  
worlde/ forsoþe in crist Ihu neþer circumcision is ouzte worþ •  
neþer prepucie (þat is heþen mennes custom): but a newe  
creature/ and who euer schulen sue þis rewle: pees vpon hem  
& mercy vpon isrl of god/ fro hens forþ no man be heuy to  
me/ forsoþe I bere in my body: þe tokenes of oure lorde Ihu  
crist/ þe grace of oure lorde Ihu crist • wiþ zoure spirit breþeren  
Amen.

## ye piſtel to ephesies



Dule apostle of Ihu crist by þe wille of C<sup>m</sup> 1<sup>m</sup>

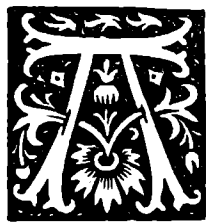
god; to alle holy men at ephes; & feiþ-  
ful in Ihu c̄st. grace to zou & pees of  
god oure fadir; and of þe lorde Ihu c̄st/  
blesside be god & þe fadir of oure lorde  
Ihu c̄st. þat blesside vs in al spiritual.  
in heuenely þingis in c̄st. as he chees  
vs in hym; bifore þe makynge of þe

worlde. þat we schulden be holy & wiþ outen wemme in his  
sitz; in charite/ þe whiche bifore ordeynede vs into þe adop-  
cion of sones by Ihu c̄st into hym; aftir þe purpos of his wille.  
into prepsyng of þe glorie of his grace. in þe whiche he made  
vs able to his grace in his derworþ sone. in whom we haue  
azen bynge of his blode. & remyscioun of synnes aftir  
richess of his grace þat aboundide gretely in vs in al wisdom  
& prudence; þat he schulde make þe sacrament of his wille  
known to vs aftir þe gode plesaunce of hym þat he purposide  
in hym. in þe dispensacioun of plente of tymes. for to instore  
alle þingis in c̄st. þe whiche ben in heuenes & in erþe in hym/  
in whom also & we by sorte or grace ben clepide. bifore  
ordeynede aftir þe purpos of hym þat worchþ alle þingis  
aftir þe counseyl of his wille; þat we ben into þe prepsyng of  
his glorie. we þat bifore hopiden in c̄st/ in whom & zee whanne  
zee hadden herde þe worde of treuþe; receyueden þe gospel of  
zoure helpe. in whiche & zee bileuynge. ben markide wiþ þe  
holy gost of biheste. þat is wed (or ernes) of zoure heretage  
into þe redempcion of purchasyng; into prepsynge of his  
glorie/ þerfore & I herynge zoure feiþ þat is in c̄st Ihu. &  
louynge into alle seyntis; ceese not doinge þankyngis for zou.  
makynge mynde of zou in my prepers. þat god oure lorde  
Ihu

## ye piſtel

Ihū criſt fadir of glorie • ȝyue to ȝou þe ſpirit of wiſdom & of reuelacōn: vnto þe knowyng of him/ þe ȝzen of ȝoure herte inliȝtenyde • þat ȝee witen whiche is þe hope of his clepynges: & whiche þe richeſſis of þe glorie of heretage in ſeyntis/ and whiche is þe ouerſemyngre greteneſſe • of his vertue into vs • þat hane bileuede • aftir þe wirchynge of þe myȝte of his vertue • þe whiche wrouȝte in criſt reȝſyngre hym fro deade (men) & ſittynge on his riȝthalfe in heuenely þingis • aboue eche pryncipate (or power of pryncis): and poteſtate & vertue • & lordſchypynge • & eche name þat is namyde • not onely in þis worlde but in þe worlde to come/ and made alle þingis ſuget vnder his feet • & ȝaue hym hede vpon al þe chirche þat is þe body of hym • & þe plente of hym: þe whiche alle þingis in alle þingis is fulfildē//

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>



And whanne ȝee weren deade in ȝoure giltis & ſynnes in whiche ȝee wandren ſumtyme • aftir þe ſpace (or laſtynge) of þis worlde • aftir þe prynce of þe power of þis eyre • of þe ſpirit þat wirchith now into þe ſones of vntriſte (or vnbileue) in þe whiche we alle lyueden ſumtyme in deſiris of oure fleſche doinge þe wille of fleſche & þouȝtis • & we weren by kynde þe ſones of wrath as & oþer/ forſoþe god þat is riche in mercy for his ful myche charite in whiche he louede vs • & whanne we weren deade in ſynnes • he quykentyde vs to gedir in cōſt • by whos grace ȝee ben ſauede • & to gedir aȝen reȝſide • & to gedir made to ſitte in heuenely þingis • in cōſt Ihū: þat he ſchulde ſchewe in þe worldis comynge ouer þe plenteuous richeſſis of his grace: in godeneſſe vpon vs in cōſt Ihū/ forſoþe by grace ȝee ben ſaupyde by feith: and not of ȝou/ ſoþely it is þe ȝifte of god • not of werkis: þat no man glorie/ forſoþe we ben þe makynge of hym • made of nouȝt in cōſt Ihū/ in gode werkis þat god made redy bifore: þat in hem we go/ for whiche þing be ȝee mynde-ful þat ſumtyme ȝee þat weren heþen in fleſche • þe whiche  
weren

## to ephesies

weren seyde prepucie · fro þat þat is seyde circumciſioun in fleysche made by hande · þat weren in þat tyme wiþ outhen c̄st · alienyde (or made straunge) fro þe lyuynge of isrl · & herboride men (or gestis) of testamentis . not haupnge hope of biheste; and wiþ outhen god in þis worlde/ now forsoþe in crist Ihu zee þat weren sumtyme fer; ben made nyȝ in þe blode of c̄st/ forsoþe he is oure pees · þat made boþe one & þe mydel wal of a longe wal · vnbyndyng[ ] enemyes in his fleysche abydyng þe lawe & maundementis; by doomes · þat he make two (puples) in hym self into a newe man · makynge pees · þat he recounseyll boþe in one body to god by þe croſſe; sleinge þe enemytees in hym self/ and he comynge euangelizide pees to ȝow þat weren fer; and pees to hem þat weren nyȝ/ for by hym we boþe haue nyȝe comynge in one spirit to þe fadir// ¶ Þerfore now zee ben not herboride men & gestis & comelyngis; but zee ben cyteſeyns of ſeyntis & þe houſholde meyne of god · aboue bildide on þe foundement of apoſtlis · & of prophetis; by þat hiȝeſt cornerſtoon crist ihu/ in whom eche bildynge made; war- iþ an holy temple in þe lorde/ in whom & be zee bildide to gedir into þe habitacle of god in þe holy goſt//



**F**or grace of þis þing I poul þe bounden of c̄st Ihu for ȝou heþen men; ȝif neþeles zee haue herde þe dispensaçoñ of goddis grace þat is ȝouen to me in ȝou/ for aftir reuelaçoñ þe sacrament is made knowen to me · as aboue wroot in ſchorte þing; as zee redynge motwone vnderſtonde; my prudence in þe myſterie of c̄st þe whiche is not knowen to oþer generaçoñs to þe ſones of men; as it is now ſchewide to his holy apoſtlis & prophetis in þe spirit; heþen men for to be euen eyres · & to gedir bodily · & to gedir parteners of his biheſt in c̄st Ihu by þe euuangelie · whos mynyſtre I am made aftir þe ȝifte of goddis grace; þe whiche is ȝouen to me aftir þe worchyng of his vertue/ forsoþe to me leſte of alle ſeyntis þis grace is ȝouen · for to euangelie in he-

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



## ye pistel

þen men þe vnsercheable richessis (þat moun not be souzte oute) of crist/ and for to inlizten alle men · whiche is þe dispensacon of sacrament hid fro worldis/ in god þat made alle þingis of nouzt/ þat þe mychefolde wisdom of god be knownen to prynces & potestates in heuenely þingis by þe chirche aftir þe settynge of worldis · þe whiche he made in c̄st Jhū oure lorde · in whom we hane trist & nyȝ comynge in trystyng by þe seiþ of hym// ¶ for whiche þing I are þat zee sayle not in my tribulaciouns for zou/ þat is zoure glorie/ for grace of þis þing I bowe my knees to þe fadir of oure lorde Jhū crist · of whom eche fadirhede of heuenes & in erþe is nampde · þat he ȝyue to zou aftir þe richnessis of his glorie · vertue for to be strengþide by his spirit in þe inner man · crist for to dwelle bi seiþ in zoure hertis/ zee rotide & groundide in charite þat zee mowne comprehendē · wiþ alle seyntis · whiche is þe brede & lengþe & hizeness & depnesse/ also for to wite þe charite of c̄st aboue sempnge to science · þat zee be fulfild into al þe plente of god/ forsoþe to hym þat is myȝty for to make alle þingis more plenteuouſly þan we aren or vnderstonde · aftir þe vertue · þat wirchith in vs · to hym be glorie in þe chirche & in c̄st Jhū · into alle þe generacoñs of þe worlde of worldis amen//

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>



And so I bounden in þe lorde biſeche þat zee walke worþily in þe clepyng in whiche zee ben clepide · wiþ al mekenesse · & myldeſſe · wiþ paciēce ſupportyng to gedir in charite · biſie for to kepe vnyte of ſpirit in þe bonde of pees one body & one ſpirit as zee ben clepide in one hope of zoure clepyng/ one lorde one seiþ one baptym one god & fadir of alle · þe whiche is aboue alle men · & by alle þingis & in vs alle// ¶ to eche of vs grace is ȝouen aftir þe meſure of þe ȝyuyng of crist/ for which þing he seiþ/ he ſtepyng into hiȝe ledde captiftee captife · (or priſonnyng priſonnyde) · he ȝaue ȝiftis to men/ forsoþe þat he aſſendide what is it/ no but for & he diſcendide firſte into þe lower parties

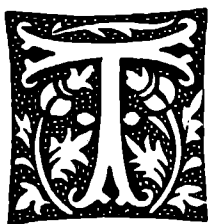
## to ephesies

ties of þe erþe/ he it is þat come doune · & þat ſtepzede vpon alle heuenes · þat he ſchulde fulfille alle þingis/ & he ʒaue ſumme ſopely apoſtliſ · ſumme forſoþe prophetiſ · oþer forſoþe euangelistiſ · oþer forſoþe ſcheperdiſ & techers · to þe ful endyng of ſeyntiſ into þe werke of mynysterie · into þe edificacoñ of c̄ſtiſ body · til we rennen alle in vnyte of feiþ & of knowyng of goddiſ ſone in a parfite man; into þe meſure of age of þe plente of c̄ſt// ¶ þat we be not nowē litil children mouyng as waſwiſ · & be borne aboute wiþ al wynde of techyng in þe waywardeneſſe of men in ſutel witte; to þe deceyuyng of errour/ forſoþe we doinge treuþe in charite; ware in hym by alle þingis · þat iſ criſt þe heed/ of whom al þe body ſette to gedir & bounden to gedir by eche ioynture of vndirferuyng · vp worchyng into þe meſure of eche membre; makih encreſyng of þe body · into þe edificacoñ of it in charite// ¶ herfore þiſ þing I ſeye & witneſſe it in þe lorde; þat ʒee walke not nowē as & heþen men walken in þe vanyte of here witte in dirkenessiſ · hauyng vndirſtondyng dirkenyde · alienyde (or made fer) fro þe liſ of god · by ignoraunce (or vnkunnyng) þat iſ in hem; for þe blyndeneſſe of here herte/ þei diſpeyryng bitoken hem ſelf to vnchaſtite; into þe wirchyng of al vncleenneſſe in coueytiſe/ forſoþe ʒee hane not ſolernyde criſt; ʒif neþeleſ ʒee herden hym; & ben tauzte in hym as iſ treuþe in Ihu/ do ʒee aweye aftir þe firſte luyng þe olde man þat iſ corrupte aftir þe deſiriſ of errour/ forſoþe be ʒee renewide by ſpirit of ʒoure mynde; & cloþe ʒee þe newe man · þat aftir god iſ made of nowzte in riȝtweſneſſe & holynneſſe of treuþe/ for whiche þing ʒee puttyng aweye leeſyng; ſpeke treuþe eche man wiþ hiſ neyzebores; for we ben membres to gedir/ be ʒee wroþe; & nyl ʒee ſynne/ þe ſunne falle not doune; on ʒoure wraþ/ nyl ʒee ʒyue ſtede to þe deuel/ he þat ſtale; nowē ſtele he not/ more forſoþe trauel he in wirchyng wiþ hiſ handiſ þat þat iſ gode þing; þat he haue wherof he ſchal ʒyue to a man ſuffryng nede/ eche euyl worde go not oute

## ye pistel

oute of zoure mouþ/ but zif any is good to þe edificacōn of feiþ/ þat it ȝyue grace to men herynge/ and nyl zee to gedir make þe holy goſt of God ſory (or heuy)/ in whiche zee ben markide in þe day of redempcōn/ al bitterneſſe & wrapþe & indignacioun • & crie & blaſfempe • be taken aweye fro zou/ wiþ al malice/ forſoþe be zee to gedir benynge (or of gode wille) • mercyful • ȝyuyng to gedir/ as & god ȝaue to zou in criſt//

C<sup>m</sup> 5<sup>m</sup>



Therefore be zee folowers of god • as moſte derworþe ſones/ & walke zee in loue as & c̄iſt louede vs & ȝaue hym ſelf for vs an offrynge & ſacrifice to god/ into þe odoure of ſwetneſſe/ fornyacioun forſoþe & al vnclenneſſe • or auarice be not nampde in zou/ as it bicometh holy men • oþer filþe oþer folye ſpeche or harlottrie þat parteyneth not to þing/ but more doinge of þankyngis/ forſoþe þis þing wite zee vnderſtondyng • þat eche lechour or vnclene man • or coueytouse þat is ſeruage of ydolis (or maumetis)/ haþ not heretage in þe kyngdom of c̄iſt & god/ no man deceyue zou by veyne wordis/ forſoþe for þes þingis þe wrap of god came into þe ſones of myſbileue/ þerfore nyl zee be made parceners of hem/ forſoþe zee weren ſumtyme dirkenessiſ/ nowwe forſoþe zee ben lizt in þe lorde/ walke zee as þe ſones of lizt/ forſoþe þe fruyte of lizt is in al godeneſſe & riſtweſneſſe & treuþe/ prouyng what is wel pleaſyng to god/ & nyl zee comyne to vnfructuouse werkes of dirkenessiſ/ forſoþe more reprove zee/ forſoþe what þingis ben done of hem in hem in pryue/ it is foul & for to ſeþe/ forſoþe alle þingis þat ben prouede of þe lizt/ ben made opyn/ forſoþe alle þing þat is ſchewide is lizt/ for whiche þing he ſeiþ/ riſe þou þat ſlepith • & riſe vp fro deade þingis & criſt ſchal lizten þee// ¶ and ſo breþeren ſe zee how warly zee ſchulen go/ not as vnwiſe men/ but as wiſemen azen byinge tyme • for þe dayes ben euyl/ þerfore nyl zee be vnprudent/ but vnderſtondyng whiche is þe wille of þe lorde/ and nyl zee be made drunken wiþ wijn •  
in

## to ephesies

in whom is lecherie · but he zee fulfildē wip þe holy goſt ſpekynge to zoure ſelf in psalmes & ympnes & ſpiritual ſongis: ſingynge & ſeyinge psalme in zoure hertis to þe lorde/ euer= more doinge þankyngis for alle þingis in þe name of oure lorde Ihū c̄ſt: to god & þe fadir/ zee ſuget to gedir in þe drede of criſt// ¶ We wymmen ſugettis to here men (or houſbondis) as to þe lorde · for þe man is heed of þe womman · as c̄ſt is heed of þe chirche/ he is ſaueour of his body but as þe chirche is ſuget to criſt: ſo & wymmen to here houſbondis in alle þingis/ men loue zee zoure wiſes: as & criſt louede þe chirche · & zaue hym ſelf for it · þat he ſchulde make it holy · clenſynge it wip þe waſchynge ſtoon of water: in worde of liſf/ þat he zye þe chirche glorious to hym ſelf · not haupnge wemme (or reuelynge) or any ſuche þingis: but þat it be holy & vnde= foulide/ ſo & men ſchulen loue here wiſes: as here owne bodyes/ he þat loueþ his wiſf: loueþ hym ſelf/ forſoþe no man hatide euer his flepſche: but noriſchiþ & foſteriþ it · as & c̄ſt doþ þe chirche/ for we ben membris of his body: of his flepſche & of his bones/ for þis þing a man ſchal forſake his fadir & modir: & he ſchal cleue to his wiſf/ and þei ſchulen be two in one flepſche/ forſoþe þis ſacrament is greet/ forſoþe I ſeye in c̄ſt & in þe chirche/ neþeles & zee alle · eche man loue his wiſf as hym ſelf/ forſoþe þe wiſf drede hire houſbonde//



Sones obefche zee to zoure fadir & modir in þe lorde/ forſoþe þis þing is iuſt (or riȝtful)/ honoure þou þi fadir & modir · þat is þe firſte maundement in bi= heſt · þat it wel be to þee · & þat þou be longe luyngē on þe erþe/ and zee faderis nyl zee terre zoure ſones to wrap: but noriſche zee hem in þe diſcipline & correccioun (or chaſtyſynge) of þe lorde/ ſeruauntis obefche zee to flepſche= ly lordis wip drede & tremblyngē in ſymplenefſe of zoure herte: as to criſt/ not ſeruyngē at yze as pleſynge to men: but as ſeruauntis of c̄ſt doinge þe wille of god of inwitte (or re= ſoune)

C<sup>m</sup> 6<sup>m</sup> .

## ye pistel to ephesies

soune) wiþ good wille: seruyng as to þe lorde & not to men/  
wityng þat eche man what euer gode þing he schal do: þis he  
schal receyue of þe lorde/ wheþer seruaunt wheþer fre man/  
and zee lordis do þe same þingis to hem forzuyng manaaſis/  
witynge for here lorde & zoure is in heuenes: & takynge of  
persones is not anentis god// ¶ here aftirwarde breþeren be  
zee comfortide in þe lorde · & in þe myzte of his vertue/ cloþe  
zou wiþ þe armour of god þat zee mowne stonde azenes aspi-  
yngis (or assaylyngis) of þe deupl/ for stryuyng is not to vs  
azenes fleshe & blood · but azenes þe prynces & potestatis ·  
azenes gouernours of þe worlde · of þes dirkenessis/ azenes  
spiritual þingis of wickidnesse: in heuenely þingis/ þerfore  
take zee þe armour of god · þat zee mowne azenstonde in þe  
eupl day · & in alle þingis stonde zee parfite/ þerfore stonde zee  
girde aboute zoure lendis in soþefastnesse · & cloþide þe hau-  
birioun of riztwesnesse · & þe feet schod in makynge reedy of þe  
gospel of pees/ in alle þingis takynge þe schelde of feiþ: in þe  
whiche zee mowne quenche al þe firy dartis of þe werste  
enemy/ and take zee þe helme of helpe & þe swerde of þe goſt:  
þat is þe worde of god · by al preyer & biſechynge · preying  
al tyme in spirit & in hym wakynge in al biſynesse · & biſech-  
ynge for al holy & for me: þat worde be zouen to me in open-  
ynge of my mouþ: wiþ triſte for to make knowen þe myſterie  
of þe gospel/ for whiche I am sette in legatie (or meſſage) in  
þis cheyne: so þat in it I be hardie for to ſpeke as it bihoueh  
me/ forsoþe þat & zee wite what þingis ben aboute me · what  
I schal do: titycus my moſte dere broþer & trewe mynyſtre in  
þe lorde schal make alle þingis knowen to zou whom I ſente  
to zou into þis same þing þat zee knowe what þingis ben  
aboute vs · þat he comforte zoure hertis/ pees to breþeren &  
charite wiþ feiþ of god oure fadir: & of þe lorde Ihu c̄ſt/ grace  
wiþ alle men þat loue oure lorde Ihu c̄ſt: in vncorruptioun  
amen//

## ye pistel to philipenses



Dul & tymothe seruauntis of Ihu c̄st to C<sup>m</sup> 1<sup>m</sup>

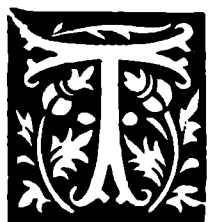
alle þe holy men in c̄st Ihu þat ben at philippis wip bischopis & dekenes · grace to zou & pees of god oure fadir · & of þe lorde Ihu crist/ I do þankyngis to my god · in al mynde of zou euermore in alle my prepers for alle zou wip ioye · makyng a bisechyng on

zoure compynyng in þe gospel of crist · fro þe firste day to nowe · tristyng his ilke þing · for he þat bigan in zou a gode werke · schal parfourme til into þe day of Ihu c̄st/ as it is iuste to me for to feel his þing for zou alle for þat I haue zou in herte & in my bondis · & in defendyng & confermyng of þe gospel · alle zou for to be felowis of my ioye/ for god is a witnesse to me how I coueyte zou alle · in þe bowels of Ihu crist/ and his þing I prepe þat zoure charite be plenteuouse more & more in science (or kunnyng) & in al witte · þat zee proue better þingis · þat zee be clene & wip outhen offence in þe day of crist/ fulfilde wip þe fruyte of ryztwesnesse bi Ihu c̄st · into þe preyfynge & glorie of god// fforsoþe breþeren I wole zou for to wite þat þe þingis þat ben aboute me · hane comen more to þe profite of þe gospel · so þat my bondis weren made known in c̄st · in eche moothalle & in alle oþer places/ þat mo of breþeren in þe lorde tristyng in my bondis more plenteuoufly dursten wip outhen drede speke þe worde of god/ summe forsoþe & for enuye & stryfe summe forsoþe & for good wille · prechen crist/ summe forsoþe & of charite · wityng for I am putte in þe defense of þe gospel/ fforsoþe summe of contencioun or stryfe schewen crist · not clenely gessyng hem for to reyse pressure to my bondis/ what soþely þe while on al  
maner

## ye pistel

maner oþer by contencioun oþer by treuþe crist is schewide .  
 & is þis þing I haue ioþe/ but & in þis þing I schal haue ioþe/  
 Soþely I woot þat þis þing schal come to me into helþe by  
 zoure preþers & þe vndirmynnystrynge of þe spirit of Iþū c̄st:  
 aftir myn abydyngē & hope/ for in no þing I schal be con-  
 foundide or schamyde: but in al tryste as euermore & nowē c̄st  
 schal be magnyfiede in my body: oþer by lijf oþer by deþ/ for-  
 soþe to me for to lyue c̄st is: & for to die wyunnyngē/ þat ȝif for  
 to lyue in fleysche þis is fruyte of werke to me: & what I schal  
 chese I knowe not/ forsoþe I am constreynyde of two þingis:  
 haupnge desire for to be dissoluyde (or departide) þe soule  
 fro þe body . & for to be wiþ crist/ it is myche more better to  
 me/ forsoþe for to dwelle in fleysche is nedeful for ȝou/ and I  
 tristynge þis þing . woot þat I schal dwelle . & parfytely  
 dwelle to alle ȝou . to zoure profite & ioþe of feiþ: þat zoure  
 þankyngē abounde in c̄st Iþū in me . by my comynge estesone  
 to ȝou/ onely lyue ȝee worþily to þe gospel of crist/ þat where  
 I schal come & se ȝou . oþer absent I schal here of ȝou . for ȝee  
 stonden in one spirit of one wille traueyllynge to gedir to þe  
 feiþ of þe gospel . & in no þing be aferde of aduersaries þe  
 whiche is to hem cause of perdicione: forsoþe to ȝou cause of  
 helþe/ and þis þing of god/ for it is ȝouen to ȝou for c̄st . þat  
 not onely ȝee bileuen into hym: but also þat ȝee suffren for  
 hym/ haupnge þe same strife what maner & ȝee lizen in me: &  
 nowē ȝee hane herde of me//

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>



Herfore ȝif any coumfort in c̄st . ȝif any solace of  
 charite . ȝif any felowschip of spirit . ȝif any entraylis  
 of mercy doinge: fulfille ȝee my ioþe . þat ȝee vndir-  
 stonde þe same þing . haupnge þe same charite of one  
 wille: felynge þe same þing/ no þing by strife neþer by veyne  
 glorie: but in mekenesse demynge hizer to hem self to gedir (or  
 eche holdynge oþer in vertue) . not eche by hem self biholdynge  
 what þingis ben here owne: but þo þingis þat ben of oþer/ for-  
 soþe

## to philipensis

soþe feele zee þis þing in zou: þe whiche & in c̃st Jhū/ þe whiche  
whan he was in fourme of god • demyde not raueyne hym  
self for to be euen to god: but he mekide hym self • takynge þe  
fourme of a seruaunt into likenesse of men made: & in hibite  
founden as a man/ he mekide hym self made obedient vnto  
þe deþ • forsoþe to þe deþ of crosse/ for whiche þing & god en-  
haunside hym • & zæue to hym a name þat is aboue al name/  
þat in þe name of Jhū eche knee be bowide of heuenely þingis  
& erþely & hellis/ and eche tunge knoweleche: for þe lorde Jhū  
c̃st • is in þe glorie of god þe fadir// ¶ And so my moſte der-  
worþe as euermore zee hane obeschide not onely in my pre-  
sence: but myche more nowe in myn absence wirche zee wiþ  
drede & tremblynge zoure helpe/ forsoþe it is god þat worchþ  
in zou • & for to wille • & for to parfourme for gode wille/ for-  
soþe do zee alle þingis wiþ outhen grucchyngis & doutyngis:  
þat zee be wiþ outhen pleynte • & þe symple sones of god wiþ  
outhen reproue in þe mydel of a schreweide nacioun & way-  
warde/ amonge whom zee schynen as zyuers of lizt in þe  
worlde: holdyng to gedir þe worde of lijf to my glorie in þe  
day of c̃st/ for I haue not runnen in veyne: neþer in veyne  
traueylide/ But & zif I be offride (or slayne) vpon þe sacrifice  
& seruyce of zoure feiþ: I haue ioye & to gedir þanke zou alle/  
þe same þing forsoþe & zee hane ioye: & to gedir þanke me/  
forsoþe I hope in þe lorde Jhū me for to sende tymothe soone  
to zou: þat & I be in good intwit (or gladnesse): þo þingis  
knownen þat be at zou/ forsoþe I haue no man so of one wille  
(or acorde): þat is bisie for zou wiþ clene effeccion (or de-  
fire)/ forsoþe alle men seeken þo þingis þat ben here owne:  
not þo þat ben of c̃st Jhū/ forsoþe knowe zee þe asaye of  
hym: for as a sone to þe fadir: he seruyde wiþ me in þe gos-  
pel/ forsoþe I hope me for to sende hym to zou: anone as I  
schal se what þingis ben aboute me/ soþely in þe lorde I  
triste: for & I myself schal come to zou soone/ forsoþe I gesside  
it nedeful for to sende to zou epaphrodite my broþer & euer



## ye pistel

wirchir & myn euen knyzt · forsoþe zoure apostle & þe seruaunt  
of my nede/ for soþely he desiride zou alle · & he was sorowful ·  
for þat & zee herden hym made sijk/ forwhi & he was made  
sijk to þe deþ · but god hadde mercy of hym/ forsoþe not onely  
of hym · but also & of me · lest I hadde heuenesse vpon heue-  
nesse/ þerfore more hastily I sente hym · þat hym seyn · este  
zee hane ioye · & I be wiþ outen heuynesse/ and so receyue zee  
hym wiþ al ioye in þe lorde · & haue zee suche maner men wiþ  
honoure/ for whi of þe werke of c̄st · vnto þe deþ he wente ·  
zuyng his soule (þat is lijf) · þat he schulde fulfille þat þat  
saylde to zou anentis my seruyce//

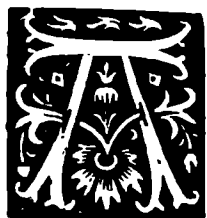
C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



Densforþewarde my breþeren haue zee ioye in þe  
lorde · for to write to zou þe same þingis · forsoþe  
to me not slowe forsoþe to zou necessarie/ se zee  
houndis · se zee euyl werkemen · se zee dyuyfioun/  
soþely we ben circumcisioun þat by spirit seruen to god · & glo-  
rien in c̄st Jhū · & not haupnge triste in þe fleysche/ þouȝ I  
haue triste & in þe fleysche · zif any oþer man is seen for to  
triste in þe fleysche I more · circumcidide in þe eyȝthe day · of  
þe kynrede of Isrl · of þe lynage of beniamyn · an ebrue of  
ebrues · aftir þe lawe a pharise · aftir loue pursuyng þe chirche  
of god · aftir ríztwesnesse þat is in þe lawe luyng wiþ outen  
playnte/ but whiche þingis weren to me wyunnynges · I haue  
demyde þes peyryngis for c̄st/ neþeles I gesse alle þingis for  
to be peyrement · by þe cleer science of Jhū c̄st/ for whom I  
made alle þingis peyrement/ and I deme as tordis · þat I  
wynne c̄st · & þat I be founde in hym · not haupnge my rízt-  
wesnesse þat is of þe lawe · but þat þat is of þe feiþ of c̄st þat  
is of god ríztwesnesse in feiþ for to knowe hym & þe vertue of  
his risynge azen · & þe felowschip of his passioun · configuride  
(or made lijk) · to his deþ · zif on any maner I schal come (or  
renne) azen to þe resurrecoñ þat is of deade (men)/ not þat  
nowe I haue taken · or nowe am parfite/ forsoþe I sue zif any  
maner

## to philipensis.

maner I schal comprehende · & in what þing I am compre-  
hendide of Ihu c̄st/ breþeren I deme me not to haue compre-  
hendide/ one þing forsoþe I forzetyngge soþely þo þingis þat  
ben byhynde · strecchyngge my self forsoþe to þo þingis þat  
ben þe former to þe ordeynnde þing: pursue to þe prise of þe  
hize clepyngge of god in c̄st Ihu/ þerfore who euer we ben par-  
site: feele we þis þing/ & zif we vnderstonde oþer maner any  
þing: & þat þing god schal schewe to zou/ neþeles to what  
þing we hane comen · þat we vnderstonde þe same þing: & þat  
we parsitely dwelle in þe same reule// ¶ Breþeren be zee my  
folowers & wayte zee hem þat walken so: as zee hane oure  
fourme/ forsoþe many walken: whom I haue seyde to zou  
ofte/ forsoþe now & I wepyngge seye þe enemyes of cristis  
crosse/ whos ende deþ (or perischyngge) whos god is þe wombe/  
& glorie in confusioun of hem: þat saueren erþely þingis/ for-  
soþe oure lyuyngge is in heuenes/ wher of alle we abiden þe  
saueour oure lorde Ihu c̄st · whiche schal conferme þe body of  
oure mekenesse configuride (or made lijk) to þe body of clere-  
nes · aftir þe wirchyngge by whiche he may also make alle þin-  
gis suget to hym//



**A**nd so my breþeren moſte derworþ & moſte deſiride ·  
my ioye & my crowne ſo ſtonde zee in þe lorde moſt  
dere breþeren/ I preye eucodian · & I biſeche ſyn-  
ticen: for to vnderſtonde þe ſame þing in þe lorde/  
alſo I preye & þee german felowe · helpe þou þe ilke (wym-  
men) þat traueylen wiþ me in þe goſpel wiþ clement & oþer  
myn helpers: whos names ben in þe booke of liif/ ioye zee in  
þe lorde euermore: eſte I ſeye ioye zee/ be zoure temperaunce  
(or paciencie) knownen to alle men: þe lorde is nyȝ/ be zee no  
þing biſie: but in al preyer & biſechyngge wiþ doinge of þank-  
yngis · be zoure aringis knownen at god/ and þe pees of god  
þat paſſiþ al witte: kepe zoure hertis & vnderſtondyngis · in  
c̄st Ihu oure lorde// ¶ Afro hensforþ breþeren · what euer þin-  
gis

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>

## ye pistel

gis ben soþe · what euer þingis chaste · what euer luste · what euer holy · what euer ameable (or able for to be louede) · what euer þingis of good fame · zif any vertue · zif any preysynge of disciplyne · þenke zee þes þingis · þe whiche & zee hane lernyd & taken & herde & seyn in me / do zee þes þingis · & god of pees schal be wiþ zou // ¶ Forsoþe breþeren I ioyede gretly in þe lordes for summe tyme aftirwarde zee azen floureden for to feel for me as & zee feeliden / forsoþe zee weren ocupiede / I seye not as for nede / forsoþe I haue lernyd · in whiche þingis I am sufficient for to be / I can be lowide (or mekide) · I can & abounde (or haue plente) / euery where & in alle þingis I am ordeynyd / & I can be fulfild · & to hungre & to abounde · & to suffre nyseyste / I may alle þingis in hym þat comfortiþ me / neþeles zee hane done wel · comunynge to my tribulaciō / forsoþe & zee philipenses witen · þat in þe bygynnyng of þe gospel · whan I wente forþ fro macedonyes no chirche comunyde wiþ me in resoun of þing zouen & taken · no but zee al one / for & to tessalonyk zee senten ones & twies · into vñe to me / not for I seek zifte · but I azen seek fructe aboundyng in zoure resoun / forsoþe I haue alle þingis & abounde / I am fulfild wiþ þingis taken of epaphrodite · þe whiche zee senten into þe odoure of swetnesse · a couenable sacrifice plesynge to god / forsoþe my god fulfild al zoure desire aftir his richess in glorie in cñt Ihū / forsoþe to god & oure fadir · be glorie into worlde of worldis amen / grete zee wel euery holy man in cñt Ihū / þe breþeren þat ben wiþ me · greten zou wel / alle holy men greten zou wel · moße soþely þei þat ben at cesaris hous / þe grace of oure lorde Ihū cñt · be wiþ zoure spirit amen //

## ye pistel to colocenses//



**D**ul apostle of Ihu crist · by þe wille of god · & tymothe broþer · to hem þat ben at colocence · holy & feithful breþeren in crist Ihu: grace to zou & pees of god oure fadir · & of þe lorde Ihu crist/ we done þankyngis to god & þe fadir of oure lorde Ihu crist · euermore for zou preyinge · we herynge zoure

C<sup>m</sup> I<sup>m</sup>

feih in crist Ihu · & þe loue þat zee hane into alle holy men for þe hope þat is kepte to zou in heuenes · þe whiche zee herden in þe worde of treuþe of þe gospel þat came to zou · as & it is in al þe worlde · & makih fruyte & warih as in zou of þat day in whiche zee herden & knewen þe grace in treuþe as zee lerneden at epaphras oure euer seruaunt moſte derworþ · þe whiche is a trewe mynyſtre of Ihu crist for zou/ þe whiche also ſchewide to vs zoure lyuynge in ſpirit// þerfore & we fro þe day in whiche we herden: ceesen not for zou preying & aringe þat zee be fulfild wih þe knowynge of his wille · in al wiſdom & goſtly vnderſtondyng þat zee walke worþily to god by al þe plesynge þingis · makynge fruyte in al good werke: & waxinge in þe ſcience of god/ in al vertue comfortyde aſtir þe myzt of his clerenesse in al paciencie: & longe abidyng wih ioie/ doinge þankyngis to god þe fadir · þe whiche made vs worþi into þe parte of ſorte of holy men in lizt · þe whiche deliueride vs fro þe power of dirkeness: & tranſlatide into þe kyngdom of þe ſone of his louynge: in whom we haue azenbyinge & remyſſion of synnes/ þe whiche is þe ymage of god inuifible · þe firſte bigoten of eche creature/ for in hym al þingis ben made · in heuenes · & in erþe · viſible & inuifible: oþer trones · oþer domynacones · oþer poteſtates/ alle þingis  
ben

## ye piſtel

ben made of nouzt by hym • & in hym • & he is bifore al: & al þingis ben in hym/ & he is heed of þe body of þe chirche: þe whiche is þe bygynnyng (or þe firſte þing) of alle • & þe firſte bigoten of deade (men) • þat he beholdynge prymacie (or þe firſte dignyte) in alle þingis/ for in hym it pleſide to gedir al plente to inhabite • & by hym al þingis for to be recounſeylide to hym he pleſyng by þe blode of his croſſe: oþer þo þingis þat ben in erþes: oþer þat ben in heuenes/ & whan zee weren ſumtyme alienyde (or made ſtraunge) & enemyes by wit in euyl werkis: nowe forſoþe he haþ recounſeylide zou in þe body of his fleſche by deþ • for to haue zou holy • & vnwemmyde • & wiþ outen reproue bifore hym • zif neþeles zee dwellen in þe feiþ • foundide & ſtable & vnmouable fro þe hope of þe goſpel þat zee hane herde þe whiche is prechide in al creature þat is vnder heuene/ for whiche I þoul am made mynyſtre • þe whiche nowe I haue ioye in paſſyouns for zou: & fulfille þo þingis þat ſaylen of þe paſſiouns of criſt • in my fleſche for his body þat is in þe chirche/ of þe whiche I þoul am made mynyſtre (or ſeruaunt) vp þe diſpenſaçon of god þat is zouen to me in zou • þat I fulfille þe worde of god • þe myſterie (or pryuete) þat was hid fro worldis & generaçoñs/ nowe forſoþe it is ſchewide to his ſeyntis • to whom god wolde make þe richeſſis known of þe glorie of his ſacrament in heþen men • þat is criſt in zou • þe hope of glorie • whom we ſchewen reprouynge eche man & techynge eche man in al wiſdom: þat we ȝyue eche man partite in cñt Iþū/ in whiche þing & I traueyl • ſtruyngge vp þe wirchyngge of hym • þat he worchiþ in me in vertue//

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>



Shely I wole zou for to wite • what biſynes I haue for zou • & for hem þat ben at laodice • & whiche euer ſizen not my face in fleſche • þat þe hertis of hem ben comfortide tauzte in charite • & into alle richeſſis of plente of vnderſtondyngge • into knowynge of myſterie of god þe fadir of Iþū cñt in whom ben alle treſours hid  
of

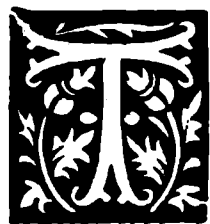
## to colocenles

of wisdom & science/ forsoþe þis þing þat no man deceyue zou  
in heyzþe of wordis/ for whi & I be absent in body: but in  
spirit I am wipþ zou · ioyinge & seinge zoure ordre · & þe sad-  
nes of zoure bileue þat is in crist/ þerfore as zee hane taken  
Ihū crist oure lorde · walke zee in hym · rotide & bildide aboue  
in c̄st · & confermyde in þe bileue · as & zee hane lernyde:  
aboundynge in hym in doinge of þankis// ¶ Se zee þat no  
man deceyue zou by filosofhie & veyne fallace (or gilous false-  
hede) · aftir þe tradicoñ of men: vp elementis of þis worlde  
& not aftir c̄st/ for in hym dwelliþ bodily al plente of þe god-  
hede: & zee ben fulfild in hym þat is hede of al pryncipate &  
power/ in whom & zee ben circumcidide in circumcisioun not  
made wipþ handes in nakidnesse of þe body of fleysche: but in  
circumcisiō of crist/ to gedir biriede to hym in baptym: in  
whom & zee haue rizen azen by feiþ of þe worchynge of god ·  
þat reyside hym fro deade (men)/ and whan zee weren deade  
in giltis · & in prepucie of zoure fleysche · he quykenyde to  
gedir zou wipþ hym · forzpyunge to zou al giltis · doinge aweye  
þat wrytynge of decree (or doom) þat was azens zou · þat  
was contrarie to zou/ & he took þat fro þe mydle · picchyng  
it to þe crosse · spouplyng pryncipates & powers led oute trif-  
tily: openly ouercomynge hem in hym self/ þerfore no man  
iuge zou in mete or drynke or in party of feest day or noe-  
menye or of sabotis · þe whiche ben schadowe of þingis to  
come: forsoþe þe bodye is of c̄st// ¶ No man deceyue zou  
willynge in mekenes & religioñ of aungels · þe whiche þingis  
he haþ not seyn · walkyng veynely · inblowen wipþ witte of his  
fleysche · & not holdynge þe heed of whom al þe body by bondis  
& ioynyngis to gedir vndre mynystride & made: warip into þe  
encrefynge of god/ for zif zee ben deade wipþ crist fro þe ele-  
mentis of þis worlde: what zit as men lyuynge to þe worlde  
deme zee: neþer zee schulen touche neþer taste · neþer trete  
wipþ handis þo þingis þe whiche al ben into deþ by þe ilke vse:  
aftir preceptis & techynge of men þe whiche ben soþely hau-  
ynge

## ye pistel

ynge resoun of wisdom in supersticion (or veyne religion or honoure) & mekenesse; & not for to spare þe body in any honoure to þe fulnesse of flesche//

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



Therefore zif zee hane risen to gedir wiþ crist; seeke zee þo þingis þat ben aboue • where crist is sit-tyng in þe rizthalse of god/ sauer zee þo þingis þat ben aboue; not þo þat ben vpon þe erþe/ forsoþe zee ben deade; & zoure lijfs is hidde wiþ c̃st in god/ forsoþe whanne c̃st schal appere zoure lijf; þanne & zee schulen appere wiþ hym in glorie/ þerfore flee zee zoure membrs þe whiche ben on þe erþe • fornicacōn • vncleennesse • leccherie • euyl coueytise • þe whiche is seruage of symulacris/ for whiche þingis þe wrappe of god come vpon þe sones of vnbileue/ in þe whiche & zee walkiden sumtyme • whan zee lyueden in hem/ nowe forsoþe & putte zee away alle þingis • wrappe • indignacioun • malice • blasfemye • foule wordis of zoure mouþ/ nyl zee hize to gedir spouplynge þe olde man wiþ his dedis • & cloþinge þe newe man þat is made newe azen into þe knowynge of god; vp þe ymage of hym þat made hym/ where is not male & female • heþen man & iewe • circumcisioun & prepucie • barbara & scita • seruaunt & freman; but alle þingis & in alle þingis c̃st/ þerfore cloþe zou as þe chosen of god • & holy louede of god þe entraylis of mercy • benygnyte & mekenesse • temperaunce • paciencie • supportyng (or berynge) vp to gedir • & zpyung to zoure self/ zif any man azenes any hab querel (or pleynte); as & þe lorde c̃st zaue to zou; so & zee/ forsoþe vpon alle þingis haue zee charite; þe whiche is bonde of perfeccōn/ & þe pees of c̃st enioye in zoure hertis • in þe whiche & zei ben clepide in one body; & be zee kynde (or free) of good wille (or zifte)/ þe worde of c̃st dwelle in zou in plenteuouſly in al wisdom • techyng & monestynge zou self in psalmes & ympnes & spiritual songis in grace syngynge in zoure hertis to þe lorde/ al þingis what euer zee done in worde or in

## to colocenses

in dede: alle þingis in þe name of oure lorde Jhū c̄st · doinge þankyngis to god þe fadir by hym/ wpmmen by zee suget to zoure housbondis: as it bihoueþ in þe lorde/ men loue zee zoure wifes & nyl zee be bitter to hem/ sones obeye zee to fadir & modir: bi alle þingis/ forsoþe þis is wel plesynge to þe lorde/ faderis nyl zee terre zoure sones to indignaçoñ: þat þei be not made of litil inwitte (or resoun)/ seruauntis obeye zee by alle þingis to fleyschely lordis/ not seruyng at yze as plesynge to men: but in þe symplenesse of herte dredynge þe lorde/ what euer zee done · wirche zee of inwitte as to þe lorde: & not to men/ witynge þat of þe lorde zee schulen take retribuçoñ (or azen zildynge) of heretage/ serue zee to þe lorde crist/ forsoþe he þat doih iniurie (or wronge): schal receyue þat þat he dide euyl/ & accepçoñ of persones is not anentis god//



**L**orde þat is iuste & euen: zye zee to seruauntis · wityng þat & zee hane a lorde in heuene/ be zee bisie to preyer · wakynge in it: in doinge of þankyngis/ preyinge to gedir & for vs: þat god open to vs þe dore of worde for to speke þe mysterie of c̄st/ for whiche also I am bounden þat I schewe it: so þat it bihoueþ me for to speke/ in wisdom walke zee to hem þat ben wiþ outhen forþ: azen byinge tyme/ zoure worde be saueride in salte þat is wisdom: euermore in grace/ þat zee wite how it byhoueþ zou for to answere to eche man/ titicus my moſte dere broþer & feiþful mynyſtre & euen seruaunt in þe lorde: schal make alle þingis knowen to zou: þat ben aboute me/ whom I sente to zou to þis ſame þing: þat he knowe what þingis ben aboute zou/ & comforte zoure hertis wiþ honeſtmo moſte dere & feiþful broþers: þe whiche is of zou/ þe whiche ſchal make alle þingis þat ben done here: knowen to zou/ ariſtark myn euen captife (or pryſonner) wiþ me greteþ zou wel/ and marke þe coſyn of barnabas: of whom zee hane taken maundementis/

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>



## ye piſtel to colocenſes

zif he ſchal come to zou: receyue zee hym/ & Jhū ꝑat is ſeyde iuſte: ꝑe whiche ben of circumciſioun/ ꝑei al one ben myn helpers in ꝑe kyngdom of god: ꝑat weren to me in ſolace/ epaphras ꝑat is of zou · gretip̄ zou wel · ꝑe ſeruaunt of Jhū c̄ſt · euer biſie for zou in preyers: ꝑat zee ſtonde parſite & ful in al ꝑe wille of god/ ſohely I here witneſſynge to hym · ꝑat he haþ myche traueyl for zou · & for hem ꝑat ben at laodice · & ꝑat ben at Terapolym/ luke ꝑe leche moſte dere & demas: greten zou wel/ grete zee wel ꝑe breþeren ꝑat ben at laodice & nympham: & ꝑe chirche ꝑat is in his hous/ & whanne þis piſtle ſchal be redde at zou: do zee ꝑat it be redde in ꝑe chirche of laodicensen: & ꝑat is of laodicensis · be red at zou/ & ſepe zee to archipp/ ſe ꝑe mynys̄tre ꝑat þou haſt take of ꝑe lordes: ꝑat þou fulfille it/ my ſalutacon · by ꝑe hande of poul/ be zee myndeful of my bondis/ ꝑe grace of oure lorde Jhū criſt: be wiþ zou alle amen//

## ye firſte piſtel to teſſalonicensen

C<sup>m</sup> I<sup>m</sup>



Dul apoſtle & ſiluan & tymothe to ꝑe chirche of teſſalonicense · in god oure fadir & ꝑe lorde Jhū criſt: grace to zou & pees/ we done þankyngis to god euermore for alle zou: makynge mynde of zou in oure preyers wiþ oute ceſynge/ we myndeful of zoure werke of feiþ & traueyl & charite: & ſuſteynynge of ꝑe hope of ꝑe lorde Jhū c̄ſt: before ꝑe lorde & oure fadir// ¶ we witynge zee moſte louede breþeren of ꝑe lorde & oure cheſynge · for oure goſpel was not at zou in worde onely: but in vertue & in ꝑe holy gooſt & in myche plente as zee witen  
what

## ye firste pistel to tessalonicenses

what maner man we weren in zou • for zou/ and zee ben made  
oure folowers: & of þe lorde: receyvinge þe worde in myche  
tribulacōn • wip ioye of þe holy gost • so þat zee be made fourme  
(or ensauple) to al men bileuynge in macedonpe & acapē/  
forsoþe of zou þe worde of þe lorde is defamyde (or gretely  
tolde) • not onely in macedonpe & acapē: but in eche place  
zoure seip þat is to god is parfite/ so þat it is not nede for to  
speke to zou any þing/ forsoþe þei schewen of zou what maner  
entre we hadden to zou • & how we ben conuertide to god fro  
symulacris • for to serue to quicke god & verrey • & for to  
abide his sone fro heuenes whom he reyside fro deade (men) •  
Jhū þat delyueride vs fro wrappe to comynge//



**E**r whi zee witen breþeren oure entre to zou • for C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>  
it was not beyne: but firste we suffride & punischide  
wip wrongis as zee witen in philippis: hadde triste  
in oure lorde for to speke to zou þe gospel of god •  
in myche bisynesse/ soþely oure exortacōn (or techynge) was  
not of erreure neþer of vnclennesse • neþer of gile • but as we  
ben prouede of god • þat þe gospel schulde be taken to vs: so  
we speken/ not as plesynge to men: but to god þat proueh  
oure hertis/ forsoþe neþer we weren any tyme in worde of  
glosynge: as zee witen/ neþer in occasion of auarise: god is  
witnesse/ neþer seekynge glorie of men neþer of zou neþer of  
oper: whanne we myzten be charge to zou of cōstis apostlis/  
but we ben made litil in þe mydil of zou • as zif a nurse fostre  
hire sones: so we desyrpnge zou • coueytynghely (or wip greet  
loue) wolden bitake to zou not onely þe gospel of god: but  
also oure lyues • for zee ben made to vs most derworþ/ for-  
soþe breþeren zee ben myndeful of oure traueyl & werpnesse  
nyzt & day wirchynge þat we schulden not greue any of zou:  
prechiden in zou þe euangelie of god/ zee ben witnessis & god  
how holily & iustly • & wip outhen pleynte to zou þat bileueden  
we weren • as zee weren/ how eche of zou as þe fadir his sones  
prepyng

## ye firste pistel

preyinge & coumfortynge zou: we hane witneside · þat zee schulden go worþily to god · þat clepide zou into his kyngdom & glorie/ þerfore & we done þankyngis to god: wiþ outhen ceefynge/ for whanne zee hadden take of vs þe worde of þe herynge of god · zee token it not as þe worde of men: but as it is verreyly þe worde of god þat wirchþ in zou þat hane beleuede/ soþely breþeren zee ben made folowers of þe chirchis of god þat ben in Judee in cēt Ihū/ for & zee haue suffride þe same þingis of zoure euen lynagis: as & þei of iewes · þe whiche sloun & þe lorde Ihū & þe prophetis & pursuen vs · & þei plesen not to god · & to alle men þei ben aduersaries · forbedynge us for to speke to heþen men þat þei be made saaf: þat þei fulfille here synnes euermore/ forsoþe þe wrappe of god bifore came vpon hem til into þe ende/ forsoþe breþeren we desolate fro zou at þe tyme of an houre in biholdynge · not in herte: more aboundauntly haue hizede for to se zoure face wiþ greet desire: for we wolden come to zou/ soþely I poul & ones & esteſone: but sathanas lettide vs/ soþely what is oure hope or ioye or crowne or glorie: wheþer zee ben not bifore oure lorde Ihū cēt in his comynge/ forsoþe zee ben oure glorie & ioye//

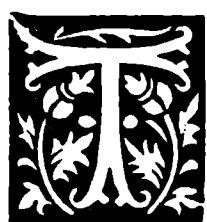
C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



Or þe whiche þing we susteynynge no lenger · it pleside to vs for to dwelle at athenys of one · & senten to tymothe oure broþer & mynystre of god in þe euangelie of crist · to zou to be confermyde & tauzte for zoure feiþ: þat no man be mouede in þes tribulaciouns/ soþely zee zoure self · witen þat in þis þing we ben putte/ for: why & whanne we weren at zou · we bifore seyden to zou vs to suffre tribulacoñs: as & it is done & zee witen/ þerfor & I poul not susteynynge (or abidyng) more · sente for to knowe zoure feiþ · lest parauenture he þat temptiþ schal tempte zou: & zoure traueyl be made veyne/ now we forsoþe tymothe comynge to vs fro zou · & tellynge to vs zoure feiþ & charite · & for zee

## to tessalonicens

zee hane euermore gode mynde of vs · desyrngge for to se vs  
as we also zou: þerfore breþeren we ben coumfortide in zou  
in al oure nede & tribulacoñ · by zoure feiþ/ for nowe welþuen:  
zif we stonden in þe lorde/ soþely we doinge of þankyngis  
mowne we zilde to god for zou in al ioye · in whiche we ioyen  
for zou bifore oure lorde nyzt & day · more plenteuoussly prey-  
inge þat we se zoure face: & fulfille þo þingis þat saylen of  
zoure feiþ/ forsoþe þe same god oure fadir & þe lorde Jhū c̄st:  
dresse oure weye to zou/ forsoþe þe lorde multiplie zou · & make  
zoure charite for to abounde into gedir into alle · as & we in  
zou · to zoure hertis · to be confermyde wiþ outhen pleynte in  
holynesse bifore god & oure fadir in þe comynge of oure lorde  
Jhū crist wiþ alle his seyntis amen//



Therefore breþeren hensforþwarde we prepen zou &  
bisechen in þe lorde Jhū · þat as zee haue recey-  
uede of vs how it bihoueþ zou for to go & plese to  
god: so & walke zee þat zee abounde more/ soþely  
zee witen what comaundementis I haue zouen to zou by þe  
lorde Jhū/ forsoþe þis is þe wille of god · zoure makynge  
holy · þat zee abstene zou fro fornycacon/ þat eche of zou  
kunne welde his vessel in makynge holy (or holynesse) & ho-  
noure/ not in passioun of desire: as & folke of kynde þat know-  
en not god/ and þat no man ouergo neþer deceyue his broþer  
in cause (or nede)/ for þe lorde is venger of alle þes þingis ·  
as we bifore seyden to zou: & haue witneside (or prouede by  
autorite)/ soþely god clepide not vs into vncleynesse: but into  
holynesse/ and so he þat dispisih þes þingis dispisih not man:  
but god þat zaue his holy spirit in vs// ¶ Forsoþe of þe cha-  
rite of breþerhede: we hadden not nede for to write to zou/  
soþely zee zoure self haue lernyd of god: þat zee loue to gedir:  
& forsoþe zee done þat into alle breþeren in al macedonpe/  
forsoþe breþeren we prepen zou þat zee abounde more & ȝyue  
werke (or bisynesse) þat zee be quyet & do zoure nede þat zee  
wirche

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>

## ye firste pistel

wirche wiþ zoure handis: as we have comaundide to zou/ and þat zee wandre honestly to hem þat ben wiþ oute forþ: þat of no mannes zee desire any þing/ forsoþe breþeren we wolen not zou for to vnknoʷe of men slepyng (or dypinge) · þat zee ben not sorowful · as & oþer þat haue not hope/ soþety zif we bileuen þat Ihu was deade & roos azen: so & god schal leede wiþ hym hem þat slepten (or dieden) by Ihu/ soþely þis þing we seyn to zou: in worde of þe lorde/ for we þat lyuen þat ben residue (or leste) in þe comynge of þe lorde schulen not come before hem þat slepten (or dieden) for þe þe lorde in comaundyng & in voyce of þe archaungel & in þe trumpe of god: schal come doune fro heuene/ and þe deade men þat ben in c̃st schulen rise azen firste/ azenwarde we þat lyuen þat ben leste: schulen be raupschide to gedir wiþ hem in cloudis · metynge to crist in þe erþe: & so euermore we schulen be wiþ þe lorde: & so be zee coumfortide to gedir in þes wordis//

C<sup>m</sup> 5<sup>m</sup>



**F**orsoþe breþeren of tymes & momentis: zee neden not þat I write to zou/ also zee zoure self diligently witen · for þe day of þe lorde as a þeef in nyzt/ so schal come/ soþely whanne þei schulen sepe pees & sikernesse: þanne sodeyn perischynge (or deþ) schal come aboue to hem · as sorowe to (a womman) berynge childe: & þei schulen not scape/ forsoþe breþeren zee ben not in dirkenessis: þat þe ilke day as a þeef cacche zou/ soþely alle zee ben þe sones of lizt: & sones of day/ we ben not of nyzt: neþer of dirkenessis/ þerfore slepe we not as & oþer: but wake & be we sobre/ forsoþe þei þat slepen: slepen in þe nyzt/ and þei þat ben drunken: ben drunken in þe nyzt/ forsoþe we þat ben of þe day: ben sobre · cloþide þe haubirione of feiþ & charite þe helme hope of helþe/ for god puttide not vs into wrappe/ but into purchasyng of helþe by oure lorde Ihu c̃st: þat was deade for vs/ þat wheþer we waken wheþer we slepen: we lyue to gedir wiþ hym/ for whiche þing be zee coumfortide to gedir ·

## to tessaloncenses

gedir · & edifie zee eche oþer as & zee kunne// ¶ forsoþe breþeren we prepen zou þat zee schulen knowe hem þat traueylen amonge zou · & ben bifore to zou in þe lorde · & monessen (or techen) zou · þat zee haue hem more aboundantly in charite/ for þe werke of hem · haue pees wiþ hem/ forsoþe breþeren we prepen zou · reproue zee (or chastise) vnquyete men/ comforte zee men of litil herte · receyue zee sick men · be zee pacient to alle men/ se zee þat no man zilde euyl for euyl · but euermore sue zee þat þat is gode to gedir · & into alle men euermore ioyze zee · wiþ outhen ceesyngge prepe zee · in alle þingis do zee þankyngis/ forsoþe þis is þe wille of god in crīst Ihū · & in alle zou/ nyl zee quenche þe spirit nyl zee dispise prophetis/ forsoþe proue zee alle þingis · holde zee þat þing þat is gode/ abstene zou fro euyl spice (or lickenesse) forsoþe þe same god of pees make zou holy by alle þingis · þat zoure spirit be kepte hool · & soule & body wiþ outhen pleynte · in þe comynge of oure lorde Ihū crīst/ god is trewe þat clepide zou · þe whiche also schal do/ breþeren prepe zee for vs/ grete zee wel alle breþeren in hooly cosse/ ¶ I coniure zou bi þe lorde þat þis pistle be redde to alle holy breþeren/ þe grace of oure lorde Ihū crist · be wiþ zou alle Amen//

## ye secounde pistel to tessalonicenses.

C<sup>m</sup> 1<sup>m</sup>



Dul & siluan & Tymothe to þe chirche of tessalonycense in god oure fadir · & in þe lorde Ihū c̄st: grace to zou & pees of god oure fadir · & of þe lorde Ihū c̄st/ we schulen do þankyngis euermore to god for zou breþeren: so as it is worþi/ for zoure feiþ euer waxiþ: & þe charite of eche of zou to gedir aboundiþ/ so þat zou self glorien in zou in þe chirchis of god for zoure pacience & feiþ in alle zoure persecutiouns & tribulaciōs · þe whiche zee susteynen into þe ensauple of þe iuste doom of god: þat zee be had worþi in þe kyngdom of god · for whiche & zee suffer/ zif neþeles it is iuste at god for to quyte zildyngge to hem þat turblen zou: & to zou þat ben turblide · reste wiþ vs · in þe schewyngge of oure lorde Ihū c̄st fro heuene wiþ aungels of his vertue in þe flaume of fīr · zpyngge vengeaunce to hem þat knowen not god: & þat obeyen not to þe euangelie of oure lorde Ihū crist/ þe whiche schulen zpyue (or suffer) euerlastyngge peynes · in perischyngge fro þe face of þe lorde · & fro þe glorie of his vertue: whan he schal come for to be glorifiede in his seyntis · & for to be made wondirful in alle men þat bileueden · for oure witnesyngge is bileuede on zou in þat day/ in whiche þing also we prepen euermore for zou · þat oure god vouche saaf for to clepe zou in his clepynges: & fulfille al þe wille of his godenesse · & þe werke of feiþ in vertue/ þat þe name of oure lorde Ihū c̄st be clarifiede in zou · & zee in it: aftir þe grace of oure god & of þe lorde Ihū c̄st//

Forsoþe

## ye secounde pistel to tessalonicenses.

**F**orsoþe breþeren we prepen zou by þe comynge of oure lorde Ihū c̄st · & oure congregaçoñ into þe same þing; þat zee be not mouede sone fro zoure witte · neþer be zee agaist; neþer bi spirit · neþer by worde · neþer by epistle · as sente by vs; as þe day of þe lorde be nyȝ · þat no man deceyue zou in any maner/ for no but departynge aweye (or discençoñ) schal come firste · & þe man of synne schal be schewide · þe sone of perdicioune þat is aduersarie & is enhauncide vpon alle þing þat is seyde god or þat is worschipide · so þat he sitte in þe temple (or into þe temple) of god; schewynge hymself as he be god/ wher zee holden not þat zit whanne I was at zou; I seyde þes þingis to zou) & now what witholdiþ zee witen; þat he be schewide in his tyme/ forwhȝ þe myserie (or pryuate) of wickidnesse worchिþ now/ onely þat he þat holdiþ now · holde; til it be made of þe myddle/ & þanne þe ilke wickide (man) schal be schewide; whom þe lorde ihū schal slee wiþ þe spirit of his mouþ; & schal distrupe wiþ þe illumynynge (or schynynge) of his comynge Ihū schal slee hym whos comynge is astir þe wirchyng of sathanas · in al vertue · & signes & grete wondris lizynge (or false) · & in al decepte of wickidnesse to hem þat perischen/ for þat þei receyueden not þe charite of treuþe; þat þei schulden be made saaf/ þerfore god schal sende to hem a wirchyng of errour þat þei bileue to leesyng · þat alle be demyde (or dampnyde) þe whiche bileueden not to treuþe; but consentiden to wickidnesse/ ¶ Forsoþe we owen for to do þankyngis euermore to god for zou breþeren louede of god · þat god chees vs prymys (or firste fruytis) into helpe; in halowynge of spirit & feiþ of treuþe/ in þe whiche & he clepide zou bi oure gospel; into getynge of þe glorie of oure lorde Ihū c̄st/ and so breþeren stonde zee & holde zee þe tradicoñs (or techyngis) þat zee hane lernede oþer by worde oþer by oure epistel/ forsoþe oure lorde Ihū crist hym self & god & oure fadir ·



## ye secounde pistel

þe whiche louede zou & zaue euerlastyngre coumforte & gode hope in grace: stire zoure herte & conferme in al gode werke & worde//

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



Beþeren hensforþewarde preye zee for vs · þat þe worde of god renne & be clarifiede: as & anentis zou/ and þat we be delyueride fro uncouenable (or noyous) & euyl men/ soþely seiþ is not of alle men/ forsoþe þe lorde is trewe þat schal conferme vs & kepe fro euyl/ soþely beþeren we tristen of zou in þe lorde · for what euer þingis we bidden · & zee done & zee schulen do/ forsoþe þe lorde dresse zoure hertis: in charite of god & pacience of crist// ¶ Forsoþe beþeren we donounsen to zou in þe name of oure lorde Ihu crist: þat zee wiþdrawe zou fro eche broþer · wandryngre vnordynately (or azenes good ordre) · & not aftir þe tradicioun þat þei haue receyuede of vs/ soþely zee zoure self witen: how it bihoueh for to sue vs/ for we weren not in quete (or reste) amonge zou · neþer frely (or wiþouten oure owne traueyl) we eten breed of any man · but in trauel & we-rynesse nyzt & day wirchyngre þat we greueden none of zou/ not as we hadden not power: but þat we schulden ȝpue oure self fourme (or ensauple) for to sue vs/ forwhi & whanne we weren anentis zou · þis þing we denounsiden (or warnyden) to zou · for ȝif any man wole not worche: neþer ete he/ soþely we hane herde · summe amonge zou for to wandre in quete (or reste): no þing wirchyngre · but doinge curiously/ forsoþe we denounsiden to hem þat ben suche maner men · & bisechen in þe lorde Ihu crist · þat þei wiþ (scilence) or stillenesse wirchyng: ete here owne breed/ nyl zee forsoþe beþeren fayle wel doinge: in crist Ihu oure lorde/ þat ȝif any man schal not obeie to oure worde bi epistle: marke zee hym · & compne zee not wiþ hym · þat he be confoundide (or schamyde)/ and nyl zee gesse hym as an enemye: but reproue zee hym as a broþer/ forsoþe þe ilke god of pees ȝpue to zou euerlastyngre pees in al place

## to tessalonicenses.

place/ þe lorde be wiþ zou alle/ my salutacioun by þe hande  
of poul: þat is signe in eche epistle I write þus/ þe grace of  
oure lorde Jhū c̄st: be wiþ zou alle amen//

## þe firste piſtel to tymothe.



Dul apostle of Jhū crist aftir þe comaun-  
dement of god oure saueoure · & Jhū c̄st  
oure hope · to tymothe þe louede sone  
in þe feiþ: grace & mercy & pees of god  
þe fadir & c̄st Jhū oure lorde/ as I  
prepede þee þat þou schuldest dwelle at  
epheſy whan I wente to macedonpe ·  
þat þou schuldist denounſe to summe

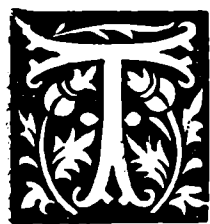
C<sup>m</sup> I<sup>m</sup>

þat þei schulden not teche oþer weye neþer ʒpue tente to fa-  
blis & geneologies wiþ outen endis þe whiche ʒpuen questiouns:  
more þan edificacioun of god þat is in þe feiþ/ forſoþe þe  
ende of comaundement is charite of clene herte & good con-  
science: & feiþ not feynede/ fro whiche þingis summen erryng  
ben turnyde to gedir into veyne ſpeche · willynge for to be  
techers of þe lawe · not vnderſtondynge neþer what þingis  
ben ſpoken: neþer of what þingis þei affermen// ¶ forſoþe  
we witen for þe lawe is good: ʒif any men uſe it lawfully/  
wityng þis þing · þat þe lawe is not putte to a iuſte man: but  
to an vniuſt & not ſuget · to vnpitouſe men & ſynners · to cur-  
ſide men & defoulide · to ſleers of faderis & ſleers of moders &  
fornycatours · to hem þat treſpaſſen wiþ malis azenes kynde ·  
hem þat putten woundis to men · ſellers (or ſtelers & drawers  
aweie of men): leſyng mongers & forſworne/ and ʒif any  
þing is contrarie to hoſum techynge · þat is aftir þe euan-  
gelie of þe glorie of bleſſide god: þe whiche goſpel is bitaken  
to

## ye firste pistel

to me/ I do þankynge to hym þat haþ coumfortide me in c̃st  
Jhū oure lorde: for he gesside me feiþful · puttynge me in my-  
nysterie þe whiche firste was a blasfeme (or a dispiser of god) ·  
& a pursuer & ful of wrongis: but I haue geten þe mercy of  
god · for I vnkowynge dide in vnbileue/ soþely þe grace of  
oure lorde ouer aboundide: wiþ feiþ & loue þat is in crist Jhū/  
a trewe worde & worþi al receyuynges: for c̃st Jhū came into  
his worlde for to make synful men saaf: of whom I am þe  
firste/ but þerfore I haue geten mercy · þat c̃st Jhū schulde  
schewe in me firste · al pacience to þe enfourmyng of hem þat  
ben to bileuyng to hym into euerlastyng lijf/ forsoþe to þe  
kyng of worldis vndeadeþ & inuysible god al one: honoure &  
glorie in worldis of worldis amen/ I comende (or bitake) his  
precept (or biddynge) to þee: þou sone tymothe · vp prophetis  
bifore goinge in þee · þat þou sizte (or holde) in hem a gode  
knyzthode · haupnge feiþ & good conscience/ þe whiche sum-  
men castynge away: perischiden aboute þe feiþ/ of whiche is  
hymeneus & alisaundre: whom I bitoke to sathanas · þat þei  
lerne not to blasfeme//

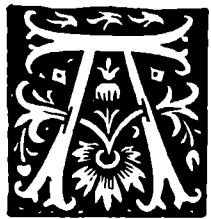
C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>



Therefore I biseche firste of alle þingis · for to be made  
bisechyngis · prepers · aringis · doinge of þankyn-  
gis for alle men/ for kyngis & al þat ben sette in  
hizenesse (or greet staat): þat we leede quyet &  
peesible lijf in al pitee & chastite/ forsoþe his þing is gode & ac-  
ceptide bifore god oure saueour · þat wole al men for to be made  
saaf · & for to come to þe knowynge of treuþe/ soþely one god  
& mediatour of god & men · a man crist Jhu: þat 3aue hym  
self redempcioun for al men/ whos witnessynge is confermyde  
in his tymes: in þe whiche I am putte a prechur & apostle/  
soþely I seye treuþe in c̃st Jhu · I lize not · a techur of heþen  
men in feiþ & treuþe/ þerfore I wole men for to preye in al  
place: listynge vp clene hondis wiþouten wrap & disputynge  
(or strife) ¶ Also & wymmen in ournyde habite (or couenable)  
wiþ

## to tymothe.

wiþ ſchamefaſtneſſe & ſobrenenſſe: ournyng hem ſelf/ not in  
wriþen heris oþer in golde oþer in margaritis (or peerlis)  
oþer precyous cloþes: but þat bicomes wpmmen bihotyng  
pitee by gode werkis/ a womman lerne in ſcilence wiþ al ſub-  
ieccoñ/ forſoþe ¶ I ſuffre not a womman for to teche: neþer for  
to haue lordeschip into þe man (or houſbonde) · but for to  
be in ſcilence/ forſoþe Adam was firſte fourmyde · aftir warde  
eue/ and adam was not deceyuede in feiþ: but þe womman  
was deceyuede in feiþ · in preuaricacioun (or brekyng) of þe  
lawe/ Sopely ſche ſchal be ſauede by generaçoñ of ſones: zif  
ſche ſchal dwelle parſitely in feiþ & loue & holynenſſe wiþ ſo-  
brenenſſe//

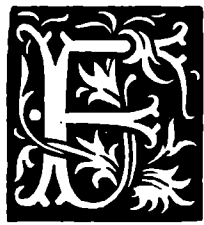


Feithful worde zif any man deſiriþ a biſchopriche: C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>  
he deſiriþ a gode werke/ þerfore it bihoueþ a bi-  
ſchop for to be wiþouten reþroue · & þe houſbonde  
of one wiif: ſobre · prudent · ournyde · chaſte hold-  
yng hospitalite · techer not zouen to myche wijn · not ſmyter ·  
but temperaunt (or pacient)/ not litigious (or ful of ſtrife or  
chydyng)/ not coueytouse · wel rewlyng his hous · hauyng  
ſones ſoget wiþ al chaſtite/ forſoþe zif any man con not go-  
uerne his hous: how ſchal he haue diligence of þe chirche of  
god? not newe conuertide to þe feiþ/ leſte he be borne vp into  
pride: falle into þe dome (or ſynne) of þe deupl/ forſoþe it bi-  
houeþ hym for to haue gode witneſſyng of hem þat ben wiþ-  
outeforþ: þat he falle not into reþroue (or ſchenschip) & into  
þe ſnare of þe deupl/ ¶ Also (it bihoueþ) dekenes for to be  
chaſte not double tungide · not zouen to myche wijn · not fo-  
lowyng foule wyynyng · hauyng þe myſterie of feiþ in clene  
conſcience/ & forſoþe be þei prouede firſte: þat þei mynyſtre  
ſo · hauyng no cryme (or greet ſynne) ¶ Also (it bihoueþ)  
wpmmen for to be chaſte · not bacbityng · ſobre · feiþful in  
alle þingis/ dekenes be þei houſbondis of one wiif: þe whiche  
(dekenes) gouerne wel here ſones & here houſis/ ſopely þei þat  
ſchulen

## ye firste pistel

schulen mynystre wel: schulen gete a good degree to hem self.  
 & myche triste in þe feiþ · þat is in c̃st Jhū/ sone tymothe I  
 write to þee þes þingis: hopynge me for to come sone to þee/  
 forsoþe zif I schal tarie · þat þou wite how it bihoueþ þee for  
 to lyue in þe hous of god · þat is þe chirche of quycke god: a  
 piler & sadnesse of treuþe/ and apertely (or oppnly) it is a greet  
 sacrament of pitee · sic þat þat is in fleysche: is iustifiede in  
 spirit: it apperide to aungels · it is prechide to heþen men · it  
 is bileuede in þe worlde · it is taken vp in glorie//

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>



Forsoþe þe spirit seiþ oppnly/ for in þe laste tymes  
 summen schulen departe fro þe feiþ · zpyung tente  
 to spiritis of errour · & to techynge of deuelis · in  
 ypocrisie spekyng lefynge · & haunþe here con-  
 science brente · forbedynge for to wedde · for to abstene fro  
 metis in whiche god made of nouzt · for to take wiþ doinge of  
 þankyngis: to feiþful men & hem þat haue knowen þe treuþe/  
 for eche creature of god is gode · & no þing is to be caste aweye:  
 þe whiche is taken wiþ doinge of þankyngis/ forsoþe it is ha-  
 lowide by þe worde of god & bi preyer/ þou puttyng forþ þes  
 þingis to breþeren: schalt be a gode mynystre of c̃st Jhu · nor-  
 rischide wiþ wordis of feiþ & of gode doctryne: þat þou hast  
 geten in suynge/ forsoþe schone þou unconuenable fablis &  
 veyne: þi silf soþely haunte to pitee · forwhi bodily trauey-  
 lynge (or abstynence or exercitaciō · to litil þing is profita-  
 ble [ ] to alle þingis haunþe  
 biheste of lijf þat now is & to comynge// ¶ A trewe worde &  
 worþi al accepcioun · soþely in þis þing we traueplen & ben  
 curside: for we hopen in quycke god þat is saueour of alle men:  
 moſte of feiþful men/ comaunde þou þis þing & teche/ no man  
 dispise þi zouþe · but be þou ensauple of feiþful men · in  
 worde in lyuynge · in charite · in feiþ · in chastite/ þe while I  
 come take tente to redynge · to exortaciō (or monestynge) &  
 techynge/ nyl þou dispise (or litil charge) þe grace of god þat  
 is

## to tymothe.

is in þee · þat is zouen to þee by prophece · wiþ puttynge to of þe handis of priſt (or priſthode)/ þenke þou þes þingis · in þes be þou · þat þi profitynge be ſchewide to alle men/ take tente to þi ſelf & doctryne · and be biſie in hem/ ſoþely þou doinge þes þingis · ſchalt make þi ſelf ſaaf · and hem þat heren þee//



Lame þou not an eldre man · but biſeche as fadir · zonge men as breþeren · olde wymmen as moderis · zonge wymmen as ſiſtris · in al chaſtite/ honoure þou widowis · þat ben verrey widowis/ forſoþe zif any widowe haþ ſones or children of ſones (coſyns) · lerne ſche firſte for to gouerne hire hous · & chaungeable while or eche to oþer zilde to fadir & modir/ ſoþely þis þing is acceptide bifore god/ forſoþe ſche þat is a widowe verreyly · & deſolate (or diſ-coumfortide) · hope into god · & wake in biſechyngis & prepers nyzt & day/ forwhi ſche þat is lyuþng in delicis · is deade/ and þis þing comaunde þou þat þei be wiþ outen reproue/ forſoþe zif any man haue not cure of his owne & moſte of his houſholde men · he haþ denyede þe feiþ · & is worſe þan an vnfeiþful (or heþen man)/ a widowe be not choſen of leſſe þan ſixty zeer · þat was wiſf of one houſbonde · haupnge witneſſyng in gode werkis · zif ſche noriſchide ſones · zif ſche receyuede pore men to herborwe · zif ſche haue waſchen þe feet of holy men · zif ſche vndremynþſtride to men ſufryng tribulacioun · zif ſche folowide al gode werke/ forſoþe eſchewe zonger widowis · forſoþe whanne þei haue done lecherie in cēt · þei wolen be weddide · haupnge dampnacoñ · for þei haue made þe firſte feiþ voyde/ alſo forſoþe & þei ydil · lernen for to enuyroune houſis/ not onely forſoþe ydil · but & ful of wordis & curious · ſpekþng what þingis it bihoueþ not/ þerfore I wole zonger for to be weddide · for to brynge forþ ſones · for to be houſwifes · for to ȝyue none occaſioun to þe aduerſarie · bicauſe of curſide þing/ nowē forſoþe ſumme ben turnide abac aftir ſathanas/ ¶ zif any feiþful man haþ wi-  
dowis

C<sup>m</sup> 5<sup>m</sup>

## ye firste pistel

dothis vndremynystre heto hem þat þe chirche be not greuyde ·  
 þat it suffice to hem þat ben verrey widowis/ þe pristis þat  
 ben wel bifore (þat is treuly kepen pristhode): be þei hadde  
 worþi double honoure: moſte þei þat traueylen in worde &  
 techynge/ soþely þe scripture seiþ/ þou schalt not bridil þe  
 mouþ of þe ore þreschyng · & a werke man is worþi his hire/  
 nyl þou receyue accusynge azenes a prist: no but vndre two  
 or þre witneſſis/ reproue þou men synnyng bifore alle men:  
 þat & oþer haue drede/ I preye (or coniure) bifore god & c̄st  
 Jhū & his chosen aungelis: þat þou kepe þes þingis & wiþ  
 outen bifore doom doinge no þing: bowynge into anoþer  
 parte/ to no man sone þou schalt putte hondis: neþer þou  
 schalt comyne wiþ oþer mennes synnes/ kepe þi self chaste/  
 nyl þou zit drynke water: but vse a litil wijn for þi stomak &  
 þin ofte fallynge infirmytees/ summenes synnes ben open  
 bifore goinge to doom: forsoþe of summen & þei folowen/ also  
 & gode dedis ben opyn: & þei þat haue hem oþer wise mowne  
 not be hidde//

C<sup>m</sup> 6<sup>m</sup>



Howeuer ben seruauntis vndre zok: Deme þei here  
 lordis worþi al honoure leſte þe name of þe lorde  
 be blasfemyde/ forsoþe þei þat haue seiþful (or c̄st-  
 ten lordis · dispise not · for þei ben breþeren · but  
 serue þei more · for þei ben seiþful & louede · þe whiche ben  
 parteners of benefice (or gode doinge)/ þes þingis teche þou ·  
 & þes þingis monest þou/ zif any man techiþ oþer wiſe & acor-  
 diþ not to þe hool (or holsom) wordis of oure lorde Jhū crist ·  
 & to þat techynge þat is after pitee: is proude · no þing kun-  
 nyng · but langwiſchyng aboute queſtiouns & fyrtyngis of  
 wordis: of þe whiche ben brouzte forþ enemyes · ſtryues ·  
 blaſſemes · puel ſuſpiciouns · fyrtyngis of men corrupte in  
 ſoule (or reſoun) · & þat ben pryuede fro treuþe · demyng wy-  
 nnyng for to be pitee/ forsoþe a greet wyunnyng is pitee wiþ  
 ſufficiencie// ¶ Forsoþe we brouzten no þing into þis worlde:

no

## to tymothe

no doute for we motone not bere aweye any þing/ forsoþe  
haupnge foodis & wiþ what þingis we schulen be cloþide: wiþ  
þes þingis be we payede/ for why þei þat wolen be made  
riche: fallen into temptacioun · & into gnare of þe deuel · &  
many vnprofitable desiris & nopous: þe whiche drenchen men  
into deþ & perdicione/ soþely þe roote of alle euelis: is  
coueytise/ þe whiche summen coueytynge: erreden fro þe feiþ/  
& bisetten (or graffiden) hem wiþ many sorowis/ forsoþe þou  
man of god: flee þes þingis/ soþely sue þou riztwesnesse ·  
pitee · feiþ · charite · paciencie · myldenesse/ strife þou a gode  
strife of feiþ · cacche euerlastyngge lijf · into whiche þou art cle-  
pide · & haste knowelechide a good knowelechyngge: bifore  
many witneßis/ I comaunde to þee bifore god þat quykeneþ  
alle þingis cō Ihū · þat zildide a witneßyngge vndir pilate of  
pounce · a good confessiō: þat þou kepe þe comaundement  
wiþ outen wemme irreprehensibile · til into þe compnge of  
oure lorde Ihū crist/ whom þe bleßide & al one myzty kyng of  
kyngis & lorde of lordis: schal schewe in his tymes/ þe whiche  
al one haþ vndeadelynes: & dwelliþ in lizte to whiche noman  
may come/ whom none of men lize: but neþer may se/ to  
whom glorie & honoure & empire into wiþouten ende amen/  
comaunde þou to þe riche men of þis worlde for to not sauer  
(or vnderstonde) hizely · neþer for to hope in uncerteynte of  
richeßis: but in quycke god þat zpyueþ to vs al þingis plen-  
teously for to vse for to do wel · for to be made riche in gode  
werkis · liztely for to zpyue · for to compne · for to tresoure to  
hem self a good foundement · into tyme to compnge: þat þei  
cacche euerlastyng/ þou tymothe · kepe þi deþost (or þing bita-  
ken to þee) · eschewyngge curside noueltees or voyces · & opyn-  
pouns of false name of kunnyngge/ þe whiche summe bihot-  
yngge: fellen doune aboute þe feiþ/ þe grace of god wiþ þee  
amen//



## ye secounde pistel to tymothe

C<sup>m</sup> I<sup>m</sup>



Oul apostle of Ihus crist by þe wille of god · aftir þe bihest of lijf þat is in crist Ihus · to tymothe his moste derworþ sone · grace mercy & pees of god oure fadir & Ihus crist oure lorde/ I do þankyngis to my god to whom I serue fro my progenitours in clene conscience for wiþ outen ceesyng I haue mynde of þee in my prepers nyzt & day · desirynge for to se þee · myndeful of þi teeris · þat I be wiþ ioye fulfild/ takynge recordynge (or mynde) of þat feiþ þat is in þee not feynede · þe whiche & dwellide firste in þin aunte loyde & in þi modir eunyce/ soþely I am certayne · þat & in þee/ for whiche cause I moneste þat þou reyse azen þe grace of god þat is in þee · by þe on puttyng of myn hondis/ soþely god ȝaue no to vs þe spirit of drede · but of vertue & of loue & of sobrenesse/ and so nyl þou schame þe witnessynge of oure lorde Ihus crist · neþer me þe bounden of hym · but traueyl wiþ me in þe gospel aftir þe vertue of god þat delyueride vs · & clepide us wiþ his holy clepyng/ not aftir oure werkis · but aftir his purpose & grace þat is ȝouen to vs in crist Ihus · bifore worldely tymes/ now forsoþe it is open by þe worldely liztenynge of oure saueour · Ihus crist · þe whiche soþely distrupede deþ · forsoþe liztenyde lijf & vncorruptioun by þe gospel · in þe whiche I am sette a prechour & apostle · & mayster of hepen men · for whiche cause also I suffre þes þingis · but I am not confoundide forsoþe I woot to whom I haue byleuede · & I am certeyn for he is myzty for to kepe my depest (or þing putte in kepyng) into þat day ¶ I haue þou þe fourme of hool wordis · þe whiche  
þou

## ye secounde pistel to tymothe

þou herdyst of me: in feiþ in loue in crīst Ihu/ kepe þou a gode deposit (or a þing taken to þi keepynge office): by þe holy gost þat dwelliþ in vs/ soþely þou wost þat alle þat ben in aspe ben turnyde fro me • of whom is phigeliuſ & ermogynes/ þe lorde ȝyue mercy to þe hous of oneseſore: for ofte he refreſchide me • & schamyde not my cheyne/ but whanne he came to rome: he souzte me biſily & fonde/ þe lorde ȝyue to hym to fynde mercy of god: in þat day/ and how greet þingis he mynſtride to me at ephesȝ: þou haſt better knowen//

**T**herfore þou my ſone be comfortide in grace þat is in crīst Ihu: & what þingis þou haſt herde of me by many witneſſis • bitake þou þes to feiþful men: þe whiche ſchulen be able & for to teche oþer men/ trauel þou as a good knyȝt of Ihu crīst ¶ No man holdyng knyȝthode to god: inwolappiþ hym ſelf with worldely nedis • þat he pleſe to hym: to whom he haþ mouede hym ſelf/ forwhi he þat ſtriueþ (or fiȝtiþ in batayl) • ſchal not be crownyde: no but he þat ſchal fiȝt lawefully/ it bihoueþ an erþe tilier for to receyue fiȝſte of þe fruytis/ vnderſtonde þou what þingis I ſeye/ ſoþely þe lorde ſchal ȝyue to þee in alle þingis vnderſtondyngē/ ¶ We þou myndeful þe lorde Ihu crīst for to haue riſen azen fro deade men • of þe ſeed of dauid: aſtir my goſpel in whiche I traueyl vnto bondis as euyl wirchynge: but þe worde of god is not bounden/ þerfore I ſuſteyne alle þingis for þe choſen: þat & þei gete þe helpe þat is in crīst Ihu • wiþ heuenely glorie/ ¶ A trewe worde forwhi zif we ben togedir deade: & we ſchulen lyue to gedir/ zif we ſchulen ſuſteyne: & we ſchulen regne togedir/ zif we ſchulen denye: & he ſchal denye vs/ zif we bileuen not: he dwelliþ feiþful • he may not denye hym ſelf/ forſoþe þes þingis I moeſt witneſſynge bifore god/ nyl þou ſtryue in wordis/ forſoþe to no þing is it profitable: no but to þe turnynge vpsodoune of men herynge/ forſoþe biſily cure þi ſelf • for to ȝyue þee a prouable werke=

man

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>

## ye secounde pistel

man to god vnschamyde: ríztly trectynge þe worde of treuþe/  
forsoþe schone þou vnholý & veyne spechis/ soþely þei profíten  
myche to vnpytee/ and þe worde of hem crepiþ as a cankre/  
of whiche philete is & hymeneus: þe whiche fellen doune fro  
þe treuþe · seyinge risynge azen now done: and turnen vpsó-  
doune þe feiþ of summen/ but þe sad foundement of god ston-  
diþ: haupnge þis litil marke/ þe lorde haþ knowen whiche ben  
hise/ and eche man þat nempneþ þe name of þe lorde: de-  
partíþ fro wickidnesse/ forsoþe in a greet hous ben not onely  
golden vessels & silueren: but & treenen & britel (or erþely)/ &  
soþely summe into honoure: summe forsoþe into dispite/ þer-  
fore zif any man schal clense hym self fro þes: he schal be a  
vessel halowide into honoure · & profitable to þe lorde: reedy  
to al gode werke/ forsoþe flee þou desíris of zouþe/ soþely sue  
þou ríztwefnesse · feiþ · charite · pees: wiþ hem þat inclepen  
þe lorde of a clene herte/ forsoþe schone þou foltische ques-  
tyouns & wiþ ouden disciplýne · witynge for þei gendren chy-  
dyngis/ forsoþe it bihoueh þe seruaunt of þe lorde for to not  
chide: but for to be mylde to alle men · able for to teche · pa-  
cient · wiþ temperaunce reprouynge hem þat azenstonden  
treuþe · þat sumtyme god ȝyue hem penaunce for to knowe  
þe treuþe: & þei rise azen fro snaris of þe deuyl: of whom þei  
ben holden captifes at his wille//

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



Forsoþe wite þou þis þing · þat in þe lasse dayes  
perelous tymes schulen stande nyȝ: & men schulen  
be louynge hem self · coueytous · hize of berynge ·  
proude blasfemes · not obedient to fadir & modir ·  
vnkynde · curside · wiþouten affeccioun · wiþ ouden pees · false  
blamers · vncontynent · vnmýlde · wiþ ouden benygnyte ·  
tratours · proterue (or ouerþwert) · frowarde · bolne (wiþ  
proude þouȝtis) · louers of lustis more þan of god · haupnge  
soþely þe likenesse of pytee: forsoþe denyeinge þe vertue of it/  
and þes eschewe þou/ of þes soþely it ben þat persen housis ·  
& leden

## to tymothe

& leden captifis lital wpmmen chargide wiþ synnes: þe whiche ben ledde wiþ diuerse desiris euermore lernynge: & neuer partely comynge to þe kunnyng of treuþe/ forsoþe as Jamnes & Jambres azenstonden moyses: so & þes azenstonden treuþe/ men corrupte in soule reproveþ aboute þe seiþ: but forþer þei schulen not profite/ soþely þe unwisdom of hem schal be knowen to alle men: as & heren was/ þou forsoþe hast geten my doctryne & ordenaunce • purposynge seiþ • longe abydyng • loue • paciencie • persecuciouns • passiouns • what maner ben made to me at antioche • at ychonpe • at listris • what maner persecuciouns I suffride: & þe lorde haþ delyueride me of alle/ and alle men þat wolen lyue pitoufly in crist Ihu: schulen suffre persecucioun/ soþely euyl men & decepuours: schulen profite into worse • errynge & sendynge into errour/ but dwelle þou in þes þingis þat þou hast lernyd: & ben bitaken to þee/ wityng of whom þou hast lernyd: & for þou hast knowen holy lettris fro þi zouþe • þe whiche mowne lerne þee to helpe • by seiþ þat is in crist Ihu/ forsoþe al scripture of god enspirit is profitable to teche • to argue (or proue) • to þe reprove wiþ for to lerne in ritzwesnesse/ þat þe man of god be parfite: lernyd to al gode werke//



**W**itnesse bifore god & crist Ihu • þat is to demyng þe quykke & deade by þe comynge of hym & þe kyngdom of hym: preche þe worde • be þou bisie couenably wiþ outhen reste • argue (or proue): biseche • blame: in al paciencie & doctryne/ forsoþe tyme schal be whanne men schulen not suffre holsum doctryne: but at desiris þei schulen gedir to gedir maystris • icchynge (or plesynge) to þe eris/ treuely þei schulen turne away þe helyng fro treuþe: but to fablis þei schulen be turnyd to gedir/ forsoþe wake þou: in alle þingis traueyl þou/ do þe werke of euangelist/ fulfille þi seruple: be þou sobre/ forsoþe I am sacrificide now: & þe tyme of my deþ (or resolucon) is nyz/ I haue

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>

## ye secounde pistel to tymothe

haue stryuen a good strife • I haue endide þe course • I haue kepte þe feith in þe toper tyme • a crowne of ritzwesnesse is kepte to me • þe whiche þe lorde schal zilde to me in þat day iustedomesman/ forsoþe not onely to me • but to hem þat louen his compynge/ ¶ Hize for to come to me soone/ forsoþe demas has forsaken me • louyng þis worlde • & wente to tessalonyk • crescens • into galathie/ tyte into dalmaticþ • luke alone is wip me/ take marke & leede to wip þee/ forsoþe he is profitable to me into serupce/ penulam • (þat is cloþe of romayns) • whiche I leste at troade anentis carpe • þou compynge brynge wip þee & þe bookis • moſte forsoþe parchemyn/ alisaundre þe tresourer • schewide to me many euyl þingis/ þe lorde schal zilde to hym aftir his werkes • whom & þou eschewe/ ful gretely forsoþe he azenstode my wordis/ in my firste defence noman was to me • but alle forsoken me/ be it not rettide to hem// ¶ fforsoþe þe lorde stode nyȝ to me & comfortide me • þat þe prechyng be fulfilde bi me • & þat alle folkis here • & I am delyueride for mouþ of þe lioune/ forsoþe þe lorde delyueride me fro al euyl werkes • & schal make saaf into his heuenely kyngdom • to whom glorie into worldis of worldis Amen/ ¶ Grete wel prischa & aquyla & þe hous of onesefore/ forsoþe erastus dwellide at corrynthe/ forsoþe I leste trophymus sijk at mylite/ soþely hize for to come bifore wynter/ eubolus & prudente & lynus & claudia and alle breþeren greten zou wel/ oure lorde Ihu crist wip þi spirit/ þe grace of god wip zou amen//

## ye epistel to tyte



**D**ul þe seruaunt of god & apostle of Ihu crist aftir þe feiþ of god & knowynge of þe treuþe þe whiche is after pitee · in hope of euerlastyng lijf · þat god bihizte þat lieþ not bifore worldely tymes/ forsoþe he schewide in his tymes his worde (or sone) · in prechynge þat is bitaken to me · aftir comaundement of oure sa-

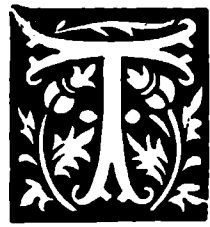
C<sup>m</sup> I<sup>m</sup>

ueour god · to tyte bilouede sone aftir þe comoune feiþ · grace & pees of god þe fadir · & of Ihu crist oure saueour/ for grace (or cause) of his þing I leste þee at creete þat þou amende þo þingis þat saylen · & ordeyne by cytee pristin · as & I disposide to þee/ zif any man is wiþ outen cryme or greet gylte · housbonde of one wiif · haupnge feiþful sones not in occasioun of leccherie or not suget/ forsoþe it bihoueþ a bischop for to be wiþ outen cryme · as dispendour of god · not proude · not wrapful · not vynolent (þat is myche zouen to wijn) · not smyter · not coueytouse of foul wyunnyng · but holdynge hospitalite · benyngne · prudent · sobre · iuste · hooly · contynent · biclippynge þat trewe worde þat is vp doctryne/ þat he be myzty for to amoneste in holsum techynge · & to reproue hem þat azen seyn/ forsoþe þer ben many vnobedient · & veyne spekers · & deceyuours · moſte þei þat ben of circumcisioun · whom it bihoueþ for to be reprouede/ þe whiche subuerten alle housis · techynge whiche þingis it bihoueþ not · for grace of foul wyunnyng/ summe one of hem þere propre prophete of hem seyde/ men of crete euermore liers · euyl bestis · slowe of wombe · þis witnessynge is trewe/ for what cause blame hem soore · þat þei be hool in feiþ · not zyuyng tente to fablis of ietwis

## ye epistel

ietwis & to maundementis of men turnynge hem aweye fro treuþe/ soþely alle þingis ben clene to clene men; forsoþe to vnclene men & vnfeifful; no þing is clene/ but & þe soule (or resoun) of hem & conscience be made vnclene/ þei knowelechen hem for to haue knowen god · forsoþe by dedis þei denyen · whan þei ben abhomynable & vnbileueful & reprouable to al gode werke//

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>



Thou forsoþe speke þo þingis þat bicomen · holsum techyng; þat olde men be sobre · chaste · prudent · hool in feif in loue & pacience ¶ Also olde wymmen in holy habite · not bachiters (or seyinge false blame on oþer men) · not seruyng myche to wijn · wel techyng · þat þei teche prudence/ zonge wymmen þat þei loue here housbondis · þat þei loue sonen · þei prudent · chaste · sobre · haupnge cure of þe hous · benyngne · suget to here housbondis; þat þe worde of god be not blasfemyde// ¶ Also moneste zonge men · þat þei be sobre/ in al þingis ȝyue þi self ensauple of gode werkis · in techyng in holynesse wist outen sclaundre in sadnesse/ an hool worde medycynal · vnreprouable · þat he þat is on þe oþer side be aschamyde; haupnge none euyl þing to seye of ȝou/ seruauntis for to be suget to here lordis in alle þingis plesynge not azenseyng · not defraudynge · but in alle þingis schewynge good feif; þat þei ourne in alle þingis þe doctryne of god oure saueoure ¶ fforsoþe þe grace of god oure saueoure · haþ apperide to alle men; techynge vs · þat we forsakyng al vnpytee & worldely desiris · ȝyue sobrelly & iustely & pyteuously in þis worlde/ abidyng þe blesside hope · & þe comynge of þe glorie of greet god & oure saueoure Ihu crist · þat ȝaue hym self for vs; þat he schulde azen bie vs fro al wickidnesse · & make clene a puple acceptable to hym self · suer of gode werkis/ speke þou þes þingis & moneste & argue (or proue); wiþ al comaundement/ no man dispise þee//

Amoneste

## to tyte



**A**dmoneste þou hem for to be sugettis to prynces & powers • for to obesche to seyinge • for to be reedy to al gode werke • for to blasfeme noman • for to be not litigious (or ful) of chydynge • but tempe-  
raunt (or pacient)/ schewynge al mylidenesse to alle men/ for-  
soþe & we weren sumtyme vnwise vnbileueful • errynge: &  
serupnge to desiris & dyuerse voluptees in malice & enuye do-  
inge • hateful (or worþi to be hatide) • to gedir hatynge ¶ For-  
soþe þe benynngnyte & humanyte (or manhede) of god oure  
saueoure apperide not of werkis of ríztwefnesse þat we diden:  
but aftir his mercy he made vs saaf/ by þe waschynge (or  
baptym) of azen bigetyng azen newynge of þe holy gost •  
whom he sched oute into plenteuouss: by oure saueoure Ihu  
críft/ þat we iustificede by his grace be eyles aftir hope of euer-  
lastynge líf/ a trewe worde/ and of þes þingis I wole þee to  
conferme oþer men • þat þei þat bileuen to god: curen (or do  
bisyne) • for to be bifore in good werkis/ þes þingis ben gode  
& profitable to men/ forsoþe eschewe þou foltische questiouns  
& genelogies & stryues: & fíztynge of þe lawe/ forsoþe þei ben  
unprofitable & weyne/ schone þou a man heretike aftir one &  
þe secounde correccioun (or reprouynge)/ wityng þat he þat  
is suche maner man • is subuertide & trespasss: dampnyde by  
his owne doom/ soþely whanne I schal sende to þee archeman  
or titicum • híze þou for to come to me to nycopolis/ forsoþe  
I haue purposide for to dwelle in wynter here/ bisily sende  
bifore zenam a wiseman of lawe & apollo • þat no þing faye  
to hem/ forsoþe & oure men lerne for to be bifore in good  
werkis & necessarie vsis • þat þei be not vnfructuose/ alle  
men þat ben wíþ me: greten þee wel/ grete þou wel hem • þat  
louen vs in feiþ/ þe grace of god wíþ zou alle amen//

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



## ye piſtel to philomon

C<sup>m</sup> I<sup>m</sup>



Dul þe bounden of criſt Jhū · & tymothe broþer · to philomon bilouede & oure helper · & to apia moſte dere ſiſter · & to archip oure euen knyzt · & to þe chirche þat is in þin hous/ grace to zou & pees of oure fadir · & of þe lorde Jhū criſt/ I do þankyngis to my god euermore · makynge mynde of þee in my preyers ·

herynge þe charite & ſeiþ þat þou haſt in þe lorde Jhū · & into alle holy men · þat þe comunynge of þi ſeiþ be made open in knowynge of al good þing in criſt Jhu/ forſoþe I had greet ioye & comforte in þi charite · for þe entrayles of holy men reſtiden bi þee broþer/ þe whiche þing I haupnge myche triſte in c̄ſt Jhū · for to comaunde to þee þat þat parteyneþ to þing (or profitiþ) · for charite I biſeche more · ſiþ þou art ſuche as olde poul · nowe forſoþe & þe bounden of Jhū criſt/ I biſeche þee for my ſone onelyme · whom I in boundis bigate · þe whiche ſumtyme was to þee unprofitable/ forſoþe now profitable · & to þee & to me · whom I ſente azen to þee/ forſoþe receyue þou hym as myn entraylis · whom I wolde wiþhold wiþ me · þat he ſchulde ſerue for þee to me · in boundis of þe goſpel/ forſoþe wiþ outen þi counſeyl I wolde not do · þat þi good ſchulde not be as of neede · but wilful/ forſoþe parauenture þerfore he departide fro þee at an houre þat þou ſchuldiſt receyue hym into wiþ outen ende/ now not as a ſeruaunt · but for a ſeruaunt · a moſte dere broþer · moſte to me/ forſoþe how myche more to þee & in flepyche & in þe lorde/ þerfore zif þou haſte me a felowe · receyue hym as me/ forſoþe zif he

## ye pistel to philomon

he hap any þing anoyede þee or oþer: rette þou þis þing to me/ I poul wrote wiþ myn honde/ I schal zilde þat: I seye not to þee þat & þou owest to me & þi self/ So broþer I schal vse þee in þe lorde: fulfille myn entayles in crist/ I trustynge of þin obedience wrote to þee: wytyngge for þou schalt do & ouer þat þat I seye/ also forsoþe & make reedy to me an oste (or hous for to dwelle inne)/ forwhi I hope wiþ zoure preyers: me for to be zouen to zou/ epaphras myn euen captife (or prysoner) to gedir in cēt I hū: gretip þee wel/ and marke aris: tarke demas & lucas myn helper/ þe grace of oure lorde I hū crist: wiþ zoure spirit Amen//

## here bigynnes ye pistil to ebrues : ye firste chapitre



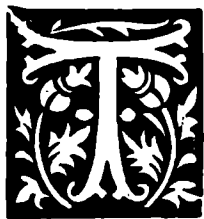
Anyfolde & many maners • sumtyme god spekyng to fadris in prophetis • at þe laste in þes dayes spac to vs in þe sone • whom he ordeynede eyre of alle þingis: by whom he made & þe worldis/ þe whiche whanne he is þe schynnyng of glorie • & fygure of his substaunce • & beryng alle þingis by worde of his vertue • makynng purgacon of synnes: sittip on þe rizthalse of mageste in hize þingis/ so myche made better þan aungels: bi how myche he hap enhauncide a more different (or excellent) name bifore hem/ forsoþe to whiche of þe aungels seyde god any tyme • þou art my sone • I haue to day gendride þee/ and estefone/ I schal be to hym into fadir: & he schal be to me into sone/ and whanne estefone he bringip in þe firste bigoten •

C<sup>m</sup> I<sup>m</sup>

## ye piſtil

goten · into þe roundeneſſe of erþe; he ſeiþ/ and alle aungels of god; worſchip þei hym/ and ſoþely to aungels he ſeiþ/ þe whiche makip his aungelis ſpiritis; & his mynyſtris flaume of fiȝr/ forſoþe to þe ſone/ god þi trone into worlde of worlde; a ȝerde of equyte þe ȝerde of þi rewme/ þou haſt louede riȝtweſneſſe · & hatidiſt wickidneſſe; þerfore god þi god anoyntide þee wiþ oyle of gladenefſſe bifore þi felowis/ and þou lorde in þe bigynnyng ſoundidiſt þe erþe · & heuenes ben werkis of þin hondis/ þei ſchulen periſche · ſoþely þou ſchalte parfitely dwelle; & alle ſchulen ware olde as a cloþe/ and þou ſchalt chaunge hem as an ampyce (or girdyng aboute); & þei ſchulen be chaungide/ forſoþe þou art þe ſame þi ſelf; & þi ȝeeris ſchulen not fayle/ forſoþe to whom of aungels ſeyde god any tyme; ſitte þou at my riȝthalfe · til I ſchal putte þin enemyes a ſtool of þi feet; wher þei alle ben not ſeruyng ſpiritis · ſente into mynyſterie; for hem þat taken þe heretage of helpe//

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>



þerfore it bihouep vs for to kepe more plenteuouſly þo þingis þat we hane herde; leſte parauenture we flecten aweye/ forſoþe ȝif þe ilke worde þat is ſeyde by aungels · is made ſad · & eche treſpaſſyng (or brekyng) of þe lawe & vnbodience toke iuſte retribucon of mede; how ſchulen we aſcape ȝif we ſchulen diſpiſe ſo greet helpe; þe whiche whanne it hadde take bygynnyng for to be tolde oute by þe lorde · of hem þat herden is confermyde into vs/ god to gedir witneſſyng; by ſignes & wondres · & grete merueylis & dyuerſe vertues & diſtribucōs of þe holy goſt aftir his wille/ forſoþe not to aungelis god ſugettide þe roundneſſe of erþe to comyng; of þe whiche we ſpeken/ ſoþely ſumman witneſſide in ſum place; ſeyinge/ what þing is a man · þat þou art myndeful of hym; or mannes ſone for þou viſitiſt hym; þou maðiſt hym litil · a litil laſſe fro aungelis · þou haſt crownyde hym wiþ glorie & honoure; þou haſt ordeynede vpon þe werkis of þin handis/ þou haſt made alle þingis ſuget vn-

Dir

## to ebrues.

dir his feet/ forsoþe in þat þing þat he sugettide alle þingis to hym; he lefte no þing unsugettide to hym/ forsoþe now we seen not zit alle þingis suget to hym/ forsoþe we seen hym þat a litil is made lasse þan aungelis · Jhū for passioun of deþ · crownyde wiþ glorie & honoure · þat he þorwe grace of god; schulde taste deþ for alle men/ forsoþe it bicame hym for whom alle þingis · þe whiche hadde to gedir manye sones into glorie; þe maker of þe helþe of hem/ for to ende by passyouns/ soþely he þat halowip & þei þat ben halowide; of one alle/ for whiche cause he is not confoundide (or schamyde); for to clepe hem breþeren seyinge/ I schal telle þi name to my breþeren; in þe mydel of þe chirche I schal herie þee/ and eftesone I schal be tristynge into hym/ and eftesone lo I & my children; þe whiche god ȝaue to me/ þerfore for children compnyden to flesche & blood; & he also toke perte of þi same · þat bi deþ he schulde distrupe hym þat had lordeschip of deþ; þat is to seþe þe deuyt/ and schulde delyuer hem þat bi dreede of deþ; by al lijf weren bounden to seruage/ forsoþe he neuer toke to aungels; but he took to þe seed of abraham/ wherfore he auzte for to be lickenyde to breþeren by alle þingis; þat he schulde be made mercyful & feiþful bischop to god/ þat he schulde be mercyful to trespassis of þe puple/ forsoþe in þat þing in whiche he suffride & was temptide; he is myzty for to helpe & hem þat ben temptide/



Wherfore holy breþeren · parteners of heuenely cleyng; biholde zee þe holy postil & bischop of oure confession Jhū; þe whiche is trewe to hym þat made hym · as & moyse in al þe hous of hym/ forsoþe þis bischop is hadde worþi of more glorie bifore moyse; by how myche þanne þe hous haþ he more honoure þat made it/ forwhi eche hous is made of summan/ forsoþe he þat made alle þingis of nouzt; is god/ and soþely moyse was trewe in al his hous; as a seruaunt into witnessynge of þo þingis þat weren

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>

## ye pistil

weren to be seyde/ forsoþe crist as a sone in his hous/ þe whiche  
hous we ben · zif we holden triste & glorie & hope · vnto sadde  
seih/ wherfore as þe holy goost seih · today zif zee haue herde  
his voyce: nyl zee harden zoure hertis as in wrappinge · astir  
þe day of temptacioun in desert · where zoure faderis temp-  
tiden me & sizen my werkes wherfore fourty zeer I was of-  
fendide (or wrooth) to þis generacon: & I seyde euermore þei  
erren in herte/ forsoþe þei knewen not my weyes · to whom I  
swore in my wrap · zif þei schulen entre into my reste/ breþe-  
ren se zee · lest þe purauenture in any of zou be an yul herte  
of vnbileue for to departe fro quicke god: but moneste zoure  
self by alle dayes · þe while to day is nempnyde · þat none of  
zou be hardenyde: by falsnesse of synne/ soþely we ben made  
parteners of crist · zif neþeles we holden þe bygynnyng of  
his substaunce: sad into þe ende/ while it is seyde to day · zif  
zee hane herde þe voyce of hym · nyl zee harde zoure hertis:  
as in þat wrappinge/ soþely summe herynge wrapiden: but  
not alle þei þat wenten oute of egipte by moyses/ to whiche  
forsoþe was he wrappide fourty zeeris: wher not to hem þat  
synned · whos careyns ben caste doune in desert: to whom  
he swore soþely · for to not entre into þe reste of hym: no but  
to hem þat weren vnbileueful: and we sizen for þei myzten  
not entre into þe reste of hym: for vnbileue//

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>



Rede we þerfore breþeren lest þe parauenture þe bi-  
heste of entrynge into his reste lest (or forsaken):  
or demyde for to be any of vs be gesside away/ for-  
soþe it is tolde to vs: as & to hem/ and þe worde  
herde profitide not to hem not mengide to seih of þes þingis  
þat þei herden/ forsoþe we þat hane bileuyde schulen entre  
into reste: as he seyde as I swore in my wrap: zif þei schulen  
entre into my reste/ and soþely þe werkis made parfite fro þe  
ordenaunce of þe worlde: forsoþe he seyde þus in sum place of  
þe seueneþ day/ and god restide in þe seueneþ day fro alle his  
werkis/

## to ebrues.

werkis/ and in his eftesone/ zif þei ſchulen entre into my reſte/  
 þerfore for it leueþ (or is ouer:) ſummen for to entre into it.  
 & þei to whiche þe firſte it is tolde · entreden not for here vn-  
 bileue: eftesone he termyneth ſunday to day · ſeyinge in da-  
 uyd/ aftir ſo myche of tyme as it is bifore ſeyde/ to day zif zee  
 hane herde his voyce: nyl zee harden zoure hertis · as in þe  
 ilke wrappinge/ for whi zif Jh̄c hadde zouen reſte to hem: he  
 ſchulde neuer ſpeke of oþer aftir þat day/ þerfore ſaboth ha-  
 lowyng is lefte: to þe puple of god/ forſoþe he þat entride into  
 his reſte: & he reſide of his werkis: as & god of his/ ¶ Þerfore  
 haſte we for to entre into þat reſte: þat no man falle into þe  
 ſame enſaumples of vnbeleue/ forſoþe þe worde of god is quicke  
 & ſpedy in wirchyng · & more able for to peerſe þan al two  
 eggide ſwerde · & ſtrecchyng departide of ſoule & ſpirit · & of  
 ioyntours & merzwis: & þe departer (or demer) of þouztis &  
 intenciouns of hertis/ & no creature is inviſible: in þe ſizte of  
 god/ forſoþe alle þingis ben nakide & open to his eyzen: to  
 whom a worde to vs/ þerfore we haupng a greet biſchop þat  
 perſide heuenes Jh̄u þe ſone of god: holde we þe confeſſioun  
 of oure feiþ/ forſoþe we haue not a biſchop þat may not ſuffre  
 to gedir to oure infirmytees (or freeltees): but temptide (or  
 prouede) by alle þingis for likenelle wiþ outhen ſynne/ þerfore  
 go we wiþ criſt to þe trone of his grace: þat we gete mercy &  
 fynde grace · in couenable helpe//



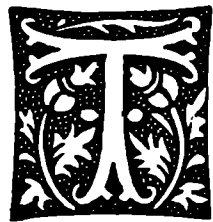
Drwhi eche biſchop taken vp of men: is ordeynede  
 for men in þes þingis þat ben to god · þat he offre  
 ziftis & ſacrifices for ſynnes/ þe whiche may to ge-  
 dir ſorowe · wiþ hem þat vnknown & erren/ for &  
 he is enuyrounyde wiþ infirmytees/ and þerfore he owiþ · as  
 & for puple: ſo alſo & for hym ſelf to offre for ſynnes/ neþer  
 any man takiþ to hym honoure: no but he þat is clepide of  
 god as aaron/ ſo & criſt clarifiede not hym ſelf þat he were bi-  
 ſchop: but he þat ſpac to hym/ þou art my ſone: to day I gen-  
 dride

C<sup>m</sup> 5<sup>m</sup>

## ye pistil

dride þee/ as in anoper place he seip/ þou art a prist into wiþ  
outen ende vp þe ordre of melchisedech/ þe whiche in þe dayes  
of his flesche · offerynge preyers & bisechyngis to god þat  
myzte make hym saaf fro deþ · wiþ greet crie & teeris · is herde  
for his reuerence/ and soþely whanne he was goddis sone · he  
lernyde obedience of þes þingis þat he suffride/ and he endide  
is made cause of euerlastynge helpe to alle obeytschyng to  
hym · clepide of god a bischop bisidis þe ordre of melchisedech/  
of whom to vs a greet worde & able for to be expounyde inter-  
pretide for to seye · for zee ben made feble to here/ forsoþe  
whanne zee schulden be maystris to tyme · estesone zee neden  
þat zee be tauzte · whiche ben þe elementis (or lettris) of þe  
bigynnyng of goddis wordis/ and zee ben made þo to whom  
is nede of mylke · & not sad mete/ forsoþe eche þat is partener  
of mylke · is wiþ outen parte of þe worde of ryztwesnesse/ for-  
soþe he is a litil childe/ forsoþe of parfite men is sad mete · of  
hem þat for þe ilke custom hane wittis hauntide (or trauey-  
lide) to discrecioune of good & yuyl//

C<sup>m</sup> 6<sup>m</sup>



Therefore we leeuynge awhile þe worde of þe benyng-  
nyte of crist borne to þe parfecioun of hym · not  
estesone liggyng þe foundement of penaunce fro  
deade werkis & of þe seip to god · of baptyms · (or  
waschyngis) of techynge & leyinge on of handis · & of risynge  
azen of deade men · & of euerlastynge dome/ and þis þing we  
schulen do · zif god schal suffre/ soþely it is impossible · hem  
þat ones ben illumynyde · haue tastide also heuenely zift · &  
ben made parteners · of þe holy goß · neþeles tastide þe gode  
worde of god & þe vertues of þe worlde to compynge · & ben  
sliden fer aweye · estesone for to be traueylide to penaunce ·  
estesone crucifyng to hem self þe sone of god · & haupng to  
scorne/ forsoþe þe erþe drynckynge reyne ofte compynge vpon  
it · & bryngyng forþe couenable erbe to hem of whom it is  
tilide · takip blessing of god/ forsoþe it bryngyng forþ þornes  
& breris ·

## to ebrues.

& breris · is reprouable & nerte to curse: whos endynge schal  
 be into brennyng/ forsoþe zee moſte derworþe · we triſten  
 of zou better þingis & nere to helpe: neþeles þouz we ſpeken  
 ſo/ ſoþely god is not vniuſte þat he forzete zoure werke & loue ·  
 þe whiche zee hane ſchewide in his name: for zee hane mynyſ-  
 tride to ſeyntis & mynyſtren/ forsoþe we coueyten eche of zou  
 for to ſchewe þe ſame biſyneſſe to þe fulfyllynge of hope til  
 into þe ende: þat zee ben not made ſlowe · but alſo ſuers of  
 hem: þe whiche by feiþ & paciẽce ſchulen enherite biheſtis/  
 forwhi god bihetynge to abraham/ for he had no man more  
 by whom he ſchulde ſwere: ſwore by hym ſelf ſeyinge/ no but  
 I bleſſynge ſchal bleſſe þee: & I multiplynge ſchal multiplie  
 þee/ and ſo by longe ſuffrynge: gate þe azen biheſte/ forsoþe  
 men ſweren by þe more of hem/ and þe ende of al here con-  
 trouerſie (or debate) · is an oþe to confirmacioun/ in þe whiche  
 þing god willynge for to ſchewe to þe epris of his byheſte · þe  
 vnmouablenefſe (or ſadneſſe) of his counſeyl: putte bitwixe  
 an oþe/ þatby two þingis vnmouable by whiche it is vnpoſ-  
 ſible god for to lize: we hane ſtrengest ſolace (or cōumforte) ·  
 þe whiche fleen to gedir: for to holde þe hope putte forþe/ þe  
 whiche as an anker we haue ſiker to þe ſoule · & ſad ingoinge:  
 til þe innermore þingis of hydyng: where þe forgoer for vs  
 entride in: Jh̄c made biſchop into wiþ ouden ende: aftir þe  
 ordir of melchisedech//



**S**oþely þis melchisedech kyng of ſalem: priſt of þe  
 hiſeſt god þe whiche mette wiþ abraham · gon azen  
 fro fleinge of kyngis & bleſſide hym · to whom &  
 abraham departide tipes of alle þingis/ firſte ſo-  
 þely þe whiche is interpretide kyng of riſtweſneſſe · aftirwarde  
 forsoþe & kyng of ſalem · þat is to ſeþe kyng of pees · wiþ ou-  
 ten ſadir · wiþ ouden modir · wiþ ouden genologie · neþer hau-  
 pinge bygynnyng of dayes neþer ende of liſ · forsoþe he lick-  
 enyde to þe ſone of god: dwelliþ priſt into wiþ ouden ende/

C<sup>m</sup> 7<sup>m</sup>



## ye pistil

forsoþe biholde zee how greet is þis (man): to whom & abraham patriarch ȝaue tipes of beste þingis/ and soþely men taking priethode of þe sones of leuy · haue maundement for to take tyþes of þe puple aftir þe lawe þat is to seye of here breþeren: þouȝ & þei wenten oute of þe lendis of abraham/ forsoþe by whos generaciō is not nowmbride in hem · toke tipes of abraham: & he bleside þis abraham þe whiche repromyssiouns/ forsoþe wiþ outen any aȝenseyinge: þat þat is lesse · is bleside of þe better/ and here soþely men dýng taken tipes/ forsoþe þere is witnesside · þat he lyueþ/ and þat it is so seyde by abraham: & leuy þat toke tipes · is tyþide/ forsoþe & ȝit he was in his fadir lendis: whan melchisedech mette wiþ hym/ þerfore ȝif endyng was by priethode of leuy · forsoþe vnder hym þe puple toke þe lawe: what ȝit was it nedeful an oþer priest for to rise · aftir þe ordre of melchisedech: & not for to be seyde · aftir þe ordre of aaron: forsoþe þe priethode translatide: it is nede þat þe translacioun of lawe be made/ forsoþe he in whom þes þingis ben seyde: he is of an oþer lynage · of þe whiche no man was priest or redy to þe auter/ soþely it is oppynly knowen · þat oure lorde is borne of Iuda: in whiche lynage moyses spak no þing of priestis/ and more ȝit it is known: ȝif aftir þe ordre of melchisedech an oþer priest riȝt · þe whiche is made aftir þe lawe of fleyschely maundement: but aftir vertue of lijf insolible (or þat may not be vndone)/ soþely he witnessiþ · for þou art a priest into wiþ outen ende · aftir þe ordre of melchisedech/ forsoþe reprouynge of þe maundement bifore goinge is made: for þe vnsadnesse & vnprofite of it/ forsoþe þe lawe brouȝt no þing to parfite þing/ forsoþe þe bryngynge in of better hope · by whiche we neyzen to god · & how greet it is · not wiþ outen sweyng/ forsoþe oþer ben made priestis · wiþ outen oþe/ forsoþe þis priest wiþ an oþe: by hym þat seyde to hym/ þe lorde swore & it schal not rewe hym · þou art priest into wiþ outen ende aftir þe ordre of melchisedech/ in so myche Ihesu is made better: of þe better testament/

¶ And

## to ebrues.

**A**nd soþely oþer mo ben made pristis aftir þe lawe: for þat þei weren forþed by deþ for to dwelle/ soþely þis man for þat he dwelliþ into wiþ outen ende: haþ euerlastyng pristhode/ wherfore & he may saue into wiþ outen ende · compynge nyȝ by hym self to god euermore lyuyng for to preye for vs/ forsoþe it bicame þat suche a man were bischop to vs: holy innocent inpolute (or vndefoulide) · departide fro synners · & made hizer þan heuenes/ þe whiche haþ not nede eche day as pristis · firste for to offre for his owne giltis oostis (or sacrifices): aftirwarde for þe puple/ soþely he dide þis þing: ones offryng hym self/ forsoþe þe lawe ordeynede men pristis · haupng sikenesse (or freelte)/ forsoþe þe werde of sweryng · þe whiche aftir þe lawe: ordeynede þe sone parfite into wiþ outen ende//



**D**rsoþe a capitle vpon þo þingis þat ben seyde/ we haue suche a bischop · þat satte to gedir in þe rize halfe of þe seet of gretenesse in heuenes: mynystre of seyntis & of þe verrey tabernacle þat god sette & not man/ forsoþe eche bischop is ordeynede for to offre ziftis & oostis/ wherfore it is nede & þis man: for to haue sum þing þat he schal offre/ þerfore zif he were vpon erþe: he were no prist/ whanne þei weren þat schulden offre ziftis aftir þe lawe · þe whiche seruen to þe saumplere & schadowe of heuenely þingis: as it is answeride to moyses whan he schulde ende þe tabernacle/ se he seiþ · make þou alle þingis: vp þe saumplere þat is schewide to þee in þe mounte/ nowe forsoþe he haþ geten a better mynystre: by how myche & he is a mediatour of a better testament/ þe whiche is halowide (or confermyde): wiþ better bihestis/ for zif þe ilke firste had be voyde fro blame: soþely a place of þe secounde schulde not be souzte/ forsoþe reproung hem he seiþ/ lo dayes comen seiþ þe lorde · & I schal ende a newe testament vpon þe hous of isrl & vpon þe hous of Iuda/ not aftir þe testament þat I made to here fa-  
deris

C<sup>m</sup> 8<sup>m</sup>

## ye pistil

deris in þe day I cauhte here honde; þat I schulde leede hem  
oute of þe lande of egipte/ for þei dwelliden not parfitely in  
my testament; & I hane dispiside hem seif þe lorde/ for þis is  
þe testament; þe whiche I schal dispose to þe hous of isrl aftir  
þe dayes seif þe lorde; in ȝuyng my lawes into þe soules of  
hem · & into þe hertis of hem; I schal aboue write hem/ & I  
schal be to hem into god; & þei schulen be to me into a puple/  
and eche man schal not teche his neyzebore · & eche man his  
broþer; seyinge/ knowe þou þe lorde/ for alle men schulen  
wite (or knowe) me; fro þe leste vnto þe more of hem/ for I  
schal be helpful (or merciful) to þe wickidnesse of hem/ and  
nowe I schal not biþenke of þe synnes of hem/ forsoþe in sey-  
inge newe; þe former weriden olde/ forsoþe þat þat is of many  
dayes & weride olde; is nyze þe deþ//

C<sup>m</sup> 9<sup>m</sup>



Shely & þe former had iustifyingis of worschip &  
holy þing worldely; þat is duryng for a tyme/  
forsoþe þe tabernacle was made firste · in whiche  
weren candillstikis & a borde · & puttyng forþ of  
looues þat is seyde holy/ forsoþe aftir þe veyle (or hydyng);  
þe secounde tabernacle þat is sancta sanctorum · þat is holy  
of holy þingis · haupng a golden censer · & þe arke of testa-  
ment coueride aboute on eche side wif golde · in þe whiche a  
potte of golde haupng manna · & þe zerde of aaron þat flo-  
rischide; & tables of þe testament/ vpon whiche þingis cheru-  
byns of glorie/ schadowyng þe propiciatorie · of whiche þin-  
gis it is nowe for to seye by alle/ forsoþe þes made þus to  
gedir · soþely in þe former tabernacle · pristis entreden in  
euermore; endyng þe officis of sacramentis/ forsoþe in þe  
secounde (tabernacle) · oones in þe ȝeer þe bischop al one not  
wif outhen blood · þe whiche he offriþ for his ignoraunce · & of  
þe puplis/ þe holy gost signyfyinge þis þing · not ȝit þe weye  
of seyntis for to be openyde; ȝit þe former tabernacle haupng  
staate/ þe whiche parable of þis present tyme · biþidis whiche  
ȝiftis

## to ebrues.

ziftis & oostis (or sacrificis) ben offrider: þe whiche mowne not make a man scrupnge parfite by conscience/ onely in metis & dyuerse waschpngis & ryztwesnessis of flesche putte vnto þe tyme of correccioun// ¶ Forsoþe c̄st beinge a bischop of godis to compnge by a larger & parfiter tabernacle not made by honde · þat is to seye not of his makynge · neþer bi blode of goot buckis or of calues: but bi his owne bloode entride ones into holy þingis: euerlastynge redempcion founden/ forsoþe zif þe blood of goot buckis & boolis & þe aske of a comē calue sprengde · halowih vnclene men to þe clensynge of flesche: how myche more þe blood of crist · þe whiche by þe holy gost offrider hym self vnwemmyde to god: schal clense oure conscience fro deade werkis: for to serue to luyngge god/ and þerfore he is a mediatour of þe newe testament · þe deþ fallynge bitwixe into redempcion of þe trespassyngis þat weren vnder þe former testament: þei þat ben clepide take þe repromyscioun of euerlastynge heretage ¶ Soþely where is a testament: it is nede · þat þe deþ of þe testament maker: come bitwixe forsoþe þe testament is confermyde in deade men/ ellis it is not worþ þe while he lyueth þat made þe testament/ wherfore soþely neþer þe firste testament is halowide wih outen blode/ forsoþe eche maundemente of þe lawe red of moyses to al þe puple · he takynge þe blood of calues & of buckis of goot wih water & rede wolle & ysop: sprengde & þe ilke booc & al þe puple · seyinge/ þis is þe blood of þe testament: þat god comaundide to zou/ also he sprengede wih blode þe tabernacle & alle þe vessellis of scrupces: in liche maner/ and almost alle þingis ben clenside in blood aftir þe lawe: & wih outen schedynge of blood · remyscioun of synne is not made/ þerfore it is nede þe saumplers forsoþe of heuenely þingis ben clenside wih þes þingis: forsoþe þe ilke heuenely þingis · wih better oostis þan þes/ forsoþe Jh̄c entride not into þe holy þingis made by hondis · þe saumplers of verrey þingis: but into þe ilke heuene þat he appere nowe to þe cheer of god for  
vs

## . ye pistil

us/ neþer þat he offre hym self ofte · as þe bischop entride into þe holy þingis/ by alle zeeris in alien blood/ ellis it bihouede hym ofte for to suffre/ fro þe bigynnyng of þe worlde/ now forsoþe ones in þe endyng of worldis to distruccioun of synne/ bi his ooste be apperide/ and as it is ordeynede to men ones to die//

C<sup>u</sup> 10<sup>m</sup>



Drsoþe aftir þis doom/ so & crist was offrīde ones · for to abyde þe synnes of many men/ þe secounde (tyme he schal appere wiþ outen synne · to men abydyng hym/ into þe helpe of hem by seiþ/ forsoþe þe lawe haupnge schadowe of goodis to comynge · not þe ilke ymage of þingis by eche zeeris · by þe ilke same oostis · whiche þei offren wiþ outen ceesynge/ neþer may make men comynge nyȝ parfite/ ellis þei schulden haue ceeside for to be offrīde · þerfore þat þe worschipers clenide ones hadden no conscience of synne forþirmore/ but in hem mynde of synnes is made by alle zeeris/ forsoþe it is impossible synnes for to be done away/ by blood of boolis & buckis of goot/ þerfore he entrynge into þe worlde/ seiþ/ þou woldist not an ooste & offrynge/ forsoþe þou hast schapen a body to me/ and brent sacrifices for synne/ plesiden not to þee/ þanne I seyde lo I come/ in þe heed of þe booc it is writen of me/ þat I do þi wille/ he aboue seyinge · for þou woldist not oostis & offrynngis & brent sacrifices & for synne · ne þo þingis ben plesaunt to þee/ þe whiche ben offrīde aftir þe lawe/ þan I seyde/ lo I come þat I do þi wille god/ he doiþ away þe firste þat he make þe secounde/ in whiche wille · we ben halowide · by þe offrynge of þe body of c̄st Iħū ones/ and soþely eche prīst is redy eche day mynystryng · & ofte tyme offrynge þe same oostis/ þe whiche motone neuer do away synnes/ forsoþe þis man offrynge an ooste for synnes for euermore/ sittīþ in þe rīsthalfe of god þe fadir/ fro þens forþ abydyng/ til his enemyes ben putte a stool of his feet/ soþely by one offrynge he endide/ for

## to ebrues.

for euermore halowide men/ forsoþe & þe holy goſt witneſſiþ  
to vs/ forsoþe aftirwarde he ſeyde/ forsoþe þis is þe teſtament  
þe whiche I ſchal witneſſe to hem aftir þo dayes ſeiþ þe lorde/  
in ʒpuyngge my lawes in þe hertis of hem: & in þe ſoulis of  
hem I ſchal aboue write hem/ and nowe I ſchal no more  
þenke of þe ſynnes & wickidneſſis of hem/ forsoþe wher is re=  
myſſioun of þes: nowe none offryngge for ſynne/ and ſo bre=  
þeren we haupnge triſte into þe entryngge of ſeyntis in þe  
blood of criſt þe whiche he halowide to vs a newe weye & luy=  
yngge by a veyle (or coueryngge): þat is to ſeþe his fleiſche · &  
þe greet priſt vpon þe hous of god: go we to wiþ verrey herte:  
into þe plente of ſeiþ/ we ſpreynte (or clenſide) þe hertis fro  
euyl conſcience · & waſchen þe body wiþ clene water: holde  
we þe confeſſioun of our hope vnbowynge (or þat may not be  
folden)/ forsoþe he is trewe þat azenbihiȝt/ & biholde we into  
gedir in þe ſtirynge of charite & of good werkis · not forſakyng  
oure gedyryngge to gedir · as it is of cuſtome to ſummen: but  
confortynge/ and by ſo myche þe more: by howe myche ʒee  
ſchulen ſe þe day neyȝinge/ forsoþe to vs ſynnyngge wilfully  
aftir þe knowynge of treuþe taken: nowe an oſte for ſynnes  
is not leſte/ forwhi ſumme abydyngge of doom is dredeful · &  
þe ſuyngge of fiȝr: þe whiche to waſtyngge aduerſaries/ any man  
makynge voyde (or brekynge) þe lawe of moyſes: deþ wiþ  
outen any mercy by two or þre witneſſis/ how myche more  
geſſe ʒee hym for to deſerue worſe turmentis: þe whiche ſchal  
deſoule þe ſone of god · & ſchalleede (or holde) þe blood of þe  
teſtament polute · in whom he is halowide · & ſchal do wronge  
(or diſpite) to þe ſpirit of grace: ſohely we witen hym þat  
ſeyde/ to me vengeaunce: & I ſchal ʒilde/ and eſte/ for þe  
lorde ſchal deme his puple/ it is ferful for to falle into þe  
handis of luyngge god/ forsoþe hane ʒee mynde on þe former  
dayes · in þe whiche ʒee liȝtenyde: ſuffreden greet ſtriſe (or  
fiȝte) of paſſiouns/ and ſohely in þe toþer ʒee made a ſpectacle  
(or wondryngge) · bi ſchenschipis & tribulaciouns/ in þe toþer  
forsoþe

## ye pistil

forsoþe zee ben made felowis of men lyuynge so/ forwhi & to bounden men zee hadden compassioun · & zee receyueden wiþ ioye · þe raueyne of zoure goodis/ knowynge zou for to haue a better & a dwellyng substaunce/ and so nyl zee leese zoure triste/ þe whiche haþ greet rewardynge/ forsoþe pacience is nedeful to zou · þat zee doinge þe wille of god/ brynge azen þe biheste/ zif soþely a litil how euer litil · he þat is to comynge schal come/ & he schal not tarie/ forsoþe my iuste man lyueþ of feiþ/ þat zif he schal wiþ drawe hym self/ he schal not plesse to my soule/ forsoþe we ben not þe sones of wiþdrawynge away into perdicioun/ but of feiþ into þe getynge of soule//

C<sup>m</sup> II<sup>m</sup>



Forsoþe feiþ is þe substaunce of þingis to be hopide · an argument (or certeynte)/ of þingis not apperynge/ Soþely in þis (feiþ)/ olde men haue gete witnessynge/ by feiþ we vnderstonde þe worldis for to be schapen (or made) by goddis worde/ þat visibyl þingis weren made of vnyvisibyl þingis/ by feiþ abel offride ful myche more ooste (or sacrifice) to god/ þan caym/ by þe whiche he gate witnessynge for to be iuste/ god bereynge witnessynge to his ziftis/ and by þat feiþ/ he deade spekiþ zit/ by feiþ enok is translatide · þat he schulde not se deþ · & he was not founden/ for þe lorde translatide hym/ forsoþe bifore þe translacioun he had witnessynge/ for to haue pleside god/ forsoþe it is impossible any man for to plesse god/ wiþ outen feiþ/ forsoþe it bihoueth a man comynge to god for to beleue for he is/ & he is rewarder to men insekynge hym/ by feiþ noe an answere taken · of þes þingis þat zit weren not seen/ dredynge schapide a schip into þe helpe of his hous by whom he dampnyde þe worlde & is insuede & ordeynede eyre of ryztwesnesse/ þe whiche is bi feiþ/ bi feiþ he þat is clepide abraham · obeyede for to go oute into a place where he was to takynge into heretage/ and he wente oute not wit-  
ynge

## to ebrues.

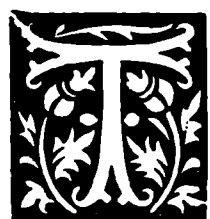
ynghe whidir he schulde go/ by feiþ he dwelte in þe lande of  
azen biheste/ as in an alien in litil houses dwellynge wip ysaac  
& Jacob euen eyres of þe same azen bihest/ soþely he abode  
a cytee haupnge foundementis/ whos crafty man & maker is  
god/ bi feiþ & þe ilke bareyn sara/ toke vertue into consey-  
uynghe of seed/ & he biwidis (or wip outhen) þe tyme of age/ for  
sche bileuede hym trewe þat had azen bihizte/ for whiche þing  
& of one • & hym nyȝ deade (men) ben borne as sternes of  
hevene in multitude/ & as grauel þat is at þe see side vn-  
nombreable/ by feiþ alle þes ben deade þe azenbihest not  
taken • but þei biholdynghe hem afer • & gretynge wel & knowe-  
lechynghe for þei ben pilgrymes/ & herboride men vpon þe  
erþe/ soþely þei þat seyen þes þingis/ signyfien hem for to  
seek a cuntre/ and soþely ȝif þei had hade mynde of þe ilke  
of þe whiche þei outhen wenten/ soþely þei hadden tyme of turn-  
ynghe azen • nowe forsoþe þei desiren a better þat is to seye  
heuenely/ þerfore god is not confoundide (or schamyde) for  
to be clepide þe god/ forsoþe he made redy to hem a cytee/ by  
feiþ abraham offride ysaac when he was temptide/ and he  
offride þe onebigoten • þe whiche had taken azen bihestis (or  
repromysious) • to whom it was seyde/ in ysaac/ seed to þee  
shal be clepide/ demynge/ for & fro deade men god is myȝty  
for to reyle hym/ wher of he took hym & into a parable/ bi  
feiþ & of þingis to comyng/ Isaac blesside iacob & esau/ bi feiþ  
iacob dynghe/ by alle þe sones of Joseph blesside & honoride þe  
hizenesse of his ȝerde/ by feiþ ioseph dynghe hadde mynde of  
þe passynghe forþ of þe sones of isrl/ & comaundide of his bones/  
by feiþ moyses borne • was hid þre monethes of his fadir &  
modir/ for þat þei sizen þe ȝonge childe fayre (or semely)/ &  
þei dredde not þe maundement of þe kyng/ By feiþ moyses  
made greet/ denyede hym for to be þe sone of pharaois douȝ-  
ter/ chesynge more for to be turmentide wip þe puple of god/  
þan for to haue myrþe of temporal synne/ demynge þe reprofe  
of cōt more richessis/ þan þe tresours of egipcians/ forsoþe he



## ye pistil

bihelde into þe rewarðynge/ bi feiþ he forsoke egipte: not  
dredynge (or schampynge) þe hardeneste of þe kyng/ forsoþe  
he as seinge: susteynede þe invisible/ by feiþ he halowide  
pask in schedynge of blood: lest he þat destruyede þe firste  
þingis of egipcians: schulde touche hem/ by feiþ þei passiden  
þe reede see as by drie lande: þe whiche þing egipcians assay-  
inge weren deuouride/ by feiþ þe walles of Jericho fellen  
doun by cumpassynge of seuene dayes/ by feiþ raab hoore ·  
perischide not wiþ vnbeleueful men: refeyuynge þe aspiers  
wiþ pees/ And what zit schal I seye? Soþely tyme schal fayle  
me tellyng of gedeon · Barac · Sampson · Jeptee · Dauid ·  
& Samuel · & oþer prophetis: þe whiche bi feiþ ouercamen  
retumes · wrouzte ryztwesnesse: gaten repromysyns/ þei  
stoppiden þe mouþes of lyouns · þei quenchiden þe feerlesnesse  
of fyr · þei dryuen away þe egge of swerde · þei keuereden  
of sekenesse þei weren made stronge in batayle/ þei turnyde  
þe castels (or oostis) of aliens/ wymmen receyueden here  
deade of azenrisyng/ forsoþe oþer ben holden forþ (or deade) ·  
not takynge redempcioun: þat þei schulden fynde better azen-  
risyng/ forsoþe oþer assayedden scornynge & betyngis: more  
ouer & bondis & prisoun/ þei weren stonyde · þei weren kitte ·  
þei weren temptide · þei weren deade in sleinge of swerde/  
þei wenten aboute in broken skynnes: & in skynnes of goot/  
nedy · angwischide · turmentide: to whiche þe worlde was  
not worþi/ þei errynge in wildernes & mounteyns & dennes ·  
& caues of erþe/ and alle þes prouede by witnessynge of feiþ:  
token not repromyscioun/ god purueyinge sum better þing for  
vs: þat þei schulden not be fulfild wiþ outhen vs//

C<sup>m</sup> 12<sup>m</sup>



Therefore we haupnge so greet a cloude of witnessis  
putte to: doinge awaye al charge & synne stond-  
ynge aboute vs: bi pacience renne to þe strife (or  
fyt) purposide to vs biholdynge into þe maker of  
feiþ & ender Ihu/ þe whiche ioþe purposide to hym: suffride  
þe

## to ebrues.

þe crosse • confessioun dispiside: & sittip on þe rizt halfe of þe  
feet of god/ forsoþe byþenke zee on hym þat suffride (or sustey-  
nede) suche azenseyinge of synful men azenes hym self: þat  
zee be not made wery • saylynge in zoure inwittis/ forsoþe  
ze azenstoden not zit vnto blood fiztyngge azenes synne: & zee  
hane forzeten þe coumfort þat spekip to zou as to sones: sey-  
inge: my sone nyl þou dispise þe disciplyne of þe lorde • neþer  
be þou made wery • þe while þou art chastiside of hym/ forsoþe  
þe lorde chastisip hym þat he louep/ forsoþe he scourgip euery  
sone þat he receyueþ/ laste zee stille in disciplyne god offrip hym  
to zou as to sones/ soþely what sone is it whom þe fadir schal  
not reprove (or chastice)/ þat zif zee ben oute of disciplyne of  
whiche alle ben made parteners: þerfore zee ben auoutrers  
& not sones/ aftirwarde soþely we hadden faderis of oure  
fleysche lerners: & we wip reuerence dreden hem/ wher not  
myche more we schulen obersche to þe fader of spiritis: & we  
schulen lyeue: & þei soþely in tyme of fewe dayes • aftir here  
wille lerneden us/ forsoþe þis fadir to þat þing þat is profit-  
able in receyuyngge þe halowynge of hym/ forsoþe eche disci-  
plyne in þis present tyme is seen treuly for to be not of ioye:  
but of sorowe • aftirwarde forsoþe it schal zilde fruyte of rizt-  
wesnesse moſte peeſible: to men excerside (or hauntide) bi it/  
for whiche þing reyse zee vp slowe hondis & knees vnbunden •  
& make zee riztful goyngis to zoure feet þat no man haltynge  
erre: but more be helide/ sue zee pees wip alle men & holy-  
nesse: wip outen whiche no man schal se god/ byholdynge þat  
no man fayle to þe grace of god • þat no root of bitternesse  
vpwarde buriounyng lette: & by it be defoulide by many men/  
þat no man be lecchour • oþer unholy (or curside) as esau:  
þe whiche for one mete solde his firste þingis/ soþely wite zee  
for & aftirwarde he coueytyngge for to enheryte blesynge: was  
reprouede/ forsoþe he fonde not place of penaunce: þouz he  
souzte it wip teeris/ forsoþe zee haue not comen to þe treta-  
ble (or couenable & able to come to) • & greet wynde (or quire-  
wynde)

## ye piſtil

wynde) & myſte & tempeſte · & ſoune of þe trumpe: & voyce of wordis/ þe whiche þei þat herden excuſiden hem: þat þe worde ſchulde not be made to hem/ forſoþe þei baren not þat þat was ſeyde: & zif a beeft touchide þe hil it ſchulde be ſtonyde/ and ſo dredeful it was þat was ſeyn: moyſes ſeyde ¶ I am aferde & ful of tremblynge/ but & zee haue comen nyȝ to þe hil of ſion & þe cyte of lyuynge god heuenely Irlm · & þe multitude of many þouſande aungels · & to þe chirche of þe firſte men: þe whiche ben writen in heuenes · & god domesman of alle · & þe ſpirit of iuſte parſite men: & to Ihu mediature of þe newe teſtament & of ſpryngynge of blood: better ſpekynge þan abel/ ſe þat zee forſake not þe ſpekynge/ forſoþe zif þei forſakynge hym þat ſpac on erþe aſcapide not: myche more we þat turnen aweye fro hym ſpekynge to vs fro heuenes/ whos voyce þanne mouede þe erþe: nowe forſoþe he azenbieþ ſeyinge/ zit ones & ¶ I ſchal moue not onely þe erþe: but alſo heuene/ forſoþe þat he ſeiþ zit ones: he declarip þe tranſelacioun of moueable þingis: as of made þingis dwelle þat ben unmouable//

C<sup>m</sup> 13<sup>m</sup>



And ſo we receyuyng þe unmouable kyngdom · haue grace by whiche ſerue we pleaſynge to god wip drede & reuerence/ and forſoþe oure god is ſtir waſtynge/ þe charite of breþerhede dwelle in zou: & nyl zee forzete hoſpitalite/ forſoþe by þis · ſumme pleaſiden to aungelis receyuede þe herborowe/ þenke zee on þe bounden men: as zee to gedir bounden/ and of traueplynge men: as & zoure ſelf dwellynge in body/ honourable weddyng in alle þingis: & unweymyde bed/ forſoþe god ſchal deme fornyctours & auoutrers/ be maners wip outhen coueytſe: payede wip preſent þingis/ ſoþely he ſeyde/ ¶ I ſchal not leue þee neþer forſake: ſo þat we triſtely ſeye/ þe lorde is an helper to me · ¶ I ſchal not drede: what a man ſchal do to me/ haue zee mynde of zoure ſouereyns: þat haue ſpoken to zou þe worde of

## to ebrues.

of god/ of whom zee biholdynge þe goinge oute of lyuynges:  
sue þe feiþ/ Jh̄c crist zistirday & to day he & into worldis  
¶ Nyl zee be ledde away wiþ dyuerse techyngis & pilgrymis  
(or straunge)/ forsoþe it is beste for to stable þe herte wiþ  
grace · not wiþ metis: þe whiche profitiden not to men wan-  
drynge in hem/ we haue an auter of þe whiche þei þat seruen  
to þe tabernacle of þe body: haue not power for to ete/ for-  
soþe of whiche beestis þe blood is borne in for synne into holy  
þingis bi þe bischop: þe bodies of hem ben brente wiþ oute þe  
castels · for whiche þing & Jh̄u þat he schulde halowe þe puple  
bi his blood: suffride wiþ outhen þe zate/ þerfore go we oute  
to hym wiþ oute castels · berynge his reproue (or schenschip)/  
soþely we haue not here a dwellynge cytee: but we seeken a  
cytee to comynge/ þerfore by hym offre we an ooste of her-  
pynges euermore to god: þat is to seye þe fruyte of lippis  
knowelechyng to his name/ forsoþe nyl zee forzete of wel  
doinge (or zyuyng) & of comunynge/ forsoþe by suche oostis  
god is deseruyde// ¶ Obeye zee to zoure prouostis (or pre-  
latis): & vnderleue zee to hem/ þei parfytely waken: as to  
zildynge resoun for zoure soules: þat þei do þis þing wiþ  
ioye · & not sorowynge/ forsoþe þis þing spedith not to zou/  
preye zee for vs/ soþely we tristen for we haue gode conscience  
in alle þingis willynge for to lyue wel/ moreouer forsoþe I  
beseche zou for to do: þat I sunner be restoride to zou/ So-  
þely god of pees þat ledde oute fro deade men þe grete schep-  
erd of scheep · in þe blode of euerlastynge testament oure lord  
Jh̄u crist: schape (or make) zou able in al gode þing · þat zee  
do þe wille of hym · doinge in zou þat þing þat schal plese  
bifore hym by Jh̄u c̄st: to whom is glorie into worldis of  
worldis amen ¶ forsoþe breþeren I preye zou þat zee suffre  
a worde of solace/ forsoþe by ful fewe þingis I haue writen  
to zou/ knowe zee zoure broþer tymothe leste: wiþ whom zif  
he schal come more hastely: I schal se zou/ Grete wel al zoure  
souereynes & alle holy men/ þe breþeren of ytalie · greten zou  
wel/ þe grace of god wiþ zou alle Amen// here

## here bigynnes ye apocalips

C<sup>m</sup> I<sup>m</sup>



Apocalips (or reuelacioun) of Ihu crist ·  
he whiche god zawe to hym for to make  
opyn to his seruauntis: whiche þing it  
bihoueh for to be made soone/ and he  
signyfiede sendynge by his aungel to  
his seruaunt Ioon: he whiche bare wit-  
nessynge to þe worde of god · & wit-  
nessynge of Ihu crist in þes þingis:  
what euer þingis he sise/ Blesside he þat rediþ & he þat heriþ  
þe wordis of his prophecie: and kepiþ þo þingis þat ben wri-  
ten in it (forsoþe þe tyme is nyz/ Ioon to seuene chirchis þat  
ben in asie: grace to zou & pees of hym þat is & þat was & þat  
is to comynge/ and of þe seuene spiritis þat ben in þe sirt of  
his trone · & of Ihu crist þat is a feiþful witnesse · þe firste bigo-  
ten of deade men · & prynce of kyngis of erþe/ þe whiche lou-  
ede vs & waschide vs fro oure synnes in his blood/ and made  
vs a kyngdom & pristi to god & to his fadir/ to hym glorie &  
empire into worldis of worldis Amen ¶ Lo he cometh wip  
cloudis · & eche yze schal se hym · & þei þat pungneden (or  
prickiden) hym/ and alle þe kynredis (or lynagis) of erþe:  
schulen weyle hem self on hym/ zhe amen/ I am alpha & o þe  
byggynnyng & þe ende: seiþ þe lorde god þat was & þat is to  
comynge al myzty/ I Ioon zoure broþer & partener in tribu-  
lacoñs & kyngdom & pacience in crist Ihu: was in an yle þat  
is clepide pathmos · for þe worde of god & witnessynge of Ihu:  
I was in spirit in þe sunday/ and I herde aftir me a greet  
voyce: as of a trumpe seyinge/ þat þing þat þou seest · write  
in a booc · & sende to þe seuene chirchis þat ben in asie/ to  
epheso

## þe apocalips

epheso & smyrma · & pargamo · & tiatira · & sardo · & pholodelphia · & laodicia/ and I turnyde þat I schulde se þe voyce þat spac wip me/ and I turnyde siȝe seuene candilstikis of golde/ and in þe mydil of seuene golden candilstikis a liche to þe sone of man · cloþide wip a longe pristely cloþe · & bifore girde at þe tetis/ wip a golden girdel/ soþely þe heed of hym & heris weren white · as whijt wolles · & as snowe/ and þe yzen of hym al flawme as flawme of fyr · & his feet liche to droſse of golde (or latoune)/ as in a brennyng chymney/ and þe voyce of hym/ as þe voyce of many watris/ and he hadde in his riȝthande seuene sterres/ and a scharpe swerde on boþe sidis wente oute of his moup/ & his face schyneth as þe sunne in his vertue/ and whanne I had seen hym/ I fel doune at his feet as deade/ and he puttide his riȝthande on me seyinge/ nyl þou drede/ I am þe firste & þe laste · & I am alȝue · & I was deade/ and lo I am lyuynge into worldis of worldis/ & I haue þe keyes of deþ & helle/ þerfore write þou whiche þingis þou haste seen · & whiche ben/ & whiche it bihoueth for to be done aftir þes þingis/ þe myſterie (or pryuate) of seuene sterres whom þou siȝe in my riȝthalfe · & þe seuene golden candilstikis/ þe seuene sterres ben aungelis of seuene chirchis/ and þe seuene candilstikes/ ben seuene chirchis//



**A**nd to þe aungel of þe chirche of ephesis/ write þou/ þes þingis seiþ he þat holdiþ seuene sterres in his riȝthalfe/ þe whiche walkiþ in þe mydel of seuene golden candilstikis/ I wote þi werkis & trauel & þi paciencē/ & for þou mayste not suffre euyl men/ and þou hast temptide (or assayde) hem þat seyn hem self for to be apostlis & ben not/ & þou hast founden hem liers · & þou haste paciencē/ and þou hast susteynyde for my name/ & faylidist not/ but I haue azenes þee fewe þingis/ þat þou hast lestē þi firste charite/ and so be þou myndeful of whens þou hast fallen/ & do penaunce & do þi firste werkis/ zif not  
I come

C<sup>m</sup> 2<sup>m</sup>

## ye apocalips

I come sone to pee: & I schal moue þi candilstike of his place: no but þou schalt do penaunce/ but þou hast þis gode þinge · for þou hatidist þe dedis of nyholaytis (or folowers of nyhol) þe whiche & I hatide/ he þat hap eris here: what þe spirit schal seye to þe chirchis/ to þe ouercomynge I schal ȝue for to ete of þe tree of lijf: þat is in paradise of my god ¶ And to þe aungel of chirche of smyrma: write þou/ þes þingis seis þe firste & þe laste: þat was deade & lyueþ/ I woot þi tribulaciō & þi pouert: but þou art riche/ and þou art blasfemyde of hem þat seyn hem self for to be iewes & ben not: but þei ben þe synagoge of sathanas/ drede þou no þing of þes whiche þou art to suffrynge/ lo þe deupl is to sendynge summe of ȝou into prisoun: þat ȝee be temptide · & ȝee schulen haue tribulaciō in ten dayes/ be þou feiþful vnto þe deþ: & I schal ȝue to þee a crowne of lijf/ he þat hap eris here: what þe spirit schal seye to þe chirches/ he þat schal ouercome: schal not be hurte of þe secounde deþ/ ¶ And to þe aungel of þe chirche of pargame: write þou/ þes þingis seiþ he þat hap þe swerde scharpe on eijer syde/ I woot where þou dwellist: where þe seet of sathanas is · & þou holdist my name & denyedist not my feiþ/ and in þo dayes antiphas my feiþful witnessse þat was slayne at ȝou: where sathanas dwelliþ/ But I haue azenes þee fewe þingis · for þou hast þere men holdynge þe techynge of baalam: þe whiche tauzte balac for to sende sclaundre bifore þe sones of isrl · þat is to seye for to ete of sacrifices of ydolis: & for to do fornycaciō: so & þou hast men holdynge þe techynge of nyholaytis/ also do þou penaunce/ ȝif not: I schal soone come to þee · & I schal sitte wiþ hem in swerde of my moup/ he þat hap eris here: what þe spirit schal seye to chirchis/ to þe ouercomynge I schal ȝue manna hidde (or aungel mete) · & I schal ȝue to hym a whijt stoon · & in þe stoon a newe name writen · þe whiche no man woot: no but he þat takiþ ¶ And to þe aungel of þe chirche of tiatyras: write þou/ þes þingis seiþ þe sone of god: þat hap ȝzen as flaume

## ye apocalips

flaume of sijr: & his feet lijk to drosse of golde/ I haue knowe  
 pi werkis & seiþ & charite & mynysterie (or seruyce) & pi pa-  
 cience: & pi laste werkis mo þan þe former/ but I haue azenes  
 þee a fewe þingis/ for þou suffrist þe womman Jezebel · þe  
 whiche seiþ hir for to be a prophetesse · for to teche & de-  
 ceue my seruauntis · for to do leccherie: & for to ete of þin-  
 gis offride to ydolis/ and I zaue to hire tyme þat sche schulde  
 do penaunce: & sche wole not do penaunce of hire fornyca-  
 cioune/ lo I sende hire to a bed · & þei þat done leccherie wiþ  
 hire schulen be in moste tribulacoñ no but þei do penaunce of  
 here werkis/ and I schal slee hire sones in deþ and alle chirchis  
 schulen wite: for I am sekynge reynes & hertis/ and schal ȝpue  
 to eche man of ȝou: aftir his werkis/ forsoþe I seye to ȝou &  
 oþer þat ben at tiatire who euer haue not þis techynge · & þat  
 knewen not þe hizenesse of sathanas: how þei seyn I schal not  
 sende on ȝou an oþer charge: neþeles þat þat ȝee haue holdiþ  
 til I come/ and to hym þat schal ouercome & þat schal kepe til  
 into þe ende my werkis: I schal ȝpue to hym power on folkis ·  
 & he schal gouerne hem in an yren zerde · & þei schulen be  
 broken to gedir as a vessel of a potter/ as & I receyuede of my  
 fadir · & I schal ȝpue to hym a morne sterne/ he þat haþ eris  
 here: what þe spirit schal seye to þe chirchis//



**A**nd to þe aungel of þe chirche of sardis: write þou  
 þes þingis seiþ he þat haþ þe seuene spiritis of  
 god: & seuene sterres/ I woot pi werkis · for þou  
 haþ name þat þou lyeest: & þou art deade/ be þou  
 wakynge · & conferme oþer þingis þat weren to dyinge/ for-  
 soþe I fynde not pi werkis ful: bifore my god/ þerfore haue  
 þou mynde how þou receyuedist & herdist: & kepe & do pen-  
 aunce/ þerfore ȝif þou schalt not wake: I schal come to þee  
 as a nyzt þeef · & þou schalt not wite in what houre I schal  
 come to þee/ but thou hast a fewe names in sardis: þe whiche  
 defouliden not here clothes · & þei schulen walke wiþ me in

C<sup>m</sup> 3<sup>m</sup>



## ye apocalips

whijt þingis · for þei ben worþi/ he þat ſchal ouercome: ſchal  
be cloþide þus wiþ whijt cloþes · & I ſchal not do aweye his  
name of þe book of liſf · & I ſchal knoweleche his name  
bifore my fadir · & bifore his aungels/ he þat haþ eris here:  
what þe ſpirit ſchal ſeye to chirchis ¶ And to þe aungel of þe  
chirche of philadelphie: write þou/ þes þingis ſeiþ þe holy &  
trewe þat haþ þe kepe of dauid · þe whiche openyþ & no man  
cloſiþ: he cloſiþ & no man openyþ/ I woot þi werkis/ & I zaue  
bifore þee adore openyde · þe whiche no man may cloſe: for  
þou haſt a litil vertue · & haſt kepte my worde · & denyedſt not  
my name/ lo I ſchal ȝyue to þee of þe ſynagoge of ſabanas:  
þe whiche ſeyn hem for to be iewis & ben not · but lizen/ lo I  
ſchal make hem þat þei come & worſchip bifore þi feet · & þei  
ſchulen wite for I louede þee: for þou keptiſt þe worde of my  
paciencie · & I ſchal kepe þee fro þe houre of temptaçon þat  
is comynge into al þe worlde: for to tempte men dwellynge  
in erþe/ lo I come ſoone: holde þat þat þou haſt · þat no man  
take þi croune/ and hym þat ſchal ouercome · I ſchal make  
a piler in þe temple of my god · & he ſchal no more go oute/  
and I ſchal write on hym þe name of my god & þe name of þe  
cytee of my god of newe Irlm þat cometh doune fro heuene of  
my god: & my newe name/ he þat haþ eris here: what þe  
ſpirit ſchal ſeye to chirchis ¶ And to þe aungel of þe chirche  
of laodice: write þou/ þes þingis ſeiþ amen (þat is verreyly)  
þe feiþful witneſſe & trewe: þe whiche is þe bigynnyng of  
goddis creature/ I woot þi werkis: for neþer þou art colde  
neþer hoot/ I wolde þou wert colde or hoot/ but for þou art  
lewe: & neþer coolde neþer hoot: I ſchal bigynne for to caſte  
þee oute of my mounþ/ for þou ſeyſt þat I am riche & ful of  
goodis & I haue nede of no man/ & þou woſte not for þou art  
a wrecche & wreccheſul · & pore & blynde & nakide/ I counſeyl  
þee for to bie of my golde ſiride & prouede þat þou be made  
riche · & be cloþide wiþ white cloþes/ þat þe confuſioun of þi  
nakidneſſe appere not/ and anoynte þin ȝzen wiþ colorie ·  
(þat

## ye apocalips

(pat is medycynal for yzen made of dyuerse erbis) • pat þou  
se/ I whom I loue reproue & chastise/ þerfore sue (or loue) &  
do penaunce/ lo I stonde at þe dore & knocke/ zif any man  
schal here my voyce & open þe zate/ I schal entre to hym &  
soupe wip hym & he wip me/ I schal zyeue to hym þat schal  
ouercome • for to sitte wip me in my trone/ as & I ouercame  
& satte wip my fadir in his trone/ he þat hap eris here/ what  
þe spirit schal seye to chirchis//



Aftir þes þingis I sate & lo a dore openyde in heuene/ and þe firste voyce þat I herde/ as a trumpe spek-  
yngge wip me seyinge/ steppe vp hidir & I schal  
schewe to þee whiche þingis bihouep for to be done  
soone aftir þes þingis/ anone I was in spirit/ and lo a seet  
was putte in heuene/ & on þe seet one sittynge/ and he þat  
sate was lijk to þe sizte of a ston e iaspis & to sardyn/ And þe  
reynbowe was incumpas of þe seet/ lijk to þe sizte of sma-  
ragdyn/ and incumpas of þe seet foure & twenty smale seetis/  
and vpon þe trones foure & twenty eldre [ ] sittynge/  
girde aboute wip whijt clothes • & in þe hedis of hem golden  
crownes/ and leptyngis & voyces & þundryngis/ camen oute  
of þe trone/ and seuene laumpis brennyngge bifore þe trone/  
þe whiche ben seuene spiritis of god/ and in þe sizte of þe seete  
as a see of glasse/ [ ] to crystal/ and in þe mydil of þe seet  
& in cumpas of þe seet/ foure beestis ful of yzen bifore & by  
hynde/ and þe firste beest lijk to a lioun/ and þe secounde beest  
lijk to a calue/ and þe þridde beste haupnge a face as of a  
man/ and þe fourþe beest/ lijk to an egle fleinge/ and þe foure  
beestis hadden euery of hem fire wengis/ & in cumpas & wip-  
inne • þei ben ful of yzen/ and þei hadden not reste day & nyzt  
seyinge/ holy • holy • holy • þe lorde god al myzty • þat was  
& þat is [ ] to comynge/ and whanne þe foure beestis  
zauen glorie & honoure & blessinge to þe sittynge on þe trone  
to luyngge into worldis of worldis/ þe foure & twenty eldre  
men

C<sup>m</sup> 4<sup>m</sup>

## ye apocalips

men fellen doune bifore þe ſittynge in trone: and worſchippeden þe lypynge into worldis of worldis/ and þei ſenten here crownes bifore þe trone: ſeyinge/ þou lorde oure god art worþi for to take glorie & honoure & vertue: for þou maðiſt of nouzt alle þingis/ and for þi wille þei weren: & ben made of nouzte//

C<sup>m</sup> 5<sup>m</sup>



And I ſize in þe riȝthalfe of þe ſittynge vpon þe trone: & aboue writen wiþinne & wiþoute • & ſeeliðe wiþ ſeuene ſeelis/ and I ſize a ſtronge aungel prechynge wiþ greet voyce/ who is worþi for to open þe booc: & for to vnbynde þe ſygnētis of it/ and no man myȝte in heuene neþer in erþe • neþer vnder erþe open þe booc: ne biholde it/ and I wepte myche: for no man is founden worþi for to open þe booc: neþer for to ſe it/ and one of þe eldre ſeyde to me/ wepe þou not/ lo a lioun of þe lynage of Iuda • þe root of dauid haþ ouercomen for to open þe booc: and for to vnbynde þe ſeuene ſygnētis of it ¶ And I ſize & lo in þe mydil of þe trone • & in þe mydil of þe foure beestiſ • & in þe mydle of þe eldre: a lombe ſtondynge as ſlayne haupnge ſeuene hornes & ſeuene yzen: þe whiche ben ſeuene ſpiritis of god • ſente into eche lande/ and he came & took of þe riȝthande of þe ſittynge in trone: þe booc/ and whanne he had openyde þe booc: foure beestiſ & foure & twenty eldre fellen doune bifore þe lombe: haupnge eche of hem harpiſ & golden ſciolis ful of ſaueryngis: whiche ben þe preyers of ſeyntis/ and þei ſongen a newe ſonge: ſeyinge lorde þou art worþi for to take þe booc: & for to open þe ſygnētis of it/ for þou were ſlayne & azen bouztist vs to god in þi blood • of al lynage & tunge & puple & nacioun: & maðiſt vs to oure god kyngdom & priſtiſ: & we ſchulen regne vpon erþe/ and I ſize & herde þe voyce of many aungels in cumpas of þe trone: & of beestiſ & of eldre/ and þe nowmbre of hem was a þouſande of þouſandiſ: ſeyinge wiþ greet voyce/ þe lombe þat is ſlayne is worþi for to take

## ye apocalips

take vertue & dyuynyte (or godhede) • & wisdom & strenghe & honoure • & glorie & blessinge • & eche creature þat is in heuene • & þat on erþe & vnder erþe & þe see • & whiche þingis ben in it: I herde alle seyinge to þe sittynge in trone & to þe lombe: blessinge & honoure & glorie & power into worldis of worldis/ and þe foure beestis seyden amen/ and þe foure & twenty eldremen fellen doune into here facis: and worschippeden þe lyuynge into worldis of worldis//



And I sȳze þat þe lombe had openyde one of þe seuene signetis: & I herde one of þe foure beestis seyinge • as a voyce of hundre: come & se/ and I sȳze • & lo a whijt horse: & he þat satte on hym had a bowe/ and a croune is zouen to hym: and he wente oute ouercomynge þat he schulde ouercome/ and whanne he had openyde þe secounde seale: I herde þe secounde beest seyinge/ come þou & se/ and another reed horse wente oute: & it is zouen to hym þat sate on hym • þat he schulde take pees fro erþe: and þat þei flee to gedir hem self/ and a greet sƿerde is zouen to hym/ And whanne he had openyde þe þridde seale: I herde & þe þridde beest seyinge • come þou & se/ and lo a blac horse: & he þat satte vpon hym • had a balaunce in his hande/ and I herde as a voyce in þe mydil of þe foure beestis seyinge/ a bilibre of wheet (þat is a weyȳte of two pounde): for one peny/ and þre bilibris of barley: for one peny • & hurte þou not wyn & oyle ¶ And whanne he had openyde þe fourþe seale: I herde þe voyce of þe fourþe beest seyinge/ come þou & se/ and lo a paal horse • & þe name deþ to hym þat sate on hym: and helle suede hym/ and power is zouen to hym on foure parties of þe erþe • for to flee wiþ sƿerde & hungre & deþ • & wiþ beestis of erþe ¶ And whanne he had openyde þe fifþe seel: I sȳze vnder an auter þe soules of men slayne for þe worde of god • & for witnessynge þat þei hadden/ and þei crieden wiþ greet voyce seyinge/ how longe lorde holy & trewe demest þou not & venge

C<sup>m</sup> 6<sup>m</sup>

## ye apocalips

gest oure blood: of þes þat dwellen in erþe/ and whijt stolis  
for eche soule a stool ben zouen to hem/ and it is seyde to  
hem · þat þei schulden reste zit a litil tyme: til þe euen ser-  
uauntis he hem ben fulfilde · & þe breþeren of hem þat ben  
to be slayne: as & þei ¶ And I sise whanne he hadde openyde  
þe sirte seale: & lo a greet erþe mounge is made/ and þe  
suune is made blake as a sacke of hayre · & al þe mone is  
made as blood · & þe sterres of heuene fellen doune vpon þe  
erþe · as a fige tree sendiþ his vnripe figis: whanne it is  
mouede of a greet wynde/ and heuene wente aweye as a book  
infooldide: & alle mounteyns & ilis ben mouede fro here places  
& kyngis of erþe & prynces & tribunes · & riche · & stronge · &  
eche seruaunt & freman: hidde hem in dennes & stons of  
hillis/ and þei seyn to hillis & stons: falle zee on vs & hidde  
zee vs fro þe face of þe sittynge on trone · & fro þe wrap of  
þe lombe: for þe greet day of here wrabe cometh: & who schal  
mowe stonde//

C<sup>m</sup> 7<sup>m</sup>



¶ Iftir þes þingis I sise foure aungels stondynge  
vpon þe foure corners of þe erþe holdynge foure  
wyndis of þe erþe · þat þei blewen not on erþe  
neþer on see: neþer into any tree/ ¶ And I sise  
anoþe aungel stepzinge fro þe risynge of þe sunne: haupnge a  
signe of quykke god/ and he criede wiþ greet voyce to þe foure  
aungels þe whiche it is zouen for to noye to þe erþe & see:  
seyinge nyl zee noye þe erþe & see: neþer to trees: til we  
signen (or marken) þe seruauntis of oure god in þe forehedis  
of hem/ and I herde þe nowmbre of markide · an hundride &  
foure & fourty housande markide: of euery lynage of þe sones  
of isrl/ of þe lynage of Juda: twelue housande signyde/ of þe  
lynage of ruben: twelue housande markide/ of þe lynage of  
gad: twelue housande markide/ of þe lynage of aser: twelue  
housande markide/ of þe lynage of neptalym: twelue hou-  
sande markide/ of þe lynage of manasse: twelue housande  
markide/

## ye apocalips

markide/ of þe lynage of symeon: twelue housande markide/  
of þe lynage of leuy: twelue housande markide/ of þe lynage  
of ysachar: twelue thousande markide/ of þe lynage of zabu-  
lon: twelue housande markide/ of þe lynage of Joseph: twelue  
housande markide/ of þe lynage of beniamyn: twelue hou-  
sande markide ¶ Astir þes þingis I sîze a greet cumpanye:  
whom no man myzte noumbre of alle folkis & lynage & pu-  
plis & tungis stondynge bifore þe trone in þe sizte of þe lombe  
coueride (or cloþide) with white stoolis: & palmes in þe handis  
of hem/ and þei crieden wip greet voyce seyinge/ helpe to  
oure god þat sittip on trone: & to þe lombe/ and alle aungels  
stoden in cumpas of þe trone · & seneours (or eldre) · & foure  
beestis/ and þei fellen in þe sizt of þe trone into here facis &  
worschipiden god · seyinge amen/ blessinge & clerenesse &  
wisdom & doinge of þankyngis & honoure & vertue & strengþe  
to oure god into worldis of worldis ¶ And one of þe eldre  
men answeride & seyde to me/ who ben þes þat ben coueride  
(or cloþide) wip white stoolis: & of whens camen? and I seyde  
to hym my lorde þou wotte/ and he seyde to me/ þes ben þei  
þat camen fro greet tribulacon: & waschiden here stolis & ma-  
den hem whijt · in blood of þe lombe/ þerfore þei ben bifore  
þe trone of god/ and seruen to hym day & nyzt in his temple/  
& he þat sittip in trone: dwelleþ on hem/ þei schulen no more  
hungre & þriste · neþer sunne schal falle on hem: neþer any  
heet/ for þe lombe þat is in þe mydil of þe trone schal gouerne  
hem: & schal leede hem forþe to we wellis of wattris of lijf/  
and god schal wipþe aweye eche teere fro þe yzen of hem//



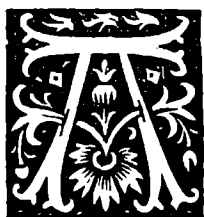
And whanne he hadde openyde þe seueneþ seale:  
scilence is made in heuene as halfe an houre/ and  
I sîze seuene aungels stondynge in þe sizte of god:  
& seuene trumpes ben zouen to hem/ & anoper  
aungel came & stood bifore þe auter haupnge a golden censer/  
and many encensis ben zouen to hym: þat he schulde zyue  
of

C<sup>m</sup> 8<sup>m</sup>

## ye apocalips

of þe preyers of alle seyntis · vpon þe golden auter: þat is  
bifore þe trone/ and þe smoke of encensis of þe preyers of  
halowis: steyzede vp of þe aungelis honde bifore god/ and þe  
aungel took þe censer & filde it of þe sijr of þe auter: & sente  
it into þe erþe/ and þundris & voyces & leptyngis ben made:  
& greet erþe mounge/ and þe seuene aungels þat hadden  
seuene trumpes: maden hem reedy þat þei schulden synge in  
trumpe/ and þe firste aungel songe in trumpe: and hayle is  
made & sijr mengide to gedir in blood: & it is sente into þe  
erþe/ and þe þridde parte of erþe is brente · & þe þridde parte  
of trees is brente: & al grene hay (or gras) is brente/ and  
þe secounde aungel songe in trumpe: & as a greet hil bren-  
nyng wip sijrs · is sente into þe see/ and þridde parte of þe  
see is made blode/ and þridde parte of creature is deade þat  
hadden soules (or lyues) in þe see: & þe þridde parte of schip-  
pis perischide ¶ And þe þridde aungel songe in trumpe · & a  
greet sterre brennyng as a litil bronde fel fro heuene · & it  
fel into þe þridde parte of flodis: & into welles of wattris/ and  
þe name of þe sterre is seyde wermode/ and þe þridde part of  
wattris is made into wermode · & many men ben deade of þe  
wattris: for þei ben made bitter/ ¶ and þe fourþe aungel  
songe in songe in trumpe · & þe þridde parte of sunne is smy-  
ten · & þe þridde parte of þe mone · & þe þridde parte of sterres:  
so þat þe þridde parte of hem was dirkide · & þe þridde parte  
of day schone not: & also of nyzt/ and ¶ I siȝe & herde þe voyce  
of an egle fleinge by myȝil heuene: seyinge wip greet voyce/  
wo · wo · wo · to þe dwellynge in erþe: & oþer voyces & þre  
aungels þat weren to synngynge in trumpe//

C<sup>m</sup> 9<sup>m</sup>



¶ And þe fifþe aungel songe in trumpe/ and ¶ I siȝe a  
sterre for to haue fallen doune fro heuene into erþe ·  
& þe kepe of þe pitte of depnesse is zouen to hym/  
and he openȝde þe pitte of depnesse · & smoke of þe  
pitte steyzede vp: as þe smoke of a greet fourneys/ and þe  
sunne

## ye apocalips

sunne is dirkide & þe eyre · of þe smoke of þe pitte · locustis wenten oute into þe erþe: & power is zouen to hem as scorpions of erþe haue power/ & it is comaundide to hem þat þei schulden nor hurte hay of þe erþe · neþer al green þing · neþer eche tree: no but onely men þat haue not þe marke of god in here forhedis/ and it is zouen to hem þat þei schulden not flee hem: but þat þei schulden be turmentide fyue moneþes/ and þe turmentynge of hem: as þe turmentynge of a scorpion whanne he smytih a man/ and in þo dayes men schulen seek deþ: & þei schulen not fynde it/ and þei schulen desire for to dye: and deþ schal flee fro hem/ and þe likeness of locustis: lijk to horsis made reedy into batayle/ and on þe hedis of hem · as crownes lijk to golde: & þe facis of hem as faces of men/ and þei had heris · as heris of wymmen: & þe teþ of hem weren as þe teþ of lyouns/ and þei hadden haubiriouns/ as pren haubiriouns/ and þe voyce of þilke wengis: as þe voyce of charis of many horsis rennyng into batayle/ and þei hadden taylis lijk of scorpionis: & prickis weren in þe taylis of hem/ and þe myzte of hem for to noye men by fyue moneþes/ and þei hadden vpon hem a kyng · þe aungel of depnesse · to whom þe name by ebrue: labaddon · forsoþe bi greek: appollion · & by latyne haupngeþe name distruger/ oo wo passide: & lo zit cometh two woos ¶ Aftr þes þingis & þe sirte aungel songe in trumpe: & I herde one voyce of foure corners of þe golden auter þat is bifore þe yzen of god: seyinge to þe sirte aungel þat had a trumpe/ vnbynde foure aungels · þat ben bounden in þe greet flood eufrates/ and þe foure aungels ben vnbunden · þe whiche weren redy into houre & day & moneþ & zeer: þat þei schulden flee þe þridde parte of men/ and þe nowmbre of þe ooste of horsemen twenty þousande siþes ten þousande/ I herde þe nowmbre of hem/ and so I siþe horsis in visioun/ and þei þat sater on hem: hadden sijry haubiriouns · & Jacyntynes & brymstonpe/ and þe hedis of þe horsis weren as hedis of liouns: & of þe mouþe of hem sijr cometh forþ · & smoke



## ye apocalips

& brymstone/ and þes þre plagis (or woundis): þe þridde parte of men is slayne: of fir & of smoke & of brymstone þat camen oute of þe moup of hem/ soþely þe power of horsis is in þe moup of hem: & in þe taylis of hem/ for whi þe tayles of hem lijk to serpentis haupnge hedis: & in hem þei noyen/ and þe toþer men þat ben not slayne in þes plagis · neþer diden penaunce of þe werkis of here handis: þat þei worschipiden not deuelis & symulacris · golden · silueren · & brasen & stonen & trenen · þe whiche neþer mowne seen neþer here neþer wandren/ and diden not penaunce of here manseingis neþer of venemyngis: neþer of fornycacioun neþer of here þiftis//

C<sup>m</sup> IO<sup>m</sup>



**A**ND I sʒe anoper stronge aungel comynge doune fro heuene coueride (or cloþide) wiþ a cloude: & þe reyne botwe in his heede/ and þe face of hym was as sunne: & þe feet of hym as a piler of fir/ and he hadde in his hande a litil booc openyde/ and he putte his ryzt-fote on þe see: forsoþe his lifte on þe erþe/ and he criede wiþ greet voyce: as a lioun whan he roriþ/ and whanne he hadde criede · seuene þundris spaken here voyces/ and whanne þe seuene þundris hadden spoken here voyces: I was to writynge/ and I herde a voyce fro heuene seyinge/ signe þou (or marke) what þingis þe seuene þundris spaken: & nyl þou write hem/ and þe aungel whom I sʒe stondynge aboute þe see & aboue þe erþe: liftide vp his hande to heuene · & swore by þe lyuynge into worldis of worldis þat made of nouzte heuene & þo þingis þat ben in it · & þe see & þo þingis þat ben in it · for tyme schal nomore be: but in þe dayes of þe voyce of þe seueneþ aungel · whanne he schal bygynne for to synge in trumpe: þe mysterie of god schal be endide · as he euuangelizide by his seruauntis prophetis/ and I herde a voyce fro heuene eftesone spekyngge wiþ me & seyinge/ go þou & take þe booc openyde of þe honde of þe aungel stondynge aboue þe see & on þe lande/ and I wente to þe aungel seyinge to hym: þat he

## ye apocalips

he schulde ȝyue to me þe booc/ and he seyde to me take þe booc & deuoure it · & it schal make þi wombe for to be bitter/ but in þi mouþe it schal be swete as honye/ and I took þe booc of þe aungels honde & deuouride it/ & it was in my mouþ as swete honye/ and whanne I hadde deuouride it · my wombe was bitter/ and he seyde to me/ it bihouep þee eftesone for to prophece to heþen men & to puplis & to langagis & to many kyngis//



**A**nd a mesure lijk to a zerde is ȝouen to me/ & it is C<sup>m</sup> 11<sup>m</sup>  
seyde to me/ rise þou & mete þe temple of god & þe auter/ & men worschippynge in it/ forsoþe caste oute þe porche þat is wiþ oute forþ þe temple · & mete it not for it is ȝouen to heþen men · & þei schulen defoule þe holy cytee/ by fourty monethes & two/ and I schal ȝyue to my two witnissis & þei schulen prophecie a þousande dages two hundride & sirty þei cloþide wiþ sackis/ þes ben þe two olyues & two candilstikis ȝyupnge lizt · þei stondynge in þe sizte of þe lorde of þe erþe/ and ȝif any man schal wolne for to anoye hem/ siȝr schal go oute of þe mouþe of hem/ & schal deuoure here enemyes/ ȝif any man schal wolne for to hurte hem/ þus it bihouep hym for to be slayne/ þes haue þe power of schit-tyngge heuene/ þat it rayne not in þe dages of here prophecie/ and þei haue power on watris · of turnynge hem into blood · & for to smyte þe erþe wiþ al plage · & how ofte euer þei schulen wolne/ and whanne þei schulen ende here witnissynge/ þe beest þat steyȝep vp of þe depnesse · schal make batayle azenes hem · & schal ouercome hem · & schal flee hem/ and þe bodyes of hem schulen ligge in þe stretis of þe greet cytee · þat is clepide gostly sodom & egipte/ where þe lorde of hem was crucifiede/ and þei schulen flee of lynagis & of puplis & of tungis & of heþen men · þe bodies of hem by þre dages & an halfe/ & þe bodyes of hem schulen not be suffride/ for to be putte in biriels/ and men enhabitynge þe erþe schulen haue  
ioye

## ye apocalips

ioye vpon hem/ and þei schulen make merpe & sende zistis to  
gedir for þes two prophetis turmentiden hem þat dwelten in  
erþe/ and astir þre dayes & an halfe/ þe spirit of lijf of god  
entriden into hem · & þei stoden on here feet/ & greet drede  
fel on hem þat sizen hem/ and þei herden a greet voyce fro  
heuene/ seyinge to hem/ steyze vp hidir/ and þei steyzeden  
into heuene inne a cloude/ & þe enemyes of hem sizen hem/  
and in þat houre a greet erþe mouynge is made/ & þe tenþe  
part of þe cytee fel/ and here ben slayne in þe erþe mouynge  
þe names of men seuene þousande/ & þe toþer ben sente in  
drede & zauen glorie to þe god of heuene ¶ ye secounde wo  
wente/ & lo þe þridde wo schal come sone/ and þe seueneþ  
aungel songe in trumpe/ & greet voyces ben made in heuene  
seyinge/ þe rewme of þis worlde is made oure lordis/ & of  
cristis his sone/ and þei schulen regne into worldis yf worldis  
amen/ ¶ And þe foure & twenty seneours (or eldre men) þat  
sitten in here seetis in þe sizte of þe lordes/ fellen into here  
faces & worschippede god seyinge/ we done þankyngis to þee  
lorde god almyzty · whiche art & whiche was & whiche art to  
comynge/ whiche hast taken þi greet vertue & has regnyde/  
and folkis ben wroþe & þi wrapþe came · & tyme of deade  
men for to be demyde · & for to zilde hijre to þi seruauntis &  
prophetis & halowis & dredynge þi name to smale & lital/ &  
distrupinge hem þat corrupiden þe erþe//

C<sup>m</sup> 12<sup>m</sup>



And þe temple of god in heuene is openyde/ & þe  
arke of his testament is seyn in his temple/ and  
leptynge ben made · & voyces & erþe mouynge &  
greet hayle/ & a greet token apperide in heuene/ a  
womman coueride or cloþide wip þe sunne · & þe mone vndir  
hire feet · & in þe heed of hire a crowne of twelue sterres/ and  
sche haupnge in wombe · & sche criede berynge childe/ & is  
turmentide þat sche bere childe/ and anoper token is seen in  
heuene/ and lo a greet reed dragoune haupnge seuene heedis  
& ten

## ye apocalips

& ten hornes: & in þe hedis of hym seuene dyademes/ and þe  
tayle of hym drowe þe þridde parte of sterres of heuene: &  
sente hem into erþe/ and þe dragoune stode bifore þe wom-  
man þat was to berynge childe: þat whanne sche had borne  
childe · he schulde deuoure hym/ and sche childide a sone male  
þat was to rewlynge alle folkis in an yren zerde/ and hire  
sone is raupschide to god & to his trone/ and þe womman  
fleye into wildernesse: where sche haþ a place reedy of god:  
þat sche fede hire þere a þousande dayes two hundride & sixty/  
and a greet batayle is made in heuene: & mychael & his aun-  
gels fouzten wiþ þe dragoune/ and þe dragoune fauzte & his  
aungels: & þei hadden not myzte neþer þe place of hem is  
founden more in heuene/ and þe ilke dragoune is caste doune ·  
þe greet olde serpent þat is clepide þe deuyll & sathanas · þat  
deceyues al þe worlde · is caste oute into þe erþe · & his aun-  
gels ben sente wiþ hym/ and I herde a greet voyce in heuene  
seyinge/ nowe is made helpe · & vertue · & kyngdom of oure  
god: & þe power of his crist/ for þe accuser of oure breþeren is  
caste doune: whiche accuside hem bifore þe sizte of oure god ·  
day & nyzt/ and þei ouercamen hym for þe blood of þe lombe ·  
& for þe worde of his witnessynge: & þei loueden not here  
soules (or lyues): til to deþ/ þerfore glade zee heuenes: & zee  
þat dwelle in hem ¶ **¶** Mo to þe erþe & see · for þe fende came  
doune to zou haupnge greet wrapþe: witynge for he haþ litil  
tyme/ and aftir þat þe dragoune sizz for he was caste doune  
into erþe: he pursuede þe womman þat childide a male sone/  
and two wengis of a greet egle ben zouen to þe womman ·  
þat sche schulde flee into deserte into hire place where sche is  
fed by tyme & tymes & þe halfe of tymes: fro þe face of þe ser-  
pent/ and þe serpent sente oute of his moup aftir þe wom-  
man water of flood: þat he schulde make hire to be drawen of  
þe flode/ & þe erþe helpide þe womman/ and þe erþe openyde  
his moup: & soupide þe flood þat þe dragoune sente of his  
mouþe/ and þe dragoune is wroþe to þe womman/ and he  
wente

## ye apocalips

wente for to make batayle wip oþer of hire seeðe þat kepten  
þe maundementis of god & haue þe witnesþynge of Iþū crist:  
and he stood on þe grauel of þe see//

C<sup>m</sup> 13<sup>m</sup>



And I ſiȝe a beeste ſtepyng up of þe ſee · hauynge  
ſeuene hedys & ten hornes: & on þe hornes ten dy-  
ademes · & on his heedys þe names of blaſfemye/  
and þe beeste whom I ſiȝe was lyk to a parde (or  
a liparde) · & his feet as þe feet of a bere: & his mouþ as þe  
mouþ of a lioun/ and þe dragoun zawe to þe ilke his vertue  
& greet power/ and I ſiȝe one of his hedys: as ſlayne into  
deþ/ and þe wounde of his deþ is curide: & at erþe wondride  
aftir þe beest/ and þei worſchipeden þe dragoun · þat zawe  
power to þe beest: & þei worſchipeden þe beeste ſeyinge/ who  
lyk to þe beest · & who ſchal mowe ſiȝte wip it/ and a mouþ  
ſpekynge greet þingis & blaſfemyes is zouen to it/ and power  
is zouen to it: for to do in two & forty monethes/ and it  
openyde his mouþ into blaſfemyes to god/ for to blaſfeme  
his name & his tabernacle: & hem þat dwellen in heuene/ and  
it is zouen to hym for to make batayle with ſeyntis: & for to  
ouercome hem/ and power is zouen to hem into al lynage &  
puple & tunge & folc & alle men worſchipiden it þat dwellen  
in erþe: whos names ben not writen in þe booc of liȝt of þe  
lombe þat is ſlayne: fro þe bigynnyng of þe worlde/ zif any  
man haþ eris of herynge: here he/ he þat ſchal leede into  
captifte: ſchal gon into captifte/ he þat ſchal flee in ſwerde:  
it bihouep hym for to be ſlayne in ſwerde/ þis is þe paciencie  
& ſeiþ of ſeyntis ¶ And I ſiȝe anoþer beeste ſtepyng up fro  
þe erþe & hadde two hornes lyk þe lombe: & he ſpac as þe dra-  
goun/ and dide al þe power of þe former beest in his ſiȝt/  
and it made þe erþe & men dwellynge in it for to worſchip þe  
firſte beest · whos plage of deþ is curide/ and it dide greet  
ſignes · þat alſo it made ſiȝt for to come doune fro heuene  
into erþe · in þe ſiȝte of alle men: and deceyueþ men dwell-  
lynge

## ye apocalips

lynge in erþe · for signes þe whiche ben zouen to it for to do  
in þe sizte of þe beest · seyinge to men dwellynge in erþe · þat  
þei make an ymage of þe beest þat haþ þe wounde of swerde  
& lyuede/ and it is zouen to hym þat he schulde ȝyue a spirit  
to þe ymage of þe beest · & þe ymage of þe beeste speke/ and  
he schal make þat who euer schal not honoure þe ymage of þe  
beest · be slayne/ and he schal make alle · smale & greet · &  
riche & pore · & fremen & seruauntis · for to haue þe carecter  
(or lettre) in þe right-hande or in here forhedis · þat no man  
may bie or selle no but þei þat haue þe carecter or þe name or  
þe nowmbre of his name/ here is wisdom/ he þat haþ vnder-  
stonðynges · acounte þe nowmbre of þe beest/ soþely þe nowm-  
bre of man is · & his nowmbre is · sixe hundride & sixty &  
sire//



And I sice & lo þe lombe stood on þe mounte sion ·  
& wiþ hym an hundride & four & fourty þousande ·  
haupnge his name & þe name of his fadir · writen  
in here forhedis/ and I herde a voyce fro heuene ·  
as þe voyce of many watris · & as þe voyce of greet þundre/  
and þe voyce whiche I herdes · as if harpers harpyng in here  
harpis/ and þei songen a newe songe bifore þe seet of god · &  
bifore þe foure beestis & þe eldre men/ and no man myȝte  
sepe þe songe · no but þe an hundride & foure & fourty þou-  
sande þat ben bouzt of þe erþe/ þes it ben þat ben not de-  
foulide wiþ wymmen · soþely þei ben virgyns/ þes suen þe  
lombe · whidir euer he schal gon/ þes ben bouzte of alle þe  
prymacies (or firste fruytis) · to god & to þe lombe · & in þe  
mouþ of hem lesyng is not founden/ soþely þei ben wiþ ou-  
ten wemme · bifore þe trone of god ¶ And I sice an oþer aun-  
gel fleinge by mydde heuene · haupnge þe euerlastyng gōs-  
pel · þat he schulde euangelize to men sittynge on erþe · & on  
alle folc & lynage & langage & puple · seyinge wiþ greet voyce/  
drede zee þe lorde · & ȝyue zee to hym honoure · for þe houre  
of

C<sup>m</sup> 14<sup>m</sup>

## ye apocalips

of his doom comen/ and worschip zee hym þat made heuene & erþe · þe see & alle þingis þat ben in hem/ & þe wellis of watris// ¶ And anoter aungel suede sayinge þe ilke greet cytee babiloyne felde/ þe whiche zaue drynke to alle folkis · of þe wijn of wrappe of hire fornyacioun/ and þe þridde aungel suede hem/ seyinge wiþ grete voyces/ zif any man schal worschip þe beest & þe ymage of it · & take þe token in his forhede · or in his hande/ & þis schal drynke of þe wijn of goddis wrappe/ þat is meynthe wiþ cleer wijn in þe cuppe of his wrappe/ & schal be turmentide wiþ fīr & brymston in þe sizte of holy aungels/ & bifore þe sizte of þe lombe/ and þe smoke of hire turmentis schal steyze vp into worldis of worldis/ neþer þei haue reste dāge & nyȝte · þe whiche worschipiden þe beeste & his ymage/ & zif any took þe carecter of his name/ þis is þe patience of seyntis · and whiche kepen þe maundementis of hym/ & þe seiþ of Ihu ¶ And I herde a voyce fro heuene seyinge to me/ write þou/ blesside þe deade men þat dien in þe lorde/ fro hens forþ nowe þe spirit seiþ · þat þei reste of here traueylis/ forsoþe þe werkis of hem suen hem ¶ And I sīze & lo a white cloude · & aboue þe cloude sittynge · lijk to þe sone of man · haupnge in his hede a golden croune/ & in his hande a scharpe sickel/ and anoter aungel wente oute of þe temple cryinge wiþ greet voyces/ to þe sittynge vpon þe cloude/ sende þi sicke & reþe/ for houre comen þat it be roþen/ for þe ripe corne of erþe driede/ and he þat satte vpon þe cloude · sente his sicke into erþe · & rape into erþe/ And anoter aungel wente oute of þe temple þat is in heuene/ haupnge & he a scharpe sicke/ and anoter aungel wente oute of þe auter · þat had power on fīr/ & he criede wiþ greet voyce to hym þat had a scharpe sicke · seyinge/ sende þi scharpe sicke · & kitte of þe clustris of þe vynezerde of erþe/ for þe grapis of it ben ripe/ and þe aungel sente his sicke into erþe · & kitte of þe vynezerde of erthe/ & sente into þe greet lake of goddis wrappe/ and þe lake is defoulide wiþ outhen þe cytees/ & blood wente oute of þe lake · vnto þe

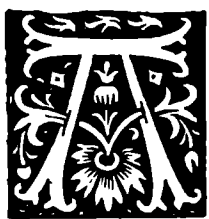
## ye apocalips

þe bridels of horsis: by furlongis a þousande & two hundredide//



And I sýze anoper token in heuene greet & wondreful · seuene aungels haupnge seuene þe laste plagis for þe wrappe of god is endide in hem/ and I sýze as a glasen see mengide wip fýr · & hem þat ouercamen þe beest in his ymage: & nowmbre of his name stondyng aboue þe glasen see · haupnge þe harpis of god · & syngyng þe songe of moyses seruaunt of god: & þe songe of þe lombe seyng/ greet & wondreful ben þi werkis lorde god al myzty · þi weyes ben iuste & trewe: lorde kyng of worldis/ lorde who schal not drede þee · & magnyfie þi name: for þou al one art piteuous (or merciful) · for alle folkis schulen come & schulen worschip in þi sýzte: for þi domes ben open// ¶ And aftir þes þingis I sýze & lo þe temple of þe tabernacle of witnessyng in heuene is openyde/ and seuene aungels haupnge þe seuene plagis wenten oute of þe temple · cloþide wip a stool clene & white · & bifore girde wip golden girdels: aboute þe brestis/ and one of þe foure beestis ȝaue to þe seuene aungels · seuene golden violis ful of þe wrappe of god: luyng into worldis of worldis/ and þe temple is fulfild wip smoke of þe maieste of god: & of þe vertue of hym/ and no man myzte entre into þe temple: til þe seuene plagis of þe seuene aungels weren endide//

C<sup>m</sup> 15<sup>m</sup>



And I herde a greet voyce fro heuene: seyng to þe seuene aungels/ go ȝee & schede oute þe seuene vpolis of goddis wrappe: in to erþe/ and þe fýrste aungel wente & schedde oute his viole into erþe: & a wounde feerle & werste is made into alle þat hadden þe careste (or marke) of þe beest: & into hem þat worschipen þe beest & his ymage/ and þe secounde aungel schede oute his viole into þe see: & blood is made as of a deade þing · & eche soule (or

C<sup>m</sup> 16<sup>m</sup>

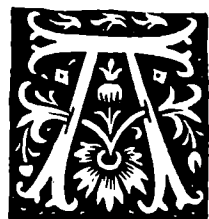


## ye apocalips

lijf) lyuynghe is deade in þe see/ & þe þridde sched oute his viole on þe floodis & on þe welles of wattris: & blood is made/ and I herde þe aungel of wattris seyinge/ Iuste art þou lorde • þat art & þat waste holy • þat demest þes þingis: for þei schedden oute þe blood of halowis & prophetis: & þou hast zouen hem blood for to drynke/ forsoþe þei ben worþi/ and I herde another aungel seyinge/ zhe lorde god al myzty: trewe & iuste þi domes/ and þe fourþe aungel sched oute his viole into þe sunne: & it is zouen to hym for to turmente men wiþ heet & fjr/ and men swaleden wiþ greet heet • & blasfemyden þe name of god haupnge power on þes plagis • neþer þei diden penaunce: þat þei schulden zþue glorie to hym/ and þe fifþe aungel sched oute his viole on þe feet of þe beest • & his kyngdom is made dirke/ and þei eten to gedir here tungis for sorowe • & þei blasfemeden god of heuene for sorowis & here woundis: & þei diden not penaunce of here werkis ¶ And þe sixte aungel sched oute his viole into þe ilke greet flood eufrates • & driede þe water of it: þat weye were rediede to kynnis fro þe sunne risynge/ and I sýze þre vnclene spiritis into maner of froggis • for to go oute of þe moup of þe dragoune • & of þe moup of þe beest: & of þe moup of þe false prophete/ soþely þei ben þe spiritis of deuelis makynge signes: & þei gon forþ to kyngis of al erþe • for to gedir hem into batayle to þe greet day of al myzty god/ lo I come as a nyzt þeef/ blesside he þat wakith & kepith his cloþes • þat he wandre not nakide: & þei seen his filþehede/ and he gedir hem into a place: þat is clepide in ebrewe hermagedon ¶ And þe seueneþ aungel sched oute his viole into þe eyre • & a greet voyce wente oute of heuene fro þe trone: seyinge/ it is done/ and leptyngis ben made & voyces & þundris • & greet erþe mounge is made: whiche maner neuer was • siþ men weren vpon erþe: suche erþe mounge so greet/ and þe greet cytee is broken into þre parties: & þe cytees of heþen men fellen doune/ and greet babylone came into mynde • bifore god • for to zþue to it þe cuppe of  
of

## ye apocalips

of wryn of indignacioun of his wrappe/ and eche yle flepe  
awepe: also hillis ben not founden/ and greet heyle as a talent  
came doune fro heuene into men/ and men blasfemed god  
for þe plage of hayl: for it is made wondirly greet//



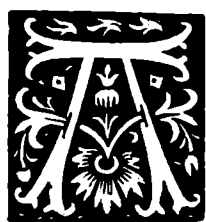
And one of þe seuene aungels came þat had seuene  
violis: & spac wiþ me seyinge/ come þou I schal  
schewe to þee þe dampnacioun of þe greet hoore  
þat sittip on manye watris: wiþ whiche kyngis of  
erþe diden fornyacioun: & þei þat dwellen in erþe ben ful  
drunken of þe wijn of hire leccherie/ and he took me awepe into  
deserte: in spirit/ and I sise a womman sittynge on a reed  
beest ful of names of blasfemye: haupnge seuene hedis & ten  
hornes/ and þe womman was enuyrounyde wiþ purpur &  
cockyn (þat is reed) & engoldide wiþ golde & wiþ precious  
stoon & perles: haupnge a golden cuppe in hire hande ful of  
abhomyacioun: & vncleynesse of hire fornyacoñ/ and in þe  
forhede of hire a name writen: mysterie/ babiloyne þe greet  
modir of fornyacoñs: & of abhomynaçoñs of erþe/ and I sise  
a womman drunken of þe blood of seyntis: & of þe blood of  
martiris of Ihu/ and whanne I sise hire I wondride wiþ  
greet wondrynge: & þe aungel seyde to me/ whi wondrist þou/  
I schal seye to þee þe sacrament of þe womman & of þe beest  
þat berip hire: þat haþ seuene hedis & ten hornes/ þe beest  
whom þou sise: was & is not/ and sche is þe steyzinge vp fro  
depnesse: & sche schal go into perischynge/ and men dwellynge  
in erþe schulen wondre • whos names ben not writen in þe  
booc of liif fro makynge of þe worlde: seinge þe beest þat was  
& is not/ and þis is witte þat haþ wisdome/ þe seuene hedis  
ben seuene hillis on whom þe womman sittip: & ben seuene  
kyngis/ fyue haue fallen doune: one is • & anoper cometh not  
zit/ and whanne he schal come: it bihoueth hym for to dwelle  
a schorte tyme/ and þe beest þat was & is not • & sche is þe  
eyzte • & is of þe seuene • & schal go into perischynge/ and þe  
ten

C<sup>m</sup> 17<sup>m</sup>

## ye apocalips

ten hornes whom þou hast seen: ben ten kynges • þat zit hane not taken kyngdom • but þei schulen take power as kyngis: one houre aftir þe beest/ þes hane one counseyl: & schulen bi- take here vertue & power to þe beest/ þes schulen fize wiþ þe lombe: & þe lombe schal ouercome hem • for he is lorde of lordis & kyng of kyngis: & þei þat ben wiþ hym • clepide & chosen & feiþful/ and he seyde to me/ þe watris þat þou hast seen where þe hoore sittip: ben puple folkis & tungis/ and þe ten hornes þat þou hast seen in þe beest: þes schulen hate þe fornycarie womman • & schulen make hire desolate (or dis- coumfortide) & nakid: & schulen ete þe fleysche of hire & schu- len brenne hire to gedir wiþ fir/ soþely god zaue into þe hertis of hem þat þei do þat þat is plesaunt to hym • þat þei ȝyue here kyngdom to þe beest: & þe wordis of god ben endide/ and þe womman whom þou hast seyn: is þe grete cytee þat haþ kyngdom vpon kyngis of erþe//

C<sup>m</sup> 18<sup>m</sup>



And aftir þes þingis I fize anoper aungel comynge doune fro heuene • haupnge greet power: & þe erþe is liztenyde of his glorie • & crynge wiþ stronge voyce seyinge/ greet babiloyne fel doune: & is made þe habitacioun of deuplis • & þe kepyng of eche vnclene spirit: & þe kepyng of eche vnclene foule & hateful: for alle folkis drunken of þe wrappe of þe fornycacioun of hire/ and kyngis of erþe & marchauntis of erþe diden fornycacioun wiþ hire/ and þei ben made ryche: of þe vertue of þe delices of hire/ and I herde anoper voyce of heuene seyinge/ my puple go zee oute of it: & be zee not parceners of þe trespassis of it: & zee schul not receyue of þe plagis of it: for þe synnes of it camen into heuene • & þe lorde hadde mynde of þe wickidnesses of it/ zilde zee to it/ as & sche zildide to zou: & double zee dou- ble þingis aftir hire werkis/ in þe drynke þat sche medelide to zou: menge zee double to hire/ how myche sche glorifiede hire self & was in delices: so myche turmente ȝyue zee to hire & wepyng •

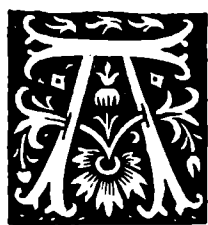
## ye apocalips

wepynge • for in hire herte sche seih/ I sitte a queen and I am not a widow: & I schal not se wepyng/ and herfore in one day hire plagis schulen come: deþ & mournynge & hungre/ and sche schal be brent in fyr: for god is stronge þat schal deme hire/ and þe kyngis of erþe schulen wepe & weyle hem on hire: þe whiche diden fornycacon wiþ hire & lyueden in delices • whanne þei schulen se þe smoke of brennyng of hire/ stondynge [ ] for drede of turmentis of hire • seyinge/ wo • wo • wo • þe ilke grete cytee babylone • & þe ilke stronge cytee: for in one houre þi doom comeþ/ and marchauntis of erþe schulen wepe vpon hire & mourne: for no man schal bye more þe marchaundise of hem/ þe marchaundis of golde & siluer & precious stoon & margarite (or peerle) & bijs & purpur & silke & cockyn • & eche tree thyme • & alle vessels of yuer • & alle vessels of precious stoon • & of brasle & yren & marble & canel & amome (þat is swete saueryng tree) • & of odoramentis & oynementis & encense: & of wijn & oyle & floure & whete • & of iumentis (or werke beestis) & scheep & horsis & cartis • & of seruauntis & of soulis (or lyues) of men/ and þin applis þe desiris of þi lijf wenten aweye fro þee: & alle fatte þingis & ful cleer perischiden fro þee/ and marchaundis of þes men schulen no more fynde þo þingis/ þei þat ben made ryche of hire: schulen stonde fer for drede of turmentis of hire • wepyng & mournynge & seyinge/ wo • wo • þe ilke greet cytee þat was cloþide wiþ bijs & purpur & cocke • & was goldide wiþ golde & precious stoon & margaritis: for in one houre so many richessis ben destitute/ and eche gouernoure • & alle þat schippen into place & maryners & þat wirchen in þe see: stoden fer & crieden seinge þe place of brennyng of hire: seyinge/ what like to þis grete cytee? and þei sente poudre vpon here hedis: & crieden wepyng & mournynge & seyinge/ wo • wo: þe ilke grete cytee in whom alle þat haue schippis in þe see: ben made riche of prynces of it: for in one houre it is desolate/ heuene & holy apostlis & prophetes glade zee on it: for god haþ demyde zoure  
doom

## ye apocalips

doom of it/ and one stronge aungel took up a stoon as a grete mylnestone: & sente into þe see seyinge/ in þis birre þe ilke grete cytee · babiloyne schal be sente: & now ouer schal not be founden/ and þe voyce of herpers · & of men of musik · & syngyngge wiþ pipe & trumpe: schal no more be herde in it/ and eche crafty man & eche crafter: schal not be founden in it/ and þe voyce of mylnestone schal no more be herde in þee: & þe lizte of lanterne schal no more schyne in þee/ and þe voyce of þe housbonde & of wiif schal not zit more be herde in þee: for þi marchundis weren prynces of erþe/ for in þi venemouse dedis alle folkis erreden: & þe blood of prophetis & seyntis is founden in it: & of alle men þat ben slayne in erþe//

C<sup>m</sup> 19<sup>m</sup>



¶ I herde a greet voyce of many trumpis in heuene: seyinge alleluya · herpyngge & glorie & vertue is to oure god · for trewe & iuste ben þe domes of hym · þe whiche demyden of a greet hoore · þat corrupide þe erþe in hire leccherie · & demyde (or vengide) þe blood of his seruauntis of þe handis of hire/ and este þei seyden alleluya (þat is herie zee þe lorde) · & þe smoke of it steyzede vp: into worldis of worldis/ and þe foure & twenty eldre men & þe foure beestis fellen doune & worschippeden god sittynge vpon trone · seyinge amen alleluya/ and a voyce wente oute of þe trone seyinge/ to oure god seye zee alle þe seruauntis of hym · herpyngge: & zee þat dreden god · smale & grete/ and I herde a voyce as of a grete trumpe · & as þe voyce of grete þundris · seyinge alleluya · for oure god al myzty haþ regnyde/ enioye we & glade we wiþ oute forþ: & zye we glorie to hym · for þe weddyngis of þe lombe camen: & þe wiif of hym made redy hire self/ and it is zouen to hire þat sche couer hire wiþ white bijs schynynge/ forsoþe bijsen ben þe iustifyingis of seyntis ¶ And he seyde to me/ write þou/ bleßide þei þat ben clepide to þe soper of weddyngis of þe lombe/ and he seyde to me/ þe wordis of god ben trewe/ and  
I fel

## ye apocalips

I fel doune bifore his feet · þat I schulde worschip hym/ and he seyde to me/ se þat þou do not/ I am þin euen seruaunt & of þi breþeren haupnge þe witnesynge of Ihū/ worschip þou god/ forsoþe þe witnesynge of Ihū· is spirit of prophece/ ¶ And I sise heuene openyde· & lo a whijt horse · & he þat satte vpon hym was clepide feiþful & soþfast· & wiþ rixtwelnesse he demeth & firtip/ forsoþe þe yzen of hym as flaume of fjr · & in his hede diademes haupnge a name writen· whiche no man knewe no but he/ and he was cloþide in cloþe spreynge wiþ blood· & þe name of hym was clepide þe worde of god/ and þe oostis (or cumpanyes) þat ben in heuene · sueden hym in whijt horsis· cloþide wiþ biisen white & clene/ and a swerde scharpe on eche syde camen forþ of his moup · þat in it he smyte folkis· & he schal reule hem in an yren zerde/ and he tredip (or defoulip) þe pressure of wijn of wodenesse· of al myzty god/ and he hath writen in his clooth & hemme· kyng of kyngis & lorde of lordis/ ¶ And I sise an aungel stondynge in þe sunne· & he criede wiþ greet voyce seyinge to alle briddis þat flown by þe mydel of heuene/ come zee & be zee gaderide to gadir to þe grete soper of god· þat zee ete þe fleschis of kyngis · & þe fleschis of tribunes · & fleschis of stronge men · & fleschis of horsis & of þe sittynge in hem · & þe fleschis of alle fremen & seruauntis· & of smale & of grete/ and I sise þe beest & kyngis of erþe · & þe oostis of hem gederide to make batayle wiþ hym þat satte on þe horse & wiþ his ooste/ and þe beest is cauhte & wiþ hire þe false prophete þat made signes bifore hire · in whiche he deceyuyde hem þat token þe careste of þe beest· & þat worschipeden þe ymage of it/ þes two ben sente quykke into þe pool of fjr· brennyng in brymston/ and þe oþer ben slayne in swerde of þe sittynge on þe horse þat cometh forþ of þe moup of hym· & alle briddis ben fulfide· wiþ þe flesche of hem//

And

## þe apocalips

C<sup>m</sup> 20<sup>m</sup>



And I ſiþe an aungel compnge doune fro heuene •  
haupnge þe keye of depneſſe: & a grete cheyne in  
his hande/ and he cauþte þe dragoune þe olde ſer-  
pent þat is þe deuyl & ſathanas & he bonde hym  
by a þouſande zeeris/ and he ſente hym into þe depneſſe • &  
cloſide & ſignyde (or ſeelide) on hym • þat he deceyue no more  
folkis til a þouſande zeeris ben fulfide/ aftir þes þingis it bi-  
houeh hym for to be vnbounden a litil tyme/ and I ſiþe ſeetis  
& þei ſaten on hem: & doom is zouen to hem/ and þe ſoulis of  
bihedide men for þe witneſſynge of Jhū & for þe worde of  
god/ and hem hat worſchipeden not þe beeft • neþer þe ymage  
of it • neþer token þe carette of it in forhedis or in here hondis/  
and þei lyueden & regnyden wiþ criſt a þouſande zeeris/ þe  
oper of deade men lyueden not: til a þouſande zeeris ben en-  
dide/ þis is þe firſte azen riſynge/ bleſſide & holy he þat haþ  
parte in þe firſte azen ryſynge/ in þes þe ſecounde deþ haþ not  
power: but þei ſchulen be priſtis of god & of criſt: & þei ſchulen  
regne wiþ hym a þouſande zeeris/ and whan a þouſande  
zeeris ſchulen be endide • ſathanas ſchulen be vnbounden of  
his priſoune/ and he ſchal go oute & he ſchal deceyue folkis þat  
ben on foure corners of þe erþe: gog & magog/ and he ſchal  
gadir hem into batayle/ whos nowmbre is as þe grauel of þe  
ſee/ and þei ſtepyden vp on þe brodenefſe of erþe • & enuy-  
rounden þe caſtels of ſepntis • & þe louede cytee • & fiſr came  
doune of god fro heuene & deuouride hem/ and þe deuyl þat  
deceyuede hem • is ſente into þe pool of fiſr & brymſton: where  
þe beeft & falſe prophete ſchulen be turmentide day & nyȝt into  
worldis of worldis amen/ and I ſiþe a greet white trone & þe  
ſittynge on it • fro whos ſiȝt erþe ſleye & heuene: & place is not  
founden of hem/ and I ſiþe deade men grete & ſmale ſtond-  
ynge in þe ſiȝte of þe trone: & bookis ben openyde & anoþer  
booc is openyde: þat is þe booc of liȝf/ and deade men ben  
demyde of þes þingis þat weren writen in þe bookis: aftir þe  
werkis

## ye apocalips

werkis of hem/ and þe see ȝaue his deade men þat weren in it/  
and deþ & helle ȝauen here deade men · þat weren in hem/  
and it is demyde of alle: vp þe werkis of hem/ and helle & deþ  
ben sente into þe pool of fiȝr/ þis is þe secounde deþ/ and he  
þat is not founden writen in þe booc of liȝt: is sente into þe  
pool of fiȝr//



**A**ND I ſiȝe newe heuene & newe erþe/ forſoþe þe C<sup>m</sup> 21<sup>m</sup>  
firſte heuene & þe firſte erþe wenten aweye: &  
nowe is not þe ſee/ and I ſoon ſiȝe þe holy cytee  
Jrlm̄ newe comynge doune fro heuene of god ·  
made redy as a wiȝf ournyde to hire houſbonde/ and I herde  
& greet voyce of þe trone: ſeyinge/ lo þe tabernacle of god  
wiþ men · & he ſchal dwelle wiþ hem/ and þei ſchulen be his  
puple: & he god wiþ hem ſchal be here god/ and god ſchal wiȝp  
aweye eche teer: fro yȝen of ſeyntis/ and deþ ſchal no more  
be · neþer mournynge neþer crynge · neþer ſorowe ſchal be  
ouer: þe whiche firſte þingis wenten aweye/ and he ſeyde þat  
ſatte in þe trone/ lo I make alle þingis newe/ and he ſeyde to  
me write þou · for þes wordis ben moſte ſeiþful & trewe/ and  
he ſeyde to me/ it is done/ I am alpha & o: þe bygynnyng &  
ende/ I ſchal ȝyue frely to þriſtynge: of þe welle of quykke  
water/ he þat ſchal ouercome: ſchal welde þes þingis/ and I  
ſchal be god to hym · & he ſchal be ſone to me/ forſoþe to proude  
men & vnbeleueful & curſide · & manquellers · & fornycatours ·  
& to men doinge venym · (or ſleinge by venym) & worſchipers  
of ydolis · & to alle liers: þe parte of hem ſchal be in þe pool  
brennyng wiþ fiȝr & brymſton · þat is þe ſecounde deþ ¶ And  
one came of þe ſeuene aungels haupnge byolis ful of ſeuene þe  
laſte plagis: & he ſpac wiþ me ſeyinge/ come þou I ſchal ſchewe  
to þee þe ſpouſe: wiȝf of þe lombe/ and he took me vp in ſpirit:  
into a greet hil & hiȝe/ and he ſchewide to me þe holy cytee  
Jrlm̄ · comynge doune fro heuene of god: haupnge þe clerete  
of god/ and þe liȝt of it liȝk to a precious ſtoon: as to þe ſtoon



## ye apocalips

Jaspis · as cristal/ and it had a wal greet & hize/ haupnge  
twelue zatis/ and in þe zatis of it · twelue aungels/ and  
names writen in · þat ben þe names of þe twelue lynagis/ of  
þe sones of Isrl/ fro þe este þre zatis · & fro þe norþe þre zatis ·  
& fro þe souþe þre zatis · & fro þe weste þre zatis/ and þe wal  
of þe cytee haupnge twelue foundementis/ & in hem þe names  
of þe twelue apostlis · & of þe lombe/ and he þat spac wih me  
had a golden mesure of a reed/ þat he schulde mete þe cytee ·  
& þe zatis of it & þe wal/ and þe cytee is putte in tware/ and  
þe lengþe of it is so myche/ how myche & þe breede/ and he  
mate þe cytee of þe reed/ by furlongis twelue housandis/ and  
þe heyzþe & lengþe & breed of it ben euen/ and he mate þe  
wallis of it an hundride & foure & fourty cubitis/ by mesure  
of man þat is of aungel/ and þe bilydng of þe wal was of  
stoon iaspis/ soþely þe cytee itself was of clene golde/ lijk to  
clene glasse/ and þe foundementis of þe wal of þe cytee/ our-  
nyde wih al precious stoon/ þe firste foundement · Jaspis · þe  
secounde saphyrus/ þe þridde/ calcedonyus/ þe fourþe/ sma-  
ragdus/ þe fifþe/ sardonys/ þe sirte/ sardyne/ þe seueneþ/  
crisolitus/ þe eyzþe/ berillis/ þe nyneþ/ topasys/ þe tenþe/  
crisopassus/ þe elleueneþ/ Jacyntus/ þe twelueþe/ amatistus/  
and twelue zatis twelue margaritis ben by eche/ and eche  
zatis weren of eche margaritis/ and þe stretis of þe cytee clene  
golde/ as glasse ful schynynge/ and I siȝe no temple in it/ for-  
soþe þe lorde god al myȝty is temple of it & þe lombe/ and þe  
cytee haþ no nede of sunne neþer mone/ þat þei schyne in it/  
for whi þe clerete of god schal lyȝten it/ & þe lombe is þe lan-  
terne of it/ & folkis schulen walke in liȝte of it/ and þe kyngis  
of erþe schulen brynge to/ here glorie & honoure into it/ and  
þe zatis of it schulen not be closide by day · soþely nyȝt schal  
not be þere/ and þei schulen brynge to/ þe glorie & honoure of  
folkis into it/ neþer any þing defoulide · schal entre into it · &  
doinge abhomynacioun & leesyng/ no but þei þat ben writen  
in þe booc of liȝf of þe lombe//

And

## ye apocalips



And he schewide to me a flode of quicke water •  
schynnyng as crystal/ comynge forþe of þe seet of  
god/ and of þe lombe/ in þe mydel of þe strete of it •  
& on eche syde of þe flode/ þe tree of lijf bryngynge  
forþ twelue fructis/ by eche monethes zildynge his fructe • &  
þe leeuës of þe tree to helpe of folkis/ and eche curside þing  
schal no more be/ but þe seetis of god & of þe lombe schulen  
be in it • & þe seruauntis of hym schulen serue to hym/ and þei  
schulen se his face/ & his name in here forhedis/ and nyzt schal  
no more be • & þei schulen not haue nede to þe lizte of lanterne  
neþer to lizte of sunne/ for þe lorde god schal lizten hem • &  
þei schulen regne into worldis of worldis/ and he seyde to me/  
þes wordis ben moſte feiþful & trewe/ and þe lorde god of spi-  
ritis of prophetis sente his aungels for to schewe to his ser-  
uauntis/ what þingis it bihoueh for to be done sone/ and lo I  
come swiftly/ bleſside be he þat kepiþ þe wordis of prophecie  
of þis booc/ and I Ioon þat herde & ſize þes þingis • & aftir  
þat I hadde herde & seyn • I fel doune þat I schulde worschip  
bifore þe feet of þe aungel/ þat schewide to me þes þingis/  
and he seyde to me/ se þat þou do not/ forsoþe I am þin euen  
seruaunt & of þi breþeren prophetis/ & of hem þat kepen þe  
wordis of prophecie of þis booc/ worschip þou god/ and he  
seyde to me/ ſigne (or ſeele) þou not/ þe wordis of prophecie  
of þis booc/ forsoþe þe tyme is nyzt/ he þat noyzeþ/ noyze zit/  
and he þat is in filþes/ ware ſoul zit/ and he þat is iuſte/ be  
he zit iuſtifiede/ and þe holy be he halowide zit/ lo I come  
sone • & my mede wiþ me for to zilde to eche man aftir his  
werkis/ I am alpha & o • þe firſte & þe laſte • bygynnyng &  
ende/ bleſside þei þat waſchen here ſtolis in blood of þe lombe/  
& þe power of hem be in þe booc of lijf/ & by zatis entre into  
þe cytee// ¶ Forsoþe wiþ oute forþ houndis & venym doers (or  
piſoners) & vnchaſte men • & manquellers • & ſeruyng to  
ydolis • & eche þat loueþ & doiþ leesynge/ I Ihc̄ ſente myn  
aungel

## ye apocalips

aungel for to witnesse to zow þes þingis/ in chirchis/ I am þe  
root & kynde of dauyd a schynynge morne sterre/ and þe hous-  
bonde & þe spouse (or wiif) seyn: come þou/ and he þat heriþ:  
seiþ: come þou/ and he þat þristiþ: come/ and he þat wole:  
take frely þe water of liif) forsoþe I witnesse to eche man her-  
ynge þe wordis of prophecie of þis booc/ zif any man schal  
putte to to þes: god schal putte to vpon hym: þe plagis writen  
in þe booc/ and zif any man schal do aweye of þe wordis of þe  
booc of þis prophecie: and schal take aweye þe parte of hym  
fro þe booc of liif · & fro þe holy cytee · & fro þes þingis þat ben  
writen in þis booc/ he seiþ þat beriþ witnessynge of þes þingis:  
zhe amen/ I come soone amen/ come þou lorde Ihu/ þe grace  
of oure lorde Ihu c̄st: wiþ zou alle amen///

here endiþ þe apocalips  
Blesside be þe holy trinite Amē

